

THE KEYS TO UNLOCK  
THE SIGNS OF

THE END

AND WHY YOU **MUST** GET READY TO LEAVE YOUR CITIES

By Constantine of Bethlehem

## THE PURPOSE OF THIS VOLUME

So much material can be found about the end times and the Bible that miss what prophecy really teach while claiming to unlock its mysteries. For example: when it came to Christ's First Coming, the biggest problem was that Israel failed to unlock the unpopular prophetic messages because it fell into national pride and solely focused on popular victory prophecies against Rome. As a result of this oversight, Israel anticipated a conquering Messiah while ignoring the prophecies about the suffering servant, an error that was catastrophic. But this oversight is repeated today by the church and is why we focus this volume on unpopular and ignored prophecies of the Bible that once they are all explained in this massive work here, it will not only unlock all these mysteries that for centuries were unresolved, but it reveals astonishing details of a prophetic puzzle that paints a picture that is unlike anything anyone has ever proposed or imagined regarding what comes ahead. For one simple example out of hundreds in this volume, the prophet Isaiah prophesied today's generation:

"The look on their faces testifies against them; they parade their sin like Sodom does and they do not even try to hide it. Woe to them! They have brought destruction upon themselves" (Isaiah 3:9)

In the opening chapter of Isaiah 1, God greets the leaders of the world as such: "ye rulers of Sodom ye people of Gomorrah."

Who has ever focused on these or even correctly interpreted such prophecies? No one. Better yet; do these prophecies really need an interpreter? Just look all around the world and we see gay parades and homosexuals coming out of the closet with massive support for it.

No one today is interpreting these prophecies. For decades, I listened to American preachers and biblical so-called doctors and scholars claiming to be 'watchmen' acting courageously while rattling their tongues about unfulfilled allegoric prophecies they interpreted as being Rome's revival. They never once quoted this prophecy by Isaiah or the ones regarding the rise of homosexuality by Ezekiel, Jude, Paul, John and even Christ Himself who warned about a revival of "Sodom". And just like the ignorance of Israel prior to Christ's First Coming, these unpopular prophecies are being fulfilled right in front of their very eyes and will become the foundation stone after they are fulfilled. In all of their schools, government buildings and cities, even at their football stadiums and sports arenas they see all the sodomites "parade their sin like Sodom does and they do not even try to hide it". In other words, God says that the homosexuals have come out of the closet. Everyone sees all the displays and banners proudly hovering everywhere and not a single human being is pointing to the Scriptures and warning the world.

Where are all these preachers, doctors of theology and 'prophecy' teachers now? Why are they so silent?

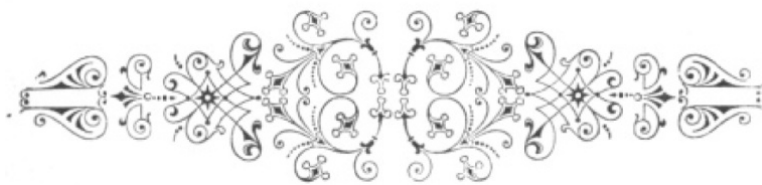
The answer to our question is simple: unlike the Christians of ancient Rome who were slaughtered and were eaten alive and shredded by wild beasts for standing up for what they believed in, these modern preachers like that of ancient Rome, which they proclaimed that one day will revive, they themselves swallowed their own tongues, for they too fear yet love the coliseum.



SECTION I

“HARLOT BABYLON”  
FINALLY UNLOCKED





# MYSTERY BABYLON

## RESOLVED

### THE PROBLEM

St. Jerome of Bethlehem explained that *Isaiah*, *Daniel* and the *Apocalypse* were sealed <sup>1</sup> until the future when:

“that book can be opened by one who has learned *the mysteries of Scripture* and understands its *hidden truths*, and its words which seem dark because of the greatness of the *secrets* they contain. He it is who can *interpret the parables* and *transmute* the letter which killeth into the spirit which quickeneth.”—Saint Jerome of Bethlehem.

“It is who can interpret the parables” without which none can solve the riddles.

Though you have ears you could not hear, can finally hear clearly, though you have eyes but could not see, can finally see clearly. In this volume we shall unseal (“transmute”) these “secrets”. None of the Fathers witnessed the plagues, the Industrial Revolution, the French Revolution, the rise of Communism or the unbridled freedom of the West, the two world wars, the making of nuclear destruction upon Hiroshima and Nagasaki, and then the sexual revolution including this homosexual and bisexual revolution, that is clearly a key mentioned by the prophets regarding its rise in Israel and from Europe and the United

---

<sup>1</sup> *“But Thou, O Daniel, shut up the words and seal the book, even to the time appointed. Many shall pass over, and knowledge shall be manifold.”* He who had revealed manifold truth to Daniel now signifies that the things he has said are *matters of secrecy*, and he orders him to roll up the scroll containing his words and *set a seal upon the book*, with the result that *many shall read it* and *inquire* (p. 577) as to *its fulfillment in history, differing in their opinions* because of its *great obscurity*. And as for the statement, “Many shall pass over” or “go through,” this indicates that *it will be read by many people*. For it is a familiar expression to say: “I have gone through a book,” or, “I have passed through an historical account.” Indeed this is the idea which *Isaiah also expressed* in regard to the *obscurity of his own book: “And the sayings of that book shall be like the words of a book that is sealed.* And if they shall give it to an illiterate man, saying, ‘Read it,’ he will reply, (727) ‘I do not know how to read.’ But if they give it to a man *who does know how to read* and say, ‘Read the book,’ he will reply, ‘I *cannot read it*, because *it is sealed up*’ ” (Isa. 39:11). Also in the Revelation of John, there is a book seen which is sealed with *seven seals* inside and outside. And when no one proves able to break its seals, John says, “I wept sore; and a voice came to me, saying, ‘Weep not: behold the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and break its seals’ ” (Rev. 5:4). But that book can *be opened by one who has learned the mysteries of Scripture* and *understands its hidden truths*, and its words which seem dark because of the greatness of the *secrets they contain*. *He it is who can interpret the parables* and *transmute* the letter which killeth into the spirit which quickeneth.”—Saint Jerome of Bethlehem, Commentary on Daniel (1958). pp. 121

States is being forced onto the rest of the world. Without such history past and current, how could St. Jerome or any one of the fathers be able to completely unlock Daniel, Isaiah or the six seals of John's Apocalypse when these prophets already declared such prophecies were designated for the end?

For centuries interpreters insisted that "Mystery Babylon" is a *single literal* city, Catholics say is "Jerusalem" and Protestants counter with "Rome" since Rome sits on *seven literal* hills. Catholics counter with: "but scripture says '*mountains*' not '*hills*'" adding "how does Rome rule the kings of the earth and how do all the kings of the earth commit fornication with Rome?" Are Japan, India, China, Pakistan, Turkey and an immense horde of 1.8 billion Muslims in bed with Rome? If anything the Muslims invaded Rome and were repelled by Catholics, not Calvinists who aided the Muslims against Rome because they thought she was "harlot". Had it not been for the Catholics who fought the Muslims at the battles of Poitiers and Lepanto,<sup>2</sup> all Christendom would have been Islamized.<sup>3</sup> The Catholics are right. But so are the Evangelicals who ask a valid question: "how does Jerusalem rule the kings of the earth and how do all the kings of the earth commit fornication with Jerusalem?" Then we have others exhausted by all arguments shout out loud "New York" by adding more complexity the global commercial side "the ships" and "merchants" waxed rich off this "great city":

"And they threw dust on their heads as they wept and mourned, crying out, "Alas, alas, for *the great city* where all who had *ships at sea* grew rich by her wealth! For in a *single hour* she has been laid waste." (Revelation 18:19)

Jerusalem is by no sea. Also keep in mind the destruction all happens in one "single hour" as if a nuclear catastrophe destroys the entire industrial conglomerate.

## THE SOLUTION

Revelation 11 calls it "the Great City" but also calls it allegorically "Sodom and Egypt" which we dedicate this entire volume to mostly resolve just these two names "Sodom (homosexual)

---

<sup>2</sup> Prior in 842, Arab forces under the rule of Muhammad Abul Abbas took Messina, Sicily and raided Rome in 846 (Kreutz 1996, pp. 25–28) Also the Battle of Tours, called the Battle of Poitiers and, by Arab sources, the Battle of the Highway of the Martyrs (Arabic: معركة بلاط الشهداء, romanized: Ma'arakat Balāt ash-Shuhadā'), was fought on 10 October 732, and was an important battle during the Umayyad invasion of Gaul. It resulted in a victory by the Frankish and Aquitanian forces under Charles Martel over the Umayyad Caliphate led by Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, governor of al-Andalus. Leopold von Ranke felt that "Poitiers was the turning point of one of the most important epochs in the history of the world." Leopold "History of the Reformation," vol. 1, 5

<sup>3</sup> Protestant interpreters rarely mention the Battle of Lepanto, Battle of Tours, the Battle of Vienna, and the Battle of Malta—wars to defend Europe from Islamic invasions—they are combatant against such wars since all these were Catholic-Islamic wars. After Martin Luther called the Jews and the Pope some foul names such as "Antichrist" and "Devil incarnate", he then urged his followers to look at the Turks in the best manner and even went so far as to say that some of his German contemporaries "actually want the Turk to come and rule, because they think that our German people are wild and uncivilized – indeed that they are half-devil and half-man"—*Found in The Ottoman Empire and early modern Europe*, by Daniel Goffman, Cambridge University Press, 2002, p110.

and “Egypt” (pagan) explaining the wealth of prophetic references to solve not just this riddle, but riddles that were considered for centuries impossible.

We shall start by asking all contemporary interpreters a Jesus-style question: has any “Babylon”—great—or not so great—was ever defined historically or scripturally as a single city? Did they not read, or has it not been told to them, that throughout the Apocalypse, God calls this “Babylon” “Sodom and Egypt” and “the Great City?” Why then have they, and for centuries missed the main key to solve this riddle which was given to them in Genesis 10, “Babel” like “Babylon the Great” and similar to “Sodom and Gomorrah” was a mega conglomerate of cities yet called “the great city”:

“The beginning of his kingdom was *Babel* and *Erech* and *Accad* and *Calneh*, in the land of *Shinar*. From that land he [Nimrod] went forth into *Assyria*, and built *Nineveh* and *Rehoboth-Ir* and *Calah*, and *Resen* between Nineveh and Calah; ***that is the great city.***” (Genesis 10:10-12)

Which one of these cities is this “*great city*?”

I will give the answer in a riddle: Calneh is *not*, yet it *is*, Accad is *not*, yet it *is*, Calah is *not*, yet it *is*, Shinar is *not*, yet it *is*, Nineveh is *not*, yet it *is*, Rehoboth-Ir is *not*, yet it *is*, and Resen is *not*, yet it *is*. In the case of Genesis 10, they are *each* or *all* “the Great City.”<sup>4</sup>

The same rule in Genesis 10 applies to the “Great City” of the Apocalypse, Mystery Babylon the Great, are several cities with the same exact title “the Great City”:

“And their dead bodies will lie in the street of that *Great City* which mystically is called *Sodom* and *Egypt*, where also their Lord was crucified.” (Revelation 11:8)

Like Babel, this “Great City” (one of them at least) is definitely Jerusalem “where their Lord was crucified” and here Jerusalem is even called “Sodom and Egypt”. Israel today has the highest rate of bisexuality in the world and all its religious institutions have a pagan source called the Kabbalah. “Where their Lord was crucified” leaves no wiggle room for any of these sly interpreters to latch on unless they want to make the claim that Christ’s blood was also shed in Rome. Revelation 11 speaks of two cities: 1—the “great city” also called “Sodom and Egypt” (v.8) 2—“the holy city” which is trampled by the enemies of God “and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty *and* two months.” (v.2)

While Protestant scholars focused so much on the “great city” being Rome and we ask these scholars another Jesus-style question: which then is the “holy city?”

Answer with the usual “Jerusalem,” the Jesus-style checkmate would be: why is a “holy city” given the titles “the great city” and “Sodom and Egypt” and Revelation 14:8 condemns that “great city”: “Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city?” Show us where God has ever destroyed a city for being holy? So which city is this “holy city?” If we apply the singular approach method of these ‘scholars’ they must choose a city which is “holy”. This would be impossible for Protestant interpreters since they do not have a city they call “holy”. And if they are left without making a choice-city, it reveals that the “holy city” is *Church Universal* and therefore we must apply the same rule to the “Great City” as harlot universal born of

---

<sup>4</sup> Both the ancient Babel in Genesis 10-11 and the more recent Babylon of Daniel’s day are said to be located in the plains of Shinar (Gen. 10:10; 11:2; Daniel 1:2).

Jerusalem, which according to Paul is the “earthly Jerusalem” the antithesis to our “Mother” (heavenly Jerusalem from above). Paul calls earthly Jerusalem “Hagar” which is cast out (see Galatians 4) and since she is a “Mother of Harlots” her multiple daughters are also harlots and scripture even addresses each daughter harlot as such.

There is much more to diffuse the Protestant theory on Rome being this exclusive harlot, especially when Israel itself was given the title “great city” and even called in both forms as a singular (city) and in a plural form (cities). For example:

“For this is what the LORD says concerning the house of the king of Judah: “You are like Gilead to Me, like the summit of Lebanon; yet most assuredly I will make you a wilderness, *cities* that are not inhabited. For I will set apart destroyers against you, each with his weapons; and they will cut down your choicest cedars and throw *them* on the fire. Many nations will pass by *this city*; and they will say to one another, ‘Why has the LORD done this to *this great city*?’” (Jeremiah 22:6-8)

Here we find “cities” (plural) rendered as a “city” (singular). Is God here destroying a *single* city or *multiple* cities calling them “this great city?” The key to unlock the parable is even given to us in the introductory verse:

“And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE *MOTHER OF HARLOTS* AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.”  
(Revelation 17:5)

Calling it “Mystery Babylon” (as Evangelicals do) is not how scripture say it. “On her forehead was a name written “Mystery” (since it is an *allegory*, a *parable*) and this *parable* is regarding a conglomerate of cities called “Babylon The Great,” and is also called “The Great City” and “The Mother of Harlots,” (she works in tandem, *collectively* with her adopted harlot daughters as a mega whorehouse). It is also called “the Abominations of the earth” (filled with abominable acts): “He has judged the great harlot who was *corrupting the earth* with her *immorality*” (Revelation 19:2) where in one of her centers (Jerusalem) two saints are unquestionably murdered where Christ was crucified, after the city succumbed to a homosexual revolution. Why else is it called “Sodom?”

"Their dead bodies will lie in the main street of the *great city*, which *figuratively* is called *Sodom and Egypt*, where also *their Lord was crucified*." (Revelation 11:8)

Isaiah 1, greets the whole conglomerate as such “ye *rulers* of *Sodom* ye people of *Gomorrah*.” This “great city” (the mother) where Enoch and Elijah will be martyred (Jerusalem) is not only called “Babylon The Great,” but here is also called “Sodom and Egypt.” Why is it called “Sodom?” Just watch your daily news.

The problem with many is that they all have pet causes. When Christ came the first time, the masses thought that Messiah comes to solve the Israeli-Roman wars. Today we have the same blindness. Many believe that God is primarily concerned about the Arab-Israeli wars taking the side of Israel while completely ignoring that God will first deal with the sins of Israel, for it has become Sodom. The crux of these prophecies is not the Arab-Israeli wars but the repeat of that ancient sin of Sodom and Gomorrah, and until these last past few

years would have been a mystery to imagine Jerusalem and the world engulfed with homosexual parades.

When Christ came the first time, Israel was immersed in the popular prophecies that the Messiah comes to rid them from Roman occupation. They ignored the unpopular prophecies about the Messiah coming to deal with sin.

#### EZEKIEL 16

Yet no one links this “Sodom” to an unpopular prophecy—Ezekiel 16—where Jerusalem is also called “Sodom,” “Son of man, make known to Jerusalem her abominations” (v.2):

“However, I will restore the fortunes of *Sodom* and *her daughters* and of *Samaria* and *her daughters*, and your fortunes along with them,<sup>54</sup> so that you may bear your disgrace and be ashamed of all you have done in giving them [*Sodom* and *Samaria*] comfort.<sup>55</sup> And your sisters, *Sodom* with her daughters and *Samaria* with her daughters, will return to what they were before; and you and *your daughters* will return to what you were before.<sup>56</sup> You would not even mention your sister *Sodom* in the day of your pride,<sup>57</sup> before your wickedness was uncovered.” (Ezekiel 16:54-57)

Behold the “Sodom and Egypt” of Revelation 11. John reflects from this parable in the unnoticed and unpopular Ezekiel 16 which interprets as follows: God restores Israel as a state with Jerusalem as its center, but He also restores her wish in an immoral state of rebellion (this is being fulfilled in your reading as Israel has the highest rate of bisexuals globally)<sup>5</sup> and with it are three allegoric players two of which are: A—“Samaria” (symbolic of paganism) yet relates to Israel and stems from Israel’s ancient fountain with “her daughters” (fallen Christendom) all restored to “the way they were before” (return backwards to their original estate: pagan). B—“Sodom and her daughters” restored and revived (symbolic of her daughters, Christendom supporting homosexuality) where the entire allegoric Israel “the church” and Israel itself restored backwards to ancient Sodom and Canaan “return to what you were before” “Thus says the Lord GOD to Jerusalem, “Your origin and your birth are from the land of the Canaanite, your father was an Amorite and your mother a Hittite.” (v. 3) and as Canaan she supports “Sodom” “giving them [the entire conglomerate of revived Sodom and Gomorrah] comfort” (the issue is supporting this entire mega-structure for homosexuality).

In simple terms, God is slapping Jerusalem with the ancient title of Sodom with her harlot daughters—the major cities of fallen Christendom.

---

<sup>5</sup> “The history of LGBT rights in Israel predates that of many Western nations, including the United States.” (The “Gay identification” of Tel Aviv: Examining Israel’s Pro-Gay Brand Satchie Snellings New York University, Global Liberal Studies) In a sample representative of the Israeli Jewish population aged 18 to 44, it was found that 11.3% of men and 15.2% of women self-reported attraction to the same-gender. Mor, Zohar; Davidovich, Udi (2016). “Sexual Orientation and Behavior of Adult Jews in Israel and the Association With Risk Behavior” “Although the idea of a vibrant queer community in Israel, reputed birthplace of the biblical condemnation of same-sex relations, may seem far-fetched, *Israel today is one of the world’s most progressive countries in terms of equality for sexual minorities*. Politically, legally, and culturally, the community has moved from life at the margins of Israeli society to visibility and growing acceptance.” (see article from *My Jewish Learning* “*Israel is among the leaders in equality for sexual minorities*” by Lee Walzer”.)

It is that simple! God even greets the entire conglomerate this way in Isaiah's opening chapter:

“Hear the word of the LORD, ye *rulers* of *Sodom*; give ear unto the law of our God, ye *people* of *Gomorrah*.” (Isaiah 1:10)

#### THE HARLOT'S DAUGHTERS

That upon Israel's restoration (birth in 1948, capture of Jerusalem which I witnessed in 1967 while living in Jericho) the allegoric sisters of Jerusalem, which, represents all nations that was steeped into paganism (born of Samaria) and Homosexuality (born of Sodom) are given to her (Jerusalem) as daughters:

“I will give them [Sodom and her daughters and Samaria and her daughters] unto thee [Jerusalem] for *daughters*” (Ezekiel 16:61)

This is a key verse. Now we have a harlot *mother* and her harlot *daughters*, exactly how John and other prophets put it.

The decree of abandonment is then completed until a remnant believes by free will (be no longer under it) while the rest perish. Once God gives the two “Samaria” and “Sodom” to Jerusalem as her daughters, the covenant of abandonment is complete:

“Indeed everyone who quotes proverbs will use this proverb against you: ‘Like *mother*, like *daughter*!’” (Ezekiel 16:44)

The mother and daughters are now “Sodom” and even “Babel”:

“Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin *daughter Babel*,<sup>6</sup> sit on the ground: there is no throne”. (Isaiah 47:1)

We find other daughters of Babylon:

“O *daughter* of *Babylon*, who are to be *destroyed*, Happy the one who repays you as you have served us!” (Psalm 137:8)<sup>7</sup>

“Set in array, like a man for the battle, against you, O *daughter* of *Babylon*.” (Jeremiah 50:42)

“The *daughter* of *Babylon* is like a threshing floor when it is time to thresh her; yet a little while and the time of her harvest will come.” (Jeremiah 51:33)

---

<sup>6</sup> The Hebrew is Bat Babel Batula (“בְּתוּלַת בַּת־בָּבֶל”) literally “Virgin daughter Babel”

<sup>7</sup> Psalm 137 is the punishment on earthly Jerusalem (daughter of Babylon) and on Edom who called for its destruction: “Remember, O LORD, against the sons of Edom the day of Jerusalem, Who said, “Raze it, raze it, To its very foundation! O daughter of Babylon, who are to be destroyed, Happy the one who repays you as you have served us!”

“Up, Zion! *Escape*, you who dwell with the *daughter of Babylon*.” (Zechariah 2:7)<sup>8</sup>

Interpreters read Revelation 11 that Jerusalem is “Sodom and Egypt” but failed to connect this to the rest of prophecy because it was sealed till the time of the end. We can provide other examples as we move along. For one, just as when the angels visited Lot, the two witnesses (Enoch and Elijah) will enter Jerusalem which they too would identify as “Sodom and Egypt” to only find parades at the city (just like ancient Sodom) which Isaiah describes as such:

“The look on their faces testifies against them; they parade their sin like Sodom does and they do not even try to hide it. Woe to them! They have brought destruction upon themselves” (Isaiah 3:9)

WORLD ►

## STUDY: One-Third of Israelis Are Bisexual

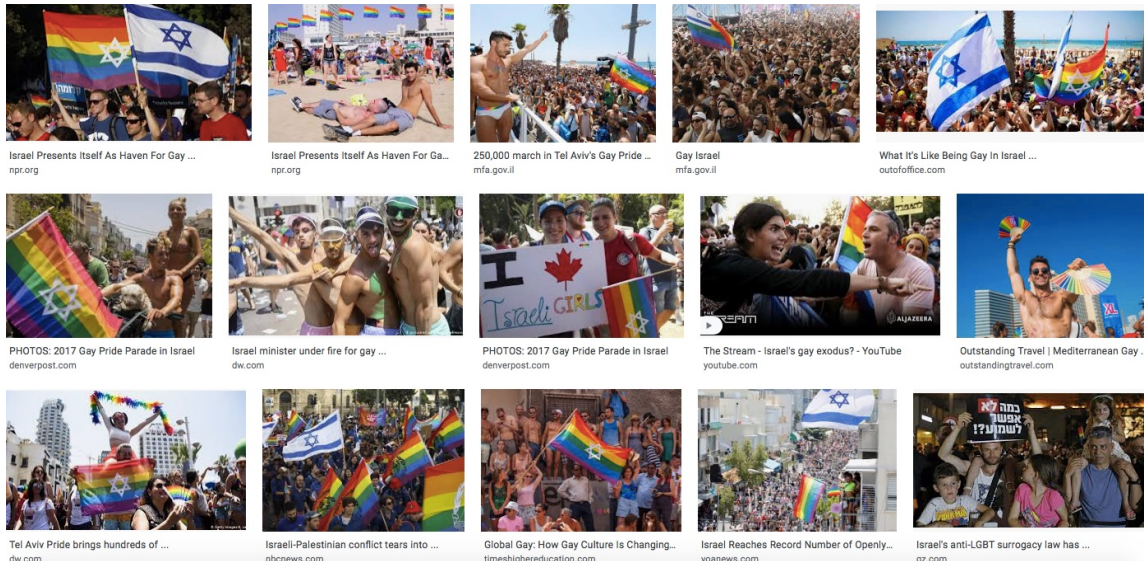


New research suggests there are 10 times as many bisexuals in Israel as gays and lesbians.

---

<sup>8</sup> This one is regarding the church to flee from the northern lands turned into Babylon: “Then I raised my eyes and looked, and behold, a man with a measuring line in his hand. So I said, where are you going?” And he said to me, To measure Jerusalem, to see what is its width and what is its length. Up, up! Flee from the land of the north,” says the LORD; “for I have spread you abroad like the four winds of heaven,” says the LORD. “Up, Zion! Escape, you who dwell with the daughter of Babylon.” (Zechariah 2:6-7)





In light of the photos above, is perhaps similar to the visions God gave the prophets and it needs no scholar to interpret. The prophecy seems to sound the alarm that a “gay parade” is at the city gates of Jerusalem including her daughters—a massive conglomerate of city nations that support a homosexual agenda.

The prophecy is saying that the homosexuals have come *out* of the closet while other prophecies say that the shepherds “rulers of Sodom” went *into* the closet. Isaiah 3:9 can never be addressing ancient Sodom that was long destroyed, but an *emulation* of ancient Sodom since it says: “They parade their sin *like* Sodom does”. This “like” makes all the difference between past and future. So when the prophecy says “*like Sodom*” this is in *emulation* and cannot be the original Sodom. And when it says: “parade their sin *like* Sodom does” is gay parades just as they did in ancient Sodom, so they do today. “They do not even try to hide it,” would mean *Gay Pride* just as we see them *coming out of the closet!*

But no matter how many are the millions that support it, be it TV or the slick theologian or the hypocrite politician or Catholic priests do not trust one iota that God approves since He says: “They have brought destruction upon themselves.” No one, not even one from the entire Christian world is shouting these verses. No one sounds the alarm on these prophecies for they are either ignorant about it or they fear retribution since the sports (their god) now support all this and the interpreters love the coliseum.

Another aspect interpreters fail to pay attention to is when Christ was asked about His Second Coming He said in a standalone verse:

“Remember Lot’s wife” (Luke 17:32)

Christ was also referring to Ezekiel, that is, what Ezekiel said about going “backward” “you with your daughters will also return to your former state” (Ezekiel 16:55) towards Canaan and Sodom for it is the sign of His soon coming to pour the “wrath” on all these cities.

Christ spoke in parables. Lot’s wife (symbolic of the fallen church) turned her head towards Sodom and perished. Lot (symbolic of the faithful church) did not turn its head towards Sodom and lived because (like Lot) it followed the instruction to leave the city and



to *never look back*. This instruction as we shall examine later on is all over scripture and requires all to leave the cities.

When shall we leave these cities?

In few years, as soon as the Turks acquire nuclear warheads, prepare to escape out of your cities far into the wilderness, leave not, you and your families will perish. Even your George Friedman, one of U.S. best geopolitical forecasters and strategist on international affairs who knows nothing of such prophecies warns of WWII to be started by a coordinated Turkish-Japanese sneak attack against the United States and its allies lobbing nukes at major cities. Friedman predicts that the attack will take place at a time in which the US will be taken completely off guard.<sup>9</sup> Friedman is correct. The biblical prophecies speak extensively about this Turkish surprise attack, as we shall see in much detail later on.

As to this “Babylon the Great” the Bible speaks of all three: Jerusalem, fallen Christendom and Arabia (the “Babylon as the Arabian’s tent” in Isaiah 13, Babylon as “Arabia” in Isaiah 21 and also Israel in Jeremiah 49-51 and “*the daughter of Babylon*” in the northern hemisphere such as the United States and Canada. (Zechariah 2:6-7) Not a single commentary has ever linked these prophecies together. Protestants completely ignored Jeremiah 51, Isaiah 21 and Isaiah 13 because these do not speak of Rome but the destruction of Arabia and Israel. It will be a similar surprise as in the First Coming. Christ was not interested in the Roman-Israeli wars, He was interested in resolving sin. The same it shall be in His Second Coming, but this time He shall destroy both for their sins after rescuing only a remnant. We shall carefully examine all the prophecies regarding such wars where (like Christ’s first coming) unpopular verses are completely ignored.

Now we can understand better the three divisions of this allegoric Jerusalem: 1—pagan and homosexual Israel and 2—the Islamic world and others 3—pagan homosexual supporting Christendom. All these spiritually stem from and focus heavily on Jerusalem now become the harlot mother including her daughters for she is a “Mother of Harlots” (she is a “mother” with other “daughters”) and is why we have several prophecies where a substructure of this “Babylon” is addressed as “daughter Zion” (Jeremiah 6:2, 23) and “daughter of My people” (Jeremiah 6:26, 8:11, 19, 21, 22, 9:1,) “virgin daughter of My people” (Jeremiah 14:17) “Arabia” as “faithless daughter” “daughter Babylon” (Jeremiah 50:42, 51:33) “Virgin Daughter Judah” (Lamentation 1:15) and Rome in Romans 1 was called “Rome, beloved of God, called *to be saints*” (v. 7) now is “faithful city become harlot” (Isaiah 1).

Only such an enterprise is how *all the kings of the earth can commit harlotry with her* and is how she (the entire enterprise) *rules the kings of the earth* and is how the earth waxes rich from her (she and her daughters *collectively* is also an industrial conglomerate) and is how some of her daughters *lives by the sea*.

At times prophecy addresses but one “daughter” of Babylon not in Iraq, the original Babylon, but in Arabia (Mecca and Medina) the center of Islam. The exodus out of this conglomerate Babylon “Come out of her My people” extends much further. So if you are sitting comfortably in New York City believing that since “Rome” is the harlot, you too will be destroyed for failing to leave Sodom-New-York.

This harlot includes all born of Jerusalem: fallen Christendom including Arabia which focuses extensively on earthly Jerusalem.

---

<sup>9</sup> Nazaryan, Alexander (31 May 2012). "The Next 100 Years," *NYDailyNews.com*.

The whole description of Ezekiel's whorehouse is Jerusalem-Sodom as the mother of harlots. No scholar can deny that the subject of Ezekiel 16 as well as John's Apocalypse 11:8 is the *literal city of Jerusalem* since in *both* Jerusalem (Israel) are called "Sodom" but lest anyone boast, like "Mother" like "Daughters" this is Mystery Babylon and her daughters has now been resolved in your reading. When you hear the Turks acquire nuclear missiles, prepare to FLEE.

At times claiming Christians can also be so sectarian that they become the best of liars who even lie to themselves. I have Baptist friends who believed they knew the scripture were proud to use it to chase away the Mormon and the Jehovah's Witnesses, yet when we challenged their prophetic views they chased themselves away and when we challenged them on Luther they claimed that they followed Christ, not Luther. But such a response is a lie just like the Mormon liar who says he follows Christ when he follows Joseph Smith. These are dishonest to themselves since their entire foundation stands on Luther's *scripture alone* and *faith alone* even including Luther's rejection of Rome proclaiming her to always have been Harlot and Antichrist is the definition of Lutheranism. But such definitions are not historic Christianity with its foundation already set by the fathers a millennia and half before Luther was even born. There were no Christians that has ever fit Luther's concepts.

#### EVERY SODOM SUPPORTING CITY IS DOOMED

A chapter prior to Ezekiel 16, God, in this unpopular prophecy introduces His judgment:

"Therefore this is what the Sovereign Lord says: As I have given the wood of the vine among the trees of the forest as fuel for the fire, so will I treat the people living in Jerusalem.<sup>7</sup> I will set my face against them. Although they have come out of the fire [the holocaust] the fire will yet consume them. And when I set my face against them, you will know that I am the Lord. <sup>8</sup> I will make the land desolate because they have been unfaithful, declares the Sovereign Lord." (Ezekiel 15:6-8)

Ezekiel 16 is without question this restoration of Israel that we witnessed "Nevertheless, I will restore their captivity, the captivity of Sodom and her daughters, the captivity of Samaria and her daughters, and along with them your own captivity" (Ezekiel 16:53) and here even that after a restoration out of the holocaust "the fire," there is yet another "fire" which will consume the remnants that remain and do not flee the city. This corresponds with the unpopular most ancient of prophecies in Numbers 24:

"But ships shall come from Kittim and shall afflict Asshur and Eber and he [Eber] too shall come to utter destruction."

"One from Jacob [Messiah] shall exercise dominion and destroy the remnant of the city" (Numbers 24:19)<sup>10</sup>

Why only is the "remnant" annihilated and what happened to the rest? They fled.

---

<sup>10</sup> Some translations renders Number 24:19 as "cities": "And one from Jacob shall exercise dominion and destroy the survivors of cities!" (ESV, RSV)

First of all, this “destruction” of the city is a collective one:

“Thus the LORD, the God of Israel, said to me: “Take from my hand this cup of the wine of *wrath*, and make all *the nations* to whom I send you drink it. .. Jerusalem and the *cities of Judah*, its kings and officials, to make them a desolation and a waste” (Jeremiah 25:15, 18)

Jerusalem destroyed? Unless one files this prophecy as fulfilled in history continuing it reveals this is impossible:

“I begin to work disaster *at the city that is called by my name*, and shall you go unpunished? You shall not go unpunished, for I am summoning *a sword against all the inhabitants of the earth*, declares the LORD of hosts” (Jeremiah 25:29)

God here summons a sword not just against “Jerusalem” (“city called by my name”) but also against all “the cities” and “all the inhabitants of the earth”. And if we just follow the “wrath” we find it:

“And another angel followed, saying, “*Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city*, because she has made *all nations* drink of the wine of the wrath of her *fornication*.” (Apocalypse 14:8)

So now we know that “the cities of the nations” (all nations that drank of her wine) will fall and then Babylon the Great (“the great city”) is remembered because “all nations” drank this “wine” that caused “fornication” which is unleashed on much more than just a city:

“Now the *great city* was divided into *three parts*, and the *cities* of the *nations* fell. And *great Babylon* was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of *His wrath*.” (Revelation 16:18-19)

So is it possible that this “great city” “drank of the wine of the wrath” because “they parade their sin like Sodom?” Indeed. Isaiah 1 was speaking to Jerusalem and the city “divided into three parts” in Revelation 16:18-19 is rendered as the “great city” is the same exact rendering as what Babel was called and where the two witnesses are murdered and without question is “Jerusalem” “where their Lord was crucified:

“Their dead bodies will lie in the main street of the *great city*, which *figuratively* is called *Sodom and Egypt*, where also *their Lord was crucified*.” (Revelation 11:8)

When we understand that this “great city” is harlot plus daughters—a mega conglomerate—includes all gay supporting major port and industrial cities like Tel Aviv, Berlin, Copenhagen, Barcelona, Toronto, Bangkok, London, Paris, Amsterdam, Madrid, Rome, San Francisco, Los Angeles and New York, it indeed is the harlot that “rules the kings of the earth.”

Before the flood God chose a handful then annihilated the rest of mankind with a flood, and the second time will be with “fire” *because that was the punishment of Sodom*. Peter adds:

“But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed with *intense heat*, and *the earth and its works* will be burned up.” (2 Peter 3:10)

You have only two choices: to trust in God’s global warming or Al Gore’s! This is not only the earth burned with “*intense heat*” but also the cosmos. 2 Peter confirms:

“looking for and hastening the coming of *the day of God*, because of which the heavens will be destroyed by *burning*, and the elements will melt with intense heat!” (2 Peter 3:12)

Such a “wrath” has not happened in the history of Christendom. Therefore, Paul’s letter to the Romans is not simply giving instruction on moral law, but like all prophets before him, he is foretelling the reason God judges the earth similar to when God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah:

“Then the LORD [Christ] rained on Sodom and Gomorrah brimstone and *fire* from the LORD out of heaven [the Father]” (Genesis 19:24)

Christ Himself annihilated these cities by fire. You might argue, “For God did not appoint us to suffer wrath” (1 Thessalonians 5:9). Indeed, but this instruction is for who obeys. The instruction is to “Remember Lot’s wife,” God (as He did for Lot) also instructed how to avoid Sodom: run. Run to the mountains and the valleys far away is at times a commandment.

Now we can unlock the oldest prophecy in Numbers 24, this “one from Jacob” “the star” after you run annihilates and exterminates “the *remnant in the city*”. What happened to the ones who were there prior? They fled. Just as Christians who fled Jerusalem when God judged her for rejecting Christ, they fled the city and so shall the wise virgins:

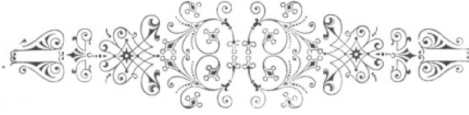
“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, *Come out of her, my people*, that *ye be not partakers of her sins*, and that ye *receive not of her plagues*.” (Revelation 18:4)

The “plagues” (plural) are many pandemics. Today we have entered the era of pandemics and many wise folks left cities. “Come out of her” and “receive not of her plagues” is no allegoric instruction but a literal commandment to “flee” cities for two reasons 1—“that ye not partake of her sins” and 2—“receive not of her plagues”. This last diaspora and exodus is all over prophecy. It is a physical and arduous endeavor where even Christ also laments:

“And alas for those who are with child and for those who give suck in those days!” (Matthew 24:19)

This is no instant pain reliever labeled 'the rapture' but is an arduous journey. If you are truly fanatical about a pre-Tribulation Rapture, perhaps you can stick around the city and keep us informed or wave at us as you pass by heading upwards towards the clouds while we shepherd flocks in the hill country. All your works are null and void since "our gathering to Him" in 2 Thessalonians 2 is after the "abomination of desolation". Your stubbornness and your trust in worthless American books will kill you.

So the instruction is for the five wise virgins to be "ready". There is a division between the wise virgins and the unwise virgins. But making yourself ready is both a spiritual and a physical endeavor (prepare for an exodus out of Babylon is a detailed and crucial instruction as to Noah building an Ark) and is why there are five virgins *prepared* which required oil and five *unprepared*. Preparation requires work. Most ignore that Noah was a prepper. He did not only build a spiritual ark but an actual ark. Abraham did not travel to a promised land by using an imaginary caravan and Christ did not warn to run to imaginary hills. Later on we shall cover the many prophecies that specifically instruct to flee, yet you were not told about these.



## THE PITFALLS

Commentators miss the correct interpretation because they fail, or they refuse to follow the main foundation:

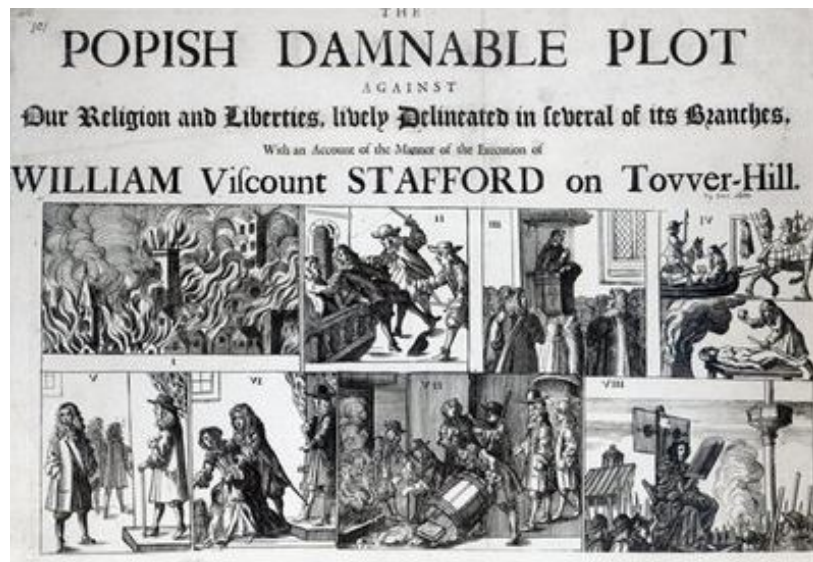
“Remember *the former things of old*, for I am God and there is no other, I am God and there is none like Me. Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times things that are not yet done, saying My council shall stand, And I will do all my pleasure” (Isaiah 46:9-10).

The reason interpreters missed Babylon the Great (as a conglomerate multiple cities) are two reasons: 1—they failed to “*remember the former things of old*,” the sin of collective rebellion began at “Babel”; “Nineveh” and its sister cities. The “Great City” was plural cities, a collective construct just as in Sodom and Gomorrah. The former repeats. 2—the other rule is that prophecy is declared for the *end*, yet it is declared from the *beginning* “*declaring the end from the beginning*”.

With most prophecies, this is not declaring the *end* of a *matter* but the *end of the age*. This is key. We examine the bulk of Old Testament prophecy *in an end of days setting* with (at times) a *dual* or even *multiple* applications for things fulfilled while keeping parables in mind yet always remember, they predominately apply for the ends of days. What protestant interpreters did is applied the first fulfillment and filed the prophecies to history, especially when such prophecies did not fit Rome 3—that we approach prophecy recognizing and differentiating the *allegoric* from the *literal*: “I speak to them in *parables*, because seeing they do not see” (Matthew 13:13). This invites God to convert us to His narrow gate which is peculiar to the world and few will find it. So “remember the former things,” that is, what is historic is to be *remembered* since prophecy repeats: “*declaring the end from the beginning*”.

In essence, what God is saying is this: Prophecy should be viewed as a declaration of the *end of the age* declared from the “beginning” and repeated in history as a type of fulfillment since prophecy expands the entire history of God’s people. The entire Scripture is prophetic established for the entire time span of God’s people and not just the end of the age while they are fulfilled as a *type* in times past.

Protestants have a major pitfall. They look at Catholics and Orthodox and Copts in dismay that these sects are not as interested in eschatology as they are, believing they have an edge. The Apostolic Succession Christians left most of the eschatological matters to the future since the fathers instructed that the main books (Daniel, Isaiah, the Apocalypse) are locked for the time of the end. When the time is ripe, as in today, a book like this one, will render worthless all Protestant anti-Rome eschatology, centuries worth of commentaries, books, pamphlets and church sermons delivered with such slander and pomposity into the garbage bin of history. For centuries, England and Germany churned papers in the same fashion of the Nazi propaganda war machine. They are welcome to bring their best to debate



this book in your hand. These filed the bulk of the end of time Old Testament prophecies into fulfilled history since the scripture went contrary to their desires. Throughout their entire history these pointed to Rome while claiming to rely solely on the scripture (Sola Scriptura). Yet the Scripture spoke of this arising Babylon without a single literal reference to “Rome” while “Jerusalem” and “Arabia” are all over it. What will such scoffers do when they find out

that their Protestant cities are also “Sodom” and “Babylon?”

So how can the Protestant unlock biblical prophecies without first repenting and acquiring history and also reviewing what the Old Testament said of Babylon the Great which was locked? It is impossible. The gravest error when one reads Protestant interpretations is that they view a type of fulfillment and then they (as we shall show several examples) put a *closure that the prophecy* is completely fulfilled. Why did they scandalously make it fulfilled? Answer: it did not fit Rome.

### HISTORY REPEATS

This is a key and ignoring history is a major pitfall. God says: “remember the former things,” adding the best advice:

“What *has been* is *what will be*, and *what has been done* is *what will be done*, and there is nothing new under the sun.” (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

In plainer language, history repeats itself and is why God says: “Remember the former things of old”. But not only that, “remember” in the eastern mindset requires an *action*. This “remember” includes all the judgments so that if God pours fire on Sodom, He pours fire on the end of days Sodom and demands the *action* for us to Flee! This is why when the church fathers analyze prophecy they borrow examples from history beginning in Genesis, Judges, Wisdom, Numbers etc ... the “former things” are the foundations. So if we are dealing with “Babylon the Great” we need to visit ancient Babel and ancient Babylon and there we find our answers as in Genesis 10 where “the Great City” sets a prime example how the so-called experts fail to recognize that we are dealing with a conglomerate—*cities*.

Another example is in the unpopular prophecies like Isaiah 47:

“Behold, they have become like stubble, fire burns them; they cannot deliver themselves from the *power of the flame*; there will be *no coal to warm* by *nor a fire to sit before!* So have those become to you with whom you have labored, who have



trafficked with you from your youth; each has *wandered in his own way*; there is none to save you.” (Isaiah 47:14-15)

This can never be the fulfillment of ancient Babylon, which was not destroyed by a sudden fire, Cyrus the Great surprised Babylon and took it discretely by utter surprise, yet the typical Protestant interpreter applies the whole prophecy to ancient Babylon when that was only a type of fulfillment. The verse already tells us, this is no fireplace, but a literal and utter *destruction by fire* where city life is abandoned, as we shall carefully examine this later on in multiple prophecies.

Isaiah 47 levels a judgment on “the lady of kingdoms,” the harlot represents control over several “kingdoms” (plural) and is what John alluded to: “The waters which you saw where the harlot sits, are *peoples* and *multitudes* and *nations* and *tongues*.” Yet when it comes to interpreting Isaiah 47, Protestant interpreters apply the historic approach and since it does not match Rome claim the prophecy to ancient Babylon. While the prophecy does apply in a sense to ancient Babylon they ignored the key ingredient “*fire*” is the method of the final “wrath” and destruction as we shall see the wealth of prophecies in this volume.

When interpreting, first we must determine the allegoric names usually uses historic references. Do not expect prophecy to state “the United States” or “the Turks”. God expects us to seek with ‘all our mind’ to see if we can find the United States and the Turks. The keys are easily found. God made it easy for the humble shepherd and impossible for the proud theological scholar.

#### THE DEADLIEST TRAP

Numbers 24 is a parable, and is perhaps the most crucial key. God set up a trap for the proud who undermine His plan in these prophecies making clear that the key is in unlocking parables or else fall into a ‘snare’. For example (out of many) Numbers 24 was a riddle, a parable “And he took up his parable” (Numbers 24:3), and Christ forewarned that parables are solved *allegorically* or else the interpreter and who believes them are all in a deadly trap:

“I speak to them in *parables*, because seeing they do not see, and hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. “And in them *the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled*, which says: ‘Hearing you will hear and *shall not understand*, and seeing you will see and *not perceive*” (Matthew 13:13-14)

This prophecy sets a rule, that no matter what a person claims, be they scholar or not, be they numbered in the millions or few, that if one fails to unlock parables and allegory, prophecy becomes a snare, a deadly trap, which Christ was referring to the Book of Isaiah: “and in them the *prophecy of Isaiah* is fulfilled” yet these do not link to Isaiah who clearly gave us the trap:

“Go, and tell this people, hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not. Make the *heart of this people fat*, and make their ears heavy, and *shut their eyes*; lest they *see with their eyes*, and *hear with their ears*, and *understand with their heart*, and *convert*, and be healed. Then said I, Lord, how long? And he answered, *until the cities be wasted without inhabitant*, and the *houses without man*, and *the land be utterly desolate*, and the LORD have



*removed men far away, and there be a great forsaking in the midst of the land.* But yet a tenth will be in it, and will return and be for consuming, as a terebinth tree or as an oak, whose stump remains when it is cut down. *So the holy seed shall be its stump.*” (Isaiah 6:6-13)<sup>11</sup>

“*Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate*” Christ quoted Isaiah’s prophecy referring to the Jewish-Roman Revolt of Bar-Kochba<sup>12</sup> against Rome, which Israel relied primarily on Numbers 24 but did not interpret the parable allegorically. In that prophecy God allows the complete destruction of “Eber” (the Hebrews) and gives victory to “Israel”. Since viewing the prophecy in a literal sense would obviously create a contradiction, the Hebrews thought they were “Israel” when the prophecy was referring to the Israel of God (the church). God set up the snare for Hebrew-Israel because they rejected His Son and Hebrew-Israel was crushed when they declared war on Rome and their cities became empty. It shall be the same for many who apply the harlot as strictly “Rome.”

Biblical Scholars, especially the Protestants, do not know how to deal with seeming contradictions and in fact create more contradictions. We shall show so many examples how prophecy becomes a snare to the tares regardless of their scholarly achievements. This needs a great deal of wisdom and attention. Numbers 24 is a dual prophecy was initially fulfilled when after Christ was crucified, Temple and Jerusalem zealots had heightened their ultra-nationalist anti-Rome agenda by declaring war on Rome, but ignored that the prophecy they relied on (Numbers 24) was a parable regarding the victory of Israel (the Israel of God) and the demise of “Eber” (the Hebrews) in the ends of days.

#### IN THE UNPOPULAR PROPHECIES ARE THEY KEYS

Today we have an array of interpretations that fit the text to their prejudices or to their sectarian traditions, or interpreters who are mostly focused on certain prophecies that completely ignore other unpopular prophecies that are crucial to putting the prophetic puzzle together.

And just as in the First Coming, it was in these *unpopular verses*, which holds the *keys* to unlock. The same will be in the Second Coming, that such unpopular prophecies will become the popular ones. The tare never learns from history’s past and such ignorance is repeated exactly as when Christ first came, it was the unpopular prophecies that set the stage, which the zealots failed to find and instead honed in on popular war prophecies focusing on the magnificent triumph of Jerusalem and its glorious temple while ignoring the mention of lowly Bethlehem, its shepherds and the Tower of Eder:

---

<sup>11</sup> Ellicot’s Commentary renders it as: “(12) And the Lord have removed men far away.—The words point to the policy of deportation adopted by the Assyrian kings.” Spurgeon completely misses it. Matthew Henry correctly recognizes: “This was in part fulfilled in the destruction of Jerusalem by the Chaldeans, when the land, being left desolate, enjoyed her sabbaths seventy years; but, the foregoing predictions being so expressly applied in the New Testament to the Jews in our Saviour’s time, doubtless this points at the final destruction of that people by the Romans”.

<sup>12</sup> The Siege of Jerusalem (70 AD) - The Great Jewish Revolt

“As for you, *tower of the flock*, *Hill* of the daughter of Zion, *to you it will come*—even *the former dominion will come*, the kingdom of the *daughter of Jerusalem*” (Micah 4:8)

Who is this? Even as young children from ancient customs we would say that a virtuous girl is like a tower. “Tower of the flock” in one sense is the Citadel, the Holy Ark, the young maiden gives birth to Immanuel in lowly Bethlehem comes “The kingdom” of Christ is born of the New Jerusalem, our mother.

Few pay attention to New Testament application to prophecy. In the past, the ancient “daughter of Jerusalem” is defended (see 2 Kings 19:21, Isaiah 37:22). There are so many unpopular prophecies about the harlot’s daughters:

“How shall I admonish you? What shall I compare to you, *Daughter of Jerusalem*? What shall I liken to you as I comfort you, Virgin *daughter of Zion*? For *your collapse is as vast as the sea*; who can heal you?” (Lam 2:13)

What scholar explains the destruction of “daughter of Edom” (Arabia):

“Rejoice and be joyful, daughter of Edom, who lives in the land of Uz; *but* the cup will pass to you as well, you will become drunk and expose yourself. *The punishment* of your wrongdoing has been completed, *daughter of Zion*; He will no longer exile you. *But* He will punish your wrongdoing, *daughter of Edom*; He will expose your sins!” (Lam 4:21-22)

As we shall examine in several prophecies, earthly Jerusalem, the fallen state of the church and Arabia are all locked in as this harlot.

## THE UNITED STATES THE FOUNTAINHEAD OF SODOM

So many times I see speculations and questions asking ‘where is the United States in Bible prophecy?’ It is without question that Europe (Western Christendom) including Israel in the East are centers for Sodom with the United States in the northern hemisphere becoming its main fountainhead. Ezekiel 16 said “like mother, like daughter”. The United States as a daughter of Jerusalem is by far the most fanatical western nation in defending Israel’s right to that city. On the opposite direction, the Muslim world by far has the most fanatical nations about defending earthly Jerusalem as a right for the Muslims. But to prove the U.S. is also a “Sodom” and a “Babylon” can be noticed without a hint of difficulty. First of all, the key to unlock the Babylon parable starts in the introductory verse:

“And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” (Revelation 17:5)

What “abominations?” We cannot deduce this on a whim like what some prophecy enthusiasts do. We need to pin-point it with clear biblical evidence. Here is the first clue:

“The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and jewels and pearls, holding in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality. And on her forehead was written a name ‘Mystery Babylon the great, mother of prostitutes and of earth’s abominations.’” (Revelation 17:4-5)

She holds “in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her sexual immorality.”

This verse is not addressing religious harlotry (as many claim) but immorality of sexual nature. But this alone is not enough proof to pinpoint to the United States the charge of being the biblical “Sodom” of Ezekiel 16 until we understand what is done with this “cup” which symbolizes this “sexual immorality” which she forces and arm-twists all the nations of the world to *drink of that cup*. In other words, it forces all nations to indulge in mimicking her indulgences in the same abominable types of sexual acts for she is “the abominations of the earth” since this is how scripture basically defines that “cup” she holds in her hand. Did I make up this interpretation out of thin air? No, Here is what she does with this “cup”:

“And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that *great city*, because she **made all nations drink** of the wine of *the wrath* of her **fornication**.” (Revelation 14:8)

So we have two issues here: 1—“*She made all nations drink*” to encourage the practice of the same “fornication”. Again, this “fornication” is literal for it clearly says “sexual immorality”<sup>13</sup> 2— The “cup” and whoever drinks of it receives “the wrath of her fornication”. That “wrath” is the same “wrath” spoken by the prophets and “made the nations drink” basically says that she *forces all nations* to abide by this immoral standard. So far Russia, much of the Middle East and Africa is immune of this charge since it still stands defiant to America’s will to enforce this immoral behavior. The key to prove our point is that she “made all nations drink” of “the wrath of her fornication”

## FOLLOW THE WRATH

The first error in searching for the harlot or Sodom is the simplistic American definition: “Mystery Babylon”. This is not how scripture defines this harlot. “Upon her forehead was a name written “Mystery,” which simply means ‘an allegory’ (translators apply a comma after the word Mystery for a reason). It is correctly and biblically called “Babylon The Great,” each “Babylon” city-state is a “daughter” and “Babylon the Great” encompasses all daughters—the whole conglomerate. So it is a parable, an allegory called “*Babylon the Great*”.

John also terms it as “The Great City” and for Jerusalem “The Mother of Harlots,” that besides her and her daughters riding the beast (she and the empire she rides, both, are the main threat to Christian values worldwide) she works in tandem and collectively with several of her adopted harlot daughters is another massive issue prophecy also addresses.

---

<sup>13</sup> Revelation 17:4-5

She is the “Abominations of the earth” (filled with abominable sexual acts) “He has judged the great harlot who was *corrupting the earth* with her *immorality*” (Revelation 19:2) confirms “made the nations drink ...” this involves the sexual revolutions mainly emanating from the United States. This also involves Jewish influence and is why John’s naming convention is the hint—a dead giveaway—this “great city” is plagued with support for homosexuality:

“Their dead bodies will lie in the main street of the *great city*, which *figuratively* is called *Sodom and Egypt*, where also *their Lord was crucified*.” (Revelation 11:8)

But we remind again and again the words of Ezekiel in chapter 16 “like Mother like Daughter”. Protestants are right on two points. Apocalypse speak of ships weeping over her so 1—Jerusalem alone does not rule over the kings of the earth and it has no shipping ports but neither does Rome rule all kings.

But prophecy says: “Come here, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot who sits on many waters” (Revelation 17:1) is the judgment of the entire conglomerate which the waters encompass many “nations tribes and different tongues.” The cup she holds for her followers to drink is precisely “sexual immorality”.

Protestants pick on the color “scarlet” without searching the scriptures to see just how much scarlet ancient Jerusalem used. But the “mother” of “the great city” in Revelation 11 and Ezekiel 16 is Jerusalem while the whole of the Roman Empire in its pagan times as a conglomerate including the future—today’s Europe, the United States, Israel and Arabia (peoples, multitudes, nations and tongues) can also be lumped as “harlot” and “woman” and “great city” even rule the kings of the earth:

“The woman you saw is *the great city* that rules over the kings of the earth.” (Revelation 17:1-6, 18)

Think of the major power pegs and its promotion of homosexuality and there you shall find “Sodom” and “Babylon the Great”. As for the Apocalypse, Scripture calls this one city Jerusalem “figuratively is called Sodom and Egypt where their Lord was crucified” as “*the great city*”. That shoe fits, and lest anyone boast “like mother like daughter” makes no difference if it is the mamacita (Jerusalem) or the young American barbie doll (the U.S.) or the Italian prostitute (Rome)—they all support Sodom. No one that supports Sodom is immune even for those pedophiles who reside at the Vatican.

The problem of the rigid Protestant interpreter is that he always equates Rome = Vatican city. This is incorrect. In Italy, both male and female same-sex sexual activity have been legal since 1890, when a new Penal Code was promulgated. A civil union law was passed in May 2016, providing same-sex couples with many of the rights of marriage<sup>14</sup> and there were times in history where Rome was indulgent in pedophilia and the Germans sacked it. God is no respecter of persons and this includes the city of Rome which is not under the control of the Vatican state, so why make the Catholic Church the only exception? There is no sense of isolating Jerusalem from Rome since both are guilty. In addition, when it says “the wrath of

---

<sup>14</sup> *Italian senate passes watered-down bill recognising same-sex civil unions*, The Guardian. 25 February 2016. Retrieved 11 May 2016.

her fornication” there is only one final “wrath” by fire and Romans chapter one speaks of this “wrath” and even the type of fornication—homosexuality (“Sodom”)—just as in Revelation 11 and also 2—paganism (“Egypt”) just as John proscribed in the Apocalypse.

And we do not have to have a single spiritual fountain in any singular “great city” that “all nations drink” from. Muslims drink from the fountain of Zamzam<sup>15</sup> in Arabia’s Mecca, Catholics from Vatican state in Rome and the Orthodox reject Rome and long for regaining Constantinople and Jews drink from their own rabbinic Kabbalist well in Safed or Jerusalem ... it makes no difference since Paul forewarned in Galatians 4:25 that anyone uplifts earthly Jerusalem or interprets it as having spiritual significance becomes “Hagar [which] is Mount Sinai in *Arabia* and corresponds to the present *Jerusalem*”.

It is strange when we compare what we believe should be God’s interests and what God alludes to His interests, the two are not the same. God views Israel and Arabia as the same. In prophecy, God is not interested in Palestinian right of return or Jewish extremists who want the right to rebuild a temple. He is not interested about American political agendas or arguments and debates as to why we must have sectarian divides out of Rome. To Him what goes on in the bedroom is His business. When Americans say “what goes on in your bedroom is your business” means you support Sodom. The right answer is ‘what goes on in your bedroom is God’s business. Offend Him long enough and He shall send the Assyrian to nuke your city.’ And if God offends you being so nose, post your comments at God.com.

#### “THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS” IS A DEAD GIVEAWAY

God’s ways are not man’s ways. When God is dealing with the most sensitive generation it is *all gloves are all off*. Never in scripture did God (in what westerners might consider vulgar) use explicit language like in Ezekiel 23 where He depicts this generation with all sorts of language being a generation akin to a whore sleeping around with well-hung Egyptians and

Assyrians taking in phalluses the size of a donkey and enjoying the emission of horses. How could English speaking peoples then miss “Mother of Harlots,” when it is equivalent to the “S.O.B” cuss word they use daily? S.O.B is not leveled to the mother (not that she only begat the bastard), but especially to her son also (who did you the offense).

### WHAT DOES EZEKIEL 23:20 REALLY MEAN?

*There she lusted after her  
lovers, whose genitals  
were like those of donkeys  
and whose emission was  
like that of horses.*

**Ezekiel 23:20**

In a similar way, it is not only the “whore of Babylon,” that we are hunting down in the scriptures, but her sons and daughters too which scripture gave ample evidence to look for the daughters as you read in multiple prophecies<sup>16</sup> the phrase “daughter of [the whore] Babylon”. In other words, this is a situation where Israel (and her Christendom daughters) is

<sup>15</sup> The Zamzam Well in Mecca, the holiest place in Islam claimed to sprout for Abraham's son Ishmael when his mother Hagar in the desert, thirsty and crying. Millions of pilgrims visit the well each year while performing the *Hajj* or *Umrah* pilgrimages in order to drink its water.

<sup>16</sup> Psalm 137:8, Isaiah 47:1, Jeremiah 50,42, 51:33, Zechariah 2:7

infected with a sin that it did not contract in its history on such massive scale as we see today the open support for Sodom. Ezekiel 16 speaks of this Sodom includes Jerusalem's "daughters" who were her "sisters" with Israel as their original mother and she is also described as "prostitute" and a "mother" with "daughters" matching perfectly John's "mother of harlots" and both prophecies confirm what we are dealing with: a mother harlot and harlot sisters who are also daughters. This "mother" without any doubt is earthly Jerusalem, Ezekiel mentions her by name. When it comes to the United States, years ago, the wise justice Scalia forewarned "It begins with stuff that we all agree upon ... and at the bottom of that slope is same-sex marriage"



- Facebook
- Twitter
- Comment
- Print



ON THE BENCH

## Justice Scalia Is a Homophobe

By BARNEY FRANK | June 26, 2015

*Barney Frank is a Politico columnist and a former Democratic representative from Massachusetts.*

Scalia was correct. And lest we get accused of anti-Semitism on this one, Jews themselves proudly admit:



# Tikkun תיקון

The Prophetic Jewish, Interfaith & Secular Voice to Heal and Transform the Wo

Magazine ▾ About Tikkun ▾ Community Activism Rabbi Michael Lerner Tikkun Institute Beyt Tikkun Contact ▾

Politics & Society

Ecological Transformation

Justice for All

Israel/Palestine

Emancipatory Spirituality

Jewish Wis

## How Jews Brought America to the Tipping Point on Marriage Equality: Lessons for the Next Social Justice Issues

By Amy Dean | March 10, 2014

In a few short years, same-sex marriage went from being an untouchable political hot potato to a broadly accepted civil right in eighteen states and the District of Columbia. Jews, and their social justice organizations, helped make that happen. In fact, this magazine was a prophetic voice of marriage equality, supporting same-sex unions in the early 1990s and helping to lay the groundwork for the current wave of victories.



The story of Jews' contributions has continuing political relevance. The campaign for marriage equality offers valuable lessons for how to break through public resistance on other issues that Jewish groups are now addressing, including economic justice initiatives like paid sick leave, rights for domestic

In the above caption, the major Jewish media outfit Tikkun which titles itself as “The Prophetic Jewish, Interfaith & Secular Voice to Heal and Transform the World” explains in detail “How Jews Brought America to the Tipping Point on Marriage Equality” “it is worth examining how Jewish activists gathered enough force to help push the state-by-state dominoes over to legalizing same-sex marriage”:

“In a few short years, same-sex marriage went from being an untouchable political hot potato to a broadly accepted civil right in eighteen states and the District of Columbia. Jews, and their social justice organizations, helped make that happen. In fact, this magazine was a prophetic voice of marriage equality, supporting same-sex unions in the early 1990s and helping to lay the groundwork for the current wave of victories. The story of Jews’ contributions has continuing political relevance. The campaign for marriage equality offers valuable lessons for how to break through public resistance on other issues that Jewish groups are now addressing ... In 2009, for example, the broader political climate—especially broad swaths of the Christian community—was hostile to same-sex marriage. That year, large religious organizations such as the Roman Catholic Church, the Southern Baptist Convention and the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints (Mormon Church) arrayed themselves against it; leaders from these and other Christian groups signed a document that year called the Manhattan Declaration, that which claimed the Bible prohibits same-sex unions. (Over half a million people have since signed the Manhattan Declaration, although many others say it misinterprets Biblical teachings.) Around that time, even mainstream liberals, such as President Obama, resisted fully embracing gay and lesbian marriages, preferring to offer lesbian and gay couples the separate-but-equal legal category of

civil unions. “A lot of people, five years ago, would have said ‘Well, I support civil unions. We don't need to call it marriage, because that's a certain thing, but it would be the same legal rights,’” says Hadar Susskind, director of the national Jewish grassroots political organization Bend the Arc Action and Bend the Arc PAC. “And I say we, because that was me at some point. We had to believe that that was sort of the progressive position.”

“The victories in the states around marriage equality owed much to local and national Jewish social justice groups who looked beyond the political consensus of the time. Even five years ago, many of these groups stood behind same-sex couples who wished to marry. National Jewish social justice organizations such as the National Council of Jewish Women, the Religious Action Center of Reform Judaism, and Bend the Arc (on whose board I currently serve as co-chair) helped to galvanize the American Jewish community to support pro-marriage equality bills in the states. In fact, Jews can claim a fair share of the credit for bringing Americans to a tipping point of accepting marriage equality. If Jewish social justice organizations can bring the lessons from their victories on marriage equality to their work on the minimum wage and other economic justice issues, there may be more victories ahead.”

This means Israel's revival during 1948-1967, while fulfilled by God is for the redemption of a portion and the destruction of most for it is supporting the parading throughout the streets of every major city without shame “parading his sin *like Sodom does*” and “they do not even try to hide it.”

There is no escape that the United States has become the main fountain that is making “all nations drink” the cup of this immorality:

“And another angel followed, saying, “*Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.*” (Apocalypse 14:8)

It is the ones who “made the nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication” is not allegoric “fornication” but literal since: “the Abominations of the earth,” means it is filled with abominable acts: “He has judged the great harlot who was *corrupting the earth* with her *immorality*” (Revelation 19:2) is the most abominable type of sexual immorality mainly stemming from the United States by much aid from the Jewish community is a confirmation that the United States represents this “harlot”.

#### REMEMBER LOT'S WIFE

Allow us now to fully explain what Christ meant when He foresaw this as He was answering the disciples about His Second Coming. In an eastern mindset Christ simply said to “remember Lot's wife.” This very simple eastern instruction is given to unlock much since scripturally “remember” is not simply the opposite of “forget”. To “remember Lot's wife” requires that 1—there will someday be a Sodom and 2—In the eastern mindset “remember Lot's wife” always requires an *action by God and action by man*—to flee Sodom and never look back.



To prove this interpretation I just gave I shall site several examples on “remember”:

“That you may be *remembered* before the LORD your God, and you shall be *saved* from your enemies” (Numbers 10:9)

“You may be remembered” is an *action* of *saving* you from your enemies. “Remembrance” is *inseparable* from a resulting *action*:

“But God *remembered* Noah and all the beasts and all the cattle that were with him in the ark; and God *caused a wind to pass over* the earth, and the water subsided.” (Genesis 8:1)

Remembrance here is to “cause” (an action) “God caused a wind to pass over the earth, and the water subsided” Noah’s part was to build an Ark.

Then God *remembered* Rachel, and God gave heed to her and *opened her womb*. (Genesis 30:22)

“For He *remembered* his holy promise and Abraham his servant. And He *brought forth His people* with joy and His chosen with gladness” (Psalm 105:42-43)

The same goes for Communion “do this in remembrance of Me” is an *action* (Holy Communion) that without this action, the transaction is null and void.

This one word “remember” throws off the entire structure on Protestant essentials, Communion is one, since these become disobedient faithless lazy servants. This is a serious issue which Christ, Daniel and John dealt extensively with as we shall expound later on how Antichrist through the seed of the Protestant reformation desecrates Holy Communion.

When God says: “remember” is a crucial covenant.

So what does it mean for God when He says He “remembered” Babylon? Here it is again:

“The *great city* was *split* into *three parts*, and *the cities of the nations fell*. *Babylon the great* was *remembered in the sight of God*, to give her the cup of the wine of His ***fierce wrath***.” (Revelation 16:19)

Firstly, this verse alone proves Babylon is “the cities of the nations” that took the Sodom route. To “remember” Babylon pertains to the *action* required by both 1—God’s part: “and the cities of the nations fell,” is God’s *action* against Babylon and the action on our part (Lot’s part) “come out of her My people” (Revelation 18:4)

Here is another example how “remember” is used:

“And it came to pass, when God destroyed the cities of the plain, that God *remembered* Abraham, and *sent Lot out* of the midst of the overthrow, when he *overthrew the cities* in the which Lot dwelt.” (Genesis 19:29)

God “remembered Abraham” means He took *action* to rescue Lot who must also take *action* by obeying the instruction as God “overthrew the cities” of Sodom and Gomorrah “in which Lot dwelt”. This constituted each and every city that supported homosexuality including all who looked towards it (Lot’s wife) which reveals how careless one can be during these times where not only Lot’s wife was punished but also his sons in law were buried under the rubble for not heeding the instruction.

Secondly, “His fierce wrath” is the same as: “For the *wrath* of God is *revealed* from *heaven* against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in *unrighteousness*” (Romans 1:18)

Thirdly, “because what may be known of God is manifest in them, for God has *shown it to them*.” (Romans 1:18-19) makes it clear this judgment includes the fallen church that have “known God.”

While interpreters ignored Paul’s Epistle to the Romans in its first opening, in Chapter One, regarding the “wrath” and how this abominable fornication reflects Isaiah Chapter One; Paul and Isaiah’s prophecies were not simply instructions on moral law but like all the prophets were speaking of the “wrath to come” giving us the main reasons. The message of Romans 1 is the warning to the whole of Christendom. Paul was simply reflecting Isaiah:

“Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O *earth*! For the LORD has spoken: “I have nourished and brought up children, and they have *rebelled* against Me” (Isaiah 1:2)

“Alas, *sinful* nation, A people laden with iniquity, A brood of *evildoers*, children who are *corrupters*! They have *forsaken the LORD*, They have provoked to anger The Holy One of Israel, they have turned away *backward*. (Isaiah 1:4)

“Hear the word of the LORD, You *rulers of Sodom*; Give ear to the law of our God, you *people of Gomorrah*” (Isaiah 1:10)

“The expression of their faces bears witness against them, and they *display their sin like Sodom*; they do not even conceal it. Woe to them! For they have brought evil on themselves.” (Isaiah 3:9)

“O My people! Their oppressors are *children*, and *women rule over them*. O My people! Those who *guide you lead you astray* and confuse the direction of your paths.” (Isaiah 3:12)

“just as Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities around them, since they in the same way as *these indulged in gross immorality* and went after *strange flesh*, are exhibited as an example in undergoing the *punishment of eternal fire*.” (Jude 1:7)

“It was also about these men *that Enoch*, in the seventh generation from Adam, prophesied, saying, “Behold, the Lord came with many thousands of His holy ones,” (Jude 1:14)

“that they were saying to you, “In the last time there will be mockers, following after their own *ungodly lusts*.” (Jude 1:18)

These prophecies describe exactly what we see today even including women ruling over their husbands is all regarding Israel and the Christian nations that turn the clock "backward" "they have turned away backward" towards Sodom where Lot's wife was disobedient is also clear in Ezekiel 16 including the added feminism just extra proof that God "foretells the end from the beginning" (see Isaiah 46:9-10). Romans 1 was addressing homosexuality including the return "backward" towards paganism as the spark of the "wrath" in Romans 1:9 is unquestionably judgment day similar to the wrath upon ancient Sodom—by "fire"—spoken of by all the prophets. This has not happened in either the history of Israel or in the history of Christendom making these prophecies without question regarding the near *future*.

It is also crucial to note, that Paul is addressing an entity that had the knowledge of God; a people who "God is plain to them," "because God has shown it to them" in all of prophecy, and yet they "suppress the truth" as warned in Isaiah 3 "your guides lead you astray" and therefore, this is speaking of the fallen-church Paul warned in 2 Thessalonians II (the "falling away" and lawlessness arising, just prior to Antichrist): "Let no one deceive you by any means; for [that Day will not come] unless the falling away comes first":

"For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work" "The coming of the [lawless one] is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness." (2 Thessalonians 2:7-12)

Therefore, Paul is not simply giving instruction on moral law, but like all prophets before him, he is foretelling the reason God judges the earth:

"Therefore God gave them up in the lusts of their hearts to impurity, to the dishonoring of their bodies among themselves, because they exchanged the truth about God for a lie. For this reason God gave them up to dishonorable passions. For their women exchanged natural relations for those that are contrary to nature; and the men likewise gave up natural relations with women and were consumed with passion for one another, men committing shameless acts with men and receiving in themselves the due penalty for their error." (Romans 1:27-28)

"But because of your stubbornness and your unrepentant heart, you are storing up wrath against yourself for the day of God's wrath, when his righteous judgment will be revealed." (Romans 2:5)

"BECAUSE HIS JUDGMENTS ARE TRUE AND RIGHTEOUS; for He has judged the great harlot who was corrupting the earth with her immorality, and HE HAS AVENGED THE BLOOD OF HIS BOND-SERVANTS ON HER." (Revelation 19:2)

What “penalty” is Paul speaking of and what is the “error” that the spirit of Antichrist brings? *Giving up natural affection* between male and female and the role of men being led by their wives.



It is this error (lesbianism, homosexuality, reversing roles) that is the *effect* while “exchanged the truth about God for a lie” is the *cause*. This sin of believing in a lie, deception and falsities and following error about God’s instruction is what caused this phenomenon. What woman today wants to hear a sermon on how to emulate Mother Mary?

And since “the wrath of God is revealed from heaven ...” has not happened yet makes Romans chapter one, besides being an instruction on moral laws, it becomes prophetically similar to what Isaiah and Ezekiel and John warned about.

And similarly, just as John in Revelations put the two “Sodom and Egypt” together alluding to both sins of *homosexuality* and *paganism*, Paul sets homosexuality as an *effect* and paganism as the *cause*:

“For although they knew God, they did not honor him as God or give thanks to him, but they became futile in their thinking, and their foolish hearts were darkened. Claiming to be wise, they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images resembling mortal man and birds and animals and creeping things.” (Romans 1:22-23)

“For although they knew God” is strictly addressing Christendom, which will plunge into syncretism by blending the truth about God with paganism: “images resembling mortal man and birds and animals and creeping things”.

All who approve—regardless that they are heterosexual—are also condemned:

“And since they did not see fit to acknowledge God, God gave them up to a debased mind to do what ought not to be done. <sup>29</sup> They were filled with all manner of unrighteousness, evil, covetousness, malice. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, maliciousness. They are gossips,<sup>30</sup> slanderers, haters of God, insolent, haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, disobedient to parents, foolish, faithless, heartless, ruthless. Though they know God’s righteous decree that those who practice such things deserve to die, they not only do them but give approval to those who practice them.” (Romans 1:28-29)

This will be the result of Christendom that “know God’s righteous decree” turned syncretistic mixing pagan ideas with the truth. Paul in a similar fashion to Isaiah’s “giving them [Sodom] comfort” condemns to destruction “who practice such things deserve to die” includes all who “give approval to those who practice them”.

And today just try asking the western theologian, priests, pastors and rabbis about these verses and see how they respond. Most step on each others toes hurrying to be the first to circulate flawed arguments about homosexuality. Prophecies are being fulfilled in your sight and many are unaware.

So this phenomenon is not simply a rise in homosexuality but a rise in *approving it*. When God examined ancient Sodom, it was not only the issue of rampant homosexuality; His deal with Abraham was not to simply find ten heterosexuals, but “ten righteous”. Sure, homosexuals were always in this world but God also condemns all who “also approve of those who practice them”. Again, examine carefully:

“who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things [homosexuality] are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them.” (Romans 1:32)

It is crystal clear: “but also approve of those who practice them.” And it is not only these two that constitutes the camp of the “unrighteous,” Paul includes one more:

“For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness” (Romans 1:18)

It is clear that the bulk majority today from fallen pastors and priests “suppress the truth in unrighteousness”. Most of these have read this prophecy and it pertains to them for they too are in it. Today it is rare to see teachers give sermons on Genesis 19 without fear to mention the sodomites and therefore these are guilty for they “suppress the truth”. Genesis 19 is in itself a prophecy.

So it is a misconception to think that God only judges the homosexuals or that He judges a world because we have homosexuals. This is not the case. The wrath also pours out on the ones who support homosexuality “but also: 1—approve of those who practice them” “so that you may bear your disgrace and be ashamed of all you have done in giving them [Sodom] comfort” (support) and 2—the ones who refuse to leave Babylon “come out of her My people”<sup>17</sup> 3—“suppress the truth in unrighteousness.”

Some literalist might argue that this prophetic “Sodom” in Ezekiel 16 will be where the original Sodom was—by the Dead Sea in Jordan—and “Samaria” is simply the cities north of Israel. Beware of the literalist who fails to unlock parables. The prophecy is an allegory and this is a sister-daughter, *born of Jerusalem* and ancient Sodom was not remotely related as “relative” of Israel and God calls Jerusalem itself as giving comfort to Sodom her “sister” and He is amazed since Israel “would never mention” Sodom in the day of her zenith: “You would not even mention your sister Sodom in the day of your pride.” (Ezekiel 16:56) In other

---

<sup>17</sup> “A 1-megaton bomb (that's about 80 times larger than the "Little Boy" atomic bomb dropped on Hiroshima, Japan) could temporarily blind people up to 13 miles away on a clear day, and up to 53 miles away on a clear night.” See article from Business Insider by Alex Bendix, September 21, 2019. Temperatures will reach “540,000 degrees Fahrenheit - ... bodies are cremated ... humans were almost instantly reduced to their most basic minerals.” “The largest nuclear weapon ever tested is the 50 megaton Tsar bomb that was dropped on an isolated island in Russia, and released roughly the energy of 3,333 Hiroshima bombs combined” Sciencealert.com, January 30<sup>th</sup>, 2017 Russia is working on the Tsar Bomba twice more powerful than the Tsar 6,666 Hiroshima bomb.

words, God is saying that Israel in ancient times would never even think to consider becoming Sodom.

And then we have a massive destruction against what God calls “the glory of the kingdoms”:

“And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms ... shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.” (Isaiah 13:19)

We all speak of “Babylon,” as if God only gives us this nickname. In scripture God nicknames her and gives her several allegoric names “the Great City” “Egypt” and “Sodom” (for Jerusalem) and “Gomorrah” for her daughter cities of the nations. And we find her in several unpopular prophecies. This is not some original location of ancient Sodom. Firstly, in Ezekiel 32 we have the judgment of both beast and harlot:

“Son of man, wail for the *multitude of Egypt*, and cast them down, even *her*, and the *daughters* of the *famous nations*, unto the *nether parts of the earth*, with them that go down into the pit.” (Ezekiel 32:18)

This is an allegoric “Egypt” part of the same allegoric “Egypt” John mentions where the two witnesses are martyred and this punishment includes “*Daughters of the famous nations*”. One can imagine what God had in mind by describing this conglomerate as “daughters of the famous nations”. Does scripture have to spell out the United States or the famous NATO nations? This ‘Mystery Egypt’ is the allegoric “Sodom and Egypt” including all its nations:

“Son of man, take up a lamentation over Pharaoh king of Egypt and say to him, ‘You compared yourself to a *young lion of the nations*, yet you are like the *monster in the seas*; and you burst forth in *your rivers* and *muddied the waters* with your feet and fouled their *rivers*.’”

Here we have the same waters where the woman sits. This “young lion” (young nation) is that one that “muddied the waters”. The “waters” here are the multitude of nations, tribes and tongues. “Muddied” is to infect them with counter-Christian ideas that involve the corruption of Christianity.

While many believe that America is a “Christian nation,” God is not fooled. Part of America’s heart and foundation from its inception to now is that its foundation stands on Freemasonry which hold that God, “the Great Architect,” founded Freemasonry, and that Jesus is listed as “the Grand Master” crediting themselves with the building of Noah's ark, the Tower of Babel, the pyramids and Solomon's Temple borrowing their history and traditions of cultic groups such as Druids, Mithars, Egyptian priesthood, Rosicrucians and others to weave its own manufactured history creating a religion unto itself based primarily in America. They display a Bible on their “altar,” combining Jews, Moslems, Hindus or other non-Christian religions. In France, in 1877, the “Grand Orient” Lodge eliminated the need to believe in God or the immortality of the soul, thereby admitting atheists into their fold; this atheistic type of Freemasonry spread particularly in Latin countries. It is syncretism to the core where INRI, the very symbol on the Crucifix “*Iesus Nazarenus Rex Iudaeorum*,” i.e. *Jesus of Nazareth King of the Jews* now is changed to “*Igne Natura Renovatur*

*Integra*" ("the fire of nature rejuvenates all") referring to the sacred fire's (truth and love) regeneration of mankind, just as the sun regenerates nature in the Spring. And from Europe this pagan infection traveled to the United States where its founders Benjamin Franklin, Hancock, Revere, John Paul Jones and mainly George Washington who was Master of Alexandria 'as in Egypt' Lodge No. 22 consecrated the foundation cornerstone of U.S. Capitol in 1793.

These are the systems of principalities.<sup>18</sup> Today there is no region on earth that "muddied the waters" spread immorality, homosexuality, Eugenics, pornography, birth control, abortion, feminism and women empowerment, city life and the love of glamour, sensuality and metropolitan lifestyle like the modernized western societies especially the United States.

If anything, the United States is acting as the prime anti-Christian *harlot* one cannot ignore and is certainly what created the *beast* by utilizing Turkish efforts to reconnect with its past Ottoman influence in the Middle East as means to thwart Russia and safeguard American interests in the region. By advancing its NATO ally Turkey, Erdoğan now has accomplished a milestone in reviving the main prophetic players in what once part of the Ottoman Caliphate – the Levant, North Africa, and Mesopotamia where the U.S. in reality is aiding it to penetrate the Middle East and gain a geopolitical stronghold, which would also be utilized to safeguard American interests while undermining its ally Israel. The Arab states realize this and is why some are rushing due to President Trump's efforts to make peace with Israel in hope that Israel can aid them in neutralizing Turkey. This (as prophecy reveals) will backfire where Iran and Turkey with its allies will strike both Israel and Saudi Arabia. The U.S. plan to destabilize Russia via Turkey, through its Islamic rhetoric, which is being projected into the most ruthless of warriors, the Caucasus and Central Asian Turkic states that are volcanic will fulfill prophecy creating the greatest instability in this region as they with their NATO allies did in Iraq, Egypt, Libya and Syria. This will ignite to create a security quagmire for Russia, which will in the long run backfire on the U.S.

Turkey has restarted drilling attempts in the East of the Mediterranean holding Greece captive through aggressive naval exercises. Neither the alliance of Athens, Egypt, and Israel would be in any position to prevent the Turkish Armed Forces from dominating the Eastern Mediterranean which will eventually threaten U.S. maritime supremacy which the U.S. remains mute on Turkey's hostile maneuvers within the Mediterranean and even in Armenia which Azerbaijan is an ally of both the U.S and Turkey. This will be one of the major factors how we will soon enter World War III.

---

<sup>18</sup> *Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita* is a Masonic document that mapped out an entire plan for the infiltration and corruption of the Catholic Church by "innovators" in the 20th century. See Cf. John Vennari, *The Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita* (TAN Books and Publishers, 1999). Also see the renowned Catholic historian Father E. Cahill, S.J., in his work *Freemasonry and the Anti-Christian Movement* that the *Alta Vendita* was "commonly supposed to have been at the time the governing center of European Freemasonry." (Rev. E. Cahill, S.J., *Freemasonry and the Anti-Christian Movement*, (Dublin: Gill, 1959) p. 101.)

With the undermining of Christian morals, this “harlot” becomes allegoric “Pharaoh” has a dual nature, one allegoric of Lucifer (the little horn) whom the nations consumed him as a faulty Eucharistic sacrifice as we shall explain later on resembling this allegoric “Egypt”.

So when Christ says regarding His Second Coming to “*Remember Lot’s Wife,*” it encompasses much

THIS WHORE IS  
M A S S I V E

If our prophetic perception is correct, that every city that supports Sodom is included in this judgment and that this harlot is a multitude of cities, then we shall find ample evidence in the scripture and we do. The crucial key to solve the Babylon riddle is in the Apocalypse itself, that which (similar to Babel and Babylon) divides this “great city” conglomerate into “three parts”:

“The *great city* was *split* into *three parts*, and *the cities of the nations fell*. *Babylon the great* was *remembered in the sight of God*, to give her the cup of the wine of His fierce wrath.” (Revelation 16:19)

Notice the first major clue “the cities of the nations fell”. The three-part “Babylon” includes the “*cities of the nations*” which are destroyed.

Earthly Jerusalem, the “mother” is a substructure of this conglomerate. This earthly Jerusalem is the metaphoric “Sodom and Egypt” is also “Mystery Babylon” a Sodom supporting global Mecca and is why:

“The *waters* which you saw, where the harlot sits, are *peoples, multitudes, nations,* and *tongues.*” (Revelation 17:15)

John does not use the word ‘represents’ nations and tongues but “are peoples, nations ...” where the harlot “*sits*” as “sitting on the [entire] beast”. The beast lifts her up. She is an intricate part of this equation as a Salome (the harlot) doing the sexual seductive dance for Herod (the beast) to gain the Baptist’s head. “Where the harlot sits,” is the entire conglomerate (“the great city”) includes “nations” (plural) “peoples” (plural) and “different tongues” (multiple languages). This is not exclusively Italian or exclusively Hebrew or exclusively English but multi-ethnic multi-lingual and multi-national plural cities, which represents one of the two parts of this equation of harlot and beast, both are persecutors of the true church. So besides the harlot, we also have an entire beast to contend with including (as we shall see in Section VI) fallen Catholic and Protestant aiders and abettors who cooperate in the Abomination of Desolation. Babylon in itself encompasses any of these cities and nations separate from the beast, yet is an intricate player as its head. This woman is at times referred to by any of its cities “daughter” or all of her cities collectively just as Genesis 10 laid out—the interpretive foundation calls Babel’s multiple cities “the Great City” which (as in the ancient) ruled the world:



“Therefore its name was called *Babel*, because there the Lord confused the language of *the whole earth*; and from there the LORD scattered them abroad over the face of the whole earth.” (Genesis 11:9)

“The whole earth” was called “Babel” which was clustered in what God called a city, which were several cities.

#### BABYLON IN THE NORTHERN HEMISPHERE

Just how much is the expanse of this “Babylon” and her daughters? Just take one “daughter of Babylon” in the far north:

“Come! Come! Flee from *the land of the north*”, declares the Lord, “*for I have scattered you to the four winds of heaven*,” declares the Lord. Come Zion! Escape you that dwell with *the daughter of Babylon*” (Zechariah 2:6-7)

Is this “daughter of Babylon” “Rome?” Rome is not “north” but south of Europe and West of Israel. Is this ancient Babylon in Iraq and Zechariah is simply addressing Israel to flee? Why flee when Cyrus defeated Babylon and issued a decree for Israel to comfortably go home and even rebuild their temple? And is Iraq (ancient Babylon) really “north”? For centuries Protestant interpreters have made such prophecies to have been fulfilled by jimmy-rigging an escape from ancient Babylon as north of Israel. Is it? Is this the exodus of Jews from Russia or is it America turned Babylon and the Christians are allegorically exiles? Are we not “strangers and exiles on the earth” (Hebrew 11:13) seeking “a better *country*, that is, a heavenly one. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God; for He has prepared a city for them.” (v.16) Are we not greeted as: “James, a bond-servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, To the twelve tribes who are dispersed abroad: Greetings.” (James 1:1)



While we find no text that mentions the United States, but how can we fail to note that it does mention “daughter of the famous nations” (Ezekiel 32:18) which few years ago no interpreter can fathom how it is involved. This mighty and most “famous” nation that fought Russia’s Communism contracted from the Muslim orient the worst epidemic ever: sodomy. Few decades ago the Pope led the world in speaking of Fatima and the “errors of Russia” spreading to the ends of the earth unless the Pope gives a simple speech consecrating it to the Immaculate Heart. Now we see the errors of America spreading far and wide, has now become the fountain gushing forth such immorality to the entire globe, has itself become the most difficult nation on earth to exercise the freedom to treat or expose it. It condemns

Russia continually, not for any attempts to re-embrace Communism, but for not converting to Sodom? I lament in Babylon and pray “O Mother Mary, speak to Thy Son to have the Patriarch of Moscow and all Rus to make a speech and consecrate America!” Indeed, in the United States we do have freedom of speech etched in our laws, but I dare anyone to name one prominent figure, a single athlete or even a renown clergy who openly criticized Sodom without severe repercussion?

But is it the government of the United States or its laws or its Supreme Court that currently obstructs freedom? Hardly. It is the force of the corporate world that creates cities, runs the entire system from media to social manipulation. It has persecuted us, shackled our wrists and it is not wrong for Americans to cry out: give us our freedom, unshackle our wrists for we have given all and nothing is left that we have given all we can give. We shall reserve the right to worship God no matter how darkened this world will become.

This will further escalate and in few years we shall all look back to today and as bad as things are morally compare “these were the good old days”.

But this is a clear instruction to “Flee from the land of the north”. We shall address this “Flee” in from many more prophecies. But just imagine the size of this Babylon, “Land of the north” and its entities are but one “daughter of Babylon”. Just how big is this “Babylon?” Isaiah 14 addresses an Antichrist (whom this harlot rides) as none but this “Assyrian” who says:

“I will sit on the on the *lofty mount*, on the *lofty mountains towards the north*: I will go up above the clouds: I will *be like the Most High*” (Isaiah 14:13-14)

But how far north does this “Assyrian” intends to conquer? Isaiah 13-14 refers to both, Babylon and the beast. God here declares a severe punishment:

“Behold, the day of the LORD cometh, cruel both with *wrath* and *fierce anger*, to lay *the land desolate*: and he shall *destroy the sinners thereof out of it*. For the *stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light: the sun shall be darkened in his going forth*, and the *moon shall not cause her light to shine*. And I will *punish the world for their evil*, and the *wicked for their iniquity*; and I will *cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease*, and will *lay low the haughtiness of the terrible*.” (Isaiah 13:9-10)

Isaiah 13 gives a proclamation on the destruction of this allegoric Babylon starting with Arabia and Zechariah 2 “the land of the north,” one of the very norths whom Antichrist desires to also rule. This man of sin “is this the man who made the earth tremble” wants to also rule the “lofty mountains towards the north” are nations and kingdoms that are the fattest and the richest and wealthiest in some northern region we can (for now) speculate Canada and the United States. It is impossible not to involve the “chief” nations since:

“Hell from beneath is moved for *you* to meet *you* at thy coming: it stirs up the dead for you, *even all the chief ones of the earth*; it hath raised up from their thrones *all the kings of the nations*.” (Isaiah 14:9)

The “king” of this “Babylon” desires to rule “chief ones of the earth,” is none other than Lucifer manifest in Antichrist and captain chaos definitely gains the support of the most powerful nations on earth and he is called “king of Babylon” and Ezekiel 16 explains that enjoying an abundance and being overfed is the cause of homosexuality which primarily stemmed from the United States which contracted and imported this disease from the orient.

The West in its era under Christianity has not known this phenomenon we call the homosexual movement until the 20th century. During the Christian era, whenever homosexuality was discussed, it was almost always considered an aberration imported from the Muslim orient which there it was always considered not just an acceptable practice but a norm and is why homosexuals tend to be more sympathetic towards Islam over Christianity. Islam’s history is plagued with homosexuality. The Abbasid Caliph Harun al-Rashid spent his nights with a boy named Al-Majin and the immoral poet Abu Nawas...Here are the verses that indicate sexual decadence and corruption in which Abu Nawas says ‘Adela blames my choice, a boy smooth as an Oryx ... leave me alone, I said, do not blame me, I am committed to what you hate and until death do us part. Did not the book of Allah instruct? To prefer boys over girls...’”

At this point we must all think that we are holy pilgrims in an unholy land, that shackled our wrists, we wander in a dark path sitting in Babylon while we remember Zion (Psalm 137:1).

And when he says that this one “loosed not who were in captivity,” think of a hundred-fold Auschwitz not allowed to depart just this one “daughter of Babylon” that matters will escalate far from what we have now as in Nazi Germany, most did not believe it could happen where few escaped prior until the ultimate surprise was the ghetto and the concentration camps only discovered in the aftermath. But this has a proviso, it will encompass the earth. And as we further examine in this volume the multiple extensiveness of a coming exodus is precisely what the scriptures foretold, an exodus from China, India, the Middle East, the West and the far Northern hemisphere where God will finally intervene causing massive conversions. So massive are the conversions that we shall finally weep in joy since: “You will be hated by all because of My name, but it is the one who has endured to the end who will be saved.”<sup>19</sup>

This is one major global holocaust unlike anything mankind will ever see stemming from northern nations that once were part of Christendom. Antichrist takes control and will not permit people to exit:

“This is this the man that troubled the earth, that made kings to shake; that made the whole earth desolate, and destroyed its cities; he loosed not those who were in captivity” (Isaiah 14:16-17)

“He loosed not those who were in captivity” think multiple Auschwitz! He must have enough nuclear capability to play the Nero and burn many cities. John says that the *beast* burns this *harlot*. The prophets give the same theme. Antichrist likely wants a new world and begins an utter nuclear disaster unleashing nuclear bombs on major cities he wishes to rule. But even prior, if we borrow from Zechariah who mentions massive civil unrest will hit major cities:

---

<sup>19</sup> Matthew 10:22, 24:13, Mark 13:13

“It shall come to pass in that day that a *great panic* from the LORD will be among them. Everyone will *seize the hand of his neighbor*, and raise his hand against his neighbor’s hand” (Zechariah 14:13)

The spark hits in one day “that day” God calls “a great panic from the Lord” where intercity strife becomes immense, especially on the elderly:

“And the people shall fall, man upon man, and man upon his neighbor: the child shall insult the elder man, and the base the honorable.” (Isaiah 3:1-2)

Today many speak of a post-Christian era, but prophecy (as we shall point in detail) is more precise, by comprehending parables and allegory we shall unlock the two name hints in the Apocalypse “*Sodom and Egypt*”. Isaiah 14 gives several clues as to the judgment on “the Assyrian”:

“Who made *the world as a wilderness* and *destroyed its cities*, who did not open the house of his prisoners?” (Isaiah 14:17)

“I will rise up against them,” declares the LORD of hosts, “and will cut off from Babylon name and survivors, offspring and posterity,” declares the LORD. I will also make it a possession for the hedgehog and swamps of water, and I will *sweep it with the broom of destruction*,” declares the LORD of hosts.”

God already foreknew the nuclear power and its destructive force and is why He uses: “I will sweep it with broom of destruction” a horizontal<sup>20</sup> destructive power that sweeps everything in its way. God clearly allows the Assyrian to carry out his plan: “Woe to Assyria, the *rod of My anger* and the staff in whose hands is My indignation, I send it *against a godless nation* and commission it against the people of My fury ...” (Isaiah 10:5-6)

Here, this harlot (“godless nation”) is snooker punched by this Assyrian. He destroys not one city but “cities” “who made *the world as a wilderness* and *destroyed its cities ...*” One must follow *the attributes of the city* and there you will find the *judgment*. As we shall see, Isaiah 14:17 is the snooker punch which happens in a “single day” (Isaiah 47:9). This “Assyrian” oppresses Jacob (Israel) and we see several titles 1—“King of Babylon” (Isaiah 14:4) 2—“morning star, son of the dawn” (Isaiah 14:12) and 3—the “Assyrian” (Isaiah 14:25).

While the Assyrian invades and rules literal Egypt as part of his beastly conquest (Daniel 11) he (or perhaps another) rules Mystery Egypt (harlot). Why we suspect two is simple: the beast out of the earth has two horns. (Revelation 13:11). In other words, after his conquest he is a ruler of Egypt yet he is *not*. We propose that He leads a revived Ottoman Empire.

Why do we make such a proposal? It is because we find throughout prophecy the “Gog” and “Magog” territory encompasses a Greco-Roman region including Asia Minor (the

---

<sup>20</sup> “The rate of rise of the fireball was estimated to be some 3,300 feet per second and it was expanding *horizontally* at a rate of about 1,000 feet per second. The large red luminous sphere was observed for a few minutes; at roughly 6 minutes after the explosion it was nearly 600 miles in diameter.”—The Effects of Nuclear Explosions. United States Department of Defense, pg. 46

Levant which includes Turkey, Syria, Lebanon, Palestine) “Magog” includes Armenia, Azerbaijan, Uzbekistan, Kyrgyzstan, Tajikistan, Turkmenistan, Albania, Bosnia and in Numbers 24 he invades “Assyria” (Iraq, ancient Babylon) qualifying him the title “the Assyrian,” and in Daniel 11 he invades “Egypt” Sudan, Somalia (biblical “Cush”) and North Africa biblical “Phut” which encompasses Libya, Algeria, Tunisia, Morocco, Mauritania, 5 states which were once part of the Western Roman Empire. In Ezekiel 38, he also allies with “Persia” (Iran, Afghanistan).

This construct is what we can glean from the scriptures. We would like to add other nations as Japan, Germany and others but we cannot ascertain this from scripture. The only reason we include them because prophecy reminds that history repeats. He excels in pride as he rules Asia Minor and wants to sit in its ancient temple:

“I will raise my throne above the stars of God, and I will *sit* on the *mount of assembly* in the *recesses of the north*” (v. 13)

“And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet *he shall come to his end*, and none shall help him.” (Daniel 11:45)<sup>21</sup>

We presume he wants to sit in Hagia Sophia (Christendom’s first Temple)<sup>22</sup> in the “recesses of the north” is definitely not Jerusalem which can never be said of it being “in the recesses of the north” is the city of the seven hills of Constantinople. “I will make myself like the Most High” (v. 14). This one is an “oppressor” (v. 4) “subdued the nations in anger with unrestrained persecution” (v. 6).

But how could Turkey and its allies become so powerful? This does not make sense for many. However, if we simply follow the prophetic railroad and allow it to lead us we find much. For example:

“The strong among the *mighty ones* shall speak of him and *his helpers* from the midst of Sheol, “They have gone down, they lie still, the uncircumcised, slain by the sword.” (Ezekiel 32:21)

“The strong among the mighty ones” and “his helpers” without question are nations that aid this one to gain such military power. Even Daniel confirms:

“And his power will be mighty, but *not* by his *own* power, and he will destroy to an extraordinary degree and be successful and do *as he pleases*; He will destroy mighty

---

<sup>21</sup> Taking “tent” as “temple” and as translated here “tabernacles” including palaces we should link this to the desire of building Erdogan’s magnificent castle, the plethora of Muslim mosques and shrines, an affixation by Erdogan of Turkey. Symmachus after all renders the verse as “he shall stretch out his tents of his stable between the seas in the holy mountain of power, and he shall come even *unto its height*” we must consider Hagia Sophia.

<sup>22</sup> Hagia Sophia in Istanbul (the city of seven hills) a temple built in Byzantine times, a Roman Catholic cathedral under Latin Empire converted to a mosque in Ottoman times under Muhammad II reconverted by Erdogan again starting July 2020.

men and the *holy people*.” (Daniel 8:24)

This Assyrian gains his support from the most powerful leaders of the earth “It arouses for you the spirits of the dead, *all the leaders of the earth*. It raises all *the kings of the nations* from *their thrones*.” (Isaiah 14:9) He is a Nero for he even destroys his own nation: “you have ruined your country, you have slain your people.” (Isaiah 14:20) He turns on Mystery Babylon and God uses him to judge her:

“I will rise up against them,” declares the LORD of hosts, “and will cut off from Babylon name and survivors, offspring and posterity,” declares the LORD. I will also make it a possession for the hedgehog and swamps of water, and I will *sweep it with the broom of destruction*, declares the LORD of hosts.” (Isaiah 14:22-23)

The cities of Mystery Babylon (which the Assyrian destroys) become a place for wild animals, empty, uninhabited, we presume, after a massive nuclear attack from the Assyrian against the harlot. We estimate that one of the two horns is the eleventh horn who leads the 10-horned beast and his hand “is stretched out to all the nations” (v.26). Notice that prophecy when speaking of this beast it is with ten horns and when speaking of the evil one, he is somewhat separate from it but comes from amongst them.<sup>23</sup>

This conglomerate harlot rides this beast at times spiritually (as daughter Babylon Arabia) or by sheer power as in NATO control over Turkey. The harlot becomes a burden for the beast who lambasts her luxury. When ancient Jerusalem was destroyed by the Romans, Jerusalem did not ride that beast, so that old paradigm can never fit, yet today’s Jerusalem is what controls these nations to madness.

#### ARABIA—THE MOTHER OF ISLAM—IS ALSO INCLUDED

While Islam forbids homosexuality, it is the religion of loopholes. The term *mukhannathun*<sup>24</sup> is used to describe gender-variant people, usually male-to-female transgender which is now made legal in Iran and Pakistan.<sup>25</sup> After the downfall of the Ottoman Empire and the victory of Christendom over it much of these aberrations were wiped out. From Sati<sup>26</sup> in India to boy love in the Muslim world was gone where historically almost all of the Muslim caliphates beginning with the Rashidun, Umayyad, Abbasid, Córdoba Spain, Fatimid all the way down to the Ottomans, from the highest leaders to the lowest of low they indulged in boy love. K.S. Lal, in his book, *Muslim Slave System in Medieval India*, documented the bisexual, pedophile Muslim sultans. Qutb had a boy lover,

---

<sup>23</sup> See Daniel 7:7-8, Daniel 8:9

<sup>24</sup> Everett K. Rowson (1991). "The Effeminate of Early Medina". *Journal of the American Oriental Society*. Also see Kecia Ali in her 2016 book *Sexual Ethics and Islam Regarding "medieval Muslim culture," Ali says that "male desire to penetrate desirable youth . . . was perfectly normal." Even if same-sex relations were not lawful, there was "an unwillingness to seek out and condemn instances of same-sex activity, but rather to let them pass by . . . unpunished."*

<sup>25</sup> Barford, Vanessa (February 25, 2008). "BBC News: Iran's 'diagnosed transsexuals'". British Broadcasting Corporation. Retrieved March 12, 2012.

<sup>26</sup> “Sati” originally meant a woman who performed the act of immolating herself after her husband's death



Hasan. Ultimately the degraded creature was killed by his minion when one homosexual lover named Khusrau Khan engaged the king in his intimate company and got him killed just as happened to his father. Under the Khilji Dynasty (1290-1320) Sultan Alauddin Khilji sodomized his most beloved soldier Malik Kafur, a slave boy from Gujarat after he “was castrated, converted to Islam, and was taken into Alauddin’s service”. Vincent Smith describes for example Sultan Khilji’s “addiction to disgusting vice.” Kafur ended up murdering Khilji the Sultan taking over the dynasty to only end up beheaded and taken over by Khilji’s son Qutbuddin Mubarak Shah who was also among the bisexual, pedophile Muslim sultans.

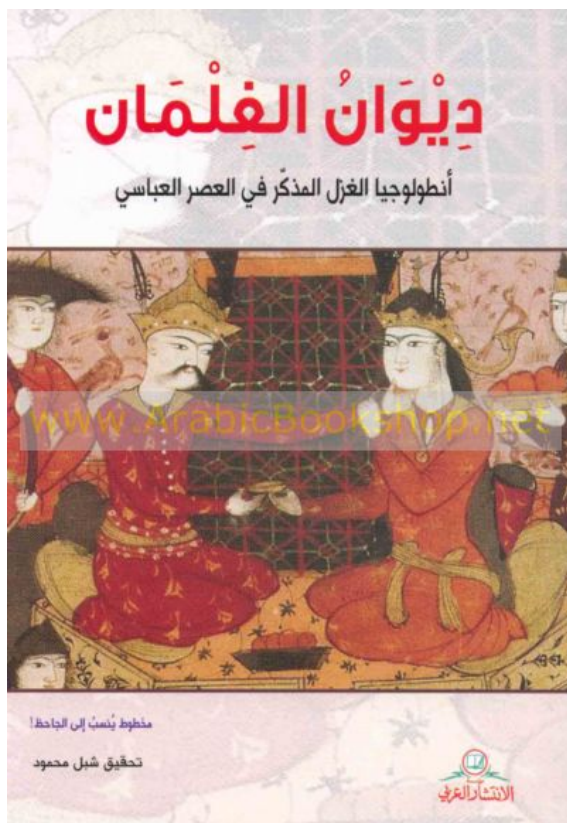
Muslim sultans were very fond of handsome young slaves whom they kept close to their persons as pages, service-boys, bodyguards, special troops and as gay companions. Infatuation for such slaves was a bane of the life of Muslim royalty and nobility in particular,

although they considered it to be a fashion. P.K. Hitti has this to say about them, *Ghilman*, who might also be eunuchs, were the recipients of special favors from their masters, wore rich and attractive uniforms and often beautified and perfumed their bodies in effeminate fashion.

We read of *ghilman* in the reign of al-Rashid; but it was evidently the caliph al-Amin who, following Persian precedent, established in the Arabic world the *ghilman* institution for the practice of unnatural sexual relations. A judge of whom there is record used four hundred such youths. Poets did not disdain to give public expression to their perverted passions and to address amorous pieces of their compositions to beardless young boys.

Moroccan journalist Hamid Tulist, in addressing the pedophilia problem in the Middle East, laments, not over some insignificant Muslim Caliphs, but the top most prestigious in Muslim history: "Even the prince of the faithful Caliph Al-Amin, son of Caliph Harun al-Rashid, bought his eunuchs and dedicated them for his private use and refused women and slaves, and anguished over his love for a boy named Kauthar, and sang for him love songs and poetry. Caliph and Commander of the Faithful of Allah, al-Wathiq bin Khalifa

Mu'tasim and Caliph Harun al-Rashid's grandson, longed for a boy called Mahj. He dedicated sweet and delicate poems for him. Commander of the Faithful and Caliph al-Walid ibn Yazid ibn Abd al-Malik was even said that he enticed his brother to sodomize him.”



Above: *The Anthology of Male Romance In The Abbasid Period*



Sultan Mahmud's court was guarded by four thousand Turkish good looking and beardless (*ghulam turk washaq*) slave-youths, who, on days of public audience, were stationed on the right and left of throne.<sup>27</sup>

To all who are shamed in the West of their Christian history I urge, speak to some of the Arab scholars who even see that the only solution to solve this problem is to convert to the Judeo-Christian form of ethics. Tulist reverts not to the Quran, Hadith or Islamic jurisprudence to solve the problem of pedophilia in the Arab-Muslim world, but to the Old Testament itself: "The first mention of a type of sexual perversion (homosexuality) stated in the first religious book known in the Arab East was Genesis, a Jewish book and the first book of the five books of the Torah. In the story of Lot where God punished sexual perversion. In fact the Arabic word 'Luat' (sodomy) came from the Hebrew 'Lot' and not from the Arabic."

Christianity and the West's history was innocent from such aberration, "The Christian West generally frowned on and even criminalized sodomy. When some nineteenth-century European elites wanted to experiment sexually, they had to go to Muslim lands. Richard Burton wrote in his terminal essay that some European elites especially, vacationed in Islamic lands specifically to experiment in the sexual perversions that were rampant, as confirmed by Murray & Roscoe and others."<sup>28</sup>

Gavin Maxwell says: "Homosexuality between man and boy was never considered in any way abnormal or shameful in Morocco until the infiltration of European opinion with the French [occupation]."<sup>29</sup>

And this is not simply a historic problem. For example, in Bahrain, the elementary school book<sup>30</sup>, gives the etiquettes of washing from ejaculation discusses the necessity to cleanse oneself and the conditions for washing "1-intercourse with the vaginal part of a woman...intercourse after ejaculating in her anus...intercourse after ejaculating in a boy's anus...after intercourse with an animal..."

"And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, *shall be as when* God overthrew *Sodom* and Gomorrah. It shall never be inhabited, neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation: neither shall the *Arabian* pitch *tent* there; neither shall the shepherds make their fold there." (Isaiah 13:19-20)

What scholar today explained how "Arabia" is called "Babylon" and is destroyed "as when God overthrew Sodom ..." that is in the same fashion and for the same reasons as a mimic of Sodom.

In Isaiah 21 and Jeremiah, Arabia is destroyed by Persia (Iran) and "Ararat" (the Ottomans) and Arabia controls these spiritually. These are Muslim and Mecca was the religious center of Muslims worldwide, that "tent" and religious center rode every Muslim

---

<sup>27</sup> Minhaj, 83-84 and n

<sup>28</sup> Yoel Natan, Moon-o-theism, vol. 2, p. 105

<sup>29</sup> Samar Habib, Islam and Homosexuality, vol. 1, p. 65

<sup>30</sup> *The Summary for The Message of Prayer, How To Teach Our Children Prayer* by Sheikh Yousuf Al-Asfuri AlBahreini, First Edition, 1989, pg. 53

nation to circumambulate and adore its rock; the black stone. This means that the Muslims would attack their holy sites as Mecca, Medina and even Jerusalem.

Plenty of Muslims have attacked the city before. In the late 7th Century, Al-Hajjaj bin Yousef Al-Thaqafi (a Muslim) laid siege to Mecca and destroyed much of the Kaa'ba with stones launched from catapults. During the First World War, Saudi Arabia was actually occupied by the Turkish Ottomans. The Turks deeply resented Arab imperialism that had spread through the vast Islamic empire and made strong attempts to restrict Arab culture and language throughout their empire. This enmity and resistance was so severe that the Arabs were persuaded by the British through their envoy, T. E. Lawrence (also known as "Lawrence of Arabia"), to revolt against the Ottoman occupation and help the allies. The Turks bombarded the Kaa'ba, the most sacred shrine of all Islam. One shell actually hit the Kaa'ba. Even Islam admits that Arabia will be destroyed:

"The final battle will be waged by Muslim faithful coming on the backs of horses...carrying black banners. They will stand on the east side of the Jordan River and will wage war that the earth has never seen before. The true Messiah who is the Islamic Mehdi...will defeat Europe...will lead this army of Seljuks [Turks], He will preside over the world from Jerusalem because *Mecca* would have been *destroyed*..."<sup>31</sup>

Lucifer understands the scriptures and makes his kingdom ready to play its part. Medina is not immune from this destruction:

"The flourishing state of Jerusalem will be when Yathrib (Medina) is in ruins, the ruined state of Yathrib will be when the Great War comes, and the outbreak of the Great War will be at the conquest of Constantinople and the conquest of Constantinople when the *Dajjal* (the Antichrist) comes forth. He (the Prophet) struck his thigh or his shoulder with his hand and said: This is as true as you are here or as you are sitting."<sup>32</sup>

*Yathrib* is another name for Medina, the city of the Prophet Muhammad, the second holiest city to Islam. Constantinople is Istanbul in Turkey. Many radical Muslims perceive that Istanbul has been under the control of secular hypocritical Muslims until its recent restoration to the Islamists. So according to this prophesy, after the fall of Istanbul to the true Muslims, (which, through recent elections in 2007, has just occurred) Medina will be destroyed.<sup>33</sup>

---

<sup>31</sup> Yawm Al-Ghadab, Safar Alhwaly

<sup>32</sup> narrated Mu'adh ibn Jabal: Translation of Sunan Abu-Dawud, Battles (Kitab Al-Malahim), Book 37, Number 4281

<sup>33</sup> Ibid

“Remember, O Lord, against the sons of Edom the day of Jerusalem, who said, ‘Raze it, raze it, to its very foundation! O daughter of Babylon, who are to be destroyed” (Psalm 137:7-8).

Edom is another “daughter of Babylon,” who is in Arabia and Isaiah 13 says:

“The Arabian will no longer pitch his tent there” (Isaiah 13:20)

And Isaiah 21:9 says:

“Babylon is fallen, is fallen!” which refers to the Apocalypse 18:2 “And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, “Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen””.

We at times have “Babylon,” then “daughter of Babylon,” and all these are “Babylon the Great”. Isaiah 21 announces the destruction of two prostitutes while the Apocalypse announces the destruction of the whole whorehouse. So who is the other daughter prostitute? Arabs pass through Arabia for the Hajj (Muslim pilgrimage). So Arabia is included in this “Great Babylon” for full destruction.

#### ONLY OUR DEFINITION OF BABYLON FITS

It would be impossible to lump the prophecies of Isaiah 13 and Isaiah 21 to be about ancient Babylon, which puzzled the scholars for centuries since none of these prophecies mention any ancient Babylonian cities like “Kalneh,” “A’ccad” and “Erech” or “Nineveh” instead we find “Arabia,” “Kedar,” “Edom,” “Tema,” “Dedan” and “Dumah”—all are in the Arabian Peninsula.

Despite all this, secular scholars insist that such proclamations are regarding the destruction of ancient Babylon. This begs a Jesus-style question: when in ancient Babylon are these locations found outside of Arabia? Dumah is one of the sons of Ishmael, is also associated with Edom and Seir in Isaiah 21:11. The crucial text of Isaiah 34 with the destruction of Edom even included its “pitch” (Hebrew “Zephet”) which literally means tar-oil and is correctly translated by all as such:

For it is the day of Jehovah’s vengeance, and the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion. Its streams shall be turned into pitch [zephet] and its dust into brimstone; its land shall become burning pitch [zephet]. It shall not be quenched night or day; its smoke shall ascend forever” (Isaiah 34:8-10).

It would be absolutely impossible to allude to Isaiah 34 as a historic reference because the purpose of the destruction against Edom is over the final battle over Jerusalem, that is, the remnant Israel and the Jerusalem above. This is why He calls it “the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion.” What scholar would challenge our questions when Jeremiah pinpoints:

“The earth is moved at the noise of their fall, at the cry the noise thereof was heard in the Red sea” (Jeremiah 49:21)?

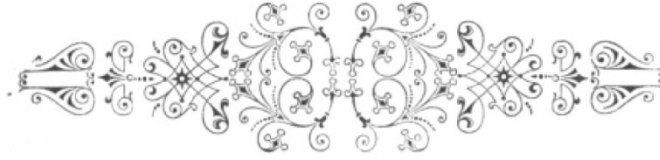
What scholars would dare state that ancient Babylon (Iraq) was by the “Red Sea?” And why is it that when secular ‘experts’ analyze these prophecies, they would toss out the history, archeology and geography insisting to attribute these verses to ancient Babylon or to Rome? And just in case one counters that Isaiah says the “Chaldeans” of Babylon-Iraq are mentioned :

“And Babylon, which is called glorious by the king of the Chaldeans, will be as when God overthrew Sodoma and Gomorra.” (Isaiah 13:19)

But this even adds more evidence to our argument and an another valuable clue—it was Nabonidus “the king of the Chaldeans” who called Yathrib (Tema) in Arabia “glorious” the issue becomes miraculous when Isaiah 13:20 says:

“The Arabian will no longer pitch his tent there” (Isaiah 13:20).

No longer will Arabia be a center. Nowhere is this better described than in Habakuk 3, which takes place in “Midian” which is in Arabia where even Christ goes to battle coming out of Midian in Arabia.



## EVANGELICALS IGNORE MANY PROPHECIES ABOUT THE PUNISHMENTS OF I S R A E L

The Jewish people are not immune from the same punishments as the gentiles. Never follow new church trends or messianic movements that study the Bible paying more emphases on being Jewish. God is *not* a racist, for racism is the product of Evolution and the New Testament clearly taught that there is no longer a difference between Jew and Gentile. Teaching superiority and exceptionalism is what God hates. He said: “blessed are the meek” and “there is neither Jew nor Greek”. Throughout the Bible God grants blessings to Israel when Israel does *right* and He shames Israel when Israel does *wrong* just as He also shamed the Nazis to heal Germany. It is unfortunate, but at times tyranny needs to be smashed and even its last remnants hunted and destroyed.<sup>34</sup> Throughout Prophecy God is indeed *pro-Israel*, but only when Israel is *pro-God*:

“Then you will know that I am the LORD, *when I bring you into the land of Israel*, the land I had sworn with uplifted hand to give to your ancestors. There you will *remember your conduct* and *all the actions* by which you have *defiled yourselves*, and you will loathe yourselves for all the evil you have done. You *will know that I am the LORD, when I deal with you* for my name’s sake and *not according to your evil ways* and your *corrupt practices, you people of Israel*, declares the Sovereign LORD.’” (Ezekiel 20:42-44)

Israel is God’s sieve but with this sieve He will also sieve Israel and the whole earth:

“Lo, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will *bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah*, ... and I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers, and they shall possess it. ... For thus saith the Lord; we have heard a voice of trembling, of fear, and *not of peace*. ... Alas! for *the day is great*, so that none is like it: it is even the time of *Jacob’s trouble*; but *he shall be saved out of it*.”— Jeremiah 30:3-7

So even after its restoration as a nation and its continual propensity to fall into sin God says: “I will *not completely destroy you*. I will *discipline you* but *only in due measure*; I will *not let you go entirely unpunished*.” (v.11)

But let us not be naïve; “I will not completely destroy you,” is like saying “I will not completely drain the cup” means that only a remnant remains.

---

<sup>34</sup> Just to examine history and see how choosing God brings liberty and how every time man goes against God ends up in tyranny ask us for a free copy of our book “For God or For Tyranny” by Theodore Shoebat. Theodore authored that book at 15 years of age while in hiding from family persecution in Mexico.

Prophecy should never ignore God's people (the predominately Gentile church):

“As He says also in Hosea, “I WILL CALL THOSE WHO WERE NOT MY PEOPLE, ‘MY PEOPLE,’ AND HER WHO WAS NOT BELOVED, ‘BELOVED.’” (Romans 9:25)

And when it comes to earthly Israel God says:

“Isaiah cries out concerning Israel, “THOUGH THE NUMBER OF THE SONS OF ISRAEL BE LIKE THE SAND OF THE SEA, IT IS THE *REMNANT THAT WILL BE SAVED*” (Romans 9:27)

Another crucial rule to remember is this:

“But *all who devour you will be devoured*; all your enemies will go into exile. Those *who plunder you will be plundered*; *all who make spoil of you I will despoil*. But I will restore you to health and heal your wounds,’ declares the LORD, ‘because you are called an *outcast, Zion for whom no one cares*.” (Jeremiah 30:6-7)

Anyone who afflicts Israel will end up afflicted.<sup>35</sup> Must we write volumes and go through all the history beginning with Assyria and ending in Nazi Germany to prove this point? When God punishes He usually uses an American style foreign policy: pitting one enemy against the other enemy.

Christ said that before He comes and when you see the “Abomination of Desolation” to flee Judea and Jerusalem:

“But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her *desolation* is near. Then let those who are in *Judea flee* to the *mountains*, and let those who are *inside the city depart*, and *let not* those who are *out in the country* enter it because these are *days of vengeance*, so that *all things which are written will be fulfilled*.” (Luke 21:20-22)

Again, this can never be the historic event when Titus destroyed Jerusalem, especially when Christ says: “these are the days of vengeance so that *all things which are written* will be *fulfilled*”. “All things” means “all things” regarding the end of the age. Therefore this can

---

<sup>35</sup> Love your enemy. I grew up a Jew hater and if I am to follow Christ and love my enemy this would be the Jew. The Jew was my enemy and I loved the Jews and still do. A great scene is “Schindler's List Ending” by Spielberg where Oscar Schindler (a Catholic) saves 1,100 Jews. It depicts the man's repentance and His love to save Jews out of the Holocaust. In life I have spoken to hundreds of thousands of Jews. I have met and spent time with fine Jewish people. For example, I met Spielberg's mother. I was not impressed that she is the mother of the best movie director, but because she was a simple woman that despite the wealth of her son, here she was when I met her serving tables at her humble small restaurant trying to earn a living like everyone else. I spent days sharing the scripture with Rabbi Eliezer Ben Yehuda, the grandson of the Ben Yehuda who established the Hebrew language for the state of Israel. Then I have also met evil Jews whose names I shall not disclose but I forgive them. Never make a blanket judgment on any people for their race. God hates racism.

never be the same event as when Titus destroyed the Temple or that such destruction hits only Judea.

Notice even a further more crucial instruction: “let those who are inside the city depart,” means what it says: “to flee” as Lot fled out of Sodom and also another very crucial instruction: “let not those who are out in the country enter it,” means what it means, to live out in the country and never enter the city. Therefore, it is wise to be out in the country and start homesteading before God pours His wrath, especially since such destruction is not strictly Jerusalem since Mystery Babylon encompasses much more:

“the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad.” (Jeremiah 51:7)



#### THEY IGNORE THE TWO WOES

Another rule to keep is that an uprooting of Israel’s crown with Jerusalem to always be destroyed is set in stone until Christ comes as this unpopular prophecy says:

“Thus says the Lord GOD, ‘Remove the turban and take off the crown; this will no longer be the same. Exalt that which is low and abase that which is high. ‘A ruin, a



*ruin*, a *ruin*, I will make it [Jerusalem]; there shall not be even a trace of it until *he comes whose right it is*; and to him I will give it.” (Ezekiel 21:26-27)<sup>36</sup>

“A ruin, ruin, ruin” declared three times is a clue. While there were multiple invasions of Jerusalem, we only had two destructions: one by the Babylonians under Nebuchadnezzar and another by the Romans under Titus (which is when after Christ came) and the other “destruction” is still yet to come. Counting how many “woe” and how many “ruin” is crucial. For example, notice when the Apocalypse says:

“Then I looked, and I heard an eagle crying with a loud voice, as it flew in mid heaven, “*Woe, woe, woe* to those who dwell on the earth, at the blasts of the other trumpets which the three angels are about to blow!” (Apocalypse 8:13) “The first *woe* has passed; behold, *two woes* are still to come.” (Revelation 9:12)

But these “two woes” are reserved for the harlot conglomerate:

“And were crying out as they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, ‘what city is like *the great city*? And they threw dust on their heads and were crying out, weeping and mourning, saying, ‘*Woe, woe, the great city*, in which all who had ships at sea became rich by her wealth, for in one hour she has been laid waste!’” (Revelation 18:18-19)

They are also reserved for “Jerusalem” and her daughters that became Sodom in Ezekiel 16:

“Then it came about after all your wickedness ‘*Woe, woe* to you!’ declares the Lord GOD” (Ezekiel 16:23)

This alone eliminates any witty sophist who plays on the allegories of the Apocalypse or attempts to file Ezekiel 16 into a historic fulfillment since the “woes” only happen at the end of the world and Ezekiel 16 is a proclamation on a harlot and it literally states her name as “Jerusalem”:

“Thus says the Lord GOD to *Jerusalem*, “Your origin and your birth are from the land of the Canaanite, your father was an Amorite and your mother a Hittite.” (Ezekiel 16:3)

And Revelation 11 clearly declares one of these “woe[s]” (the Second Woe), which we now know *for certain* is upon Jerusalem:<sup>37</sup>

---

<sup>36</sup> Regarding the “crown” see Songs of Solomon 3:11 “Go forth, O daughters of Sion, and see King Solomon with the *crown* with which *his mother crowned him* on *the day of his wedding*, the day of the gladness of his heart.” (Songs of Solomon 3:11) On a side note, who is “his mother?” When the saints come with Christ (Zechariah 14:5) is St. Mary so uninvolved while the ‘saints’ of the heretic, Joel Olsteen (the church of Laodicea) is on the front lines?

<sup>37</sup> In Revelation 11:8 it clearly says “where their Lord was crucified” and Ezekiel 16 clearly says Jerusalem

“In the same hour there was a *great earthquake*, and a *tenth of the city fell*. In the earthquake seven thousand people were killed, and the rest were afraid and gave glory to the God of heaven. The ***second woe*** is past. Behold, *the third woe* is coming quickly.” (Revelation 11:13-14)

Since she goes the pagan and homosexual route, God even changes His naming convention calls her “Canaan,” “Lebanon”<sup>38</sup> in Ezekiel 17 and as “Tyre” in Isaiah 23<sup>39</sup> and even the dreaded “Babylon” and she and the entire conglomerate the worst name ever “Sodom”: “Nevertheless, I will *restore their captivity*, the *captivity of Sodom* and her *daughters*, the captivity of *Samaria* and her *daughters*, and along with them *your own captivity*” (Ezekiel 16:53) Israel’s restoration is in sin and this sin must be dealt with:

“Men give gifts to all harlots, but you give your gifts to all your lovers to bribe them to come to you from every direction for your harlotries.” (Ezekiel 16:33)

“They will *incite a crowd* against *you* and they *will stone you* and cut you to pieces with their swords. They will burn your houses with fire and execute judgments on you in the sight of many women. Then I will stop you from playing the harlot, and you will also no longer pay your lovers.” (Ezekiel 16:40-41)

“Then a strong angel took up a stone like a great millstone and threw it into the sea, saying, “So will Babylon, *the great city*, be thrown down with violence, and will not be found any longer.” (Revelation 18:21)

Did the Protestant “scholar” miss all this? Followers of Protestantism were deceived and made to believe a myth that “Sola Scriptura” is to follow *scripture alone* and “Sola Fide” is to follow *faith alone*. Such terminology were defined by men. These flowcharted at their whim putting Rome at the top. So when prophecies simply did not fit their flowcharts (established with an agenda) they either swept it under the rug, used sophistry, played on allegory or filed it to the annals of history. This is why *you would rarely find interpretation like this one anywhere in their commentaries*. Did Micah lie when he proclaimed such destruction upon Israel in “one day” and “Babylon” is destroyed in “one hour” and also in Zechariah 14:

“It shall come to pass in *that day* that a *great panic* from the LORD will be among them. *Everyone will seize the hand of his neighbor*, and raise his hand against his neighbor’s hand” (Zechariah 14:13)

---

<sup>38</sup> “A *great eagle* with great wings and long pinions, full of feathers of many colors, came to *Lebanon* and took away the *top of the cedar*.” (Ezekiel 17:1) which God explains: “Do you not know what these things mean?’ Tell them, ‘Behold, the *king of Babylon* came to *Jerusalem*, carried off its king and officials, and brought them back with him to Babylon.”

“Son of man, put forth a riddle, and speak a parable unto the house of Israel” (v. 2)

<sup>39</sup> This one is the entire great Babylon: “thou harlot that hast been forgotten; make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered.” (v. 16) “And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that the LORD will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to her hire, and shall commit fornication with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth.” “And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the LORD” (v. 18a)

You think this proclamation is strictly for the enemies of Israel? Zechariah 12 opens up the set of prophecies with: “The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel,” and in Zechariah 14:1 “Watch, for the day of the LORD is coming when your possessions will be plundered right in front of you!”. And now Israel receives double “woe”:<sup>40</sup> “Then it was so, after all your wickedness—‘*Woe, woe* to you!’ says the Lord GOD” (Ezekiel 16:23) there is no escape and no room for any wiggle of any other interpretation; this is the same exact *two woes* remaining from the Apocalypse chapter 18 for judgment of the harlot:

“Terrified at her torment, they will stand far off and cry: “‘*Woe! Woe* to you, great city, you mighty city of Babylon! In *one hour* your *doom has come!*!” (Revelation 18:12)

It is all done in literally a single hour. Catastrophes have no pre-warning: Israel’s destruction by the Babylonians, Assyrian and Roman, Mount Vesuvius, the Great Fire of London, the outbreak of the First World War, the flue epidemic, the unsinkable RMS Titanic, the AIDS disease, the depression and the crash of Wall Street, the bombing of Hiroshima, Pearl Harbor, 9-11 World Trade Center, Covid-19, ... these all have one thing in common: *they came suddenly*, they were *swift* and had *no mercy* and no *pre-warning*.

“and cry out: “‘*Woe! Woe* to you, great city, dressed in fine linen, purple and scarlet, and glittering with gold, precious stones and pearls!” (Revelation 18:16)

“They will throw dust on their heads, and with weeping and mourning cry out: “‘*Woe! Woe* to you, *great city*, where all who had ships on the sea became rich through her wealth! In *one hour* she has been brought to ruin!” (Revelation 18:19)

Here it is the judgment on the entire conglomerate. What Protestant interpreter pointed to this? And lest anyone claims these “two woes” are insignificant, the original proclamation was given as three woes:

As I watched, I heard an eagle that was flying in midair call out in a loud voice: “*Woe! Woe! Woe* to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the trumpet blasts about to be sounded by the other three angels!” (Revelation 8:13)

---

<sup>40</sup> Babylon has two “fallen” in the Apocalypse as well as Isaiah 21. The last two woes in the Apocalypse, prior to sending these two woes the church is tested: “And he said to me, “You must prophesy again about many peoples, nations, tongues, and kings” (Revelation 10:11) involving the measuring of the Temple (testing the ones who adore the Altar by persecution and leaving out the ones who have no altar of sacrifice, then the Two Witnesses send the plagues as they see fit. One woe left “the hour of His judgment has come” (Revelation 14:7) and then the two “woes” upon the harlot 1—“And another angel followed, saying, “Babylon is *fallen*, is *fallen*, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.” (Revelation 14:8) two “fallen”, the second “fallen” is regarding the last woe, the seven bowls upon the harlot “For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, And You have given them blood to drink. For it is their just due.” (Revelation 16:6) The city accused of shedding the blood of the prophets is non-other than earthly Jerusalem.

“The first woe is past; *two other woes* [the same exact two woes in Ezekiel 16] are *yet to come*.” (Revelation 9:12)

“The *second woe* has passed; the *third woe* is coming soon.” (Revelation 11:14)

We shall explain that “first woe” later on. “Mystery Babylon” is infested with these two sins of rebirth backwards from Sodom (homosexuality) and “Egypt” (neopagan). When Paul warns of a “falling away” in 2 Thessalonians 2, this is a massive process covered in many prophecies and in Romans one it is clearly regarding homosexuality with “wrath”. With the continual chipping away on the church the world is going backwards, which involves centuries from the effects of the Protestant transformation.<sup>41</sup>

Amongst many Christians today there is this notion that when Christ comes, He will come while they greet Him in Jerusalem waving the six pointed star singing the Israeli National Anthem “Hatikva” and ‘poof’ wipe out the enemies of Israel regardless who is amongst them be they a mix of decent Jews, confused yet humble and God fearing mingled with unbelieving Jews steeped into homosexuality (or the support thereof), haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, disobedient to parents, Kabbalists, foolish, faithless, heartless and ruthless ... that Jews have an exception all will instantly be saved because they have the lineage of Jacob in their veins? After all the scripture clearly says: “all Israel will be saved?”

Have these analyzed from scripture what is “all Israel?” This entire volume is attempting to explain it.

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, *Come out of her [Babylon], my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.*” (Revelation 18:4)

No Protestant scholar argues this “come out of her” and “receive not of her plagues” as the escape out of Babylon the Great including all its cities. But we find the same instruction in Jeremiah 51:

“And I will send winnowers to Babylon, who shall winnow her and empty her land. For in the day of doom they shall be against her all around.” (Jeremiah 51:2)

“And deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity” (Jeremiah 51:6)

Both Jeremiah and John warn us to leave Babylon. Yet the Protestant because Jeremiah 51’s “Babylon” does not fit Rome, interpret this verse as Israel leaving ancient Babylon during the time of Cyrus the Great. We shall later on reveal how reprehensible Protestants—who claimed that their main foundation is the word of God—treated the Old Testament. No matter how persuasive one can be, a tare will always manipulate a clear and simple verse.

---

<sup>41</sup> “By some sure the smoke of Satan has entered into the temple of God: there is doubt, uncertainty, problems, unrest. Doubt has entered our consciences, *and it has entered through the windows which were meant to have been opened to the light*. This state of uncertainty reigns even in the Church. It was hoped that after the Council there would be a day of sunlight in the history of the Church. *Instead, there came a day of clouds, of darkness, of groping, of uncertainty*. How did this happen? We will confer our thoughts to you: there has been interference from an adverse power: *his name is the devil*” Paul VI, *Insegnamenti*, Ed. Vaticana, Vol. X, 1972, p. 707.

The case we present here becomes obvious especially when Jeremiah matches John's Apocalypse and God Himself blessed Cyrus when Cyrus gave Israel the go-ahead to leave Babylon. There was no need to hastily "flee" when Babylon was ended already by Cyrus and especially when Christ Himself laments:

"Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), "then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. "Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house. "And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. And alas for those who are with child and for those who give suck in those days!" (Matthew 24:15-19)

Is Christ speaking of an invasion by Titus? Christ in Matthew 24 warns of an "Abomination of Desolation" before He comes and also says to flee Judea and Jerusalem in Luke:

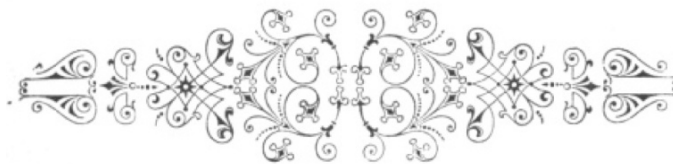
"And when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then you will know that the time of its destruction has arrived." (Luke 21:20)

Is this too the history of the destruction of the Second Temple by Titus? If so what then do we do with this:

"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her desolation is near. Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains, and let those who are inside the city depart, and let not those who are out in the country enter it because these are days of vengeance, so that all things which are written will be fulfilled." (Luke 21:20-22)

Christ says: "these are the days of vengeance so that all things which are written will be fulfilled," that with this event, the whole of prophecy is fulfilled. What other prophecy can we exclude from "all things, which are written?" Therefore, "All things" is regarding the end of the age. This can never be the same event as when Titus destroyed the Temple or that such destruction hits only Judea. Such instruction "let those who are inside the city depart," means what it says "to flee" as Lot fled out of Sodom and "let not those who are out in the country enter it," means what it means, to evacuate from the city about to engulf in flames in a single "hour". Therefore, it is wise to be out in the country prior to such destruction making sure that Tim Lahay's books are 'left behind'!

How then will the Protestant even understand the "Abomination of Desolation?" He does not even realize they participate in it (more on that later).



## CHOOSING ROME AS “HARLOT” DESTROYS PROTESTANT FOUNDATION

The Protestant has been nagging for centuries about Rome using this verse:

“The woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth.”  
(Revelation 17:1-6, 18)

“The woman that you saw is ...” at the time of the writing of Revelation this “is” must be referring to an entity that is *current* at the time of John’s writing. This would definitely be “Rome,” for it was the main persecutor of the church and to John and Peter at the time Rome “rules over the kings of the earth.” That “is” is not easily ignored. But this also proves that God had ordained Rome. Let us explain how this verse delivers a deathblow to the entire Protestant rebellion. As we shall see throughout this volume just how prophecy is multi-dimensional and encompasses all times and how the Protestant is tunnel-visioned. Rome during its pagan times surely deserves the title of Babylon especially that when Peter also called it as such while he wrote from Rome:

“She who is in Babylon, chosen together with you, sends you greetings, and so does my son, Mark.” (1 Peter 5:13)

But throughout scripture such title is only given when a city is *pagan* or when it goes the pagan route and persecutes the saints. Let us delve into the details.

### FIRSTLY, WHAT IS A BEAST?

The misconception of the Protestant interpretation is not understanding the main purpose of why the term “beast” is used. A “beast” does not always pertain to an evil potent. On the one hand we have a seven-horned Lamb, the Messiah, symbolic of a humble peaceful beast that lifts up His Cross, the *burden* of His suffering for the sins of the world. Even Christ is symbolized as a beast. The use of animals in allegory are key. Even the lowly donkey<sup>42</sup> is also a beast symbolic of the gentile church since the ox<sup>43</sup> was symbolic of the Jews. For example Isaiah’s opening chapter:

“An ox [the Jew] knows its owner, and a donkey [the gentile] its master's manger [Christ’s manger], but Israel does not know, My people do not understand.”

---

<sup>42</sup> The ox symbolic of the Jew and the donkey symbolic of the gentile “Thou shall not plow with an ox and an ass yoked together” is the un-mixing of the two until St-Peter’s vision of the clean and unclean meats placed together, which signify the entry of Gentiles into the body of the Church.

<sup>43</sup> Christ’s manger always depicts an ox and a donkey, that is symbolic of Christ uniting Jew “ox” and Gentile “donkey”. He rode a donkey symbolic of the gentiles believing in Him.

(Isaiah 1:3) "... Your cities are burned with fire ..." (v. 7) "Unless the LORD of hosts had left us a few survivors, we would be like Sodom, we would be like Gomorrah. Hear the word of the LORD, you rulers of Sodom; Give ear to the instruction of our God, you people of Gomorrah." (V.9-10) "***How the faithful city has become a harlot***, She *who* was full of justice! Righteousness once lodged in her, but now murderers." (V.21) "Then I will *restore your judges* as at the first, and your counselors as at the beginning; after that you will be called the city of righteousness, a faithful city." (V.26)

The dual purpose prophecy in a sense relates to today's condition; Israel "the ox" and Christendom "the donkey" have become harlot where "few survivors" are left to become the only remnant and to also warn "hear the word of the LORD, you rulers of Sodom ..."



So this beast "the donkey" "knows its master's manger" lifts up the Messiah born in Bethlehem's "manger". Also a donkey is a humble creature that leads the caravan of camels in the desert since it does not wander and walks a straight line as the master directs. Point the donkey and in a straight path it walks. In a sense the church is symbolized as a humble unclean beast made clean that lifts up Christ. We also have a seven-headed beast lifting up a harlot:

"Why do you wonder? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and the ten horns." (Revelation 17:7)

Notice it does not say she rides the beast, but that the beast "carries her" as his "burden" and is why it is a beast of burden. This "woman" in our era is clearly Jerusalem for Zechariah uses the same analogy:

"It will come about in that day that I will make Jerusalem a heavy stone for all the peoples; all who lift it will be severely injured. And all the nations of the earth will be gathered against it." (Zechariah 12:3).

The rider (harlot) burdens the beast, frustrates it, tires it and controls it. It is that love-hate dichotomy between the beast and the harlot. He lifts her up and God puts it in his heart to finally make the beast "burn her". Jerusalem is lifted up by this beast "the surrounding nations" all swirling round about her extending all the way to Asia Minor and at some point all the nations will hate her people, the Jews as they already do. In a sense Jerusalem does have such spiritual dominion that it rules the world. Scripture says that the whole earth lifts her up and it also says that Jerusalem is that cup of trembling. It is Jerusalem, not Rome that will make the nations mad. She is in control of the surrounding nations intoxicated with wanting to reclaim Jerusalem, not Rome.



But how then do we deal with Rome? Pay close attention to what the text of Revelation 17 says: “the beast that ***was***, and ***is not***, and ***yet is***.”

It “is” pagan Rome at the time of John, yet after its conversion, Rome became “*was*” (was pagan) and “is not” in the future, yet “is” for it becomes “harlot”. After Christian Rome was persecuted throughout the centuries demanding to diminish its powers, it has now become a separate city from Vatican City, which is its own state. However, is God going to make an exception for the city of Rome? Hardly. But this does not give her the title Mother of Harlots since the use of “beast” makes the woman riding him his burden. He lifts the harlot and she rides him. This means that whatever it lifts is the harlot and whoever lifts her up is the beast. This dichotomy only applies to Jerusalem where the Muslim and the Protestant world lifts up Jerusalem, not Rome.

But this is by no means that Rome upon the falling away of Christendom is immune from being a daughter. God by using “was” and “is” and “is not” projected a repeat as Rome reverts backward towards Sodom and Egypt, which we are already beginning to see. Isaiah sheds the light on what resolves this issue:

“Hear the word of the LORD, ye *rulers* of *Sodom*; give ear unto the law of our God, ye *people* of *Gomorrah*.” (Isaiah 1:10)

The use of “rulers” is addressing multiple entities. This prophecy was fulfilled historically as a type when the Romans destroyed the Temple, Josephus gives several examples when Jerusalem struggled with such sin of open homosexuality and God condemned it:

“See how *the faithful city* has become a *prostitute*! She once was *full of justice; righteousness used to dwell in her*—but now murderers!” (Isaiah 1:21)

“Faithful city” “full of justice?” This is also future (as in the ends of times), Jerusalem, the city that put Christ to the Cross, while it qualified in the past can no longer qualify after Christ condemned it, but Rome does:

“To all who are in *Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints* ...” (Romans 1:7)

“Faithful city” pertains to Christendom as a whole centered in Rome, destined to be the city of saints to have dominion across the globe now turned harlot. But even since Protestants insist about Rome as a city, Isaiah 1:21 destroys the entire argument since this generates a conundrum for all who accuse Rome of exclusively being the “harlot” since God in this verse addresses what once was “the faithful city” “she was once full of justice” and the church in Rome was “beloved of God,” and “called to be saints”.

#### THE DICHOTOMY BETWEEN HARLOT AND BEAST

Let us now get very technical and explain in detail the Protestant error since they do not pay close attention to history and detail. The same analogy where we said of the harlot being an “is” “yet is not” shall help unlock much since it is in scripture and was meant to solve another major riddle as to whom this harlot rides:

“And he carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness; and I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast, full of blasphemous names, having seven heads and ten horns” (Revelation 17:3)

“And I saw a beast coming up out of the sea, having seven heads [empires/kingdoms] and ten horns [kings], and upon his horns ten diadems, and upon his heads names of blasphemy. (Revelation 13:1)

Now pay close attention to this:

“The beast that you saw was, and is not, and is about to come up out of the abyss and go to destruction. And those who dwell on the earth, whose name has not been written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, will wonder when they see the beast, that he was and is not and will come. The beast that was, and is not, and yet is. Here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains [kingdoms] on which the woman sits, and they are seven kings; five have fallen, one is, the other has not yet come; and when he comes, he must remain a little while.” (Revelation 17:8-10)

This too Protestants ignore the detail said somehow involves Rome, but this is easily thwarted by a simple Jesus-style question: how could Rome be a “was” “is not” yet “is”?

How could an entity be an “is” and “is not”?

Try answering this question while keeping in mind that *Scripture has no contradiction*.<sup>44</sup>

Can an apple be an apple yet is not an apple?

Impossible, unless an apple sits in a basket of apples and we say ‘behold apple’. An apple (in a basket of apples) is still an apple, yet it is not the entire basket of apples. Similarly in the harlot (which usually accompanies a beast) like Babel, this is a conglomerate where any or all of their cities is Babylon “the great city” and Babel was multiple cities is also called “the great city”.

Before I unlock this riddle, I shall tell you the secret to unlock biblical riddles. It is in such seeming contradictions where lays the key to unlock everything, especially when there are multiple players and where the answer is: ‘all or any of the above’ are all correct answers just as in Babel; Nineveh is Babel and is not since it is only one of the cities.

Such simple parables about beasts are obviously regarding multiple threats, by multiple empires expanding the history of God’s people. Every threatening empire to the church can be summed up in these allegories.

Once we examine Revelation, it tells us of two empires after pagan Rome: 1—the Islamic threat from the Rashidun to the Ottoman dynasty and then 2—neo-Ottomanism, which you witness today rising from the dead. Daniel even gives us a freebie in chapter 7 to the threats by Protestant England, Russia’s Communism and Germany’s Nazism.

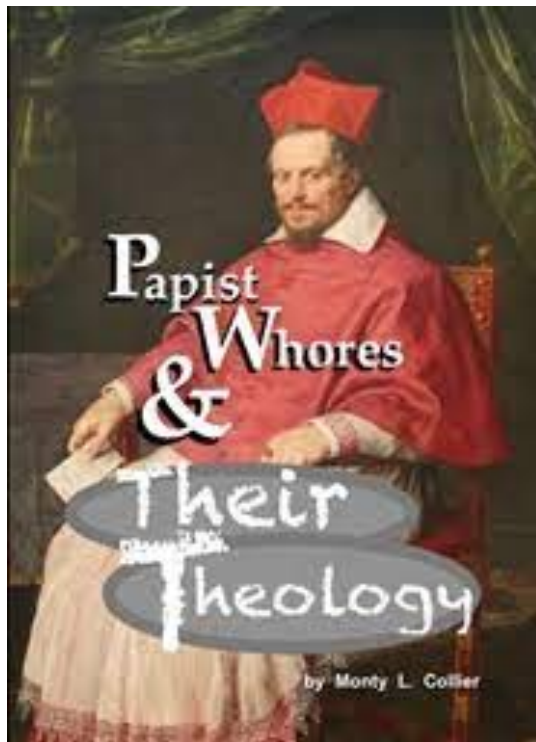
---

<sup>44</sup> If one falls into this deadly trap, that scripture has contradiction, is when you will join the likes of Barth Eherman, a prominent Jewish tare who claims he was “Christian”.

Now place yourself at the time of John while he was writing at the island of Patmos. He is trying to tell the wise that this “beast” is not exclusive to only a present threat, but also occurred in the past and will occur in the future. It is a “was” (past) as for the ancient Hebrews suffered from Egypt, Assyria, Babylonia, Persia and Greece and the “is” is in John’s time (pagan Rome) at the coliseum and “is not” since Rome is not this future beast.

This is why to John “it was” (as in the past empires collectively arising together from Egypt to Greece “five have fallen”) yet “is” Rome (the 6<sup>th</sup>) the current empire during John’s writing was pagan Rome which persecuted the saints yet “is not” (the 7<sup>th</sup> is not Rome) since Rome will be converted after John’s writing.

It is really that simple. Why did no one fully unlock the Apocalypse? This in itself is a miracle since God promised that Isaiah, Daniel and the Apocalypse will remain locked until He decides to reveal it. My suspicion is simple: as you shall see later on, God wanted it to become a snare to the tare.



Rome was the split from pagandom to Christendom. It is a *pesach* (the split) if you will. Constantine, the Moses of Christendom split the empire from Rome’s paganism towards Christianity. This is why Constantine is so much under attack by the tares, and finding the most slandered is when one finds a saint, and finding who slanders him is when you find the prominent tares.

So which is the 7<sup>th</sup> empire? Which empire became the greatest threat to Christendom after pagan Rome? Protestants are divided where some say that Rome never ended, that fragmented Europe (the E.U) is its continuance.

But this argument is fallacious and such interpreters sold countless books relying on most Evangelicals who know very little history fail the

clear and crucial instruction to “remember the things of old” (Isaiah 46:9, 43:18).

Here is, what these never tell you. In 395 A.D., the Roman Empire was divided into two portions, the eastern and the western. The Eastern portion became known as the Byzantine Empire. The western part fell on September 4, A.D. 476 when a so-called barbarian named Odoacer (a Germanic leader in the Roman army), deposed the last western Roman emperor, Romulus Augustulus, who was probably partly of Germanic ancestry. Odoacer considered Romulus so paltry a threat he didn’t even bother to assassinate him, but sent him into retirement.”<sup>45</sup> Here is history’s most renown historian on the Roman Empire, Edward Gibbon who is no fan of the church, in his extensive work *The Fall of Rome*, describes the end of the Roman Empire in the East:

---

<sup>45</sup> The Fall of Rome – the End of the Roman Empire, by N.S Gill

“I have now deduced from Trajan to Constantine, from Constantine to Heraclius, the regular series of the Roman emperors; and faithfully exposed the prosperous and adverse fortunes of their reigns. Five centuries of the *decline* and *fall* of the *empire* have *already elapsed*; but a period of more than eight hundred years still separates me from the term of my labors, the *taking of Constantinople* by the *Turks*...I have already noticed the first appearance of the Turks; and the names of the fathers, of Seljuk and Othman, discriminate the two successive dynasties of the nation, which emerged in the *eleventh century* from the Scythian wilderness. The former established a splendid and potent kingdom from the banks of the Oxus to Antioch and Nice; and the *first crusade* was provoked by the *violation of Jerusalem* and the danger of *Constantinople*. From a humble origin, the Ottomans arose, the *scourge* and *terror of Christendom*. *Constantinople* was *besieged* and *taken* by *Mahomet II* and his triumph annihilates the remnant, *the image*, the title, of the Roman Empire in the East... In the East, the victorious Turks had spread, from *Persia* to the Hellespont, the reign of the Koran and the *Crescent*: the West was invaded by the adventurous valor of the Normans; and, in the moments of peace, the Danube poured forth new swarms, who had gained, in the science of war, what they had lost in the ferociousness of manners.”<sup>46</sup>

And so by the fall of the eastern part came the end to the great city of Constantinople including the 6<sup>th</sup> head, the Roman Empire.<sup>47</sup>

According to the Bible, any fall is initiated by the loss of the horn/head. From that perspective, the Roman Empire didn't actually completely fall until the eastern portion of the Empire finally collapsed in 1453 A.D. to the Ottoman Muslim Turks led by Mehemet II and the Ottomans gained much aid from the Protestant nations to thwart the Catholic League and the Habsburg Empire. The Ottomans also ruled Persia, which as we shall see is prophetically significant. In 1453, the Muslim Turks introduced the use of gunpowder in warfare, brought their cannons to the gate of Constantinople and stormed the Christian capital after a siege. The Greek Emperor was killed; the great church of St. Sophia was plundered of its treasure and turned into a mosque and the image of Christendom (the Cross) removed. Even Gibbon recognizes what “an image” is, and in this case “the crescent” (the image of the Turk) was lifted up and the Christian image “the cross” was brought low. The process to Christian victory is to bring up what was brought low (the cross) and bring low what was brought up (the crescent). Now you begin to understand the “woman” of Revelation 12 with the crescent “moon below her feet”. Later you shall understand what “Guadalupe,” “Fatima,” and even “Zion”—all Semitic words—pack so much meaning to the entire riddle of prophecy.

For now, Constantinople, the holy city of Christendom was conquered. Islam (like the history of the Protestants) looked forward to the downfall of Rome. The Protestants who think in this fashion are not wheat, but tares for they have much in common with

---

<sup>46</sup> Gibbons, *The Decline And Fall Of The Roman Empire*, Chapter XLVIII

<sup>47</sup> Harris, William H & Levey, Judith S. *The New Columbia Encyclopedia*. (New York; Columbia University Press, 1975). Also see Runciman, Steven. *The Fall of Constantinople*. (London; Cambridge University Press, 1965).

Christendom's enemy. They continually bring up the sins of Rome and the Popes, while they forget that even God when He established David and Solomon, while He chastised them for their sin, kept His covenant with Israel, as He kept His covenant with Peter who also sinned the worst of sins—denied Christ.

So the 7<sup>th</sup> head was the seven Islamic Caliphates (7 heads and 10 horns)<sup>48</sup> from al-Rashidun of Umar Ibn al-Khattab that took Jerusalem in 637 culminated in the Four main Islamic Empires—with the last being the Ottoman Empire—that succeeded the Roman Empire and ruled over much of Christendom spreading in the entire Middle East when the Muslims invaded Jordan and later Syria the Levant, Persia, even conquered much of Spain and what was between the Black and Caspian seas (Magog). So it began in the Middle East, until it was wounded in 1924.

No other military threat was greater than the Islamic threat to Christendom. Did God forget about it? Or did these scoundrels avoid including it? Obviously the Muslim Empire is the 7<sup>th</sup> head. Yet the Protestants, to jimmy-rig their theory since their sequence is off, they needed Rome to still exist as an empire insisted to drop completely this entire history (since the Ottoman threat aided their view against Rome) and despite what all historians tell us, rely on the naiveté in history from the Evangelical sector. These still insist that the Roman Empire never fell and continues even till now just to make Luther's theory stick. Had the Evangelicals obeyed the Bible as they claim, how did they obey "remember the things of old?" (Isaiah 46:9) God will have mercy on many of them "bring out the people who are blind, *even though they have eyes*, and the *deaf, even though they have ears*." (Isaiah 43:8)

This seventh head is also a "was" since it comprises the 5 previous empires 1—Egypt, 2—Assyria, 3—Babylon, 4—Medo-Persia 5—Greece defeating the 6<sup>th</sup> in the East (Rome) now the Ottoman becomes the 7<sup>th</sup> since the previous 5 (the "was") fits the Ottoman Empire perfectly. To John it was a "not yet". This empire became the dominant empire known as "*Kaisar al-Rum*" (The ceasar of Rome). This was in fact the title for centuries given to the Ottoman Empire.<sup>49</sup>

There are only seven heads.

The picture is complete.

## WHAT NOW?

But the Ottoman Empire has come and gone. How could it be the future beast?

Indeed, but before we answer this question, this Ottoman Empire was wounded after its fall in World War I and its wound is healing as we speak and prophecy is being fulfilled in your reading. But the Protestant interpreters drop this entire block of history of the greatest persecutor of the church—a major flaw—attempting to make the seventh a future empire (a revived Rome) skipping the Ottoman altogether. Why? It destroys their theory—Rome must be villain and their charts need to drive the scripture, not the scripture drive their charts. But

---

<sup>48</sup> We shall explain this at a later chapter

<sup>49</sup> The Ottoman Sultans also took the title *Kayser-i Rum* (*Caesar of Rome*, meaning the Byzantine Empire) after conquering Constantinople, modern Istanbul, on May 29, 1453. *Rûm*, See Nadia El Cheikh, *The Encyclopaedia of Islam*. VIII, ed. C.E. Bosworth, E. Van Donzel, W.P. Heinrichs and G. Lecomte, 601.

this fails for the entire secret to unlock this whole riddle is in two letters, the “is” in verse 8. This “is” is *not* in verse 11:

“And the beast that *was* [past empires from Egypt to Greece], and *is not* [is not current Rome in John’s writing] even he *is* the *eighth* [a replica of the 7<sup>th</sup>] and *is of the seven*, and goeth into perdition.” (Revelation 17:11)

Notice this “eighth” does not have a “yet is” (is not Rome) and has a “was” (past empires) and “is not” yet—future, that is, it arises after Rome’s fall. *The absence of the “is” excludes Rome*. This leaves us with only one possibility, the revival of the seventh (Ottoman), which encompass all previous ones (as a “was”) arising together as exactly the seven heads with ten horns.

Without manipulating history or the meaning of the text, it is impossible to find any other interpretation no matter how many try without fragmenting the text.

To go around this major obstacle, Protestant interpreters abuse this verse since it destroys their entire “Rome” theory and (without merit) make this “8<sup>th</sup>” as an individual (the Antichrist). But there is no escape; this is an empire for John in verse 11 was speaking of a “beast” not a “horn”.

God foreknew and even forewarned that like Apostle Judas would betray Jesus Christ unto His death, but only by virtue of his position as an Apostle which Christ allowed it. The Church always had its “Judases” with high ranks from within and they can only do this as a result of their position of rank within the Church. Christ made it clear that the tare will be with the wheat. The farmer and his helpers sow good seed in anticipation of a bountiful harvest, but while they are sleeping an enemy enters the field and sows bad seed. The good seed springs up, but is often choked out by the weeds. While the Catholic church indeed has its share of weeds flirting with syncretism (as in Pachamama) and has a huge problem with pedophilia and homosexuality (and will receive punishment)<sup>50</sup> one can never say that Rome has always been “harlot” by simply asking: after Peter and Paul established the Church in Rome when did it become “harlot”? This is especially true since Isaiah says “faithful city become harlot”.

If Rome has always been harlot after Constantine (so they claim) the entire history of the church then failed to produce a saint who exposed Catholicism as “the harlot” until the trio Zwingli, Calvin and Luther who showed up in the sixteenth century? Only when centuries later (and without historic evidence) amateurs argued that Constantine corrupted it. If so, Christ then failed to keep His promise to “build My church” since (if one accepts this argument) “the gates of hell” prevailed against it (see Matthew 16:18) and we have no saints since Constantine until ‘St. Luther’ showed up?

Was St. Peter on vacation in Rome or did he go to establish His Church and suffered the dungeon by Nero, was martyred and the Vatican was established upon his bones? If Protestants have the true interpretations why was it the Protestants who by their impiety brought in the derangement of human reason like a blind bat rendered more blind in imitation of the Jewish high-priests, chief magistrates, and hypocritical Pharisees, the German so-called reformers, the Bavarian Doellingerite and the Italian apostate

---

<sup>50</sup> “When the city of Rome is half in ruins, then the Pope will go to his martyrdom.”—Fatima

governments in union with the Muslim Turkish Empire, and helped by the red republicans of Spain and Switzerland attempted to tear it down.

The first problem which interpreters miss is that Prophecy is written for all times to be our torch to light the way in different eras of history for but the remnants. Catholic Church fathers saw pagan Rome as a ravishing beast and even counted emperors as toes and horns. Where they wrong? No. The prophecy, to a certain extent, fit there time as well. Prophecy is multidimensional. For example, in the Apocalypse Christ said to John:

“Write therefore the things which thou hast seen, and which are, and which must be done hereafter.” (Apocalypse 1:19)

In other words, John wrote the things “which are” and from henceforth the future.

The harlot conglomerate has an “abundance of her delicacies” and drinks “the blood of prophets” as well as the blood of “saints” and “all who have been slain on earth”:

“And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints and of all who have been slain on the earth.” (Revelation 18: 24)

While Jerusalem is guilty for the blood of the prophets, Pagan Rome and the Muslim world definitely shed saintly blood. Mecca (Islamdom) killed more Christians than these two combined. But this “Babylon” is considered responsible for all who were persecuted for all humanity from Cain to the martyrs of the Tribulation. Prophecy speaks to all times in an end-times sense “I declare the end from the beginning” and is why it is multidimensional.

In sum, this harlot-beast dichotomy, instead of an appreciation for this magnificent sacrifice of Christ, chose to be a seven-headed beast that lifts up a lazy harlot incessant with the head of the Baptist, while busy of the things of this world, it is a lazy servant.

Israel (earthly Jerusalem) failed to see the unpopular verses Whom it chose to spit at, ridiculed and tormented while applying David’s cry in the Psalms “My God, My God why have You forsaken Me” as a long-term fulfillment to their awaited Messiah. These too failed to see that prophecy is multidimensional and instead followed their peer who stole Roman coins and by perjury minted an image of the temple over the face of Caesar and began a revolt. While that specific endeavor seemed in their eyes righteous, they fulfilled the prophecy in Proverbs:

“There is a way that appears to be right, but in the end it leads to death” (Proverbs 14:12)

Nothing is new under the sun and history repeats. In Christendom today we find allegoric Sadducees, Pharisees, Essenes and Samaritans with the same unbalanced views amongst Christian from all sects. We have Croatians against Serbians use churches and crucifixes sing “listen you gangs of Serbian volunteers and Chetniks our hands will reach you even in Serbia ... listen now a message from St. Elias (Elijah) ‘you will never get into Cavoglave as you never did before”. Then we have the pride of the Lebanese Maronites in their Cedar infused with racism and ultra nationalism, all these Elijah, will condemn their sin and Christendom will fracture in a massive demographic earthquake paving the way for Islamdom to enter.



From populism, racialism, extremist anti-immigration views, “Christian nationalism” and Trumpism that sanctify idolatry by labeling Trump as our Cyrus, temperance is fading away and violence where neighbor fights neighbor is coming in. One is to be balanced and compliment when even an enemy does good and admonish when a brother does bad, never to elevate a sinful man to a saintly level and never base righteousness with nationalism for a Christian is of one universal Church.

The prophets make it clear that the Gentiles too will repeat the sins of Israel’s pride in not acknowledging the hour of their visitation, and just like the zealot Jews before them were heavily focused on earthly Jerusalem, today the same zealots read the numerous unpopular prophecies and simply brush through them or shelve them into fulfilled history or view them as empty fillers between the lines.

The first sections in this volume are simply the milk so that you understand biblical symbolism. In this journey we shall see what happens when we simply let the prophetic chips fall where they fall, regardless where they fall, is when we will all see what we all missed; God was interested in the *heavenly*, not the *earthly*. God is guiding us to our mother: the heavenly Jerusalem above “But that Jerusalem, which is above, is free: which is our mother.” (Galatians 4:26)

Christians wonder how could Israel with its rabbinic intellectuals at the time miss their Messiah?

Answer: just like them, Israel ignored parables, they literalize allegories and allegorize literals. For example:

“One of the heads of the beast seemed to have had a *fatal wound*, but the *fatal wound* had been *healed*.” (Revelation 13:3)



For centuries the Protestant camp held two views on Revelation 13:3 both of which are erroneous. The first camp said that the Antichrist will physically be stricken with a mortal wound and will be raised from the dead by Satan<sup>51</sup> giving Satan godly attributes that God gives Satan such ability of giving life to the dead. These literalize allegory. Regardless of the gymnastics, only God has the power to give life and He will never pass such powers to Satan which is blasphemous to make such claims. The other camp believes it is a

<sup>51</sup>first beast from the dead to be an individual include Robert L. Thomas, Revelation 8–22: An Exegetical Commentary (Chicago: Moody, 1995) 157- 59; Charles C. Ryrie, The Ryrie Study Bible (Chicago: Moody, 1978) 1735; John F. MacArthur, author and gen. ed., The MacArthur Study Bible (Nashville: Word Bibles, 1997) 2009; J. A. Seiss, The Apocalypse, 3 vols. (New York: Charles C. Cook, 1909; reprint in one volume, Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1957) 321-30.

revival of the Roman Empire as in Europe.<sup>52</sup> Again, we have already learned this apparent death is the Ottoman Empire and such theories will never fit the prophetic model unless one fragments the prophecies and imposes human aspirations into the text forcing it to say what it never says which is exactly what these do. Presently, the Ottoman Empire is arising anew. It is reconsolidating its power and developing new bonds of unity its wound is healing and we see it. We see no revival of an Empire called the Roman Empire, but with neo-Ottomanism all one has to do is plug it in Google and see.<sup>53</sup> We have maintained this since 1994 when we were mocked at by these eschatological so-called ‘experts’.

Thus, based on this passage, what we may expect to see emerge in the possible near future is a formation of a league, union or coalition with nations that were once Ottoman. When this partnership emerges, these then would be the ten kings mentioned in Daniel (separate from Antichrist) for there is a “little horn” that rises out of this: “The whole world was astonished and followed the beast. Men worshiped *the dragon* because he had given authority to the beast, and they also worshiped the beast and asked, ‘Who is like the beast? Who can make war against him?’” (Revelation 13:3-4)

In essence what the prophecy is saying is that the 7<sup>th</sup> (which was wounded) is also the 8<sup>th</sup> (its revival). This revival constitutes the seven heads and four metals of Daniel 2 all over again as a single unit.

When we examine all the nations in literal sense in all prophecies it matches perfectly this construct. From Byzantine Mesopotamia to the Muslim Arab locusts and the thousands of battles against Christendom that continued throughout all seven Muslim caliphates until Allenby’s decisive victory at the same place where Islam entered in the Promised land: at Megiddo and in 1918 when the Protestant Christian Allenby forced the Turks to relinquish control of Jerusalem to the British. Thereafter he was often referred to as *Allenby of Armageddon*.<sup>54</sup>

---

<sup>52</sup> As to the revival of the Roman Empire are C. I. Scofield, ed., *The Scofield Study Bible* (New York: Oxford University, 1909; reprint as *Oxford NIV Scofield Study Bible*, New York: Oxford University, 1967) 1326-27; Lewis Sperry Chafer *Systematic Theology*, 8 vols. (Dallas: Dallas Theological Seminary, 1948) 4:346-51; John F. Walvoord, *The Revelation of Jesus Christ* (Chicago: Moody, 1966) 199-200; J. Dwight Pentecost, *Things to Come* (N.p.: Dunham, Ohio: 1958; reprint, Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1964) 334-35; Daniel K. K. Wong, “The Beast From the Sea in Revelation 13,” *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160 (July–September 2003):337-48.

<sup>53</sup> Even critics of the term like Nicholas Danforth is a George F. Kennan fellow at the Wilson Center’s Kennan Institute who completed a PhD in Turkish history at Georgetown University states “Turkey’s leaders will undoubtedly continue to dress their foreign policies in neo-Ottoman garb. But there’s no reason for analysts to go along with it. The impulses often called neo-Ottoman — aggressive nationalism, religious chauvinism, and anti-Western hostility — *are very real in Turkey*, just as they are in countries that don’t have an Ottoman past” yet insists on one proviso to qualify the use “The day Erdogan leads his army on a campaign to capture Vienna, by all means call it neo-Ottoman.”

<sup>54</sup> See Savage, Raymond (1925)



It is impossible to find fault in this interpretation for if one still says Rome, it did not subdue the Persian Empire since Daniel 2 has this proviso:

“There will be a fourth kingdom [John’s 7<sup>th</sup>], *strong as iron*—for iron breaks and smashes everything—and as iron breaks things to pieces, so it will *crush and break all the [previous] others*” (Daniel 2:40).

Daniel says that the iron subdues the previous empires. And we ask: when did Rome subdue Persia? No historian would affirm that Rome subdued Persia.<sup>55</sup> Only the Turks subdued all.<sup>56</sup> While the “iron” has a roman element in it, Daniel tells us, its claws are “bronze (Grecian):

---

<sup>55</sup> “Although warfare between the Romans and Persians continued over seven centuries, the frontier, aside from shifts in the north, remained largely stable.”—Wikipedia

<sup>56</sup> see previous quote from Gibbons. The *Great Seljuk Empire* آل سلجوق, founded by Tughril Beg (990–1063) and his brother Chaghri Beg (989–1060) in 1037. From their homelands near the Aral Sea was a high medieval Turko-Persian Sunni Muslim empire, originating from the Qiniq branch of Oghuz Turks. At its greatest extent, the Seljuk Empire controlled a vast area stretching from western Anatolia and the Levant to the Hindu Kush in the east, and from Central Asia to the Persian Gulf in the south. Against the Christians see First Crusade (1095–1099) In 1095, the Seljuk defeated Byzantine Emperor Romanus IV, Christian access was denied and the Holy Sepulcher despoiled. Late in the eleventh century, Byzantine Emperor Alexius I appealed to the west for military assistance. Pope Urban II argued for recapture and restoration of the Holy Sepulcher, inspiring the First Crusade. Also see Second Crusade (1147–1149)

“Then I desired to know the exact meaning of the fourth beast, which was *different from all the others*, exceedingly dreadful, with its teeth of *iron* and its claws of *bronze*, and which devoured, *crushed and trampled down the remainder with its feet*” (Daniel 7:19)

So it is the mixture of the two since Asia Minor being *Roman* (iron) is also *Grecian* (bronze). Even when Christ destroys this beast, which Daniel constructs it into only four sections—gold, silver, bronze and iron, He destroys all of them collectively together:

“Then the iron, the clay, [the final one] the bronze [Greece], the silver [Persia] and the gold [Babylon] were crushed *all at the same time* and became like chaff from the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away so that *not a trace of them was found*. But the stone that struck the statue became a *great mountain* and filled the whole earth.” (Daniel 2:35)

Historic Greece, Persia and Babylon were never destroyed together at the same time. Ancient Babylon came and gone separately from Persia and Greece.

But in verse 38 Daniel tells Nebuchadnezzar “you are this head of gold.” How could this contradiction be?

It is here where theological scholar errs when he believes that Daniel and John only cover a specific part of history, just as in the Book of the Apocalypse—*these cover the entire span of history*—and is why it is a “was” and “not yet”. This missing key is the folly of Protestant interpreters who made prophecy the ridicule and the obstacle for many.

Therefore, these must form a coalition (Asia Minor, Magog and Iran). They are all destroyed *together* by Christ. Therefore, we must have “Babylon” “Greece” and “Persia” all destroyed by Christ *together* in the end and *at the same time*.

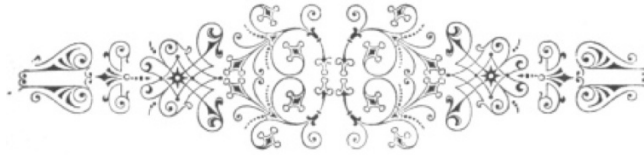
Daniel’s analogy fits perfectly with John: “And the beast that *was* [Egyptian to Grecian] and *is not* [Roman] even he is the *eighth*, and is *of the seven*” and is why we do not have a single specific Prophecy where Rome is in league with any of these, but Greece,<sup>57</sup> Assyria, Egypt, Babylon and even Persia, we have a plethora of prophecies. In other words, this beast has of the Roman in it (eastern Roman) and has clay “brittle” weak, is multi-ethnic (does not mix as iron cannot mix with clay). In the entire scripture we do not have a single reference of anyone ruling this beastly empire from Rome, but from ancient Greece.

At the moment, when people read what we have written so far, they begin to question how could the Turks become a dominant superpower? They would argue that this would definitely undermine our analysis. But please consider, that when Daniel tells Nebuchadnezzar that he is the head of gold, in essence there is a type of fulfillment in the old, yet when Christ destroys the entire image, the gold “Babylon” is still the head, for this head “Babylon the Great” rides the entire system. The head is currently the mover and shaker just as we see today in NATO and is why harlot and beast (together) make this system so powerful until the neo-Ottomans surprisingly strike the cities of Babylon the Great weakening its global dominance. So it is not as if we undermine western powerful

---

<sup>57</sup> See Zechariah 9:13, Christ comes with whirlwind of the south, going to fight Ionia in Asia Minor (Turkey)

entities, by far, they are very much involved, even as Salome the harlot, is the driver of Herod the beast for she desires the head of the Baptist.



## WHERE ANTICHRIST COMES FROM

Daniel 2 offers snippets of 4 sequential empires the composite of a statue of a man resembling all four empires coming in the end at once and destroyed altogether by Christ (the Rock):

“Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold were crushed to pieces all at the same time, and they were like chaff from the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away so that not a trace of them was found. But the stone that struck the statue became a great mountain and filled the entire earth.”  
(Daniel 2:35)

How are all these ancient empires destroyed “all at the same time” unless they arise at the same time in the end? So this structure must include a Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece of Asia Minor all in the fourth last empire. We find the same set of beasts in Daniel chapter 7 that in its dual sense seem to have much in common with Daniel 2 but another set in Daniel 8 where the little horn we are told “Son of man, understand that the vision pertains to the time of the end.” (v.17) This, like in Daniel 2, also cannot be the ancient Antiochus Epiphanes especially when Christ said of His coming to view the “Abomination of Desolation spoken of by Daniel the Prophet” and Christ as well points to the time of the end and this horn without question stems out of Greece (back to Asia Minor) where even the second chapter of the Apocalypse tells us that Pergamum (in Asia Minor) will be the seat of Satan confirmed by Daniel 8: “Out of one of them [the four horns of Greece] came forth a rather small horn which grew exceedingly great toward the south [he then must come from the north], toward the east, and toward the Beautiful Land.” (v.8) So if we take the John’s structure of seven empires 1—Egypt (1 horn) 2—Assyria (1 horn) 3—Babylon (1 horn) 4—Persia (1 horn) 5—Greece (4 horns) 6—Rome (1 horn) 7—Ottoman (1 horn) we have a total of 10 horns and the 11th is the Antichrist.

Then we have the duality of fulfillment when we view Islam’s four empires; Rashidun, Umayyad, Abbasid and Ottoman, composed of seven Caliphates; Rashidun, Umayyad, Abbasid, Fatimid, Ayyubid, Almohad and Ottoman (which we shall expound upon in another chapter) from the transfer of power to each Caliphate also has 10 horns, and this 11<sup>th</sup> comes “after them”:

“Thus he said: “The fourth beast will be a fourth kingdom on the earth, which will be different from all the other kingdoms and will devour the whole earth and tread it down and crush it. ‘As for the ten horns, out of this kingdom ten kings will arise; and another will arise after them, and he will be different from the previous ones and will subdue three kings.” (Daniel 7:23-24)

The latter “is different from the previous ones”. If this beast is a revival of the western Roman Empire (Europe), how is it so different from the hellenistic Grecian Empire?<sup>58</sup> Only the Islamic Caliphate subdued the gold (Babylon), the silver (Persia), the bronze (Greece) is the Iron and is different from all three previous ones. This 11<sup>th</sup> horn arises after them, that is, after this beast received a wound in 1924.

So Daniel tells us that the “little horn” stems from the four notable horns that sprouted out of the horn of Alexander the Great. This would unquestionably be Greece (Asia Minor):

“and in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people.” (Daniel 8:21-24)

The goat of Daniel 8 gives us the source of the ten-horned beast as coming from the empire of the goat (Greece) one of its four horns of the Grecian Empire, which did not include western Europe though we cannot dismiss the powerful West since he gains support and rises by the aid from mightier nations that support him:

“And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power”.

This is key. It is crucial we follow the way scripture defines this beast including who rides it, aids and abets it differentiating between all the players. This beast is not a standalone threat for it initially gains might and support from mightier nations (think the U.S. and other NATO powers maybe including Russia which will eventually go against it). This eliminates any theory of a predominately European beast since the goat comprised of 1-Seleucid 2-Ptolemy 3-Cassander 4-Lysimachus. These cover Central Turkey, Syria, Iran, Central Asia, Egypt, North Africa, Greece and South-Eastern Western Turkey. The construct matches all the literal references to nations in prophecy.

By this, making Rome exclusively as beast or ‘harlot city’ makes null and void not only volumes of commentary but also hundreds of slanderous books since this “little horn” which stems out of Greece is the one Christ warned about. This 10-horned beast construct is not from Europe. Protestant prophecy enthusiasts universally point to Antiochus IV Epiphanies of the Seleucid division<sup>59</sup> as the fulfillment of this passage, but Daniel informs us:

“I am here to tell you what will happen at the conclusion of the time of wrath, because it refers to the appointed time of the end.” (Daniel 8:19)

---

<sup>58</sup> The concept of Hellenistic religion as the late form of Ancient Greek religion covers any of the various systems of beliefs and practices of the people who lived under the influence of ancient Greek culture during the Hellenistic period and the Roman Empire (c. 300 BCE to 300 CE). There was much continuity in Hellenistic religion: people continued to worship the Greek gods and to practice the same rites as in Classical Greece.

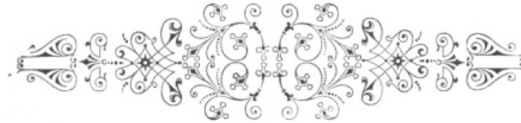
<sup>59</sup> The Seleucid reigned from Antioch on the Orontes was an ancient Greek city on the eastern side of the Orontes River. Its ruins lie near the current city of Antakya, Turkey



Has the “time of the wrath” arrived? No. And Christ told us, that when it comes to His Second Coming to pay attention to Daniel:

“It [the little horn] even magnified itself to be equal with the Commander of the host; and it removed the regular sacrifice from Him, and the place of His sanctuary was thrown down.” (Daniel 8:11)

He stops the communion (Eucharistic sacrifice) and is why the church runs to the wilderness to consume the Eucharist in a tabernacle as in an allegoric Sinai. But as we shall see in *Section VI Unlocking the Abomination of Desolation* who aids him to stop the sacrifice should shock the Protestant to the truth or simply make him scoff.



THEY WOULD RATHER CONTRADICT THAN TO ACCEPT  
“THE ISRAEL OF GOD”

THE JESUS-STYLE QUESTION THAT NO PROTESTANT CAN ANSWER

The tares' interpretation will always create a contradiction by refusing to come to terms with apostolic succession church fathers regarding “the Israel of God”. In fact, the entire Protestant interpretation and exegesis regarding Israel included in commentaries and thousands of books written in a span of hundreds of years will crumble by simply asking a Jesus-style question: how is Hebrew-Israel victorious in Psalm 83 and Ezekiel 38 while it is utterly defeated in the rest of prophecy? In Numbers 24 we have ‘the complete destruction of Eber,’ Micah 5 ‘the complete destruction of Israel’s cities,’ Isaiah 17 “The *fortified city* will disappear from *Ephraim*”<sup>60</sup> “in that day the glory of Jacob will *fade*” and Hosea 1:5 “On that day I will *break* the *bow* of *Israel* in the valley of *Jezreel*”<sup>61</sup> at Armageddon and “My people [Israel] *their land was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel. Flee out of the midst of Babylon*” (Jeremiah 51:5-6) and in Isaiah 21 “*My people [Israel] who are crushed on the threshing floor, I tell you what I have heard from the LORD Almighty, from the God of Israel.*” (Isaiah 21:9-10) “Fallen is Virgin Israel, *never to rise again*, deserted in her own land, with no one to lift her up.” (AMOS 5:2) Can anyone put a spin on “never to rise again” and make any sense of these verses while holding on to these obsolete Protestant theories?

And just in case these conveniently desire to file these into the annals of fulfilled history, Christ Himself says: “Then let those who are in *Judea flee* to the *mountains*, and let those who are *inside the city depart*, and *let not* those who are *out in the country* enter it because these are *days of vengeance*, so that *all things which are written will be fulfilled.*” (Luke 21:20-22) Judea is completely decimated to fulfill “all things which are written.” All prophecy is concluded.

Indeed. And by a simple Jesus-style question, most protestant interpretations fall apart as we shall address this issue in several chapters and in much detail.

Protestant reformers and Evangelical authors and commentators would either dismiss or file these prophecies (that do not give Israel victory) into the annals of fulfilled prophecies. But this too is impossible to do as we shall examine in this volume.

---

<sup>60</sup> Protestant scholars correctly refer to some subset of prophecies (like Isaiah 17) as fulfilled but we argue these are types. Indeed, Tiglath-pileser took Gilead, Galilee, and even the resistant Damascus (Rogers 1912, p.312) Sennacherib also invades Palestine. The Campaign against Jerusalem tablet tells that he “besieged and captured...of Hezekiah, the Judaeans, who had not submitted to my yoke...forty-six strong cities, with walls, the smaller cities, which were around them, without number.” (col. 3 line 12- Rogers 1912, p. 326)

<sup>61</sup> Jezreel is in Har Meggido (Armageddon)

## REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY

Before we deal with our proposed Jesus-style question, we must also deal with the slanderous accusation against Apostolic Succession sects always accused of practicing Replacement Theology<sup>62</sup> leveled by a multitude of Protestant theologians is a play on semantics. No one “replaced” Israel since in the Christian view, ethnic or biological descendants of historical Israel are not included in the spiritual Israel as defined in the New Testament. In the ‘redefined/new Israel’ view, physical or ethnic Israelites are *indeed replaced* by a spiritual (not physical) ‘Israel’. To put it simply, does a communion service by a Catholic priest by the name of “Isaac Rodriguez Marques Israel” physically replaces “Rabbi Ruben Israel?” The latter prays next year in *Jerusalem* while the first prays next year in *heavenly Jerusalem*. Neither party wants to replace the other. The two have a distinct and separate definition:

“This is *allegorically* speaking, for these *women* are *two covenants*: *one* proceeding from *Mount Sinai bearing children* who are to be *slaves*; she is *Hagar*. For this Hagar is Mount Sinai in *Arabia*, and answers to *Jerusalem* which *now is*, and is in bondage with her children.”

The latter answers to a different Jerusalem:

“But *Jerusalem which is above* is free, which is the mother of us all.” (Galatians 4:24-26)

To call Jerusalem “Hagar” “Arabia” and “bondage” would have the Hebrews of today accuse Paul of committing some serious Replacement Theology (supersessionism)<sup>63</sup> and even anti-Semitism, which according to many is why there is always an accusation of lack of support for Israel by apostolic succession Christians. In fact, with the exception of salvation, the eight privileges of historical Israel listed in Romans 9:4–5 (adoption, glory, covenants, legislation, service, promises, the fathers, Christ according to the flesh) can all be understood as privileges in which national Israel shared by default. The ultimate outcome and culmination of the history of salvation is not *replacement* by the *fulfillment*.

But Paul’s allegory is the crux of interpreting the Old Testament under the light of the New. Obviously we have two *Jerusalems* and even two *mothers* that are diametrically separated dividing tare from wheat since one aims at what is “heavenly” (“Jerusalem which

---

<sup>62</sup> Replacement Theology is a claim that Catholic interpretation makes null and void all the promises in scripture destined for Israel, that Israel gets to keep all the curses promised in the Bible while its blessings are transferred to the church.

<sup>63</sup> Definitions vary. N.T. Wright (2013:806–810) distinguishes between three *versions* of supersessionism: (1) ‘hard’ supersessionism; (2) ‘sweeping’ supersessionism; and (3) ‘Jewish’ supersessionism. But without getting into all three, such arguments should never be between Catholic and Protestant since this would put Protestant interpretation as supersessionists since they too believe that the New testament fundamentally redefines the criteria of covenant membership and identity not marked off by the ‘works of the law’ (Gl 3:2, 5, 10) any more, which includes circumcision (Gl 5:2–3, 6, 11; 6:12, 13, 15), the abstention from eating unclean food (Gl 2:11–14) and the keeping of certain days, months, seasons and years (Gl 4:10). Yet, the ‘works of the law’

is above”) and the other aims at what is “earthly” (“Jerusalem which now is”) that corresponds to *Mount Sinai* in *Arabia*.<sup>64</sup>

For Evangelicals who uplift Jerusalem (which many do) they are the ones who replaced heavenly Jerusalem with earthly Jerusalem and in fact reject its application as directed in Hebrews 12 that to connect to Zion is to connect to the entire corporate structure of heaven: saints, angels and to Christ. The practitioners of Replacement Theology is them since the false accuser usually accuses others of what he is guilty of.

#### THE SIGNIFICANCE OF “ARABIA”

Now we come to another major hurdle to Protestant interpreters who interpret at a whim. Paul could have simply said “Mount Sinai” but adding “Arabia” (“Mount Sinai in Arabia”) makes little sense unless “*Mount Sinai*” is the allegoric use to a literal “*Arabia*”. Why else construct the sentence where Paul already made his point: “these *women* are *two covenants*: *one* proceeding from *Mount Sinai bearing children* who are to be *slaves*; she is *Hagar*.” Paul insisted to make a new point: “For this Hagar is Mount Sinai in *Arabia*.” His focus on Arabia is merited since this is precisely the subject of the prophets regarding the destiny of a major church enemy—the major portion of “Babylon the Great” (aka: “Mystery Babylon”).

Paul basically says that no matter how lamb looking is the teacher, whatever spirituality or interpretation basis the heavenly matters on earthly Jerusalem, is nothing to flirt with since such link is with Babylon’s Arabia symbolized as “Hagar” (to be cast out): “the slave [in this case literal Israel] shall not inherit with the son of the free woman [the Israel of God].” (Galatians 4:30)

The link between Israel and Arabia is significant and has multiple prophecies that address this, which we shall examine shortly.

#### THE CITY—BABYLON THE GREAT

But such an analogy by Paul in proposing two parties, the first is the resident applicants of heavenly Jerusalem and for the rejects an “earthly Jerusalem” composed of Israel and its cities and “Arabia” with its cities. But such an analogy does not support the centuries old historic anti-Papist agenda of Rome being “Mystery Babylon”. But we must still solve Numbers 24 where the “star” (Messiah) destroys the “city”:

“Out of Jacob shall come he that shall have dominion, and shall *destroy the survivors* of the *city*.” (Numbers 24:19)<sup>65</sup>

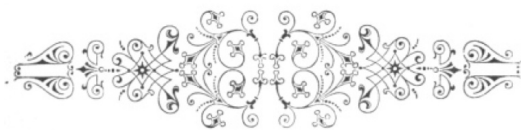
Only Armageddon matches in the scale when nations conflagulate to the point that Christ destroys even the remnant residing in “the city”.

Which city? Babylon the Great.

---

<sup>64</sup> Some argue that in Paul’s time, the region of Arabia Petraea would have included both the modern Sinai peninsula and northwestern Saudi Arabia but as we shall see from Isaiah and Jeremiah this is not the case.

<sup>65</sup> Or the “survivors of the cities” (plural) see ESV, RSV



## UNLOCKING WHAT BAFFLED PROTESTANT SCHOLARS

Or so they claim that Balaam's parable in Numbers 24 baffles them because "Eber" (the Hebrews) are destroyed. Throughout Protestant history they rarely if ever refer to it in their eschatological analysis, but simply burry its keys since it demolishes their absurd apocalyptic views and their resistance to differentiate between "Israel" (the church) and "Eber" (the Hebrews):

"And he took up his discourse and said, "The oracle of Balaam the son of Beor, the oracle of the man whose *eye is opened*, the oracle of *him* who *hears the words of God*, and *knows the knowledge of the Most High*, who sees the *vision of the Almighty*, falling down with his eyes uncovered: I see *him*, but not now; I *behold him*, but *not near*: a *star* shall *come out of Jacob* and a scepter shall rise *out of Israel*; it shall crush the *forehead of Moab* and destroy all the *sons of Sheth*. *Edom* shall be *dispossessed*; Seir also, his enemies, shall be dispossessed. ***Israel does valiantly***. And *one from Jacob* shall exercise dominion and *destroy the survivors of cities!* Then he looked on Amalek and took up his discourse and said, "Amalek was the first among the nations, but its end is *utter destruction*. And he looked on the *Kenite*, and took up his discourse and said, "Enduring is your dwelling place, and *your nest* is set in *the rock*. Nevertheless, *Kain shall be burned* when *Asshur takes you away captive*." And he took up his discourse and said, "Alas, *who shall live when God does this?* But ships shall come from *Kittim* and shall afflict *Asshur* and ***Eber and he too shall come to utter destruction***."<sup>66</sup>

Why do they ignore this prophecy? After all, it gives us crucial clues to God's ultimate and grand plan for Armageddon filing His dissolution of marriage with the bulk of fallen humanity to only save a remnant. But this sets a problem for Protestant theologians since here we have two references to what seems like the same entity. On the one hand we have "Israel" as victorious but "Eber" (the Hebrews) is not. Isn't Israel the Hebrews? If we differentiate between the two where one is "the Israel of God" (victorious) and the other, the Hebrews (cast out) such a view creates a monumental problem regardless that this is exactly what Paul alluded to in Galatians 4 that a separation does exist between the two. To the Protestant, if the bulk of these prophecies about "Israel" are interpreted as "the Israel of God" would mean that the church is all over the Old Testament as a "holy city," with a corporate institution, with headquarters, ambassadors, leader and even defense minister ... This would not bode well for all the private interpretations of scripture where everyone can do whatever they desire (rebellion). But unfortunately the prophecy is straightforward;

---

<sup>66</sup> Israel's interpreters obviously used Numbers 24 since Kittim in the War Scroll will "be crushed without a remnant" (1QM XVIII 3)

“Eber” and “Sheth,” similar to Noah’s flood, face a final solution with mankind. Where then does earthly Israel stand when God says in this unpopular prophecy: “Wait ye upon me, saith the Lord, in the day of my resurrection, *in the future*; because it is my determination to *assemble the nations*, and gather together the kingdoms?” (Zephaniah 3:8)

So the prophecy of Numbers 24, while it was the most popular prophecy in ancient Israel during the revolt against Rome, lost its luster and popularity after the Protestant reformation since the Hebrew interpretation of Numbers 24 proved disastrous for earthly Israel, which in God’s mind was “Eber” (simply the Hebrews) not “Israel”.

The tares’ main focus is always on *popular* verses while ignoring *unpopular* ones. It is the process of isolating scripture to provide half the truth. With these, prophecies must first conduct a popularity contest and since Numbers 24 does not fit an agenda to strictly point to Rome, as thought by rabbinic interpreters of old, so they ignore it. But ignoring this prophecy emulates the same error ancient Israel used to paint “Rome” as God’s grand enemy.

In fact it does not even point to Rome but to Asia Minor—“Ships *from* the coast of Cyprus” [Chittim]—is not “ships *of* Chittim” (Rome) as in Daniel 11 where Ships *of* Chittim (Italy, Spain) gives a deathblow to the ships *from* Chittim (Asia Minor).<sup>67</sup> Protestant interpreters to spiritually distance themselves from Rome put their entire focus in the Old Testament painting all references for “Israel” as earthly Jerusalem (the Hebrews). Numbers 24 makes the case in that it too gives affirmation to Paul’s two Jerusalems. Numbers 24 does not refer to some battle, but the *culmination of the end of the age*—a closure to this world—where there is no escape to file such massive event into any date in the past. In Numbers 24 no clever interpreter can easily shove this prophecy as fulfilled by Sennacherib, Nebuchadnezzar, Antiochus Epiphanes or Titus on afflicting “Eber” (the Hebrews). But this is precisely what Protestant interpreters did to a bulk of these prophecies in the Old Testament, that such conniving approach mimics the Jewish rebels to proclaim a war on Rome.

Being the foundation, this sets precedence in biblical interpretation, not just in the New Testament, but the Old, since here it uses the name “Eber” as a complete opposite from “Israel”. To explicitly use the name “Israel,” as victorious and “Eber” as destroyed without any additive, any prequalify or any proviso means that the entire history, structure and foundation of Protestant eschatological theology crumbles as we shall see in this volume. They do this despite Paul’s warning and Zechariah 12 that in the end God condemns all who “lift it [Jerusalem] up<sup>68</sup> shall be cut to pieces,”<sup>69</sup> (killed). Zechariah 12, just like all prophecy, refers to the foundation on all prophecy: Numbers 24.

So when it comes to the end of the age, it is impossible to unlock prophecy without going first to the foundation; *the blueprint, the oldest prophecy about the destiny of nations and the end of the world* is Numbers 24.

---

<sup>67</sup> Saint Jerome quoting Daniel 11:30—Prefaces and Commentary on Daniel, pg. 111

<sup>68</sup> To “lift” (Hebrew A’mas) “to carry, to bear, Isa. 46:2; specially to lift up a load and put it on a beast” (see Gesenius Hebrew –Chaldee Lexicon). This is crucial since the beast carries the harlot as an animal carries his burden. Isa 46:3 “Bel bows down; Nebo stoops; their idols are on beasts and livestock; these things you *carry* are borne as burdens on weary beasts.”

<sup>69</sup> From the Hebrew/Arabic “Sharat” to rip, shred, cut (Strong’s H8295)

In the prophecy “ships coming from the coast of Chittim” (Asia Minor)<sup>70</sup> invades “Assyria” (Iraq) even “destroy the survivors of the city” alludes to either Jerusalem or the entire harlot: “the cities of the nations fell” (Revelation 16:19) regarding the fall of Babylon the Great.<sup>71</sup> The whole crux of the prophecy says this: that at the end of this world, only the Israel of God will ultimately survive “*Israel does valiantly*” (Numbers 24:18) and everyone else is either “dispossessed” by the Israel of God (joins the church) or face complete annihilation since it explicitly says: “destroy all the sons of Sheth” that is (besides the Israel of God) all mankind is gone since the progeny of Sheth are all who originate from Noah (Noah is the descendant of Sheth).

In other words, besides “Israel,” (that is the Israel of God) mankind goes the way of the dodo and is obvious why the question is asked: “Alas, *who shall live when God does this?*” And the answer to that question God is even more confirming: “But ships shall come from *Kittim* and shall afflict *Asshur* and *Eber and he too shall come to utter destruction.*” “He too” that is “Eber” “shall come to utter destruction while the outcome for Israel is victory:

*“Edom shall be dispossessed; Seir also, his enemies, shall be dispossessed. Israel does valiantly.”*

Even the Kenites (throughout the Bible is symbolic of an ally of Israel and the most secure living out of harms way) are punished by Assyria taken captive while Edom (portion of today’s Arabs) is dispossessed.<sup>72</sup>

The prophecy (a parable) taken at face value paints the God of Israel (as in the times of Noah) bent on a final solution where only the Israel of God survives. This should be a none issue since all Protestant theologians agree that the end of the world will be consumed by fire “But by the same word the heavens and earth that now exist are stored up for *fire*, being kept until the day of judgment and destruction of the ungodly” (2 Peter 3:7) just as Christ Himself came to earth and destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah by fire: “Then the LORD [Christ] rained on Sodom and Gomorrah sulfur and *fire* from the LORD [the Father] out of heaven” (Genesis 19:24) and Zephaniah 1 “He will make a *sudden end of all who dwell on the earth.*” (Zephaniah 1:15-18) Will the Hebrew have an exception?

Just the fact that the earth is destroyed by fire should have been a clue since this resembles the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, that the world will be infected with homosexuality and the support thereof.

---

<sup>70</sup> Chittim is Kition in Greece (Asia Minor)

<sup>71</sup> Babylon means Confusion

<sup>72</sup> This “Edom” is made more clear in Obadiah 1: “In that day, declares the LORD, will I not destroy the wise men of Edom, those of understanding in the mountains of Esau? Your warriors, Teman, will be terrified, and everyone in Esau’s mountains will be cut down in the slaughter.” This includes the Arabs (Teman, Edom) and Jordan “For thy violence against thy brother Jacob shame shall cover thee, and thou shalt be cut off for ever.” “Forever” surely proves this prophecy is for the end of days. Obviously the Assyrian sets up a snare making a treaty with them and passes through Jordan (Daniel 11:41) to only destroy them in the end. “Neither shouldst thou have stood in the crossway, to cut off those of his that did escape; neither shouldst thou have delivered up those of his that did remain in the day of distress.” (v. 14) “For the day of the LORD is near upon *all the heathen*” (v. 15)



In that major foundational prophecy God sets up a snare and a major rule; there is an “Israel” (the *Hebrews*) and then there is an “Israel of God” (Jew and Gentile united in Christ) and then at the end there is a *unification* of Israel between converted Jew (after a massive tribulation) and Gentile in Christ when a remnant of earthly Israel repents. It is really that simple.

However, in the very prophecy, God seems to have thrown a monkey wrench in the Protestant’s conveyor belt in what baffled not only them, but from as far as ancient Israel the Hebrews who rejected Christ since “Eber” (the tribe, which includes the Hebrews (Israelites) are also annihilated by “ships” that “come from the coast of Kittim” (Cyprus) which throws another monkey wrench into Protestant interpretation of Ezekiel 38, Gog comes from “Meshech” (Asia Minor, “ships from Chittim”) not the etymological play on words being Moscow of Russia which also (as we shall see) being Orthodox does valiantly setting all their interpretations upside down. The Hebrews as we shall examine had their coinage and war scrolls from the Qumran by the Dead Sea reveals they ignored “Eber” to their doom revolted against Rome and nearly perished since the prophecy makes this so clear.

The interpreters refused to admit that this victory is for the “Israel of God.” But the concept of “the Israel of God” is not simply a single reference in Galatians 6:16, but is everywhere which Romans pointed by explaining “For they are *not all Israel* who *are of Israel*” (Romans 9:6-7) and even expressed as a standalone “Israel” in Numbers 24 while in Galatians 3:29 emphasized: “And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, heirs according to the promise.”

Instead, the Protestant scholars decided to practice the real replacement theology completely wrote-off “Eber” (the Hebrews) from the equation and gestured that this “Eber” is a reference regarding someone else:

“if by *Eber* we understand the posterity of Eber, then Balaam, who was commissioned to bless Israel at first, prophesied evil of them at last, though under another name. We may however avoid this seeming inconsistency, if we follow the other interpretation, and by *Eber* understand the people who dwelt on the *other side* of the Euphrates ...”<sup>73</sup>

And by this, such interpreters (and all who follow them) fall into the same snare that ancient Israel entrapped themselves with. So here, they interpreted “Eber” as the peoples residing “on the other sides of the Euphrates” (Iraq). This is what one calls “pass the buck”. And when it came to the destruction of “the children of Sheth” (mankind) they interpreted it in the following:

“If by Sheth was meant the son of Adam, then all the children of Sheth are all mankind; the posterity of Cain, and Adam’s other sons, having all perished in the

---

<sup>73</sup> See *Thomas Coke Commentary on the Holy Bible* on Numbers 24:17. However, contrast this to James Burton Coffman, *Commentaries On The Bible*. Coffman’s view is of sound mind on this one and does not neglect to heed and trust the prophecy as it stands.

deluge. But it is very *harsh to say*, that *any king of Israel [Messiah] would destroy all mankind . . .*"<sup>74</sup>

Such is the thinking of the lazy servant "The man who had received one talent also approached and said, 'Master, I know you. *You're a harsh man*, reaping where you haven't sown and gathering where you haven't scattered seed.'" (Matthew 25:24)

But is this what Messiah will do, just murder all mankind without an ultimate plan to convert masses? We shall extensively share the multitude of prophecies where nations that are today Muslims, Hindu and Chinese are converted (prophecies like this one which they never comprehended) while the rest of "Sheth" are destroyed.

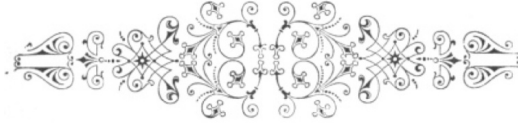
And so to avoid the destruction of mankind, "Sheth" is translated from what the name means: "tumult" rendered the verse as "destroy all the children of tumult" which would make no difference since the sons of tumult would also include evil Hebrews. Are there no Hebrews who are "sons of tumult"? If we are to document the evils that come from many Hebrews all we need to do is visit the Old Testament. And if we need to visit contemporary history, all we need to do is to see Karl Marx and Vladimir Lenin and what these two Hebrews contributed towards the destruction of Christendom and humanity "killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and drove us out. They are not pleasing to God, but hostile to all men." (1 Thessalonians 2:15)

But even to translate "Sheth" to "the sons of tumult," reveals that Protestant theologians are not naïve—they do recognize that in the name lays many keys, yet (as we later on shall show examples) ignore it when it matters. They seem to take the meaning of Sheth while ignoring the meaning of other names. As we shall see, they even allegorize what is literal and literalize what is an obvious allegory. But to see an obvious "Israel" as the "church" in Numbers 24 had to be expunged, re-interpreted and by any means obliterated from their academic works. I cannot express how much I searched their commentaries and material from even seminary graduates just to see if anyone of them recognizes the folly. Try it.

---

<sup>74</sup> See *Dissertations on the Prophecies which Have Remarkably Been Fulfilled* By Thomas Newton (1 January 1704 – 14 February 1782), pg. 68. Also see Benson Commentary on Numbers 24:17, while Matthew Henry slanders Rome and claims that "Balaam foretold the future prosperity and extensive dominion of Israel" "Thus Balaam, instead of cursing the church, curses Amalek the first, *and Rome* the last enemy of the church. Not [is] *Rome pagan only, but Rome papal also; antichrist* and all the anti christian powers" while Jamison Fausset and Brown "children of Sheth—some prince of Moab; or, according to some, the children of the East" Matthew Pool's Commentary "*Sheth* seems to be the name of some then eminent, though now *unknown*, place or prince in Moab" same with Gill's. To escape the obvious, they go as far as finding the only word "hashat": "This parallel passage has led many scholars to see *šēṭ* as a contraction of *še'ēṭ*, a rare word taken to mean 'uproar' in Lam. 3:47" yet ironically conclude "no one knows what it means" according to Strong's *this meaning is even doubtful*. Even "*še'ēt*" is not how the word in Lamentation is spelled "Hashat" which in Arabic means "chaos" (see Al-Maany). In essence such interpreters simply obliterated the obvious prophecy.





## THEY NEVER LEARN LESSONS FROM HISTORY

To differentiate between the two Jerusalems, that one is heavenly and the other “earthly” (equated to “Hagar” in “Mount Sinai in *Arabia*” by Paul in Galatians 4) will prove crucial to unlock a bundle of prophecies. This brings us to another issue which (just in case) I, as an Arab, get accused of anti-Semitism, Eber had two sons, “*Peleg*” (from whom are the Hebrews) and “*Joktan*”, the head of many Arabian tribes.<sup>75</sup> Joktan was the ancestor/progenitor of all the purest Arabian tribes of Central and Southern Arabia.<sup>76</sup> From these descendants of Joktan eventually came the nomadic Arabs of later history. It is interesting to note that even Islamic historians acknowledge that the Arabs are the “beni Qahtan”—Arabic for the *sons of Joktan!* Ishmael became the father of a line of desert people who joined with the already existing sons of Joktan to find the matrix of the people later known as Arabs.<sup>77</sup>

So this means that the destruction of “Eber” is a *combination* of two peoples—the *Hebrew* and the *Arab* destroyed together (after a remnant from both are made exempt join the Israel of God). Can we confirm this from other prophecies?

Answer: to what should ‘baffle’ Protestant scholars, this concept is not just in Paul’s analogy or only in Numbers 24, but (as we shall see in further chapters) is in several prophecies. Even as you watch the peace treaties between Israel and Arab states and even when one examines history while Arabs joined Titus’ invasion, other Arabs defended Israel and perished.

So many talk about “70 AD” ad nauseam while missing a major historic lesson; how a slight misinterpretation of Numbers 24 played a major role in Israel’s defeat. After the destruction of the Temple, Jewish messianic zeal to rebuild the temple continued. Between 70-135 A.D, rebellions continued all over the Middle East with Jewish revolts from Mesopotamia to Libya and Cyrenaica.<sup>78</sup> After the construction of Aelia Capitolina, over the ruins of Jerusalem and the erection of a temple to Jupiter on the Temple Mount,<sup>79</sup> the Jewish sages were more interested in using its prophecies as a deadly weapon against Rome. Āqībā’ ben Yōsēf fulfilling Jesus’ prophecy “if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive” (John 5:43) vouched for Simon Bar Kozba, to proclaim this Barabbas type rebel as *The Jewish Messiah*. The goal was not redemption of sin, or being a light to the gentiles,

---

<sup>75</sup> See CYCLOPEDIA of BIBLICAL, THEOLOGICAL and ECCLESIASTICAL LITERATURE Joktan came 13 descendants whose names are mentioned in Genesis 10:26–29. Some of those descendants (Sheba, Ophir, and Havilah) appear later in the Bible as names of places in the Arabian Peninsula.

<sup>76</sup> See: <https://christiananswers.net/dictionary/joktan.html>

<sup>77</sup> See *The Rise of the Crescent: The Arabs and Islam* by Dr. William Varner is Professor of Bible and Greek at The Master’s College in Santa Clarita, California.

<sup>78</sup> *History of Judaism: The late Roman-Rabbinic period*, pp. 106.

<sup>79</sup> *The Cambridge History of Judaism: Volume 4*, p.105.

but a national zeal where Kozba proclaimed that all Christians (both Jew and Gentile) must be exterminated.<sup>80</sup> The whole story reeks with hatred and mimics Haman who ended up on the gallows for wanting the destruction of God's people: *the Israel of God*.

But Āqībā' and others had a major hurdle in appointing Kozba as Messiah since "Kozba" literally means "a lie" and "Bar Kozba" combined makes him "son of the lie".

The name "son of the lie" was symbolic in line with Christ's prophecy. The literal lie was made up by Āqībā when he craftily conjured a scam since the true Messiah had to fulfill a parable in Numbers 24: "There shall come a star out of Jacob" which the star atop the temple can be viewed on their coins, including the War Scroll proves Numbers 24 was their main prophecy.

So these scoundrels gave Bar Kozba the Aramaic surname "Bar *Kokba*" which meant "Son of the Star" as Numbers 24 required "There shall come a star out of Jacob" and then conveniently proclaimed that the prophecy was fulfilled and Kozba was hailed as *The Messiah* who will fulfill Numbers 24:18 "Israel wrought valiantly" ignoring Eber's demise. And so as the Protestants do in writing off "Eber" not as the Hebrews, but as the peoples east of the Euphrates, Israel's rabbis ignored it and focused on "Israel" as the Hebrews. Obviously "Israel wrought valiantly" is a reference to the Israel of God—the Church—was victorious by converting Rome (Chittim).<sup>81</sup> The goal of the Christian towards the Jew is to bring them to the Israel of God.

The era of the 'redemption of Israel' was announced, contracts were signed and a large quantity of forgeries of Bar Kokba Revolt coinage were struck by stamping over Roman coins with the image of their destroyed temple and a star (Kokba) on top of it can be seen on these coins since Kokba was now Messiah!



Bar Kochba silver  
Shekel/tetradrachm. Obverse: the Jewish Temple facade with the rising star, surrounded by "Shimon". Reverse: A lulav, the text reads: "to the freedom of Jerusalem".

(Notice on top of the temple edifice is a star referring to Numbers 24 "a star shall arise out of Jacob")

---

<sup>80</sup> *Chronicle of Jerome*, s.v. Hadrian. See also Yigael Yadin, *Bar-Kokhba*, Random House New York 1971, p. 258. According to Eusebius' *Chronicon*, he severely punished the sect of Christians with death by different means of torture for their refusal to fight against the Romans. Simon ben Kosevah, or Cosibah, known to posterity as Bar Kokhba (Hebrew: שמעון בן כוסבה) led the Bar Kokhba revolt against the Roman Empire in 132 AD

<sup>81</sup> The prophecy was clearly for the ends of days. The Church converting Rome is simply a type of fulfillment.

Archeologists unearthed coins of the destroyed temple Israel aspired to rebuild after Titus' army destroyed it. It depicts exactly the same type of aspiration many today claim a fascination over Jerusalem and of a rebuilt Jewish temple and as is etched on the coin "to the freedom of Jerusalem". People at the time had only two choices: 1—Trust Rabbi Āqībā's interpretation of Numbers 24, and that Bar Kokba (Kozba) is "the star" Messiah and join the revolt against Rome or 2—trust Christ's warning—the destruction of Jerusalem by the continuation of "Israel" as the Israel of God. The latter analogy applying "the Israel of God" in several Old Testament prophecies gains the label by many Evangelical theologians as 'anti-Semitism' and 'Replacement Theology'.

Nothing changed from ancient Israel's errors and as Solomon the wise said: "history repeats." Like Bar Kokba coins, today's guides are in the business of manufacturing labels. Yesterday they minted the label anti-Semitism. Although there are valid arguments for anti-Semitism, not all cases are Jew hatred, but on the contrary is Jew love. These minted the label 'Replacement Theology' instead of paying close attention to history. Replacement Theology accusers are guiding many to perdition.

The revolt ensued to uproot "Chittim" (the Romans) regardless that there were no prophecies about the Hebrews uprooting Chittim in any prophecy and is why the Hebrew tares heavily relied on Numbers 24. On the contrary, the parable was destined for the ends of days "Come, I will advise you what this people will do to your people *in the latter days*" (v.14) when ships *from* Chittim<sup>82</sup> (Asia Minor) will completely annihilate the unsaved Hebrews (Jews). So the Bar Kokba revolt was a type, a hint to such error where the Hebrews only considered Numbers 24:18 "triumph of Israel" and ignored Numbers 24:24 "affliction of Eber".

## THE WAR SCROLL

To confirm what we stated so far is best handled when we examine one of the most well known ancient non-biblical scrolls found at Qumran by the Dead Sea called the War Scroll.<sup>83</sup> This actually allows us to enter the mindset at the time and compare the mindset of today's Protestant theologian repeating the same folly. It describes a war between the tribes of Levi, Judah, and Benjamin against the anti-Israel nations similar to the trends of the Messianic infatuation with the lost tribes returning prior to the second coming. The War Scroll had the

---

<sup>82</sup> The War Scroll provides a good deal of information about the Kittim, and the impression given is that the people being referred to are the Roman soldiers. The etymology of 'kittim' comes from Kition or Kitti, a Phoenician city on Cyprus, according to Josephus (Antiquities 1: 12.3). The word loses its original connotations, and is linked later to the Assyrians in Isaiah 22 3:12, when the Assyrians conquer the Kittim. The Assyrian king Sargon II had a stele erected at Larnaca on Cyprus (Encyc. Judaica, p. 1079), cementing the association.

<sup>83</sup> "From Cave 4, seven additional scrolls related to the eschatological war were found (4Q491–7), being either copies of the War Scroll or compositions closely related to it, or perhaps its sources. They further support the impression gathered from the War Scroll that it had at least two stages in its composition, a first dating to the Maccabean period (Columns 1–9), and a second (Columns 10–19) intended to adapt the composition to a new reality resulting from the Roman conquest of Judea in 63 B.C.E."—Brian Schultz, Bar-Ilan University

same faulty interpretation of Numbers 24 as the Protestants (eliminating the outcome of “Eber” while “Israel does valiantly”):

“There shall come forth a star out of Jacob, a scepter shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab and destroy all sons of Sheth, and he shall go down to battle from Jacob [Israel] and shall cause to perish the remnant [out of] the city, and the enemy shall be a possession, and *Israel shall do valiantly*. *By the hand of Thine anointed ones*, the seers of things ordained, Thou hast foretold us the e[pochs] of the wars of Thy hands, that Thou mayest be honoured upon our enemies, by felling the troops of Belial, the *seven nations of vanity*. . . From of old Thou hast announced to us the time appointed for the mighty deed of Thy hand *against the Kittim* [Rome], saying: 'Then shall Asshur<sup>84</sup> fall with the sword not of man, and the sword, not of men, shall devour him.'—Excerpt from the War Scroll.<sup>85</sup>

Sounds familiar? Even the “*seven nations of vanity*” are the heads of the beast given by Daniel Jewish interpreters attributed to Rome. Just as Protestants proclaimed that Rome was the enemy and then they re-interpreted Numbers 24 similar to the ancient Hebrews.

---

<sup>84</sup> In the War Scroll, the sons of light launch their attack "against the companies of the Kittim of Ashur." (War Scroll I.2) The outcome is that "Ashur will fall...; the rule of the Kittim will come to an end." (4Q496 Col I. frag 6) Ashur seems to be "a term to denote the gentile oppressor of Israel, whereas Kittim indicates more precisely where this oppressor comes from." (Encyc. Jud. 1080) Then, in the Habakkuk commentary, the Kittim are quite obviously the godless and powerful Roman empire; they are depicted as "...the Kittim, who are swift and powerful in battle...they will vanquish many countries and will not believe in the precepts of God." (1QpHab Col. II :12)

<sup>85</sup> Yigael Yadin, *The Scroll of the War of the Sons of Light Against the Sons of Darkness*, pp. 310-12. For more detailed text of the entire scroll view exhibits in this volume under 'War Scroll'



---

## The War Scroll

The Scroll of the War of the Sons of Light Against the Sons of Darkness (or in short, the War Scroll) is one of the first seven Dead Sea Scrolls to have been discovered. Its genre is unique, describing an eschatological war that is to put an end to evil in the world. It is a kind of military manual, intended for priests, describing their role in providing ceremonial, cultic, and even tactical leadership to the army of the Sons of Light.

The introduction (Columns 1–2) gives the historical background to the war and the sequence of its development. It will begin with a “War against the Kittim,” a short but intense battle against Israel’s eschatological enemy (Numbers 24:24). After six rounds during which the Sons of Light will alternate between gaining and losing the upper hand, God will intervene with his mighty hand to miraculously bring victory.

This battle will introduce a second stage in the eschatological war, the “War of Divisions,” one that will be launched after six years of war preparations during which Israel’s exiles will be able to return to Jerusalem. The fighting itself will be spread out over 35 years, with breaks every sabbatical year, until the entire world is conquered.

Columns 3–9 are a series of rules (called *serakhim* in Hebrew), describing the trumpets and banners to be used, the different infantry and cavalry units, various purity rules, as well as tactical matters. These rules, originally intended for the War of Divisions, were eventually adapted to fit the War against the Kittim, as in Columns 15–19. Columns 10–14 are a series of prayers, imported from other sources, to be recited on the battlefield.

~~From Cave 4, seven additional scrolls related to the eschatological war were found~~  
(The War Scroll “War against Kittim,” a short but intense battle against Israel’s eschatological enemy (Numbers 24:24)”—source: [biblicalarcheology.org](http://biblicalarcheology.org))



The Scroll of the War of the Sons of Light  
Against the Sons of Darkness

This view was not private to the Essenes. “The use of the word “Kittim” by the authors of the text therefore varies to suit contemporary politics. Their eschatological views fit outside groups into convenient roles in their personal theological boardgame.”<sup>86</sup> Although the Essenes also quoted a passage from Isaiah 31 ignored “So the LORD of hosts will come down to fight for Mount Zion and for its hill” and instead believed that God will use their hands to

---

<sup>86</sup> The ‘Kittim’ in the Dead Sea Scroll, by Clare Byard, 13 May, 1995

defeat Israel's enemies "by the hand of Thine anointed ones". F. F. Bruce observed much of the interpretations of these times and summed it up as follows:

"For, the community of Qumran believed, the prophets had all spoken of the time of the end rather than of the days in which they lived. If Balaam spoke of 'a star out of Jacob' which would 'smite through the corners of Moab' (Nu. xxiv. 17); if Ezekiel described the aggression and overthrow of Gog, of the land of Magog' (Ezek. xxxviii. 1 ff.); if Isaiah announced the Assyrian's fall 'with the sword, not of men' (Is. xxxi. 8); if Habakkuk witnessed the advance and decline of 'the Chaldeans, that bitter and hasty nation' (Hab. i. 6)—these prophets were not concerned about persons and events of their own times, but with the **defeat of the Kittim [Rome] by the sons of light** at the time of the end."<sup>87</sup>

In other words, all the prophetic roads lead to Rome. It is just as we see today's Evangelical interpretations, where their whole eschatological structure is based on pointing the finger at Rome! Do the so-called reformers down to prophecy enthusiasts like Hal Lindsey, Tim Lahaye, John Hagee and countless authors sound familiar? The whole of Israel who probably should have been the best in interpreting the scriptures fell into their own snare and focused on *popular* victory verses while overlooking the *unpopular* rest, ignore when it says "the Assyrian," or "Gog," or "Greece," make these someone else besides the Ottomans of Asia Minor.

When man finds seeming contradictions or can't solve them, it is because he has a theological prejudice exactly as the ancient Hebrews did when it came to Christianity.

So this prophecy sets a rule. After Messiah, a contradiction only exists when someone states that the "Israel of God" and the unsaved "Hebrews" (Judah) are but one and the same. There is only one way to unlock Numbers 24, that depending on the context, the "Hebrews" and "Israel" could spiritually be two separate entities. After Messiah, God made this divide. This was obvious since the prophecy would become a contradiction.

It is impossible for Protestants to interpret prophecy without making such contradictions. This dilemma can only be resolved by applying the Apostolic Succession point of view: the Hebrews cause much mischief (which when pointing them gains Orthodox and Catholics the slander of anti-Semitism).<sup>88</sup> The Hebrews initially receive *severe punishment*, then *refinement* of but a *remnant*, then *conversion* of only that *remnant* who are even baptized (unlike what some Protestants mandate) by sprinkling: "Then I will *sprinkle* clean water on you, and you *shall be clean*; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness

---

<sup>87</sup> See F. F. Bruce, *The Teacher of Righteousness in the Qumran Texts*, pg. 10.

<sup>88</sup> 'Antisemitism' is normally understood as prejudice or hatred against Jewish people as a race which is taken and understood. However this moved to labeling any theological critique or even expressing the New Testament and Church fathers or even believing in the "Israel of God" as anti-Semitism. Countless books are written to presumably expose Christian anti-Semitism by referring to New Testament passages to Bible expositors by the Church fathers. But if such passages and statements be taken at face value and compared to Old Testament passages it will paint the Old Testament as the most anti-Semitic book. For example, many love to quote Popes Clement IV (1265-68): Jews are "subjected to deserved servitude until, their faces covered with shame, they are compelled to seek the Lord." One can find countless passages in the Old Testament where God punished Israel to servitude.

and from all your idols” (Ezekiel 36:25) and with *these* a unity with the one church (the Israel of God) and only then Israel gains the *victory* provided by an elect “seven shepherds” of Micah 5: “This One will be our peace. When the Assyrian invades our land, when he tramples on our citadels, then we will raise against him Seven shepherds and eight leaders of men.” (v.5) This journey is further defined in all prophecies such as Micah 5:

“Your hand will be lifted up against your adversaries, and all your enemies will be cut off. It will be in that day, declares the LORD, that I will cut off your horses from among you and destroy your chariots. I will also cut off the cities of your land and tear down all your fortifications. I will cut off sorceries<sup>89</sup> [out with the Zohar and Kabbalah] from your hand, and you will have fortune-tellers no more. I will cut off your carved images and your sacred pillars from among you, so that you will no longer bow down to the work of your hands. I will root out your Asherim from among you and destroy your cities. “And I will execute vengeance in anger and wrath on the nations which have not obeyed.”

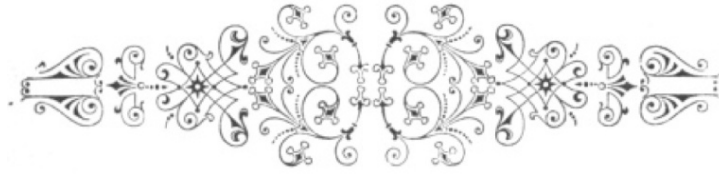
Notice how this “victory” is strangely explained: “our hands will be lifted up against your adversaries and all your enemies will be cut off” is the aid from Jerusalem above explained by what seems as the complete opposite: utter destruction of all Israel’s cities and even its fortifications.

Try reading Protestant commentaries where the interpretations are monotonous, boring and makes little sense. Israel is utterly vanquished and only a remnant realizes that their salvation can never be by their own power but by joining the New Jerusalem and it is this process of redemption, then, and only then will the defeat of Israel’s enemies come from above against all “the nations, which have not obeyed.” This process is in every prophecy. Zechariah for example says this:

“Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, against the Man who is My Companion” says the LORD of hosts. “Strike the Shepherd [Christ], and the sheep will be scattered [Diaspora]; then I will turn My hand against the little ones. And it shall come to pass in all the land,” says the LORD, that two-thirds in it shall be cut off and die [Eber’s destruction], but one-third shall be left in it: I will bring the one-third through the fire, will refine them as silver is refined, and test them as gold is tested [refinement]. They will call on My name, and I will answer them [conversion]. I will say, “This is My people’; and each one will say, “The LORD is my God.’ [reconciliation]” (Zechariah 13:7-9)

---

<sup>89</sup> See Kabbalah



## THEIR LITERALIST APPROACH BLINDS THEM

The myth on the battle of interpretation is not a war of literalist vs. allegorist, but allegorizing literals or literalizing allegory or ignoring that a word could apply to both senses. For example:

“The Arabian will no longer pitch his tent there [in Babylon]” (Isaiah 13:20).

Not one Protestant commentary explained the allegory behind a “tent,” which they only applied the literal sense. To explain the verse, Protestant commentaries went out of their way to prove that Arabs used to pitch tents in ancient Iraq. But instead of viewing the significance of the verse they make up quick off the cuff answers. There is a depth and wealth in a single verse. What does it mean by an allegoric “tent” and why is Isaiah telling us about the “Arab” no longer pitching his tent in Babylon? Did not the Chaldeans also pitch tents there? A “tent” prophetically is a big word:

"How goodly are thy tents, O Jacob, and thy tabernacles, O Israel!" (Numbers. 24:5).

Is God admiring the Hebrew tents? “Tent” in scripture symbolizes a temple and a spiritual kingdom:

“May God enlarge Japheth, and let him dwell in the tents of Shem.”

Meaning: Japheth will join the temples of Shem (be converted).

Have these scholars forgotten the first tabernacle was a tent?<sup>90</sup> “The Arabian will no longer pitch his tent there” (Isaiah 13:20) means that Arabian temples will no longer be centered in Arabia joining the free woman and the Jerusalem above (Galatians 4). Even more significant, how did Isaiah know that Arabia will become a center of a religion and a major branch of Babylon the Great? This means the Muslims will too (like Japheth) join the tent of Shem (conversion), which we find Isaiah 45 and Isaiah 11, significant prophecies regarding mainly the conversion of Muslims, which we shall explain later on.

But one might ask, so what if Muslims convert and join the tent of Shem, the whole world will be converted after all. But without understanding that a tent is a temple is why Protestant interpreters are lost. The prophecy says:

---

<sup>90</sup> Hebrew *miškan* ("tabernacle") thus, portable tent since it was not intended to be a permanent dwelling place until established in Jerusalem. Similarly our temples on earth are tents because they too are temporary to be established permanently in heavenly Jerusalem.

“And *Babylon*, which is *called glorious* by the *king of the Chaldeans*, shall be as when God overthrew *Sodoma*, and *Gomorrha*.” (Isaiah 13:19) <sup>91</sup>

But how could this Babylon be in Arabia when it was admired by the king of Chaldea who is from Iraq not Arabia? Actually God was giving us a clue, a solution to the riddle. “Nabonidus (556-539 B.C) ruled Babylon (today Iraq) with his son Belshazzar (see Daniel 5-8). Belshazzar’s father Nabonidus (king of the Chaldees) was on his long pilgrimage devoted to the temple of Sîn (the Moon god) in Arabia when Babylon fell. Nabonidus was always absent from Babylon Iraq preferring the Arabian oasis of Tayma (today is called Yathrib, or Al-Medina Al-Munawarah ‘The Radiant City’), which is mentioned in Isaiah 21 as “Tema”.

Today this city is the second holiest city in Islam after Mecca. Nabonidus, like Muhammad, was so attached to that city and was in a pilgrim there before he surrendered to the Persian forces in 539 B.C. while in absentia, marking the end of Babylon and the end of the Babylonian captivity of God’s people, the Jews, and the beginning of the Persian Empire under Cyrus who was hinted about by Isaiah as a type of Messiah.

Nabonidus, who after ruling only three years, while in the oasis of Tayma and devoting himself to the worship of the moon god Sîn had his son Belshazzar co-regent (king) in 553 B.C., leaving him in charge of Babylon's defense. On October 10, 539 B.C., Daniel told Belshazzar that “God has measured thy kingdom ... it has been weighed in the balance, and found wanting” (Daniel 5:25-27)<sup>92</sup>

This “measuring” of a kingdom to be “tested in the balances” is another major clue to unlock who joins the Antichrist, which we shall keep for another lesson to show you what such scholars missed. Daniel’s message was clear: Babylon was found wanting.

And now you can completely understand that what Isaiah was saying is this: the city that Nabonidus called “glorious” is where the “the Arabian will no longer pitch his tent there” (Isaiah 13:20).

So how significant is an allegoric “tent?”

Again, a “tent” prophetically is a big word: "How goodly are thy tents, O Jacob, and thy tabernacles, O Israel!" (Num. 24:5) is the joining of the Hebrew remnants to the Israel of God.

We just took the word “tent”. We could write volumes on other allegoric words protestants miss.

And so here is the Jesus-style question to anyone who questions the scripture: *How did Isaiah foreknow that Arabia will be the tent (temple) of one of the daughters of Babylon will be established in “Arabia” instead of Iraq? How could Isaiah even imagine that and completely ignore Iraq, which at his time was the center?*

God is so meticulous with each and every word He gives to the prophets and is why we comb unpopular verses and verses that were thought for centuries to be “contradictions.”

## THEY IGNORE THE APOCALYPTIC FEATURES

---

<sup>91</sup> Brenton's Septuagint Translation

<sup>92</sup> In the Septuagint Babylon was “measured” instead of “numbered”.

“Behold, the day of the LORD is coming, cruel, with fury and burning anger, to make the land a desolation; and He will *exterminate its sinners* from it. For the *stars of heaven* and their constellations *will not flash forth their light*; the *sun will be dark* when it rises and the *moon will not shed its light*.” (Isaiah 13:10-11)

The darkening of the sun (near complete falling) is an Apocalyptic feature not to be ignored. Ancient Babylon’s fall is a type, Babylon the Great’s destruction is to be viewed synonymous with the rest of the prophets and they all mention it:

“Flee away, turn back, dwell in the depths, O inhabitants of *Dedan* [Arabia], for I will bring *the disaster of Esau* upon him at the time I punish him.” (Jeremiah 49:8)

Here we have “Dedan” which like Isaiah 13 is Arabia, not Rome. And like Isaiah 13, we also have apocalyptic features:

“Indeed Babylon is to fall for the slain of Israel, as also for Babylon the *slain of all the earth have fallen*.” (Jeremiah 51:49)

“For Babylon the slain of all the earth have fallen” is a key verse. Did all the slain of the earth fall for Babylon in Iraq or is it about this:

“That on *you* may come *all the righteous blood shed on the earth*, from the *blood of righteous Abel* to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar.” (Matthew 23:35)

“Righteous blood shed on the earth” in Matthew 23 is the same as “for Babylon the *slain of all the earth have fallen*” in Jeremiah 51:49. Jesus understood Jeremiah and was quoting him pronouncing judgment on earthly Israel as “Babylon”.

And we even find the same anguish expressed by Jeremiah is the same anguish expressed by Isaiah since this is the punishment of his people “daughter Zion” and “daughter of my people”. While Jeremiah 6 gives a clearer reference since this judgment is against “*O daughter of my people*” and “plunderer will suddenly come *upon us*” “*Our hands* grow feeble. Anguish has taken hold of *us*, Pain *as of a woman in labor*” this is a “daughter of Zion” “daughter of my people” born of Jerusalem—includes the church in its fallen state as an “earthly Jerusalem” while Isaiah clearly reveals; this is what constitutes “Babylon is fallen is fallen,” a definite link to the Apocalypse and the Harlot!

While Babylon’s invasion is a type, the ultimate fulfillment is future:

“Son of man, set your face toward *Teman*, and speak out against the south and prophesy against the forest of the South, and say to the forest of the South, ‘Hear the word of the LORD: thus says the Lord GOD, “Behold, I am about to kindle a fire in you, and it will consume every green tree in you, as well as every dry tree; the blazing flame will not be quenched and the whole surface from south to north will be burned by it.” (Ezekiel 20:46-47)



What size “fire” is this that it consumes south upwards towards the north? Where is this “south”? Obviously it is Arabia:<sup>93</sup>

“The oracle concerning Edom. One keeps calling to me from Seir, “Watchman, how far gone is the night? Watchman, how far gone is the night? Bring water for the thirsty, O inhabitants of the land of Tema, meet the fugitive with bread. For they have fled from the swords, from the drawn sword, and from the bent bow and from the press of battle.” (Isaiah 21:11)<sup>94</sup>

“The oracle about *Arabia*. In the thickets of Arabia you must spend the night, O caravans of Dedanites.” (Isaiah 21:13)

---

<sup>93</sup> Dedan is Arabia (see Brenton’s Septuagint Translation) an ancient Arabian city-state located in the oasis of al-‘Ula. Teman is the direction South and was applied to being used as the Hebrew name of Yemen (whose Arabic name is “Yaman”) due to its location in the Southern end of the Arabian Peninsula.

<sup>94</sup> In the life of Muhammad by Anwar al Awlaki: “Hijrah mentioned in Isaiah (21:14): “The inhabitants of the land of Tema brought water to him that was thirsty, they prevented with their bread him that fled.” (21:15): “For they fled from the swords, from the drawn sword, and from the bent bow, and from the grievousness of war. ” Muhammad (saw) and other Muslims made hijrah and the Ansar supported them with their bread. This verse is talking about the brotherhood of the muhajireen and the Ansar. Book of Isaiah (21:16): “For thus hath the LORD said unto me, Within a year, according to the years of an hireling, and all the glory of Kedar shall fail.” Isaiah (21:17): “And the residue of the number of archers, the mighty men of the children of Kedar, shall be diminished: for the LORD God of Israel hath spoken it. ” Who is Kedar? Let's let the Bible speak for itself. It states in Genesis (25:13): And these were the names of the sons of Ishmael, by their names, according to their generations: The firstborn of Ishmael, Nebajoth; then Kedar, Adbeel, Mibsam. So Kedar is one of the sons of Ismael (as), in the bible when it talks about the princes of Kedar, it talks about the arabs. The people of Quraish are descendants of Kedar. Let's go back to the prophecy Isaiah (21:16-17). What is the prophecy talking about? We just spoke about hijrah in verses Isaiah (21:14-15). What is the event that happened one year after hijrah? Notice it says that the glory of Kedar will fail. Meaning the Quraish and the residue of archers will be killed, or killed. This is referring to the Battle of Badr. The battle of Badr occurred in the second year of hijrah. In the battle of badr, all of the most brutal leaders of Quraish were killed; Abu Jahl, Umayya bin Khalaf, Uqba bin Abi Muaith and more” end quote

“In pursuance of Mahomet's commands, the citizens of Medīna, and such of the Refugees as possessed houses, received the prisoners, and treated them with much consideration. "Blessings be on the men of Medina!" said one of these prisoners in later days; "they made us ride, while they themselves walked: they gave us wheaten bread to eat when there was little of it, contenting themselves with dates. It is not surprising that when, some time afterwards, their friends came to ransom them, several of the prisoners who had been thus received declared themselves adherents of Islam...Their kindly treatment was thus prolonged, and left a favourable impression on the minds even of those who did not at once go over to Islam" Muir, William (1861). *The Life of Mahomet* (Volume 3 ed.). London: Smith, Elder and Co. p. 122. Retrieved 26 February 2015. In a speech Erdogan said regarding the Syrian refugee problem: “I do not pay attention to those who see us as traitors, because we hosted the Syrian and Iraqi brothers at home, nor do I pay attention to those who are preparing to send Syrians to their country because those do not know the meanings of “Al-Ansar and Al-Muhajirun“. The Al-Ansar and Al-Muhajirun (immigrants and the aiders of immigrants) is the story when the Muslims left Mecca during prophet Muhammad’s days and became Al-Muhajirun (immigrants) in Medina to be aided by the Al-Ansar (aiders of immigrants). Everything Erdogan does goes along the plan of an Islamic worldwide revolution.



“Concerning Edom. Thus says the LORD of hosts, “Is there no longer any wisdom in Teman? Has good counsel been lost to the prudent? Has their wisdom decayed? “Flee away, turn back, dwell in the depths, O inhabitants of Dedan, for I will bring the disaster of Esau upon him at the time I punish him.” (Jeremiah 49:7)

“Son of man, set your face toward Teman, and speak out against the south and prophesy against the forest and of the South All flesh will see that I, the LORD, have kindled it; it shall not be quenched. Then I said, “Ah Lord GOD! They are saying of me, ‘is he not just speaking parables?’” (Ezekiel 20:46-49)

And if Jeremiah’s prophecy is regarding Persia’s Cyrus ending Babylon, God then causes the destruction of Elam (Persia, Iran) and also causes its conversion:

‘So I will shatter Elam before their enemies and before those who seek their lives; and I will bring calamity upon them, even My fierce anger,’ declares the LORD, ‘and I will send out the sword after them until I have consumed them. Then I will set My throne in Elam and destroy out of it king and princes,’ declares the LORD. But it will come about in the last days that I will restore the fortunes of Elam,’” declares the LORD” (Jeremiah 47:37-39)

It is obvious “I will set My throne in Elam” is the process of Christianization and the context of these prophecies is the end of days. Any maneuvering to answer this question must also contend with other prophecies in Joel and Ezekiel 38 and Zechariah 9 warning of a northern invasion which interpreters admit is unfulfilled!

“A lion has gone up from his thicket, and a destroyer of nations has set out; He has gone out from his place to make your land a waste. Your cities will be ruins without inhabitant.” (Jeremiah 4:7)

This is the same as in Numbers 24, Micah 5, Isaiah 17, Isaiah 13, Ezekiel 15-16 and Jeremiah 49-51. Now we know where this “lion” in Isaiah 21 comes from: the north—the Turks and their extensive allies from the whole lands of Magog. Since I have warned of this in 1994 where many dismissed us with a smile, today recognize this. God even explains the snare of the interpreters:

“For this, put on sackcloth, Lament and wail; for the fierce anger of the LORD Has not turned back from us. “It shall come about in that day,” declares the LORD, “that the heart of the king and the heart of the princes will fail; and the priests will be appalled and the prophets will be astounded. Then I said, “Ah, Lord GOD! Surely You have utterly deceived this people and Jerusalem, saying, ‘You will have peace’; whereas a sword touches the throat.” (Jeremiah 4:8-10)

Jeremiah asks: “Ah, Lord GOD! Surely You have utterly deceived this people and Jerusalem, saying, ‘You will have peace’; whereas a sword touches the throat” is explaining all the prophecies how they seem to bring good news to Hebrew-Israel when it is the reverse of what they had thought because prophecy has made a snare to the proud and they blame God

for in their view He has “utterly deceived this people” since these interpreted Jerusalem would be victorious and have “peace”. They are shocked and the Muslim scimitar “touches the throat” when Muslims behead masses upon masses who as well deceive themselves by the prophecy of Muhammad.<sup>95</sup>

God does set up His snare. But without differentiating between “Israel” at times as in “Hebrews” and “Israel of God” the false interpreters deceive themselves in not understanding God’s plan where the false “priests” and false “prophets” are trapped.

“Behold, he goes up like clouds, and his *chariots* like the *whirlwind*; His horses are *swifter than eagles*. Woe to *us*, for we are *ruined!*”

Now we come to the allegoric “horse” and the allegoric “chariot” for these jet fighters like the “whirlwind” flying in the air and are “swifter than eagles”. God lays the sin and His condition for the rescue:

“*Wash your heart from evil*, O *Jerusalem*, that you may be *saved*. How long will your wicked thoughts Lodge within you? For *a voice declares from Dan*, and *proclaims wickedness from Mount Ephraim*. *Report it to the nations*, now! Proclaim *over Jerusalem*, ‘Besiegers come from a *far country*, and lift their voices against the *cities of Judah*. ‘Like watchmen of a field they are against her round about, because she has rebelled against Me,’ declares the LORD. Your ways and your deeds have brought these things to you. This is your evil. How bitter! How it has touched your heart!” (Jeremiah 4:14-18)

The prophet laments the same way Isaiah laments:

“My soul, my soul! *I am in anguish!* Oh, my heart! *My heart is pounding in me*; I cannot be silent, because you have heard, O my soul, the sound of the trumpet, the *alarm of war*. Disaster on disaster is proclaimed, for the *whole land is devastated*; suddenly *My tents are devastated*, My curtains in an instant. How long must I see the standard and hear the sound of the trumpet? “For *My people are foolish*, they know Me not; they are *stupid* children and have *no understanding*. They are shrewd to do evil, but to do good they do not know.” (Jeremiah 4:16-22)

“I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and *all the cities thereof were broken down* at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger.” (Jeremiah 4:26)

“The whole city *shall flee* for the noise of the horsemen and bowmen; they shall *go into thickets*, and *climb up upon the rocks*: *every city shall be forsaken*, and *not a man dwell therein*.” (Jeremiah 4:29)

---

<sup>95</sup> See the hadith where Muhammad had prophesied that the Day of Judgment will not come until Muslims behead all Jews in a final solution, narrated by al-Bukhari and Muslim. *Sahih Muslim*, 41:6985, see also *Sahih Muslim*, 41:6981, *Sahih Muslim*, 41:6982, *Sahih Muslim*, 41:6983, *Sahih Muslim*, 41:6984, *Sahih al-Bukhari*, 4:56:791, (*Sahih al-Bukhari*, 4:52:177)

“Every city shall be forsaken” is the end of city life.

“For I have heard a voice as of a *woman in travail*, and the anguish as of her that bring forth *her first child*, the voice of *the daughter of Zion*, that bewail herself, that spread her hands, saying, Woe is me now! For my soul is wearied because of murderers.” (Jeremiah 4:31)

This is why the prophecy even became more of an enigma.

But this is not the fault of the text for when there is a seeming *contradiction* is where we find the *keys*. The prophecy never failed, it is the interpreters with all their prejudicial might, strength and soul failed to examine the obvious: 1—The only survivors is the Israel of God:

“But it is not as though *the word of God has failed*. For *they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel*” (Romans 9:6)

The whole of scripture only elevates the “Israel of God,” for how else could one state “they are *not* all Israel who are *descended from Israel*?”

“I know about the slander of those who say *they are Jews* and are not, but are a *synagogue of Satan*.” (Apocalypse 2:9)

“For *they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel*” this, along with “them that say they are Jews, and they are not” shows that Paul and John has preempted the glorious titles of the once chosen people for the Christians. Christians (be they Jew or Gentile) are the spiritual Jews, the true sons of spiritual Israel.

Obviously God made this clear, that not all Israel is Israel so there is no need to gymnastically interpret the phrase “Israel of God” in Galatians 6:16 as being anything else than this. And throughout the Old Testament we find prophecy addressing this Israel of God everywhere. For example, in Psalm 74 is the Israel of God pleading:

“O God, why have You cast us off forever? Why does Your anger smoke against the sheep of Your pasture? ... Your enemies roar in the *midst of Your meeting place*; They set up their banners for signs ... And now they break down its *carved work*, all at once, with axes and hammers ... They said in their hearts, “Let us destroy them altogether.” They have *burned up all the meeting places of God* in the land. We do not see our signs; There is no longer any prophet; Nor is there any among us who knows how long. O God, how long will the adversary reproach? Will the enemy blaspheme Your name forever?”

The destruction of churches is coming. Such suffering is confirmed in Joel:

“The *grain offering* and the *drink offering*. Have been *cut off from the house of the Lord*; *the priests mourn*, who *minister to the Lord* ... Alas for the day! *For the day of the Lord is at hand*; It shall come as destruction from the Almighty.” (Joel 1:9)

It will be a tumultuous time where the iconoclast invades the center of Christianity destroying its “carved work, all at once with axes and hammers” and then burn all churches “meeting places” and also cut off the Communion “grain offering and the drink offering”. And in Psalm 75 is God’s response:

“When *I choose the proper time*, I will judge uprightly.” (Psalm 75:2)

“For in the hand of the LORD there is a cup, and the wine is red; It is fully mixed, and He pours it out; surely its dregs shall *all the wicked of the earth* drain and drink down.” (Psalm 75:8)

Does “all the wicked of the earth” excludes wicked Hebrews? Even when the saints in heaven cry out “how long O Lord”<sup>96</sup> we now know are the saints martyred during that time when the Communion is abolished and then “All the wicked of the earth,” are everyone who is not of the Israel of God is from Sheth (sons of tumult) are destroyed. All his descendants are sifted and the evil ones are thrown into the trash-bin while a remnant is redeemed from the whole earth:

“All *the ends of the world* shall remember and *turn to the LORD*, and all the families of *the nations* shall worship before You. For the kingdom is the LORD’s, And He *rules over the nations*.” (Psalm 22:27-28)

#### THIS MATCHES NUMBERS 24

Merrill F. Unger explains the Numbers 24 parable as “the most remarkable of the four parables, containing a magnificent messianic prophecy of ‘the Star out of Jacob’ and a ‘Scepter out of Israel,’ which ‘shall smite the corners [of the head] of Moab’ and destroy ‘all the sons of Sheth’”:

“Then *Israel's foes*, Moab, Edom, Amalek, Asshur, *Eber*, and Kittim, that portray the latter-day Gentile world powers, will be judged (Mt 25:31-46), before Israel’s kingdom is set up.”<sup>97</sup>

And we ask a Jesus-style question; how is all “Eber” part of “the latter-day Gentile world powers?” Isn’t this exactly how ancient Israel erroneously interpreted the verses? And what is the difference in translating “sons of Sheth” to “sons of tumult?”

Did not God proclaim regarding “Babylon”:

---

<sup>96</sup> “And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, *that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed* as they were, should be fulfilled.” (Apocalypse 6:10-11)

<sup>97</sup> The New Unger's Bible Handbook By Merrill F. Unger, pg. 110

“For see, the day of the LORD is coming—the terrible day of his fury and fierce anger. The land will be made desolate, and *all the sinners* [sons of tumult] destroyed with it.” (Isaiah 13:9)

Did not Matthew make this clear? He said:

“Therefore as the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so it will be at the *end of this age*. “The Son of Man will send out His angels, and they will *gather out of His kingdom* all things that *offend*, and those who *practice lawlessness*, and will *cast them into the furnace of fire*. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear let him hear!” (Matthew 13:40-43)

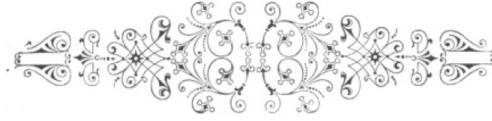
“Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. Because of these things the *wrath of God* is coming upon the *sons of disobedience* ... But now you yourselves are to put off all these: anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy language out of your mouth ... and have put on the new man who is renewed in knowledge according to the image of Him who created him ... where there is *neither Greek nor Jew, circumcised nor uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave nor free*, but Christ is all and in all.” (Col 3)

Matthew made no exception for lawless Hebrews or lawless gentiles. Jude also proclaimed the same:

“It was also about these men that *Enoch*, in the seventh generation from Adam, prophesied, saying, “Behold, the Lord came with many thousands of His holy ones, to *execute judgment* upon *all*, and to convict *all* the *ungodly* of all their *ungodly deeds* which they have done in an ungodly way, and of all the harsh things which *ungodly sinners* have spoken against Him. These are grumblers, finding fault, *following after their own lusts*; they *speak arrogantly, flattering* people for the sake of gaining an advantage.” (Jude 1:15-16)

“Just as *Sodom* and *Gomorrah* and the surrounding *cities*, which likewise indulged in *sexual immorality* and *pursued unnatural desire*, serve as an example by undergoing a *punishment of eternal fire*.” (Jude 1:7)

God (regardless to what flattering Protestant scholars think) is simply taking the trash out.



THEY FAIL TO LINK “BABYLON” IN THE APOCALYPSE  
TO  
THE “BABYLON” IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

There is only one avenue to steer all Old Testament prophecy regarding Babylon the Great into fulfilled history, that is, to isolate each piece of the prophetic puzzle and comment on them individually without linking all of them together. By not piecing the entire prophetic puzzle is perhaps the deadliest flaw held by both prominent Protestant as well as Catholic so-called scholars.

The problem with biblical scholars is that they would rather lose their soul than to face the fear of being called a doomsday prophet. What scholar today would openly proclaim that Israel and Arabia are doomed to destruction with only a remnant survives? But the ones who built an Ark, while the onlookers thought was mad was the only ones saved—Noah and his family. Had God thought like men, the Godhead would have scrapped the salvation plan as a complete mad idea and would quickly vote to cancel it.

For example, Catholic Fr. William Most billed by EWTN as “scholar,” “theologian,” “classicist,” in an article simply isolates Isaiah 21’s prophecy regarding Babylon. The prophecy obviously mentions “Arabia” “desert by the sea.” Fr. Most had to find a “sea” to back up his interpretation billing this prophecy to ancient Babylon in Iraq and since ancient Babylon-Iraq had no sea, he stretched the extent of ancient Babylon’s curse to becoming desert southwards all the way as south to the Persian Gulf:

“This is marked as an oracle concerning the Desert by the Sea. Babylon will be a desert, and the southern part of it extended to the sea, the *Persian Gulf*.”<sup>98</sup>

Yet the same Arabian regions in Isaiah 21 “Dedan” “Teman” is found in Jeremiah 49:

“Therefore hear the plan of the LORD which He has planned against Edom, and His purposes which He has purposed against the inhabitants of *Teman*: surely they will drag them off, even the little ones of the flock; surely He will make their pasture desolate because of them. The earth has quaked at the noise of their downfall. There is an outcry! The noise of it has been heard at the *Red Sea*.” (Jeremiah 49:20-21)

---

<sup>98</sup> *Old Testament Prophets – Isaiah* by Fr. William Most—EWTN



Jeremiah says this “Babylon” is by the “Red Sea” not the Persian Gulf. As to “Arabia” and its utter destruction he explains it as:

“Dedanite caravans, it seems have been driven off the usual caravan routes by a threat from Assyrians”.

So he claims that some Arab caravans got affected as result of ancient Babylon’s destruction and God thought it necessary to inform us of this? What would these interpret the earth quaking at the sound of Babylon’s fall? This could never be the quaking of a nuclear blast? Let us give a simple summary how “Israel” and “Arabia” are locked together as “Babylon” and prove it.

### JERUSALEM CAN BE “BABYLON”

The majority school of Protestant interpretive scholars poorly argued that Jerusalem could never be a “Babylon” is also in grave error. It is here where we shall dispel the typical flawed



Protestant commentary. We can take one out of so many. For example, Protestant scholar Gregory K. Beal is billed as a biblical scholar<sup>99</sup> argues:

“Babylon” has never been a symbolic name for Israel: *“There is not one example of ‘Babylon’ ever being a symbolic name for Israel, either before or after 70 A.D. . . . the burden of proof rests on those maintaining the Babylon = Jerusalem identification.”*

How could all these Protestant scholars miss God’s memo where Jeremiah clearly renders Babylon being Judah’s land (Israel):

*“For Israel hath not been forsaken, nor Judah of his God, of the LORD of hosts; though their **land** was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel. Flee out of the midst of Babylon”* (Jeremiah 51:5-6)

The ineptness or soundness or even deceitfulness of Protestant scholars stands on a Jesus-style question which we must ask as if we are in a kindergarten setting: firstly—where is “their land?” Is it Babylon or is it Israel? If Babylon in Iraq was their land during their exile, what is all the fuss in the whole Scripture about going home to Jerusalem to rebuild the Temple? Why not just remain in Babylon? It is after all their land. Secondly—whose land was “filled with sin” in this verse and where were they fleeing from?<sup>100</sup> It is obviously “Israel” (where God’s chosen reside) and “Judah” (where the Hebrews reside). Thirdly—Why is God commanding them to flee this “land” calling it “Babylon”: “Flee out of the *midst of Babylon?*”

Unless one understands the conglomerate cities that constitute this Babylon, there is absolutely no way out and is why they file this prophecy (and even the rest of the prophecies) to the exodus out of ancient Babylon.

But Cyrus the Persian, when he conquered Babylon gave Israel the green light to go to Jerusalem and rebuild the temple and was given compliment by God Himself. Now God all of the sudden tells them to flee for their lives?

Such ‘scholarly’ work fail miserably since there are ample prophecies calling the faithful during the Apocalypse to flee Babylon:

“And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues.” (Revelation 18:4)

Now they must divorce this prophecy as disconnected until we find this:

---

<sup>99</sup> *Babylon is Jerusalem Commentary*, Biblestudytools.com 1.3.4 provides an argument by Gregory K. Beale, *The Book of Revelation: A Commentary on the Greek Text* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1999), 25. . Gregory K. Beale is a biblical scholar, Professor of New Testament and Biblical Theology at Reformed Theological Seminary in Dallas. Made a number of contributions to conservative biblical hermeneutics, particularly in the area of the use of the Old Testament in the New Testament yet could not find a single reference in the Old Testament for Babylon?

<sup>100</sup> Matthew Pool attributes this sin to past sins.

“And another angel followed, saying, “Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.” (Apocalypse 14:8)

This did not bode well for such ‘scholars’ especially when they find this:

“Babylon is fallen is fallen” (Isaiah 21:9)

“The burden against Dumah” (Isaiah 21:11)

“The burden against Arabia” (Isaiah 21:13)

“All the glory of Kedar will fail” (Isaiah 21:16)

“My people [Israel] who are crushed on the threshing floor, I tell you what I have heard from the LORD Almighty, from the God of Israel.” (Isaiah 21:9-10)

“Fallen is Virgin Israel, never to rise again, deserted in her own land, with no one to lift her up.” (Amos 5:2)<sup>101</sup>

“Come down and sit in the dust, virgin daughter of Babylon” Isaiah 47:1

“Virgin Israel, never to rise again” is in accordance to Numbers 24, that Hebrew-Israel will be no more. “No one to lift her up” is the beast no longer lift up the harlot. This “Babylon is fallen is fallen” is from Isaiah 21 regarding Arabia and Israel, yet we find the same “Babylon is fallen is fallen” in Revelation 14 and regarding the greater Babylon (the entire conglomerate) we find it in Revelation 18:

“And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird!” (Apocalypse 18:2)

No matter how anyone slices and dices the prophecies, the foundation we said so far fits every prophecy in the Bible perfectly. With the correct foundation now anyone can interpret,

---

<sup>101</sup> While the prophecy as a type addresses the 10 northern tribes, he denounces Israel’s sacrifices we must also consider the long-term application: “Hear this word that the Lord has spoken against you, O children of Israel, against the whole family which I brought up from the land of Egypt saying: –You only have I known of all the families of the earth; therefore, I will punish you for all your iniquities” (Amos 3:1-2). Additional verses in the Amos 5 must also be viewed in light of the rest of prophecy since it reveals magnificent destruction where only a remnant remains: “It may be that the Lord God of hosts will be gracious to the remnant of Joseph” (v. 15) there is no remnant of the 10 tribes. Beit-El is in northern Jerusalem Judea: “Bethel will have no one to quench it.” (v. 6) Amos 5:7 “Ye who turn judgment to wormwood, and leave off righteousness in the earth,” “Judgment to wormwood”: Justice was so perverted that it was like wormwood, an herb known for its bitter taste (Rev. 8:11). It is difficult to determine if the following declaration God expressing His blessing of rain or flooding certain parts of earth but the end of it sounds like a possible asteroid hitting the sea “to bring the fortified city to ruin”: “He who made the Pleiades and Orion, who turns midnight into dawn and darkens day into night, who calls for the waters of the sea and pours them out over the face of the land— the LORD is his name. With a blinding flash he destroys the stronghold and brings the fortified city to ruin.” (v. 8-9) “Woe to you who long for the day of the LORD! Why do you long for the day of the LORD? That day will be darkness, not light.”

even a child. Do we need to do an elementary level analytical explanation of “Arabia,” “Dumah” and “Kedar” or “My people” [the Hebrews]? We in the Middle East all know Dumat-al-Jandal (Dumah) and Kedar and Arabia are all in the Arabian Peninsula.

Since for the Protestant, Rome (exclusively) must be the harlot, and not Jerusalem or Arabia is why all Old Testament prophecies about Babylon the Great were shelved into fulfilled history (we shall explain the historic impossibility shortly), yet “Babylon” in Isaiah 21 is also called “Arabia” baffled Protestant scholars since it gives the name of this “Babylon” as “Arabia” even included the Hebrews “My people” fulfilling the destruction of Eber in Numbers 24 which encompasses both the progeny of Peleg (Hebrews) and Joktan (Arabs).

But even if a weasel still argue that such prophecies are not linked, this combination on the names of nations in these prophecies eliminates any approach to any attempt to file the entire set of these proclamations on historic “Babylon” since there are no historic fulfillments of these. They are all apocalyptic prophecies in nature. Jeremiah 49-51, Isaiah 21, Isaiah 13, Isaiah 14, Isaiah 46 and Isaiah 47 are *impossible* to prove as fulfilled prophecies.

One can extrapolate a type of fulfillment, but a complete fulfillment is impossible.

All these prophecies are set up to inductively cooperate together as a future judgment of Apocalyptic-Babylon and such prophecies matches nothing of any invasions of ancient Babylon by Cyrus, Sennacherib or even Sargon II throwing a monkey wrench into all such ill-intended slanderous commentaries and centuries worth, thousands of churned books from Luther, Calvin and to the pomposity of the Puritans from England to the United States.

Surprisingly, God had zero interest in any Protestant analogy. Instead of Rome, God deals with both nations that were historically involved in this ancient family feud between Ishmael and Isaac with a severe beating of the progeny of both sons calling both “Babylon”.

God is perhaps expressing disgust with both Judaism’s Kabbalah and Islam’s Kaaba and Yathrib (the desired pilgrimage for Nabonidus) sees both the same or perhaps the issue is even greater as we shall examine extensively why such prophecies level on these two such massive judgment—the entire history of the church has had two arch enemies—Israel whom (for Pete’s sake) killed the Messiah and as expressed by Christ Himself murdered the prophets, exported from Germany to Russia Marxism and Leninism, aided the Muslims against Catholic Spain, but spiritually syncretized by use of the sacred Old Testament a

revival from the most ancient Babylonian mystical wizardry<sup>102</sup> in the form of the Kabbalah<sup>103</sup> which became the heart of Judaism is perhaps why God judges Israel alongside Arabia together as the exporters of Babylon's wares. Could the Protestant think that perhaps God here is more of an anti Kabbalist and anti-Homosexuality than He is anti-Catholic?

Even Protestant scholars like A.A. Macintosh in his book on Isaiah 21 was puzzled at such reference in verse 1 "A pronouncement concerning *the desert* by *the sea*." Ancient Babylon is by no sea but is situated by the Tigris and Euphrates rivers.

Macintosh was an expert on Hebrew aided to translate the Bible attributes much to the Arabic language as key<sup>104</sup> to unlock the Bible, yields to Dillmann Kittel and Fohrer who

---

<sup>102</sup> "the two sets of teachings became known respectively as "Practical Kabbalah" and "Speculative Kabbalah." The aim of the latter was to give the Kabbalist inner spiritual guidance; the former delved into the more questionable realms of white (helpful) and black (harmful) magic. During the long period spent under Babylon from the 6th to 11th century, Judaism was influenced by many of the mystical and magical concepts derived from Egyptian, Hellenistic, and Persian sources. These found their way into the underground stream of Kabbalism which surfaced during the early Middle Ages in Europe, incorporating the Hindu concept of reincarnation with Babylonian astrology and the numerology of Greek philosopher and mystic Pythagoras (of "music of the Spheres" fame). Numerology, the study of the occult significance of numbers, became an especially significant part of Kabbalah. The blend of disparate sources matured among the Provencal Sephardic Jews in the late 12th century from the work of Judah Halevi (c. 1075-1142), the great Jewish poet of the Middle Ages, and later in Catalonia and Castile in Spain, and favored direct experience of God over the intellectual, rationalist approach. It drew on earlier Kabbalistic texts like the Sefir Yetzirah (c.100-500), attributed to Rabbi Akiba ben Josef. Among other things, Kabbalists believed that each of the 22 letters of the Hebrew alphabet had a specific meaning and a numerical counterpart. When properly combined and added, these values would release great creative powers inherent in the "Word." They taught that particularly the first five chapters of Genesis were written in a kind of code that could be correctly interpreted only by knowing the specific values of each Hebrew letter." *Jewish Mysticism: The Kabbalah* by Caroline Myss. Superstition is spread like wildfire by Jewish adherents of Kabbalah such as Caroline Myss is a five-time New York Times bestselling author and internationally renowned speaker in the fields of human consciousness, spirituality and mysticism, health, energy medicine, and the science of medical intuition.

<sup>103</sup> The Sultan Bayezid II stated that the king of Aragon, Ferdinand, who had expelled the Jews from Iberia, had "impoverished his kingdom and enriched mine" bringing in the Kabbalah an Arabic word meaning "received" appeared first in Europe in the 11th century in south west Europe, but it was built on and incorporated much earlier mystical ideas since after the Diasporah, Jews settled in significant numbers in Spain by the 6th century and in the Rhineland of Germany as early as the 9th. They were already living in kingdoms that ranged from the Arabian Peninsula to modern India by the time Islam came into existence. Judaism first influenced Sufism in its formative stage in Baghdad in collections known as Isra'ilyyat were Jewish sources, such as the Pirkei Avot, translated as Sayings of the Fathers. There were Jews who even converted to Islam due to the attractiveness of the mystical approach. In the 13th century it was the great Sufi mystic ibn Arabi and Jewish mystics discussed the nature of the Hebrew and Arabic alphabet letters of the Scriptures believing they had mystical powers. The Jewish sage in Andalusia was that of Bahya ibn Pakuda whose work *Duties of the Heart* was a treatise on ascetic theology composed in Arabic devised an inward itinerary guiding the soul through contemplation and union with the "supernal light," - this idea of a single divine light was already found in southern Europe among Jewish mystics, and it would be fully developed by the Cabbalists in the Ottoman Empire. Mystics produced the greatest form of Cabbalistic speculation in Safed Israel (the mystical city of the Galilee) flourished as a center of Kabbalah during early Ottoman Empire. See Byron Sherwin, *Kabbalah: An Introduction to Jewish Mysticism*, NY: Rowman and Littlefield, 2006 and Mark R. Cohen, *History as Prelude: Muslims and Jews in the Medieval Mediterranean*, NY: Lexington Books, 2011.

<sup>104</sup> Watch Andrew Macintosh - Problems and Solutions in Translating the Psalms on Youtube, Macintosh

follow rabbinic interpreters attributing this Babylon to the Persian Gulf.<sup>105</sup> But Arabia is in fact, referred to by all Muslims as *Al-Jazeera Al-Arabia* (the Arab Island or the Arab Peninsula) or the “Desert of the Sea” (v. 1) as even their camel is called by the Arabs as “saffenat-u-Sahra”—the ship of the desert.<sup>106</sup> Even National Geographic<sup>107</sup> and Bernard Lewis<sup>108</sup> recognize this verse as such. But did these even need to extrapolate such conclusion from “Desert of the Sea” when they are already given God almighty’s interpretation from the text as “Arabia?”

Unless they accept this is a judgment on Israel and Arabia, no interpreter could answer a Jesus-style question: *when* in history was this fulfilled and *why* and *when* was Israel “My people” and “Arabia” ever judged together as “Babylon” void of the infamous “Rome” and its papist tyranny?

The only correct answer is: see Galatians 4 (Paul’s two Jerusalems) and Numbers 24 (“Eber” encompasses both unholy descendants of Peleg and Joktan) being completely excluded from the holy name “Israel” (“Israel does valiantly”). In reality, it is the ones who claim to support Israel joined Islam’s desire to fulfill:

“They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that *the name of Israel* may be no more in remembrance.” (Psalm 83:4)

Protestant scholars are not wrong to translate “Sheth” as “Sons of Tumult” (which really makes no difference) but why not apply the rest of these naming conventions since Hebrew Israel and her ‘daughters’ (born of her) goes the pagan and homosexual route God sets a new (old) naming convention calls her “Canaan,” “Lebanon”<sup>109</sup> in Ezekiel 17 and as “Tyre” in Isaiah 23<sup>110</sup> and even the dreaded “Babylon” and she and the entire conglomerate the worst name ever “Sodom” (Ezekiel 16:53) even the sons of tumult as Moab and Ben-Ammi. Once this approach is done (allegorically) the entire messages brings a new light than the typical application of a type of fulfillment most are used to. The whole of the Apocalyptic prophecies relies on its foundation—Numbers 24—the oldest of all, for in it has the “star” (Messiah) the restoration after the destruction of city life, the rise of Greece (Asia

---

<sup>105</sup> Isaiah XXI by Macintosh, pg. 5

<sup>106</sup> *The Middle East - Issues 352-362 - Page 62*

<sup>107</sup> Forder, Archibald. "Arabia, the Desert of the Sea," National Geographic (December 1909), 1039-1062.

<sup>108</sup> Bernard Lewis, *The Arabs in History*, page 15, B.L London 1947

<sup>109</sup> “A *great eagle* with great wings and long pinions, full of feathers of many colors, came to *Lebanon* and took away the *top of the cedar*.” (Ezekiel 17:1) which God explains: “Do you not know what these things mean?’ Tell them, ‘Behold, the *king of Babylon* came to *Jerusalem*, carried off its king and officials, and brought them back with him to Babylon.”

“Son of man, put forth a riddle, and speak a parable unto the house of Israel” (v. 2)

<sup>110</sup> This one is the entire great Babylon: “thou harlot that hast been forgotten; make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered.” (v. 16) “And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that the LORD will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to her hire, and shall commit fornication with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth.” “And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the LORD” (v. 18a)

Minor, neo-Ottomanism) who is the Assyrian (who takes such title after invading the Levant), the differentiating between tare and wheat and the proclamation of the Church Victorious as inheriting the name of “Israel”. This is the snare of snares set up by God to all the sons of tumult. So we have “Babylon” (the mother and her correspondence) and then we have “Babylon the Great” (the global Babylon) the conglomerate as in this “great city,” and we ask: who are “My people” in Isaiah 21 whom Isaiah laments?

*“My people [Israel] who are crushed on the threshing floor, I tell you what I have heard from the LORD Almighty, from the God of Israel.”* (Isaiah 21:9-10)

There are only two choices to answer this simple Christ-like question: if one is to make “Arabia” in Isaiah 21 as “My people,” then these ought to convert to Arabia’s Islam unless “My people” and “Arabia” are two distinct peoples, both (including their allies) viewed as one since these ‘adore’ earthly Jerusalem instead of the “altar” of Revelation 11:1 and is why they are destroyed in the same judgment and the only way out is to flee and seek “heavenly Jerusalem”.

The modern no matter how sophisticated can never connive God no matter how primitive they consider His proclamations. Such Protestant scholars are not naïve but are simply tares that for their rejection of Rome slander on a massive scale to the point of refusing to put a simple parable together.

But it is not only Jerusalem, Arabia or even Rome being suspect is the issue here, God is judging “Babylon the Great” encompasses what God calls the “cities of the nations [which] fell” (Revelation 16:19) This is a much bigger picture as we shall examine later on.

*“Standing at a distance because of the fear of her torment, saying, ‘Woe, woe, the great city, Babylon, the strong city! For in one hour your judgment has come.’”* (Revelation 18:10)

In “one hour” all hell is unleashed on “Babylon,” “the Great City” by the beast who also (as scripture mandates) must destroy the harlot: “And the ten horns which you saw, and the beast, these will hate the harlot and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and will burn her up with fire” (Revelation 17:16) led by this allegoric “Assyrian,” a Hitler who invades Assyria (Iraq and the Levant) qualifying him the title “the Assyrian”: “those who see you [the Assyrian] will gaze at you, they will ponder over you, saying, ‘Is this the man who made the earth tremble, who shook kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness and overthrew its cities, who did not allow his prisoners to go home?’” (Isaiah 14:16-17) He also will hold Christians, Jews and others in camps “will not allow his prisoners to go home”.

## HOW IS THIS STRICTLY ROME?

Even if we bring up all these specifics, the Protestant interpreting ‘scholars’ yell generalities and insist, this “Great City” is strictly Vatican City and Catholics ask for specifics: “how does Vatican City today rule the kings of the earth and how do all the kings of the earth commit fornication with Vatican City?” Are Japan, India, China, Pakistan, Turkey and an immense

horde of 1.8 billion Muslims in bed with the Pope? If anything the Muslims invaded Rome<sup>111</sup> and were repelled, had they not, all Protestants would have been Islamized.<sup>112</sup>

But when Catholics counter: “it is Jerusalem,” “THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS,” the Evangelicals and Messianic go up in arms while accusing Catholics of anti-Semitism asking “how does Jerusalem rule the kings of the earth and how do all the kings of the earth commit fornication with Jerusalem?” The Muslims too desire nothing more than the annihilation of all Jews in Jerusalem. Then we have others exhausted by all arguments shout out loud “New York” by adding more complexity the global commercial side “the ships” and “merchants” waxed rich off this “great city”:

“And they threw dust on their heads as they wept and mourned, crying out, “Alas, alas, for *the great city* where all who had *ships at sea* grew rich by her wealth! For in a single hour she has been laid waste.” (Revelation 18:19)

Jerusalem is by no sea but we globally have fifty major port cities and they are mostly either godless, pagan or support homosexuality “Sodom and Egypt”. But do any of these look carefully at the text? Since when did scripture, history or even archeology ever treats any “Babylon” as a single city? This is an allegoric city.

But when we add Isaiah 21 combining the judgment of both Jerusalem and “Arabia” (together) fits perfectly with Paul’s riddle is an “allegory” *binding earthly Jerusalem with Arabia* just as it fits with “Eber,” (descendants of Peleg and Joktan) in Numbers 24 and in Isaiah and Jeremiah and the Apocalypse. There is even more than just Isaiah 21; this “Babylon” combining *Arabia* with the *Hebrews* is also in other parts of Isaiah, as well as Jeremiah, and we can even solve more of Balaam’s riddle as from where these “ships from Chittim” (Cyprus) come from:

“Behold, a people comes from the *North Country*, And a *great nation* will be raised from the *farthest parts of the earth*. They will lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel and have no mercy; their voice roars like the sea; and they ride on horses, as men of war set in array against you, *O daughter of Zion*. We have heard the report of it; *our hands grow feeble*. *Anguish has taken hold of us*, *Pain as of a woman in labor*. *Do not go out into the field, nor walk by the way*. Because of the sword of the enemy, Fear is on every side. *O daughter of my people*, dress in sackcloth and roll about in ashes! Make mourning as for an only son, most bitter lamentation; for the *plunderer will suddenly come upon us*.” (Jeremiah 6:22-26)

---

<sup>111</sup> Prior in 842, Arab forces under the rule of Muhammad Abul Abbas took Messina, Sicily and raided Rome in 846 (Kreutz 1996, pp. 25–28)

<sup>112</sup> Protestant interpreters rarely mention the Battle of Lepanto, Battle of Tours, The Battle of Vienna, and The Battle of Malta—wars to defend Europe from Islamic invasions—they are combatant against such wars since all these were Catholic-Islamic wars. After Martin Luther called the Jews and the Pope some foul names such as “Antichrist” and “Devil incarnate”, he then urged his followers to look at the Turks in the best manner and even went so far as to say that some of his German contemporaries (read traitors), “actually want the Turk to come and rule, because they think that our German people are wild and uncivilized – indeed that they are half-devil and half-man”—*Found in The Ottoman Empire and early modern Europe*, by Daniel Goffman, Cambridge University Press, 2002, p110.



The invasion here is against a “daughter of Zion” explained here, as “daughter of my people, “with” the plunderer will suddenly come upon us, such anguish by the Hebrews is so similar to the same anguish of Isaiah regarding an invasion against “Babylon”:

“And, behold, here cometh a chariot of men, with a couple of horsemen. And he answered and said, *Babylon is fallen, is fallen*; and all the graven images of her gods he hath broken unto the ground. *My people who are crushed on the threshing floor, I tell you what I have heard from the LORD Almighty, from the God of Israel.*” (Isaiah 21:9-10)

In Isaiah 21:4 Isaiah laments at this scene similar to Jeremiah adding: “*My heart falters, fear makes me tremble*, the twilight I longed for has become a *horror to me*”<sup>113</sup> and “*My people who are crushed on the threshing floor, I tell you what I have heard from the LORD Almighty, from the God of Israel*” and “Therefore *my loins are filled with pain*; pangs have taken hold of me, like the pangs of a woman in labor. *I was distressed when I heard it; I was dismayed when I saw it.*” (Isaiah 21:3)

This would definitely be the anguish of Eber.

Why was Isaiah so shocked and distressed over the destruction of this evil Babylon which mentions “Arabia” Israel’s archenemy? Isaiah *was only distressed about his people living in this mega “great city” scripture calls Babylon*, which includes Jerusalem: “My people are crushed on the threshing floor” and therefore to join God they must *escape it*.

But does that mean, that earthly Jerusalem is Babylon the Great? Indeed, it *is*, but it *is not*. It *is* one part of this equation of two peoples but it *is not* as a whole (“Babylon the Great” are other mega cities) and is why we have a “Babylon” and a “Babylon the Great.” There is more to these prophecies (as we shall see) than meets the eye.

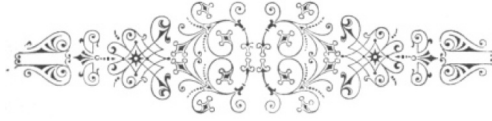
Indeed, one book (this one) can be right as Noah was right and the entire world that was wrong perished:

“Or suppose I were to pour out my fury by sending an epidemic into the land, and the disease killed people and animals alike. As surely as I live, says the Sovereign LORD, even if Noah, Daniel, and Job were there, they wouldn’t be able to save their own sons or daughters. They alone would be saved by their righteousness.” (Ezekiel 14:19-20)

God will destroy the whole earth (regardless of numbers) to save but a handful. It matters not to Him how many numbers of books written or how many centuries they have been churning such slanderous material or the prominence of the authors does not amuse God regardless if they claimed “Christ” as “Lord and Savior,” their gods in reality were Luther, Calvin and Zwingli, it is to them they pay all obedience. Obviously this “Babylon” is no longer the judgment on the evil papist Rome drenched in the blood of Cathars and Albigensian heretics billed to the ill-informed Evangelical followers as ‘saints’.

---

<sup>113</sup> The Septuagint, the Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible, translates verse 2 as, “Against me are the Elamites, and the princes of the Persians are coming against me.”



TO SLANDER ROME THEY IGNORE  
“ARARAT, MINNI, ASHKENAZ” AND “PERSIA”

We can build our solid case no matter where we look. Jeremiah 51:27 speak of *destruction* of “Babylon” by “Minni, Ararat and Ashkenaz” and Isaiah 21 includes both Arabia and Israel an invasion by “Persia” and Isaiah 13 also includes the target as against the “Arabian” and we ask: when did “Minni Ararat and Ashkenaz” and “Persia” *all together* ever invade Babylon destroying it in a single invasion and in a single hour?

Answer: Never. The entire Protestant movement with their mega church pastors banks on one major reality; the Evangelical sheeple especially are the least equipped on matters of history and *especially* church history, and if in doubt, pass through the commentaries of Chuck Smith to any history major and see the elementary level similar to that of the Jack Chick-publications.<sup>114</sup> I met Smith and spoke in his presence at his church challenging his typical interpretations. Smith was added as a Bible expositor more for his fame. In fact, there are only a couple of theories proposed by Protestant interpreters to shelve this prophecy as fulfilled history since this “Babylon” does not fit their model of Rome. The first theory is Cyrus conquering Babylon.

But this fails miserably; “Ararat” is from Lydia (Asia Minor) to Armenia—the Magog of Ezekiel 38. How could an oracle against Babylon be related to Cyrus the Persian when the Persians marched against the Lydians and Armenians (Ararat) and now he is the commanding general of Minni, Ararat and Ashkenaz? Cyrus was king of Persia, later on became king of Babylon and king of Sumer and king of Akkad?<sup>115</sup> The prophecy has these peoples *collectively* invading Babylon. But Protestant scholars are dumbfounded, of course. For example, Matthew Henry seems to have no answer as does Barnes Notes and others. Jaimesson Fausset claims “Cyrus had subdued Asia Minor and the neighboring regions, and from these he drew levies in proceeding against Babylon.”

But the prophecy speaks of a united front and utter destruction, not a tribute. Jaimesson Fausset knows that Cyrus did not destroy this Babylon and attempts to patch the interpretation (cover it up). Benson’s Commentary assumes that: “Armenians and Phrygians composed part of the army which Cyrus led against Babylon” referring to Xenophon Cyropaedia’s account. But regardless of having conscripts from such regions in Cyrus’ army, adding Isaiah 13’s destruction of Babylon becomes another damaging parallel, an oracle against Babylon with dramatic description of the “day of the Lord”:

---

<sup>114</sup> Chick asserted that the Catholic Church, in a grand conspiracy, created Islam, Communism, Nazism, and Freemasonry. See Jack T. Chick (w). *Mama’s Girls* (2012) that Islam was a conspiracy created by the Catholic Church using Muhammad’s wife Khadijah’s cousin Waraqa bin Nawfal as “Vatican Agents.” You have to read the tract in order to believe it, or you can read Jack Chick’s graphic novel The Prophet which expounds even deeper on this same strange idea.

<sup>115</sup> See Briant 2002: 57

“Wail, for the *day of the LORD* is near! It will come as *destruction* from the Almighty” (Isaiah 13:9)

“For the *stars of heaven* and their constellations will *not flash forth* their light; the *sun will be dark* when it rises and the *moon will not shed its light*. Thus I will *punish the world* for *its evil* and the wicked for their iniquity; I will also put an end to the arrogance of the proud and abase the haughtiness of the ruthless.” (Isaiah 13:10-11)

And we ask: when was ancient Babylon destroyed on “the day of the Lord?” Obviously when we combine such prophecies as Isaiah 21, Jeremiah 51, Isaiah 13, Ezekiel 38, Revelation 18; this beast “Minni, Ararat and Ashkenaz” (Magog) here destroys the harlot (Babylon). Ezekiel 38 is not a standalone invasion, for it links with every prophecy regarding the end. No matter how one tosses or turns these prophecies, they all collectively complement each other.

No historian would approve Protestant interpretations since if it is Cyrus that entered this Babylon he did not treat the carved images the way it was described in Isaiah 21:9 “Babylon is fallen, is fallen! And all the carved images of her gods He has broken to the ground” as Boufflower states: “on the contrary, we are expressly assured that his entrance, save for the attack on the palace in which Belshazzar was slain, was a peaceful one, and that there was no cessation whatever of the temple worship.”<sup>116</sup>

In essence, if Rome does not *fit* you must *twist*.

Even if we take the attempted scapegoat claiming it is the entrance of Sargon II into Babylon to assume the throne in 709 BC (as some attempt) that too was described in the Assyrian sources as quite peaceful. The cities of northern Babylonia welcomed the Assyrian king, throwing open their gates ‘with great rejoicing. Sargon II boastfully inscribed on the wall of his palace in Khorsabad: “Into Babylon, the city of the lord of the gods, joyfully I entered, in gladness of heart, and with a beaming countenance. I grasped the hand(s) of the great lord Marduk, and made pilgrimage (lit., completed the march) to the ‘House of the New Year’s Feast” “the gods, too, came to Babylon to take the hands of Bel.”<sup>117</sup> The historic account would be the complete reverse of Isaiah’s prophecy:

“*Bel bows* down, Nebo stoops; their *idols* were on the beasts and on the cattle.” (Isaiah 46:1)

“Come down and sit in the dust, O *virgin daughter of Babylon*; Sit on the ground without a throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans! For you shall no more be called Tender and delicate.” (Isaiah 47:1)

---

<sup>116</sup> A Quote from Boufflower by MacIntosh, Isaiah 21 By A. A. MacIntosh, pg. 72, Cambridge University Press, 1980

<sup>117</sup> *Kingship and the Gods*, by Egyptologist, archaeologist and orientalist Henri Frankfort, the University of Chicago Press- Page 326

Neither will Sennacherib in 689 BC fit any of these prophecies since no one can attribute the Babylonians as “my people” for how could Isaiah have compassion instead of rejoicing with an enemy is not a decisive argument especially since in the final version Elam and Media represent the Persian empire (not Sennacherib) and “Elam bore the quiver with chariots and cavalry, and Kir uncovered the shield. Your choicest valleys were full of chariots, and their cavalry took stand at the gates,” and when we get to Isaiah 22:6-7 is a prophecy against Jerusalem, not an oracle against a foreign nation makes it impossible to explain historically: “Elam [Iran] took up the quiver with the chariots, infantry and horsemen; and Kir uncovered the shield.” (Isaiah 22:6) “And He removed the defense of Judah. In that day ...” (Isaiah 22:8) same invaders as in Isaiah 21 which includes the invaders as Persians (Iran) and Jeremiah 51:27 includes “Minni, Ararat and Ashkenaz,” a location which even according to Protestant interpreters is the landmass of Magog between the Black and Caspian seas where Noah’s Ark settled at Mount Ararat where also Armenia was recently invaded by Azerbaijan with the aid of Turkey where we can already see Magog forming. The beginning of this prophecy is already being fulfilled and definitely can send its ships from “Chittim” (Greece) to Arabia and Israel, especially since Ezekiel 38 adds Persia (Iran) “Meshech, Tubal” “Togarmah” Islamic nations in southern Russia (that were Ottoman) as its ally confirming all these prophecies fit like a glove.

All this fits Ezekiel 38 the invasion against Israel. And by linking all these prophecies together would blast all these faulty prophetic interpretations putting most of these commentaries and books into the compost bin on history.

And now we know which of the two interpretations regarding the “ships *from* Chittim” (Cyprus) since the “ships *of* Chittim” was rendered as the “Romans” in Daniel 11:30 during the escapade with Antiochus Epiphanies, while in Numbers 24 it is “Ships *from the coast of Cyprus*” that is the Aegean sea “Minni Ararat Ashkenaz” (Turkey and its Islamic allies nearby) who invades Ashur (Iraq) then swings by to Arabia and Israel where God destroys the armies of Gog, save the remnants (the Israel of God) and destroy Arabia and Eber. This is not implausible today especially after considering Iran’s hatred and continual attacks on Saudi Arabia and the Ottoman vendetta against it for siding with the British Lawrence of Arabia during WWI.

Isaiah 21:5 give us another key verse (a freebie hint) before the invasion of that part of Babylon:

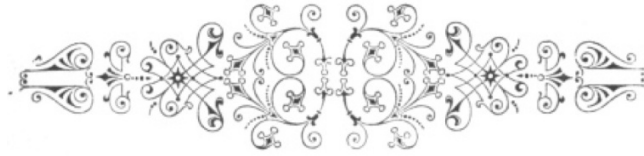
“They *spread rugs*, they eat, they drink! Get up, you officers, oil the shields” (Isaiah 21:5)



(Ottoman military spread rugs and pray during WWI and so they will do in World War III)

Who besides the Muslims “spread rugs” just before the battle?

But the question is why? Why do Protestant interpreters insist on interpreting all these prophecies as fulfilled and file them in the annals of history? Answer: they must isolate the bulk of these prophecies since they do not fit their paradigm: that for centuries no other nation but Rome is “Babylon the Great”. The *theory*, the topical *flowchart*, Calvin, Luther and not the scripture is *what drives all these interpretations*. Such is history’s greatest slander. Such are the tares.



## TO SLANDER ROME THEY EVEN IGNORE GEOGRAPHIC LOCATORS

You might think this “destruction” hits only Jerusalem while you watch a CNN report? Think again, especially since such destruction hits the entirety of Mystery Babylon, which encompasses much more and is why it says of Babylon that “... The cities of the nations fell” (Revelation 16:19) even confirming Jeremiah:

“The nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad.” (Jeremiah 51:7)

This is basically what the Apocalypse said:

“One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and said to me, ‘Come, I will show you the punishment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters. With her the kings of the earth committed adultery and the inhabitants of the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her adulteries.’ Then the angel carried me away in the Spirit into a desert. There I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and was glittering with gold, precious stones, and pearls. She held a golden cup in her hand, filled with abominable things and the filth of her adulteries. This title was written on her forehead: ‘Mystery, Babylon The Great –The Mother of Prostitutes and of the Abominations of the Earth.’ I saw that the woman was drunk with the blood of the saints, the blood of those who bore testimony to Jesus... The woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth.” (Revelation 17:1-6, 18)

Even John says that Babylon the Great’s mother is in the “desert” as in Isaiah 21 says it is Arabia. There are two very important descriptions of this segment of the Harlot that stand out: First, she exists geographically in a *desert region*. John says that the angel “took me to the desert” and there he showed him “a woman”. And secondly, we see that the “kings of the earth” figuratively commit adultery with her in order to obtain her “wine” in exchange for betraying God’s people. What desert “wine” intoxicates the earth, and causes this desert region to grow rich? What false religion spread its teachings throughout that region with thousands of battles shedding the blood of saints? What desert nation today is the geographical womb from which this false harlot religion was birthed? And where was the abundance of the main element that exploded industrialization to fill the earth with cities?

“For it is the day of Jehovah’s vengeance, and the year of recompenses for the

controversy of Zion. Its streams<sup>118</sup> shall be turned into pitch and its dust into brimstone; its land shall become burning pitch. It shall not be quenched night or day; its smoke shall ascend forever." (Isaiah 34:8-10)

Incredibly, almost three millennia before the discovery of fuel oil, Isaiah predicted the burning of the very thing that was used in Babel to build a name for the rebellious ones—the “pitch”:

“Then they said to one another, “Come, let us make bricks and bake them thoroughly.” They had brick for stone, and they had asphalt for mortar.” (Genesis 11:3)

Pitch is bitumen, tar or asphalt (Hebrew Zephet), which technically is simply crude oil. Pitch is what bound nations together, built cities, caused wars and brought us to live in the towering city life of Babylon.

“And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning.” (Revelation 18:9) “And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, ‘What [city is] like unto this great city!’” (Revelation 18:18)

God’s plan was to “be fruitful and multiply and fill [expand through] the earth” He never intended to have the lifestyle of city rats. But now we come to Jeremiah who pinpoints it:

“The earth is moved at the noise of their fall, at the cry the noise thereof was heard in the Red sea” (Jeremiah 49:21)?

When and where was ancient Babylon (Iraq) by the “Red Sea?” Arabia, even Mecca and Medina are by the Red Sea.

---

<sup>118</sup> The word for “streams” (nachal) is not water streams but “torrent,” “torrent-valley,” “wadi /valley,” “mine,” or “tunnels,” and thus need not be understood strictly as streams of water.





Where are the explanations from all the scholars who were mystified as to why the Isaiah 21 prophecy about this “Babylon,” never included any of the ancient cities of Babylon “Calneh” “Akkad” and Erech” and instead had “Teman,” (in Arabia) “Dedan,” (in Arabia) and then literally names “Arabia” by name?

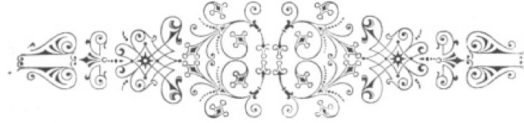
Did these ‘scholars’ really miss Genesis 10 which sets the example from history how Babel and Babylon constituted several cities yet were called “the great city” just as John did in the Apocalypse? They would not dare give such an interpretation lest the curse on Rome be found wanting. When it comes to tares the tradition of men supersede the will of God. It truly proves that it is not the issue of free speech, truth or fact but agendas is the driving force behind the tares as this unpopular verse says it all:

“As Babylon has caused the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon the slain of all the earth shall fall.” (Jeremiah 51:49)

“*The slain of all the earth shall fall*” at “Babylon?” Isn’t the whole earth gathered to conflagulate in Hebrew-Israel? Is not every apocalyptic book from Tim Lahaye, to Hagee and Hal Lindsey speaks of Armageddon where all the nations are gathered for destruction? Who is this “Israel” then in Jeremiah 51:49? Is it “Hebrew Israel” or is it “the Israel of God?”

You must choose wisely. Here is the popular prophecy:

“For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watched, and kept his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.” (Revelation 16:14-16)



## TO SLANDER RUSSIA THEY MAKE IT GOG AND MAGOG

To point to Rome, Protestants attempt to isolate the “Gog and Magog” war to strictly being in Ezekiel 38 with “Gog” as a separate individual from one Antichrist, but this is impossible since:

“This is what the Sovereign Lord says: ‘Are you [Gog] not the one I spoke of in former days by my servants *the prophets of Israel*? At that time *they* prophesied for years that I would *bring you against them*.’” Ezekiel 38:17

The Protestants can only reference Ezekiel<sup>119</sup> who spoke of Gog. But God Himself asks a question (a serious Jesus-style question), which shatters all these absurd theories. This is a crucial prophecy since the Protestants isolate this “Gog” as from “Russia” and the death of such theory resides in this lethal question where God trumps their theory: when did all the prophets of Israel speak of Gog? When did Micah, Jeremiah, Isaiah, Habakkuk, Amos ... all speak of Gog?

It is here where such interpreters fail unless of course the entire scriptures’ spoke of an allegoric “Gog” as “chief prince” of “Meshech” (Mushki) and “Tubal” (Tabalani) “Beth Togarma” “Gomer” and “Magog” (Armenia, Azerbaijan, Uzbekistan, Kirgizstan, Tajikistan, Turkmenistan, Albania, Bosnia) are mostly south of Russia (this excludes Orthodox Russia in the north).

We can even track his movements. The “ships from Kition” (Asia Minor) in Numbers 24 swing to Assyria “Iraq” (ancient Babylon) and in Daniel 11 this evil one also swings towards “Egypt” Sudan and Somalia (biblical “Cush”) and also “phut” or “Libya” welcomes him “in submission” which is North Africa—Libya, Algeria, Tunisia, Morocco, Mauritania, 5 states (5 toes) which were once part of the Western Roman Empire.

All this encompasses the dream of the neo-Ottomans, a Greco-Roman region includes the Levant; Lebanon and Syria, which the United States in Operation *Euphrates Shield* aided the turks in Syria to have control over the biblical “Carchemish” in Isaiah 10:9.

And if this “little horn” heads “south and east,” Zechariah 9:13 tells us that Christ “with whirlwind of the south” heads north to “Ionia” (Greece/Turkey) the very source of such ships, and the war goes back to where it all begun at “Satan’s throne” “Pergamum”. No matter how one bounces the ball it enters into the net.

The evil one is also the destroyer of Babylon coming as “Minni, Ararat and Ashkenaz” (Jeremiah 51) destroys the harlot (Babylon) since the beast must destroy the harlot where this one rules the same landmass as a location, which even according to Protestant interpreters the landmass of Magog is between the Black and Caspian seas. Did not Noah’s Ark settle at Mount Ararat between Turkey, Iraq and Armenia, which the latter was just invaded by Azerbaijan by aid of Turkey with complete silence from the United States during

---

<sup>119</sup> John’s Gog and Magog in the Apocalypse in their view happens after the millennium.

the Trump administration. We can already see Magog forming. He rises not by “his power” should eliminate the notion that we should stop looking for the most powerful nation on earth but the slyest.

And in Isaiah 21, Babylon’s destruction is by “Persia” (Iran) which is also in league with “Meshech,” “Tubal” “Togarmah” in Ezekiel 38. All these collectively fit like a glove—confronted by the “ships of Chittim” in Daniel 11:30, that is the very Rome the Protestants shamelessly and exclusively made ‘harlot’ fights against him. This, in fact, had a type of fulfillment during the escapade with Antiochus Epiphanies (that ancient menace from that same region as Gog). Rome as well, has aided in dissolving the Ottoman Empire. And we ask a Jesus-style question: Had Rome been the intent of God as this bad omen, did God forget to mention Rome by name as part of this harlot or beast? We seem to be given the name “Rome” in the New and “ships of Chittim” in the Old Testament without any reference in its destruction or its evil. Yet thousands of books written making Rome the case? Indeed, these who write such absurd nonsense are tares, not wheat. The “ships of Chittim” (Rome) were the ones in which the Ottoman Army met with disastrous defeat in the Italo-Turkish War (1911–1912) and the Balkan Wars (1912–1913), resulting in the Ottomans being driven out of North Africa and nearly out of Europe.<sup>120</sup>

The ships of Chittim were at it again without notice from Protestant commentaries.

And this construct we deduced is *exactly* what we can glean from every prophet bringing us to the full circle of John’s prophecy in the Apocalypse—it all starts in Asia Minor where Lucifer’s seat is in Pergamum—Christ defeated Lucifer and then Lucifer regained “Emmanuel’s land”—and it all ends in Asia Minor—Christ defeats Satan and regains back what was lost defeating all his past empires collectively together (Daniel 2).

That such invasion by this “Gog” already took the eastern part of Christendom and ruled that “glorious city” Constantinople in 1453 AD.

And we find this theme elsewhere: “Thus saith the LORD, Behold, a people cometh from the north country, and a great nation shall be raised from the sides of the earth” are the very nations that split from Russia after the fall of Communism. These are Muslim states South of Russia to becoming the northern neo-Ottoman states arising from the “sides of the north” or the “north quarters”. John refers to this “dragon” as the same figure that all prophets spoke of by use of different nicknames to show his kingdom’s geographic attributes as “The Assyrian” in Micah 5 and in Isaiah 14 he desires to sit at the temple “the mount of congregation” “on the sides of the north”. And Psalm 48 tells us where this temple is (not in Jerusalem) but where Christendom dedicated a temple to Christ the King in the north: “Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised in the city of our God, in His *holy mountain*. The joy of the whole earth, is *Mount Zion* on the *sides of the north*, the city of the great

---

<sup>120</sup> See *Treaty of Lausanne - World War I Document Archive* [wwi.lib.byu.edu](http://wwi.lib.byu.edu).

King”.<sup>121</sup> His hordes come from “the sides of the north” where that temple (Hagia Sophia, or Mt. Athos)<sup>122</sup> sits (see Ezekiel 38:6; 38:15; 39:2).

The Turks are already sitting in Hagia Sophia converting it to being their temple of pride with his alliances magnify “the image” of their beast that was once wounded when their crescent was humbled by Christendom as in the “sick man of Europe.”<sup>123</sup>

And then we even have Christ, after defeating Gog, will re-establish His Temple after Antichrist desecrates it.

Even if we examine some of the greatest Biblical references, like the *Macmillan Bible Atlas*, *Oxford Bible Atlas*, and *The Moody Atlas of Bible Lands*, they all locate Magog, Meshech, Tubal, Gomer and Beth Togarmah in Asia Minor, not Russia.

And then we find the verses; Turkey and her neo-Ottoman allies are precisely where the ancient Assyrian Empire lays and where we find this entire alliance: “Persia” (Iran, Afghanistan) “Lydia” (Turkey) “Cush” (Sudan, Somalia) “Put” (north Africa) “Arabia” (see Ezekiel 38, Ezekiel 30:5)<sup>124</sup> are “in league” (alliance). Isaiah 14 speaks of the capture of “the Assyrian” “is this the man that made the earth tremble” (Isaiah 14:17) and is said by John the Apostle to rule from Pergamum “the seat of Satan” (Revelation 2:12-13) which is in Asia Minor who desires to “sit on mount of the congregation” “on the sides of the north” at Hagia Sophia. This is also where the Seven Churches and the Seven Lamp stands were.

How can we ignore all of this?

---

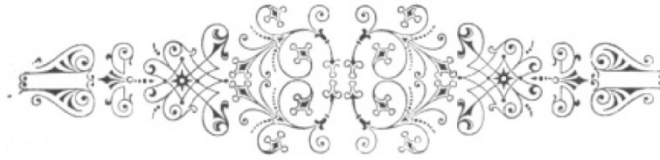
<sup>121</sup> “It is obvious that Sophia was commonly regarded as the temple of Christ. It is clearly shown in the famous story of the construction of Justinian's Sophia: “Hagia Sophia,” which means the Word of God(ed.

Preger, p. 74: και ἐκτοτε ἔλαβε την προσηγορίαν ὁ ναὸς Ἁγία Σοφία, ὁ Λόγος του θεοῦ ἐρμηνευόμενος)”—GEORGES FLOROVSKY, *Emeritus Professor of Eastern Church History*, Harvard University *Aspects of Church History* Vol IV pg. 132

<sup>122</sup> Athos, officially the “Autonomous Monastic State of the Holy Mountain” (Ancient Greek: Αυτόνομη Μοναστική Πολιτεία Ἁγίου Ὄρους), is a self-governed polity within the Greek state subject to the Ministry of Foreign Affairs in its political aspect and to the ecumenical patriarch of Constantinople as regards to its religious aspect

<sup>123</sup> Tsar Nicholas I coined the phrase ‘Sick Man of Europe’ a sign that the once great power of the Ottoman Empire was dying. The Turks had dominated the Eastern Mediterranean for half a millennium, controlling vast swathes of Central Europe, Arab lands as far down as Egypt and had at one stage been knocking on the doors of Vienna and Venice. By the 20th century all that remained in Ottoman hands was wounded and what remained was Turkey, Syria, Mesopotamia, Palestine and parts of the Arabian Peninsula. Russia regarded itself as the protector of the Christian orthodox Balkan peoples, and its utopian long-term aim was to capture Constantinople, the former capital of the Byzantine Empire. In geopolitical terms, control of the Bosphorus and Dardanelles straits was of enormous strategic importance for Russia, as it offered it a passage to the Mediterranean. Russia wanted to establish its influence not only in the Norwegian Sea but also in the south of Europe. But the diverging interests of the European powers came to a head in 1853 with the outbreak of the Crimean War. An anti-Russian alliance was formed by the major western European powers to stem the rise of Russia. It was very much in Great Britain’s interests to preserve the Ottoman Empire, a weak and easily controlled regional power that posed no threat to its colonial aspirations – primarily communication with India through the Suez Canal, which opened in 1869.

<sup>124</sup> We shall not belabor the Hebrew use of “Rosh” which only means chief. No historian agrees with such etymology as being Russia.



TO SLANDER ROME THEY USE  
FABRICATED HISTORY FOR EVIDENCE

There is not a single nation or entity or any religious institution in history—not even the Muslims—who have fabricated historic evidence more than the Protestants while claiming that they are all “saints”. To reveal the fabricated history would require a library since in the Protestant libraries are all the historic fabrications of the West composed as books about theology. We shall cover but one example out of many: the only way to prove Rome is the harlot, one needs to find millions of Protestants of the Evangelical persuasion whom the “harlot” (Rome) is drunk with the blood of such saints (Revelation 16:6, 17:6, 18:24). This is

a debate that none of them, even the best of their apologists dared to engage us in. Fail to unearth the millions of Protestants martyred saints, not only the entire Protestant prophetic interpretations will fail, but their primary preachers from Calvin, John Knox, John Wesley, Spurgeon, John MacArthur, including centuries worth of useless puritan style pomposity and rambling commentaries, books, propaganda pamphlets and even their fabricated Fox Book of Martyrs fall apart in their entirety. In fact, not a single historian approves of any of their works regarding this issue and this point alone which they obtained from the first thesis of the Albigenes at the Conference of Montreal, A.D. 1206, like that maintained by the Donatists against Augustine eight hundred years before, declared that the Roman Catholic Church was not the bride of Christ, but the harlot of Babylon is drunk with the blood of the Cathars. To prove this point, centuries of Protestant use of propaganda<sup>125</sup> got to work by use of 200 printing presses<sup>126</sup> throughout Europe argued in defense of

THE  
*Protestant Tutor,*  
Instructing YOUTH, and Others,  
In the Compleat Method of  
*Spelling, Reading, and Writing*  
**True English :**  
Also, Discovering to them the Notorious  
ERRORS, Damnable DOCTRINES,  
and Cruel MASSACRES,  
OF THE  
**Bloody Papists ;**  
Which-ENGLAND may Expect from a  
**Popish Successor.**  
With Instructions for Grounding them in the  
*True Protestant Religion.*  
To which is Added,  
The Preamble to the P A T E N T for Crea-  
ting the Electoral Prince of HANNOVER, a  
Peer of this Realm, as Duke of CAMBRIDGE :  
With severall other Remarkable Matters .  
London, Printed and Sold by B. Harris, at the Gol-  
den-Boar's-Head in Grace-church-street. 1713.

<sup>125</sup> See the infamous *Foxe's Book of Martyrs* authored by a Protestant minister, not a historian.

<sup>126</sup> History Professor Edwards, Mark U. (1994). *Printing, Propaganda and Martin Luther*.



Manichaeans, Arians, Cathars,<sup>127</sup> Priscillianists, Paulicians, Bogomiles,<sup>128</sup> Waldensians, Albigensians,<sup>129</sup> Lollards and Hussites as such martyrs whom Rome shed their innocent saintly blood.

Did the reformers and their followers not know that Catharism's main principles are; the recognition of the feminine principle in the divine – God was both male and female and Metempsychosis (Reincarnation), Cosmic Duality and Vegetarianism and Celibacy for the *perfecti* – and that assisted suicide (known as the ritual of *endura*) as a rational and dignified response under certain conditions? Did Protestants fail to do a quick fact check to see that Cathars were not celibate practiced birth control and abortion, believing that sex was a natural aspect of the human condition and could be engaged in for pleasure, not only for procreation and in fact, even marriage and procreation was discouraged? Did they not look up the Manichaean books that spoke of men becoming women and women becoming men, in order to free through sexual intercourse “the princes of darkness of both sexes so that the divine substance which is imprisoned in them may be set free and escape.”<sup>130</sup> Have these heeded to Christ's warning:

“Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because you suffer that woman Jezebel, which calls herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.” (Revelation 2:20)

Lest we avoid the obvious sympathy by Protestants towards these groups is only matched by the ardent liberals who claim that the Albigensian Crusade by the Catholic Church ‘destroyed the open, tolerant culture of Southern France, replacing it with the rigid, dark, and narrow-minded ethos of the medieval Church.’ Without providing such martyrdom, Protestantism will fail the entire test of prophecy. Even in modern times, many were the books and commentaries written by Protestant theologians that claimed persecution by the Catholic Church during the Cathari wars sanctioned Bogomilism, Albigensianism, Manicheanism and Catharism as true Christianity that offered oodles of martyrs and even

---

<sup>127</sup> Cathars believed that one would be repeatedly reincarnated that a man could be reincarnated as a woman and vice versa that women must be reborn as men in order to achieve salvation. O'Shea, Stephen (2000). *The Perfect Heresy: The Revolutionary Life and Death of the Medieval Cathars*. Pp 2-4. Schaus, Margaret (2006), *Women And Gender in Medieval Europe: An Encyclopedia*, New York: Taylor and Francis Group pp. 114

<sup>128</sup> Bogomils borrowed an idea whose roots can be traced back to Zoroastrianism: that the world was created by two powers, good and evil. It spread into Bulgaria and Macedonia and a form of it in Bosnia known as *krstjani* who adhered to Mysticism an attempt to express the “true” consciousness of God's presence freed from every mediator by creating a mystical union with God (“*unio mystica*” similar to Islam's “*tawhid*” in Islamic mysticism). Bosnia fell under Ottoman rule in 1463. The Bosnian *krstjani* decided that it was more practical to convert to Islam. a symbiotic relationship occurred in Bosnia in the 16th century between the Sufi Islam and Bosnian Christianity (the Bosnian Church) on the shared foundations of mysticism and the “inner” view of religion. See article by prof. Amer Dardagan HISTORIJA "BOSANSKE VJERE" (CRKVA BOSANSKA I BOSANSKI ISLAM)

<sup>129</sup> Webster's *Third New International Dictionary* gives the only meaning of the word “bugger” as a sodomite, “from the adherence of the Bulgarians to the Eastern Church considered heretical”

<sup>130</sup> See *Heresy and Authority in Medieval Europe*, pages 35-36.

so-called reformers. In fact, there is no difference in the methods, defensive posture and style by liberals who stand for these heretic groups than the Protestants. The two agree on this issue and both use them to challenge the Church's authority all borrowed in some way from the Cathars who, as they claim in standing up to the corruption of the medieval Church, prefigured the visionaries of the later Protestant Reformation.<sup>131</sup>

But the hunt for Protestant martyrdom is equivalent to a Luther arising at the times of Joshua, hunting for martyrs from Israel's subjugation of the Canaanites, Moses' instruction that Israel was not to leave alive "anything that breathes" (Deut. 20:16) "utterly destroyed everything in the city, both man and woman, young and old, and ox and sheep and donkey with the edge of the sword." (Joshua 6:21)

But to make a Canaanite a "martyr" one must first prove he truly followed Israel's God. And this is exactly what liberals argue giving sympathies to the massacres of even the Canaanites and Philistines that the Israelites removed. This is equivalent to a Nazi sympathizer condemning the Allied initiative to rid German and Austrian society by implementing *denazification*.<sup>132</sup>

How else where the Allies who recognized the appeal of Nazism were able to defeat it? To eradicate the idea, all four major powers — America, Russia, Britain, and France — agreed to a plan of *denazification*. They would hold the supporters of the Nazi government accountable for their crimes, eradicate Nazi regalia where held government offices under the Nazis lost their jobs, the Nazi party was banned, and advocating its ideas was punishable by death, the swastika and other party symbols were removed from public view and all Germans had to endure an Inquisition filling out a questionnaire about their involvement in Nazism.<sup>133</sup> Whatever accusations of mass murder leveled on the Catholic Church can be seen in recent history carried out by many who accuse but justify the same.

First of all, such Cathari groups whom Protestants defend can never be linked to any original first century church. These broke away from the Church and were never even pre-existent to it. Not to be uncharitable to the many Protestants who gave their lives up in defense of righteousness, but if we take this last century; how many Protestants had their metal measured when Hitler threw into the Crematoria millions of Catholics alongside Jews and when the Ottomans massacred million more from the Christian Armenians? How many Copts, Syrian Christians, Armenians and Assyrian Christians suffered under the scimitar of

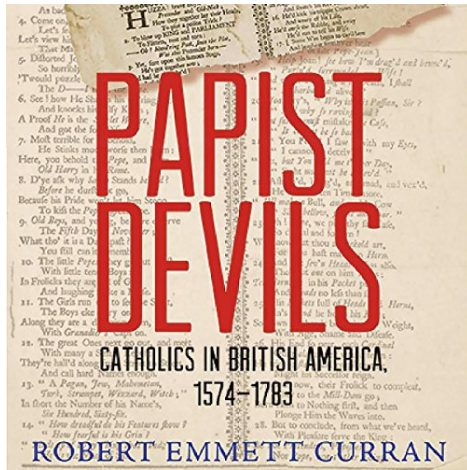
---

<sup>131</sup> Protestant apologists love to debate matters of theology since theology can be manipulated by private interpretation. However, none is willing to debate the subject at hand. For example: James White, the Calvinist apologist extended a debate to us on the theology of Catholicism and when we insisted the debate subject be this issue "the blood of the saints," and years of printed propaganda that no historian would approve, White immediately retreated. These avoid this subject for they know they really have nothing for even the so called 'martyrs' the Catholic Church executed by burning theologically do not match the theology of today's typical Evangelical. We still have the email exchanges if readers are interested in proof. White then went on a tirade of attacks failing to respond to the articles of this subject.

<sup>132</sup> In 1943 the Pentagon from 1945 to 1950, the Allied powers detained over 400,000 Germans in internment camps in extrajudicial fashion in the name of denazification. See *Allied Internment Camps in Occupied Germany: Extrajudicial Detention in the Name of Denazification, 1945-1950* by Beattie, Andrew H. (2019).

<sup>133</sup> *How the Allies Tried to Exorcise Nazism, History Post Perspective World War II* by Jeff Nilson, May 12<sup>th</sup>, 2020





Islam while my Evangelical friends (who sit comfortably unscathed) told me that these are “not saved” failing to recognize the extensive collaboration of their Protestant ancestors with the very Ottoman Empire’s war on the Catholic Church?

Luckily there was foresight amongst the Church, and the Cathari vile religion was outlawed, and their members arrested by an inquisition<sup>134</sup> since no toleration was to be given to error and blasphemy.

But the question remains; do most modern Evangelical writers lack in the field of history or is there a different motive? Take for example, the famous Calvinist preacher John MacArthur who rejects the biblical discourses of certain medieval theologians

utters one example of such error; he amazingly accepts these heretical groups as orthodox Bible expositors:

“While the period produced some famous preachers, such as Peter the Hermit, Bernard of Clairvaux, and Thomas Aquinas, none handled the text in an expository fashion. Faint hints of Bible exposition have been detected among independent groups such as the Paulicians, Waldenses, and Albigenses, despite the fact that these groups are commonly dismissed as “heretics.”<sup>135</sup>

The closest sects, who can even have a hint of orthodoxy, would be the Hussites and the Waldenses. But even if we take these two sects, they believed in Catholic and not Evangelical dogma while books can be written on the violence committed by the Hussites and the Albigenses that would raise more than just an eyebrow. Indeed, the Paulicians and the Albigenses were purely heretical. Considering this whole conundrum from an evangelical mindset, how could killing these be considered “drinking the blood of the saints”? Take another writer, Tim Lahaye, who was falsely touted and lauded as a brilliant theologian sympathized with the Cathars of southern France, who were allegedly repressed by the Catholics:

“In the period immediately following [Pope] Innocent III the Inquisition did its most deadly work in Southern France (see under Albigenses)”<sup>136</sup>

<sup>134</sup> St. Aug., Concerning Heresies, ch. 46, in Edward Peters, Heresy and Authority in Medieval Europe, ch. i, pp. 35-6, 39

<sup>135</sup> MacArthur, Preaching: How to Preach Biblically, ch. 3

<sup>136</sup> LaHaye, Revelation Unveiled

Dave Hunt in his poorly written book *Woman Rides the Beast*<sup>137</sup> even goes as far as accepting the Cathars, and the Bogomils (another heretical group even by evangelical standards) as being a part of the first church:

“Furthermore, millions of biblical Christians resisted Rome for fifteen years before Luther or Calvin. Albigensis, Waldenses, Bogomils, Paulicians, Baptists, and those who simply called themselves “Christians” or “brethren” traced their doctrines back to the apostles and never obeyed the popes.”<sup>138</sup>

Didn't Hunt know that there were no “Baptists” fifteen hundred years before Luther?

### EXAMINING HISTORY

Even when examining the historians they quote, they usually leave out major crucial facts. Hunt for example, used Johann Joseph Ignaz von Döllinger, Will Durant, Henry Charles Lea and William Edward Hartpole Lecky who are certainly historians of note, but the quotes they use from these historians do not address the theology, motive and the violence committed by these sects who by using the evangelical scale would be heretical and terroristic from even an evangelical sense. The Cathars like the Albigensians were so evil that Lea had to admit: “Had Catharism become predominant, its influence would infallibly have proved fatal.”<sup>139</sup> While such authors love to use quotes from Will Durant on how the Catholics eliminated the dualist Cathars who believed in two gods<sup>140</sup> they intentionally ignore that historian Will Durant wrote that for some time the Cathari were tolerated: “received a broad toleration from the ecclesiastics and the secular powers of southern France. Apparently the people were allowed to choose freely between the old religion and the new.” Durant then reports about these pagans' acts of terrorism; how in: “1171 Roger II, Viscount of Béziers, sacked an abbey, threw the bishop of Albi into prison, and set a heretic to guard him.” The pagans “drove abbot and monks from the abbey of Pamiers; his horses ate oats from the altar; his soldiers used the arms and legs of the crucifixes as pestles to grind grain, and practiced their marksmanship upon the image of Christ. Count Raymond VI of Toulouse destroyed several churches, persecuted the monks of Moissac, and was excommunicated (1196)...”<sup>141</sup>

Must the Church tolerate all terrorism? Even Protestant England had it right as Lecky explained, in general so indulgent towards paganism in her colonies, could not tolerate the continuation among the Hindus of the ritual murder of children and the burning of widows

---

<sup>137</sup> I knew Hunt and sat with Dave hunt on several occasions challenging him regarding his flimsy and irresponsible errors. In a TV interview with Hunt and this author confronted Hunt regarding his book *Woman Rides the Beast* asking him a Jesus-style question: “why when you accuse Rome you simply resort to allegory and when we accuse the Muslims we strictly provide literal references from the Bible” in which Hunt was dumbfounded.

<sup>138</sup> Dave Hunt, James White, Debating Calvinism

<sup>139</sup> History of the Inquisition, I, 117

<sup>140</sup> Anne Bradford Townsend, The Cathars of Languedoc as Heretics, P.p 49

<sup>141</sup> Will Durant, The Age of Faith

(the Suttee), prohibiting the former under severe penalties in 1802 and the latter in 1829.<sup>142</sup> The Protestants rightfully stopped such pagan practices through law enforcement and if need be war. One could examine what England did to the Thuggees in India, who butchered millions of Indians as sacrifices to the demonic goddess Kali. Similarly, the only way we can argue for the rights of Cathars and Albigenses is by adapting what we espouse to fight—liberalism, religious tolerance and tolerance to terrorism. Isn't that what we are at war with as Christians? Why do we reject first century Christian doctrine that was delivered to us by Policarp, Ignatius of Antioch, Clement of Rome — who knew the apostles personally — yet accept the Cathars as Bible believing Christians? Are Protestants being honest here?

The problem of providing evidence for the monumental numbers of “millions” killed needs a quick visit. Many drank from the fountain of Protestant theologians playing as historians. Hunt, an accountant, for example, provided weak historic references like “E. H. Broadbent and Canon Llorente” while Hunt manufactured an outlandish number not even mentioned by Llorente:

“In his History of the Inquisition, Canon Llorente, who was the Secretary to the Inquisition in Madrid from 1790-92 and had access to the archives of all the tribunals, estimated that in Spain alone the number of condemned exceeded 3 million, with about 300,000 burned at the stake.”<sup>143</sup>

But Hunt who is no historian and especially being an accountant by profession, where did he get this outlandish number from? All this exaggeration “exceeds 3 million,” condemned and “300,000 burned at the stake,” ignores that serious historians did not have to debunk such outlandish numbers. Real historians debunked Llorente's “31,912” claim:

“Llorente, the ex-Secretary of the Holy Office who wrote a bitterly antagonistic account of it at the beginning of the 19th century, based on manuscript material which is no longer extant, states that all told, from its foundation down to 1808, the total number of heretics burned in person in Spain alone totalled 31,912... These figures are so enormous as to seem highly suspicious.”<sup>144</sup>

Even the fabricated numbers by Llorente never came to a fraction of what Protestant writers claimed. Reputable British historian Henry Kamen stated:

“[Llorente] came up with the incredible figures of 31,912 relaxations in person, 17,659 relaxations in effigy, and 291,450 penitents, a grand total of 341,021 victims. All the historical evidence has shown this greatly exaggerated figure to be without any foundation.”<sup>145</sup>

---

<sup>142</sup> cf. Lecky, “Democracy and Liberty”, I, 1896, pp. 424 sqq.

<sup>143</sup> Dave Hunt, *A Woman Rides the Beast*, page 79, also 242

<sup>144</sup> Cecil Roth [orig 1937], page 123

<sup>145</sup> Henry Kamen [orig 1965], page 280-1

Inquisition historian A.S. Turberville:

“Llorente put the total at nearly 32,000 [burned in person], but his method of calculation is fantastic and ridiculous.”<sup>146</sup>

From a book of essays by leading Inquisition historians:

“There can be little doubt, however, that in light of subsequent research, even by those more or less sharing Llorente’s animus towards the Holy Office, he can no longer be considered reliable...Clearly, Llorente also contributed substantially to the growing anti-clerical tradition in Spain in the 19th century.”<sup>147</sup>

Also one can read Professor Gerard Dufour, historian Mariana, professor Dumont and many others. Even Henry Charles Lea, the first major American Inquisition historian and no fan of the Catholic Church, says of the calculations of victims:

“There is no question that the number of these has been greatly exaggerated in popular belief, an exaggeration to which Llorente has largely contributed by his absurd method of computation...”<sup>148</sup>

Lea calls Llorente’s guesswork “reckless” and “entirely fallacious.” It even gets worse when we review popular evangelical theologian and author, John MacArthur and in order to make this one verse in Revelation 17:6 fit, had the audacity to inflate a number to an absolutely unsubstantiated “fifty million” martyred by the Popes, without providing any credible proof:

“According to Protestant Historian John Dowling, the Roman Catholic Church has put to death more than *fifty million* “heretics” between A.D. 606 (the birth of the papacy) and the mid-1800s.”<sup>149</sup>

Depending on which author one reads, the numbers even extends to 68 million, 100 million, 120 million, and 150 million ‘Bible believing Christians’ supposedly murdered by the Catholic Church, a history that no one in history verified; neither was the Papacy born in 606 A.D. as claimed by John MacArthur, the ‘reputable’ Calvinist theologian! But drilling down to find where this absurd claim came from, we obtained MacArthur’s quote referred to John Dowling:

---

<sup>146</sup> A.S. Turberville [orig 1932], page 112

<sup>147</sup> Paul J. Hauben [1969], page 31, from chapter “*Juan Antonio Llorente: A Spanish Anti-Clerical View*”

<sup>148</sup> Lea, volume 4, page 517

<sup>149</sup> The MacArthur New Testament Commentary, John 12-21, P.p. 181, Italics mine

“From the birth of Popery in 600, to the present time, it is estimated by careful and credible historians, that more than *FIFTY MILLION* of the human family have been slaughtered for the crime of heresy by popish persecutors, an average of more than forty thousand religious murders for every year of the existence of Popery.”<sup>150</sup>

And here is the crux of all this slander: in MacArthur’s quote, “According to Protestant Historian John Dowling,” as it turns out, was “pastor Dowling,” not “historian,” and even Dowling quotes no historians. He held his pastorates in New York, Philadelphia. It even gets worse, besides that Dowling has no credentials in history or has he ever showed any evidence; stated such an outlandish “fifty million,” simply created such numbers out of thin air, his note explains by belaboring the same:

“No computation can reach the numbers who have been put to death, in different ways, on account of their maintaining the profession of the Gospel, and opposing the corruptions of the Church of Rome, A million Waldenses and Albigenses perished during a crusade proclaimed by Pope Innocent III in 1208; beginning from the establishment of the Jesuits in 1540 to 1580, nine hundred thousand were destroyed; one hundred and fifty thousand perished by the Inquisition in 30 years; within the space of thirty-eight years after the edict of Charles V against Protestants, fifty thousand persons were hanged, beheaded, or burned alive for heresy; eighteen thousand more perished during the administration of the Duke of Alva in five and a half years ... but the total amount will never be known, till the earth shall disclose her blood”<sup>151</sup>

After noticing the outlandish quotes, we then attempted to investigate further as to what historian with sane mind would declare that the Papacy murdered 100 million people. We finally found the source from a book, *Who Are These Three Angels*, by Jeff Wehr, P.p. 31-32:

“For professing faith contrary to the teachings of the Church of Rome, history records the martyrdom of more than one hundred million people. A million Waldenses and Albigenses perished during a crusade proclaimed by Pope Innocent III in 1208; beginning from the establishment of the Jesuits in 1540 to 1580, nine hundred thousand were destroyed; one hundred and fifty thousand perished by the Inquisition in 30 years; within the space of thirty-eight years after the edict of Charles V against Protestants, fifty thousand persons were hanged, beheaded, or burned alive for heresy; eighteen thousand more perished during the administration of the Duke of Alva in five and a half years.”<sup>152</sup>

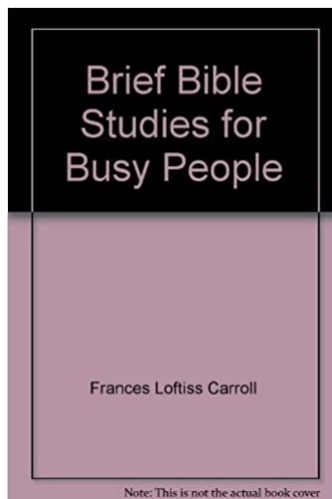
The source used by Wehr, as it turned out, was from an insignificant booklet titled *A Brief Bible Studies for Busy People* (page 16), which was by Frances L. Carroll.

---

<sup>150</sup> Dowling, *The History of Romanism*, Book 8, Ch. 1, pp. 542, 543:

<sup>151</sup> John Dowling’s *The History of Romanism*, Book 8, Ch. 1, pp. 542

<sup>152</sup> *Brief Bible Readings for Busy People*, No. 8.



Carroll wasn't even a historian but a housewife of a Jehovah's Witness serving with her husband as full-time volunteer traveling ministers of Jehovah's Witnesses.<sup>153</sup> Carroll, the housewife, simply plagiarized from the other fraudulent claims by Dowling and simply inserted her own "one hundred million".

But this is only taking a couple of quotes randomly that we were able to find a monumental fraudulent claims and outright slander; the Protestant *World Christian Encyclopedia* says that Roman Catholics killed 4.9 million Christians. Of course, such source lumps the Manichaeans, Arians, Cathars, Priscillianists, Paulicians, Bogomiles, Waldensians, Albigensians, Lollards and Hussites as 'Bible believing Christian'. Eliminate these heretics and the main protestant argument becomes empty. The "millions"

figure is not supported by any historian of note. It is difficult to manipulate history without notice and is why such authors resort to theologians proclaiming them as historians. Protestantism, if anything opened the floodgates of no supervision where any huckster can set up a church, gain prominence, churn books and sermons and anyone who attempts to question or verify is quickly escorted out of their fiefdom.

But even worse than all this is that if we track the main sources used by Protestants of such claims to only find out none are credible: Peter De Rosa (aka Neil Boyd) was not a historian<sup>154</sup> but an X-priest, novel writer and Professor of Metaphysics. The famed John Wesley was not a historian but a theologian. Alexander Hislop was not a historian but a Pastor of East Free Church of Arbroath in Scotland. Schmucker was not a historian but a Professor of Theology. William Craig Brownlee was not a historian but a reverend and an American clergyman and professor of languages. Joseph Martin McCabe was not a historian but an x-Catholic priest. Charles Buck was not a historian but a reverend and author of Theological Dictionary. Vergerius was not a historian but a religious 'reformer'. Thomas Armitage was not a historian but a Protestant theologian. George Bourne was not a historian but a pastor. Cushing B. Hassell was not a historian but a writer. Dr. M. Geddes was not a historian but a Chaplain. John B. Wilder was not a historian but a writer. Taylor Bunch was not a historian but a Prophecy author. Nathaniel Crouch (pseud. Robert Burton) was not a historian but a writer.<sup>155</sup> Henry Southwell was not a historian but a reverend. John Wylie was a not a historian but minister of the Free Church of Scotland. J. M. Carroll was not a historian but a Southern Baptist minister. Avro Manhattan was not a historian but a British

---

<sup>153</sup> <http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=119716814>

<sup>154</sup> <http://www.andrewnurnberg.com/authors/peter-de-rosa/>

<sup>155</sup> CROUCH'S "RELATION OF THE GREAT COUNCIL OF JEWS," 1796, WITH AN "ACCOUNT OF THE WONDERFUL DELUSION OF THE JEWS BY A FALSE MESSIAH" Brett's account of the "Great Council of the Jews in the Plains of Hungary in 1650 to Examine the Scriptures Concerning Christ" is today discredited as purely fictional—originally spawned by the Puritan Revolution in England in hopes of converting Jews to Christianity

writer. Charles Chiniquy was not a historian, but a Canadian x-Catholic priest who was twice suspended from his priestly ministry (for moral turpitude). R. W. Thompson was not a historian but a politician. John William Bowden was not a historian but theologian. Walter J. Veith is not a historian or a “world acclaimed international lecturer” but a zoologist<sup>156</sup> Frances L. Carroll, was not a historian but simply a Jehovah’s Witness preacher’s housewife.

Such is the type of references used by evangelical authors when they need to exaggerate historic accounts. With no accountability by a higher order, evangelical authors can do as they wish under the first amendment but as long as man is man, true and ripe scholarship, and sound reasoning, can be only the heritage of the few.<sup>157</sup> Similarly, Tim La Haye, in a description reminiscent to the blood libel against Jews, writes that under the Spanish Inquisition:

“no fewer than 900,000 Protestants were put to death, in the Pope’s war for the extermination of the Waldenses. Think of monks and priests directing, with heartless cruelty and inhuman brutality, the work of torturing and burning alive innocent men and women; and doing it in the Name of Christ, by the direct order of the “Vicar of Christ.”<sup>158</sup>

Even a college student could ask: how could 900,000 Protestants be killed in the Pope’s war against the Waldenses when the Waldenses were hundreds of years before the Protestant Reformation? But these are not willing to remove their books anytime soon and neither will they repent, instead, these choose to slander. So who truly was the tare that sapped the saints?

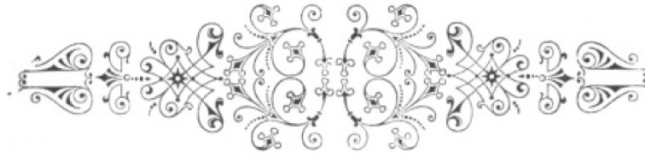
To comprehend the trail of heresy, it is pertinent to see (at least briefly) the stages of heresy from Gnosticism to Protestantism, which we devoted an entire section to what even historians did not connect the dots. Under our exhibit “Martin Luther,” to even understand how Martin Luther got to where he got, we peruse through the journey of the rebellion against the Church prior to Luther from the Gnostic heresy of Bogomilism influenced the pre-Reformation protestant figures Tyndale and Wycliffe; the latter of these two would influence the “morning star of the Reformation” John Huss who would serve as an inspiration to the infamous patriarch of the Reformation, Martin Luther. The Protestant Revolt fomented a new phenomena of people seeing Christianity as open to one’s own individual interpretation and a torrent of different sects appeared. This rebellion escalated into the 17<sup>th</sup> century with the Enlightenment, which was just another stage of the revolution against the Church. A somewhat obscure figure of the Enlightenment, Erasmus Darwin, would develop one of the earliest forms of evolutionary theory, and this would influence his grandson, Charles Darwin, the father of the Theory of Evolution and from henceforth, the seed of Protestantism controls and aids the beast.

---

<sup>156</sup> <http://walterveith.com/walter-veith-bio.html> Professor Walter J. Veith, claims a “PhD Zoology and an ardent student of history and prophecy”, historian Jeff Crocombe, finds serious faults with some references Veith puts forward as ‘facts’

<sup>157</sup> The American Catholic Quarterly Review, Volume II, P.p. 498

<sup>158</sup> LaHaye, Revelation Unveiled



## THEY DO NOT RELATE TO THE HARLOT'S OTHER ALIASES

For example, when it comes to the harlot (Babylon The Great) prophecy expounds on other aliases. This includes Israel and the fallen church since she goes the pagan and homosexual route, God changes His naming convention from Israel to allegoric “Canaan,”<sup>159</sup> “Babylon,” “Sodom,”<sup>160</sup> “the great city,” “Lebanon,” “Egypt,”<sup>161</sup> “Tyre,”<sup>162</sup> “Samaria,”<sup>163</sup> (syncretism) “the

---

<sup>159</sup> Ezekiel 16

<sup>160</sup> Revelation 11

<sup>161</sup> Revelation 11, Isaiah 19

<sup>162</sup> This one is the entire great Babylon in Isaiah 23: “thou harlot that hast been forgotten; make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered.” (v. 16) “And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that the LORD will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to her hire, and shall commit fornication with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth.” “And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the LORD” (v. 18a)

<sup>163</sup> Ezekiel 16



lady of kingdoms,”<sup>164</sup> worshippers of “Milcom,”<sup>165</sup> “rulers of Sodom,” and “people of Gomorrah,”<sup>166</sup> while calling the entire harlot-enterprise as a “city” explained it as “cities”.<sup>167</sup> Did interpreters miss all these allegoric names throughout the centuries? We have allegoric “Philistines” (mixed multitude mainly European seafarers) “Edom”<sup>168</sup> “Moab” “Lebanon,”<sup>169</sup>

---

<sup>164</sup> Isaiah 47:1 “Come down and sit in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon; sit on the ground without a throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans! For you shall no more be called Tender and delicate.” In verse 15: “Thus shall they be to you with whom you have labored, your merchants from your youth; they shall wander each one to his quarter. No one shall save you.”

<sup>165</sup> Regarding “Babylon the Great” in the Apocalypse 16:19 God destroys “the cities of the nations which fell” is also in Zephaniah 1:15-16 “a day of wrath is that day, a day of trouble and distress, a day of destruction and desolation, a day of darkness and gloom, A day of clouds and thick darkness a day of trumpet and battle cry against the fortified cities and the high corner towers.” The prophecy continues with God’s final solution: “I will completely remove all things from the face of the earth,” declares the LORD. “I will remove man and beast; I will remove the birds of the sky and the fish of the sea, and the [fn]ruins along with the wicked; and I will cut off man from the face of the earth,” declares the LORD. “So I will stretch out My hand against Judah and against all the inhabitants of Jerusalem. And I will cut off the remnant of Baal from this place, and the names of the idolatrous priests along with the priests. “And those who bow down on the housetops to the host of heaven, and those who bow down and swear to the LORD and yet swear by Milcom, And those who have turned back from following the LORD, And those who have not sought the LORD or inquired of Him.” And those who have turned back from following the LORD, And those who have not sought the LORD or inquired of Him.” (Zephaniah 1:2-6) “Wail, O inhabitants of the Mortar, for all the people of Canaan will be silenced; all who weigh out silver will be cut off. it will come about at that time that I will search Jerusalem with lamps, and I will punish the men Who are stagnant in spirit, Who say in their hearts, “The LORD will not do good or evil!”” (Zephaniah 1:11-12) “I will bring distress on men so that they will walk like the blind, because they have sinned against the LORD; and their blood will be poured out like dust and their flesh like dung. Neither their silver nor their gold will be able to deliver them on the day of the LORD’S wrath; and all the earth will be devoured in the fire of His jealousy, for He will make a complete end, indeed a terrifying one, of all the inhabitants of the earth.” (v.17-18)

<sup>166</sup> Isaiah 1:10

<sup>167</sup> For example, Jeremiah 22:8 calls Israel *the Great city* “Many nations will pass by this city; and they will say to one another, ‘Why has the LORD done thus to this *great city*?’” though Jeremiah uses the singular form in verse 6 renders Israel in a plural form *cities* “Yet most assuredly I will make you like a wilderness, like *cities* which are not inhabited.” (Jeremiah 22:6) Today the state of Israel is called medinat Yesrael, the word medinat can be interchanged as “city” or “state”. Jeremiah even calls Israel as “Lebanon”: “You who dwell in Lebanon, Nested in the cedars, How you will groan when pangs come upon you, Pain like a woman in childbirth!” (v.23)

“O inhabitant of Lebanon” and in Jeremiah 21:14: “that makest thy nest in the cedars”

<sup>168</sup> The children of Esau or Edom who gloated in the desolation of Jerusalem eventually fell into perpetual desolation so when in Malachi 1:4 God uses an allegoric Edom regarding Israel says: “We will rebuild the ruins,” and the Lord says: “*They may build, but I will tear down*” is confirmed by Christ and Micah 5 where all Israel’s cities are destroyed and in the very chapter of Malachi 1 God says: “Your eyes shall see this, and you shall say, ‘Great is the Lord beyond the border of Israel’” (Malachi 1:5) and in fact He set an ultimate declaration “The burden of the word of the Lord to Israel by Malachi” (Malachi 1:1)

<sup>169</sup> “A *great eagle* with great wings and long pinions, full of feathers of many colors, came to *Lebanon* and took away the *top of the cedar*.” (Ezekiel 17:1) which God explains: “Do you not know what these things mean? Tell them, ‘Behold, the *king of Babylon* came to *Jerusalem*, carried off its king and officials, and brought them back with him to Babylon.”

“Son of man, put forth a riddle, and speak a parable unto the house of Israel” (v. 2)

“Cedar” “Mount Seir” “Mount of Esau” “Babylon” and literal “Arabia”.

And with the beast we have “the Dragon,” the “Monster of the Seas” “Gog and Magog”<sup>170</sup> “Greece”<sup>171</sup> “the Assyrian” “Assyria” ... all these have literal attributes of actual entities and principalities that these references apply to a literal sense and we are given the literal nations that compose them.

Names have meanings. For example: when Lot committed a grievous sin getting drunk and slept with his two daughters, to the offspring, Lot’s daughters became their sisters where Lot’s sons of incest named Moab (Hebrew, Arabic: *min Abah*, meaning: of his own father) and Ammon or “Ben-ammi” literally means “son of my paternal uncle”.<sup>172</sup> Despite the remnant, Moab and Ammon has become symbolic of the falling away. This is hinted in the trial of Christ, which is symbolic of the persecution of the church, given the choice between Christ and Barabbas. In Hebrew it is Bar-Abah, has the exact meaning as Moab, which means “*son of his father*”. Israel was given the choice between Bar-Abah (the *son of his father*) and Christ (*Son of The Father*).

They chose the rebel Bar-Abah (son of his father) and even after rejecting Christ, they chose Bar Kozba (Son of the Liar) and said of Christ: “let His blood be upon us and upon our children”. In other words, they became Moab, spiritually sons of incest (of their father and not of the Father) that is spiritually separated. Now Jerusalem’s daughters (the fallen church) are but one and the same illegitimate sons. Such an interpretation should not be unusual. For example, In Ezekiel 17 God clearly uses foreign nations as nicknames of Jerusalem:

“A *great eagle* with great wings and long pinions, full of feathers of many colors, came to *Lebanon* and took away the *top of the cedar*.” (Ezekiel 17:1)

Did an eagle come to literal Lebanon? No. In fact, God explains that this “Lebanon” is “Jerusalem”:<sup>173</sup>

“Do you not know what these things mean?’ Tell them, ‘Behold, the *king of Babylon* came to *Jerusalem*, carried off its king and officials, and brought them back with him to Babylon.”

So the “great eagle” was “Babylon,” the top empire of the time. He came to “Lebanon” (the glorious city Jerusalem) and the “top cedar” is the king of Judah.

Rule number one in understanding allegory is that God’s message is usually to His people (at the time is Jerusalem, not Lebanon). Then Ezekiel 17 speaks of the Messiah and His Kingdom (the church):

---

<sup>170</sup> Gog can also mean on top “roof” (see Emerson, Antichrist in the Middle Ages, 85) and God brings it low.

<sup>171</sup> Zechariah 9:13

<sup>172</sup> See the Jewish Encyclopedia

<sup>173</sup> Unlike the Babylon being Israel Protestant commentaries do recognize the use of “Lebanon” as “Jerusalem,” since the text explicitly says to.

“I will take a shoot from the lofty top of the cedar, and I will set it out. I will pluck a tender sprig from its topmost shoots, and I will plant it on a high and lofty mountain. I will plant it on the mountain heights of Israel so that it will bear branches; it will yield fruit and become a majestic cedar. Birds of every kind will nest under it, taking shelter in the shade of its branches. Then all the trees of the field will know that I am the LORD. I bring the tall tree down and make the low tree tall. I dry up the green tree and make the withered tree flourish. I, the LORD, have spoken, and I have done it.” (Ezekiel 17:22-24)

*The highest branch* of the royal seed is the highest branch that is heir to the throne; namely, the Messiah<sup>174</sup> Who will build His Church. Daniel also speaks of the “Rock” that is cut without hands smote the image and the Gold (Babylon) Silver (Persia) Bronze (Greece) and Iron (Greco-Roman) withered under the growth of the Church. The lofty cedar was brought low and the short cedar (Christ’s Kingdom) brought high. What was high was brought low and what was brought low was put on the top.

God uses “cedar,” “Lebanon,” “Babylon,” “Sodom,” “Canaan,” and “Tyre” pertaining to His intended Kingdom on earth became rebellious and at times even calling it “daughter Zion” as “Babylon”. So when we read:

“Therefore, as I live, says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Moab shall be as Sodom, and the children of Ammon as Gomorra.” (Zephaniah 2:9)

The prophecy may also be referring to the moral condition of His people and is not intended to be a tribal affiliation. Then Christ explains:

“It was *the same* in the days of Lot. People were eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building. <sup>29</sup> But the day Lot *left Sodom*, fire and sulfur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all. <sup>30</sup> “It will be just like this on the day the Son of Man is revealed. <sup>31</sup> On that day no one who is on the housetop, with possessions inside, should go down to get them. Likewise, no one in the field should go back for anything. <sup>32</sup> *Remember Lot’s wife!*” (Luke 17:28-31)

What Christ is saying here is that the world will be “*the same*” as “Sodom” with the same condition before He comes and He is reflecting Ezekiel’s prophecy. Christ also says to forget packing your luggage and to “remember Lot’s wife” that is an *action* to run and never look

---

<sup>174</sup> “The ‘tender one’ is the Messiah, the Son of David (see Isa. 11:1 “A shoot will come up from the stump of Jesse; from his roots a Branch will bear fruit.” Isaiah 53:2 “He grew up before him like a tender shoot, and like a root out of dry ground. He had no beauty or majesty to attract us to him, nothing in his appearance that we should desire him.” Jeremiah 23:5-6 “I will raise up for David[fn] a righteous Branch, a King who will reign wisely and do what is just and right in the land.” Zech. 6:12; “Here is the man whose name is the Branch, and he will branch out from his place and build the temple of the LORD.” Rev. 22:16: “I am the Root and the Offspring of David, and the bright Morning Star.”

back or return towards Sodom and join the damned, just flee the mystery city of Sodom. We must always keep in mind that “Lot” is symbolic of the Church triumphant and “Lot’s wife” is the Church fallen away returning (turning her head) towards Sodom (to the ways of Sodom).

The two witnesses (Enoch and Elijah) will come to condemn Sodom<sup>175</sup> and bring the remnants of the Jewish people to the faith preaching in Jerusalem and the world:

“Enoch pleased God, and was translated into paradise, that he may give repentance to the nations.” (Ecc 44:16)

“Behold I will send you Elias the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers: lest I come, and strike the earth with anathema.” (Malachi 4:5-6)

Lot’s wife became a pillar of salt because she, like the bulk majority of today’s church turned her head backwards towards Sodom. She symbolizes the church returning backwards towards Sodom and Gomorrah.

Now we all know that when the Master comes why most are left out regardless of their Evangelical stage performing miracles and Catholic priests casting demons in His name. These have not even understood what constitutes the word *righteousness*. They fear the label of homophobia. We cannot approach the subject sensitively. How can we politely tell a dressed up pig that it is still a pig?

#### THE DICHOTOMY BETWEEN BEAST AND HARLOT

Without understanding the allegoric references, one cannot just rummage the literalist commentaries regarding prophecies by Ezekiel, Jeremiah, Isaiah and Joel to find beast or harlot and is why tares miss the target where most commentaries refer to a single city being Rome. The “harlot” is a corporate entity involving many powerful nations (“peoples, tribes, nations and tongues”), which the beast carries.

The literalists see this but because of their sheer hatred of Rome they disobeyed the scripture. This harlot is the massive entity, besides the ‘beast’ that must snooker punch her at the end. When it comes to the “beast” and the “harlot” most tend to focus on *one* or the *other* instead of understanding the dichotomy between the two (they are separate entities) yet have much in combined common interests and where *the two combined is what rules the world*:

“And he carried me away to a wilderness in the Spirit, and I saw a woman sitting upon a scarlet-colored beast, full of names of blasphemy having seven heads and ten horns” (Revelation 17:3)

---

<sup>175</sup> Again, in the Book of Jude chapter 1, “Just as *Sodom* and *Gomorrah* and the surrounding *cities*, which likewise indulged in *sexual immorality* and *pursued unnatural desire*” was indeed a prophecy by Enoch “Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of *these*, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints” so it will be illogical to exclude Enoch who prophesied about this coming Sodom to be excluded from warning Israel when he comes and is martyred.

So the “beast” and the “harlot” are *two* separate entities, each has its own interests, one (the beast) desires to convert the world to blaspheme Christ’s attributes while the woman’s forehead are written her desires to promote kabbalistic type paganism “Babylon,” her sensual and sexual revolutions “fornication,” to exterminate the innocent (eugenicist, see Wisdom II). Both act as *one*. But to point this “harlot” should be crucial since while the beast she rides commits the sin of blasphemy—it is a heretical cult—yet at the same time it is at enmity with the harlot and hates her, yet she by her massive wealth (whether the beast likes it or not) he is enslaved to her as a donkey carries its master. It is the harlot that is “drunken with the blood of saints and from the blood of the witnesses of Jesus,” she instigates the beast as Salome instigated and lured Herod while she is filled with earthly abominations and sexual immorality, a center of moral corruption:

“And the woman was arrayed with purple and scarlet-color, and gilded with gold, and precious stone, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand *full of abominations and uncleanness* of her *whoredom*, and upon her forehead was a name written: ‘Secret, Babylon the Great, the *Mother of the Whores*, and the *Abominations of the earth*. And I saw the woman *drunken from the blood of the saints, and from the blood of the witnesses of Jesus*, and I did wonder -- having seen her -- with great wonder.” (Revelation 17:3-6)

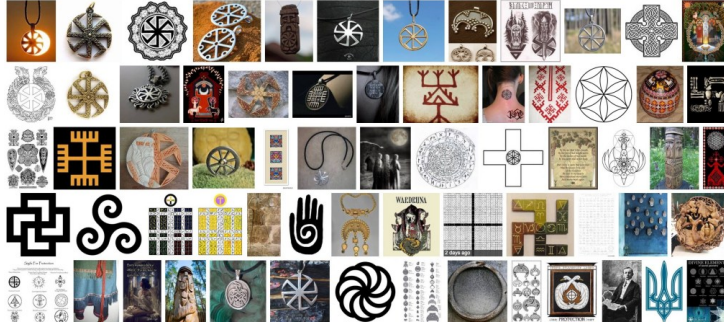
The whore is the mechanism that mischievously orchestrates the killing—a repetition of the trial of Christ—yelling: “crucify Him” and of Salome seducing the lustful beast Herod demanding the head of the Baptist while the pagan beast simply carries out the whore’s wishes. The two are *separate* with a love-hate relationship and only connect with her hind end. Then there is yet another player:

“For the ships of Chittim shall come against him: therefore he shall be grieved, and return, and *have indignation against the holy covenant*: so shall he do; he shall even return, and *have intelligence with them that forsake the holy covenant*.” (Daniel 11:30)

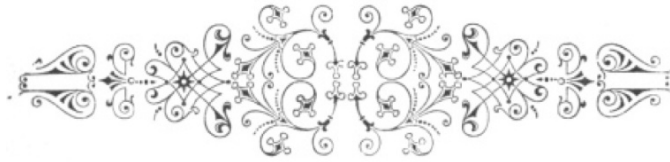
“Ships of Chittim,” (Italy, Spain) not to be confused with “Ships *from* Chittim,” (Ionia, the Turks, see Zechariah 9:13) and this Antichrist has an ally: the ones who abandoned the “holy covenant”. What is this “Holy Covenant?” and who abandoned it? There are so far three players against God’s people: 1—a beast 2—a harlot 3—traitors to the true covenant who go against the “prince of the covenant” which we shall dedicate much to explore later on.

#### THE ESCAPE IS TO AVOID THE MARK OF THE BEAST

Keep in mind, the beast’s forehead are “full of names of blasphemy” (Revelation 13) which the beast enforces. It says “names” (plural). These are many flavors, symbols and marks from the Muslim *Shahadatan* to verses from the Quran; and from pagan icons to emblems and blasphemous declarations; or symbols that are holy mixed with syncretistic ideas or even the rainbow robbed by Sodom for the devil is a thief. Isn’t taking the rainbow and mingling it with supporting Sodom syncretistic? Christians love the sign of the rainbow. Likewise will be the abomination of desolation. Any of such marks are taken knowingly they are taken by the ones whose names are not registered in the Book of Life.



Ezekiel 16's message should have us think of the world in rewind mode; as mankind rewinds the clock backwards to Sodom (homosexuality) and Egypt (Paganism) man also rewinds the clock to the false glories where in Asia Minor it is back to the Ottoman desire to regain what was once lost and where in northern Europe it is back to Odenism and in Japan it is back to honoring the Kamikaze and in Germany it is back to a Aryan pride and in Italy it is back to a form of Fascism and in Russia a form of Tsarist hegemony and in Iran a form of Persian dominance with growth in Aryan pride infused by Zoroastrianism. This also includes the past wars of Ottoman invasions, World War I and World War II all combined unraveling at a supersonic speed to self-destruct and put a closure on all the systems made by man. The American dream crumbles, the Persian, the Ottoman all crumbles when God says enough and the Rock (Christ) strikes at their heel in the end.



## THEY DO NOT UNDERSTAND THE TWO COVENANTS AND THE TWO FALLS

“The *great city* was *split* into *three parts*, and *the cities of the nations fell*. *Babylon the great* was *remembered in the sight of God*, to give her the cup of the wine of His fierce wrath.” (Revelation 16:19)

Some might object that here we have two separate incidents that “the cities of the nations fell” is the first incident and only then after the city was divided into three, that God only “remembered,” (“great Babylon was remembered before God”). Therefore you might argue that the two are distinct and are unconnected. This is incorrect since as we have argued prior: 1—“remember” in scripture is not simply the opposite of ‘forgot’ for such an attribute to God is blasphemy. God does not forget 2—remembering in scripture requires an *action* and in this case it is *causing the cities of the nations to fall*. To remember is always connected to an action as when Christ said “do this in remembrance of me” is regarding the Holy Eucharist, that without this *action* we are not of Him. So God *remembered* Babylon is God took action upon Babylon and destroyed “the cities of the nations” which constitute Babylon. This is how scripture is understood throughout as we have seen in several examples.

So after an allegoric earthquake (symbolic of the struggle over spiritual Jerusalem) divided the city into three parts: a first part, a second part and a third part,<sup>176</sup> and we ask; which of the three divided parts is that “Great City”?

Answer: *any* or *all*. In fact, as we delve into this at later chapters, prophecy addresses all three regions incessant <sup>177</sup> about Jerusalem: “Arabia” “Jerusalem” and “fallen Christendom” all three love this earthly Jerusalem which is their earthly “mother” because these failed to heed the major instruction by Paul in Galatians 4: “. . . which things are *symbolic*. For these are the *two covenants*: the one from *Mount Sinai* which gives birth to *bondage*, which is Hagar—for this Hagar is *Mount Sinai* in *Arabia*, and *corresponds to Jerusalem* which *now is*, and is *in bondage with her children*—but the *Jerusalem above* is free, which is the *mother* of us all.” (Galatians 4:24-26)

---

<sup>176</sup> When the city is broken into three parts is a new theme since verses 16 is the finish line: “Then the *seventh angel* poured out his bowl upon the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple from the throne, saying, “*It is done*.” (Revelation 16:17) This is the end after the seventh bowl by the seventh angel is poured out (the final bowl is the end). Now the book of Revelation starts a new theme: “And there were flashes of lightning and sounds and peals of thunder; and there was a great earthquake, such as there had not been since man came to be upon the earth, so great an earthquake was it, and so mighty. The great city was split into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. Babylon the great was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of His fierce wrath.” (Revelation 16:18-19)

<sup>177</sup> See Zechariah 12 and Zechariah 14’s earthquake on the Mount of Olives and how all nations are cut over Jerusalem



And we beg to ask a Jesus-style question from our Protestant interpreters: how many Jerusalems and how many covenants did Paul address here? There are two Jerusalems not one. One earthly (which Protestants focus on) and one is heavenly which the Apostolic Succession churches focus on while being accused of Anti-Semitism for refusing to pay attention to Evangelical and Messianic aspiration towards Jerusalem. But more important, this mega-harlot “*is not*” a single city, yet its “mother” (Jerusalem) “*is*”. And it is here that we find the third part: Islamdom, which is addressed extensively by Isaiah, Jeremiah and even John with the harlot daughter in the “desert”.

Keep in mind that Islamdom was once part of the Apostolic Succession Christendom which the Protestants aided the Muslim Ottomans against the Catholic League during the Lepanto war. *Bahira*, a renegade heretical monk, was Muhammad’s mentor. Renegade monks (like Luther and Bahira) have been the worst tares that infected everything, which the evil Protestants aided in fulfillment of what Daniel the Prophet forewarned about.

Isaiah 49 includes a massive exodus out of Babylon from the “north” the “west” and even as far as communist China, another persecutor of the church:

“Surely these shall come from afar; Look! Those from the *north* and the *west*, and these from the land of *Sinin*.” (Isaiah 49:12)

“*Sinin*”<sup>178</sup> is *China*.

The judgment is not only from the beast (one of her lovers) but by other nations of the harlot conglomerate:

“Surely, therefore, I will *gather all your lovers* with whom you took pleasure, all those you *loved*, and all those you *hated*; I will *gather them from all around against you* and will uncover your nakedness to them, that they may see all your nakedness. They shall also *bring up an assembly against you*, and *they shall stone you with stones* and *thrust you through with their swords*.” (Ezekiel 16:39-40)

The 10 horns (the one whom the woman rides) that she is initially allied with (who some love her and others hate her) then stone her (probably rains nuclear missiles upon her).

---

<sup>178</sup> Some translators use “Aswan” in Egypt but this is not how the Hebrew spells it. The land of Seen (China) is also pronounced as such in Arabic just like the Hebrew: סִינִים or *Sinin* or *Sinae*, the Latinization of *Qin*, after the Qin state, founded in 778 BC, and the Qin dynasty, founded in 221 BC by Qin Shi Huang-Di. Most scholars have favored identification with China, the classical *Sinae*. Modern translations of the Bible tend to translate *Sinin* as Syene (ancient Aswan) because the Great Isaiah Scroll of the Dead Sea Scrolls uses that word. (see Beegle, Dewey M. (October 1951). "Proper Names in the New Isaiah Scroll" Also see

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/encyclopedias/isbe/sinin-land-of.html> International Standard Bible (1915).



Now we can deduce, understand and unlock all other prophecies in the coming chapters. The two witnesses are martyred at one of the cities of this conglomerate “the Mother” (which is literal Jerusalem) God labeled as “Sodom and Egypt” (homosexual and pagan):

"Their dead bodies will lie in the main street of the *great city*, which *figuratively* is called *Sodom and Egypt*, where also *their Lord was crucified*." (Revelation 11:8)

Yet who kills them is the beast:

“And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.” (Revelation 11:7)

Obviously the beast that carries the woman (Jerusalem) is an influencer of this beast and there is cooperation between the two as in Herod (who did the killing) and Salome (who instigated it).

The mobs will kill them in the name of love! “Where their Lord was crucified”. So just as Jerusalem murdered Christ, it will also murder the two witnesses. This leaves no room for any other location; this is Jerusalem, the mother of Christendom turned harlot including Islamdom. Having called the city of Jerusalem “Sodom” surely the two will warn:

“Hear the word of the LORD, ye *rulers* of *Sodom*; give ear unto the law of our God, ye *people* of *Gomorrah*.” (Isaiah 1:10)

Everything repeats. Babylon as we shall see from prophecy is *twice* rebelled and *twice* destroyed. For example, when the Apocalypse says “Babylon is fallen is fallen” (twice fallen) we find this in Jeremiah:

“Go up against the land of *Merathaim*, against it, And against the inhabitants of Pekod. Waste and utterly destroy them,” says the LORD, “And do according to all that I have commanded you.” (Jeremiah 50:21)

“They shall hold the bow and the lance; they are cruel and shall not show mercy. Their voice shall roar like the sea; they shall ride on horses, Set in array, like a man for the battle, Against you, O *daughter of Babylon*.” (Jeremiah 50:42)

“*Merathaim*” is a reference to Babylon, which means “*twice rebelled*.” This is a “daughter of Babylon” (born of it) and is perhaps proclaiming the second Sodom reviving and rebelling again. Jeremiah then addresses not literal Babylon but “daughter of Babylon” (Jeremiah 50:42) *as spiritually born from ancient Babylon*. So while the prophecy addresses ancient Babylon, in its dual nature it also addresses another, which is not ancient Babylon itself, but *spiritually born of it*. In fact we even find the “mother”:

“Because you are glad, because you are jubilant, O you who *pillage My heritage*, because you skip about like a threshing heifer and neigh like stallions, *your*

*mother will be greatly ashamed, she who gave you birth will be humiliated. Behold, she will be the least of the nations, a wilderness, a parched land and a desert.*” (Jeremiah 50:11-12)

Scholars who view the fulfillment as historic are unable to solve the severity of its destruction:

“As when God overthrew *Sodom and Gomorrah* and their *neighbor cities*, says the LORD, so no man shall dwell there, and no son of man shall sojourn in her.” (Jeremiah 50:40)

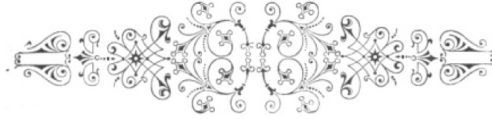
“They seize their bow and javelin; they are cruel and have no mercy. Their voice roars like the sea; and they ride on horses, marshalled like a man for the battle against you, *O daughter of Babylon.*” (Jeremiah 50:43)

“At the shout, “Babylon has been seized!” *the earth is shaken*, and an outcry is heard among the nations.” (Jeremiah 50:46)

There are several issues at hand: 1—Jerusalem’s sister, Arabia’s destruction is heard at the “Red sea”:

“The earth has quaked at the noise of their downfall. There is an outcry! The noise of it has been heard at the *Red Sea.*” (Jeremiah 49:21)

No scholar was able to answer how this “Babylon” is by the “Red Sea” when ancient Babylon (Iraq) was by the Euphrates. The main city of Arabia is on the Red Sea coast (Jeddah) or this prophecy could even go further to Mecca and Medina. 2—It is crucial to focus: “*As when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah*” leaves no room for question, this is not ancient Sodom or an historic event in ancient Babylon, but destruction “as” *in the same fashion* (fire and brimstone) and also the *same reason* (homosexuality). No such event in history besides the cities of ancient Sodom and Gomorrah were any cities leveled with such mass destruction. This “Sodom and Egypt” likewise constitute many cities. Also notice Jeremiah does not call this “Babylon” as a single city but “their neighbor cities” (plural cities).



## THERE IS ALWAYS A CAIN AND AN ABEL

There is always a divide between “two”; one is a Cain and the other is an Abel (two brothers). Abel offered a blood sacrifice (true Communion with God) and the other (Cain) a bloodless one (false Communion with fruit). The first (Abel) is murdered by the other (Cain) who is the tare sapping the water to choke the wheat. Protestants simply take the Cain and Abel story as history, but this is prophetic as the sign that divides two regarding consuming the Body and Blood of Christ; one believes it is real (Transubstantiation) while the other believes it is simple bread and fruit juice. We a similar divide in Galatians 4 which sets up the difference between two Jerusalems. This is reiterated in several places in the New Testament:

“But it is not that the word of God has taken no effect. For they are *not all Israel* who *are of Israel*, nor are they all children because they are the seed of Abraham; but, “In Isaac your seed shall be called. That is, those who are the *children of the flesh*, these *are not the children of God*; but the *children of the promise* are counted as the *seed*.” (Romans 9:6-7)

“There are not all Israel who are of Israel” or are they even “the seed of Abraham”. How complex is this? For example: Karl Marx and Vladimir Lenin (though they are of the Hebrew race) are not of “Israel” regardless of their lineage.

“And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, heirs according to the promise.” (Galatians 3:29)

In essence we find *two Jerusalems!* One *earthly*, the other is *heavenly*. There are *two Israels*; one *earthly* the other *heavenly*; there are *two Zions*, one a *harlot* (“daughter of my people” and “daughter Zion” in Jeremiah 6), the other *virtuous* (St. Mary and her seed, Christ and the church); then there is a lamb looking beast with two horns: “beast that looks like a lamb with two horns but speaks like a dragon” (Revelation 13:11) and the true lamb of God with seven horns “... a Lamb as though it had been slain, having seven horns ...” (Revelation 5:6) there are two serpents; one good (bronze serpent in Numbers 21:9, Moses’ staff turned to serpent in Exodus 7:10 “fiery serpent” Numbers 21:8, Isaiah 14:29) and then

there is an evil serpent “fleeing serpent” (Job 26:13)<sup>179</sup> (Isaiah 27:1).<sup>180</sup> There are two wines one is in the cup of the harlot (“wine of her fornication”) that brings death and the other is true Communion (the “perpetual sacrifice”) and there is two Rahabs: “*Rahab Who Sits Still*” (Isaiah 30:7) is evil and one is not:

“He has founded *his city* on the *holy mountain*. The LORD loves the *gates of Zion* more than all the other dwellings of Jacob. Glorious things are said of you, city of God. “I will record *Rahab* and *Babylon* among those who acknowledge me—*Philistia* too, and *Tyre*, along with *Cush*— and will say, “This one was *born in Zion*.”” (Psalm 87:1-4)

There are neither “Jew” nor “Gentile” here. And this is Old Testament. Yet, what is included in this “Zion”? Here we have peoples from Cush (Africa) “Rahab” a gentile and even “Babylon” all as being born “in Zion”. God’s standards are not man’s. All who escaped out of this “Babylon the Great” are now included in the city of God.<sup>181</sup> There are two cities; one is the city of God and the other is not. God here says that He “founded his city on the *holy mountain*”. How can we measure His city or His “holy mountain”? In the old ways, the Temple in Jerusalem is minuscule, yet in the new, we expand our horizon as detailed in the book of Hebrews. How could one be literally born in “Cush” “Tyre” or “Babylon” also be “born *in Zion*” unless this “Zion” is all God’s people constituting His “holy city” and His Temple? Even this “Rahab” (harlot) and her Babylon, God brings out a remnant: “I will record *Rahab* and *Babylon* among those who acknowledge me” that also includes some from “Cush” (symbolic of Ham) and “Philistia” (symbolic of seafaring peoples) and “Tyre” (symbolic of peoples dwelling in sinful Tyre, amongst the wealthy conglomerates like the United States).

There are two Israels, one is holy (Israel of God) and one is not “Eber”. Again, Balaam’s parable (the foundation) is regarding a beast “Assyria” after a takeover by “Ships from

---

<sup>179</sup> The verse prior to Job 26:13 is Job 26:12 “He quieted the sea with His power, and by His understanding He shattered Rahab.” Why would God shatter Rahab the repentant harlot? The translation is incorrect. The confusion stems in that the English is confusing. “Rahab,” in Job 26:12 is not to be confused with Rahab the harlot with a “ר” ‘het’) a stronger sound from the ה “h” in Rahab’s name which does mean expanse but in this case means “to welcome” as in the spirit of hospitality (see Al Maany.com

22 (1: -رحب بضيوفه :- قال لهم أهلا وسهلا ومرحبا، حياتهم ) as she welcomed the spies into her house “Joshua the son of Nun sent two men as spies secretly from Shittim, saying, ‘Go, view the land, especially Jericho. “Rahab” in Job is with a different letter ה (soft “h”) which literally means “terror,” see Irhab as terrorism “The pillars of heaven tremble and are amazed at His rebuke. The most accurate rendering of the verse should be “He quieted the sea with His power, and by His understanding He shattered *terror*.” By His breath the heavens are cleared; His hand has pierced the fleeing serpent.” (Job 26:11-13) ’ Also see Gesenius “fierceness” “(Job 9:13)”. But we also find this in Isaiah 51:9 “Awake, awake, put on strength, O arm of the LORD; awake as in the days of old, the generations of long ago. Was it not You who cut Rahab in pieces, Who pierced the dragon?”

<sup>180</sup> “In that day the LORD will punish Leviathan the fleeing serpent, With His fierce and great and mighty sword, even Leviathan the twisted serpent; And He will kill the dragon who lives in the sea.” (Isaiah 27:1)

<sup>181</sup> “All nations also, some of which are named that all may be understood” Augustine.

Chittim” (Asia Minor) and also the harlot city: “And one from Jacob shall exercise dominion and *destroy the survivors of the city!*” That city is also all cities where the evil ones are left for mass destruction which God traps the beast to do since the beast (is also set in a trap) must cooperate in destroying the harlot.

Why have interpreters failed to link Balaam’s parable in Numbers 24 regarding “Eber” (both Peleg and Joktan) the annihilation of the “remnant of the city” to Galatians 4 (which equates *Jerusalem* with *Arabia*) and then to Isaiah 21 and Isaiah 13 and even Jeremiah 49-51 which these too combine earthly Israel with Arabia? Numbers 24 is a catastrophic event, but so is the Apocalypse which teaches that “the beast,” “burns the harlot” where the self-destruct is initiated:

“The beast and the ten horns you saw will hate the prostitute. They will bring her to ruin and leave her naked; they will eat her flesh and *burn her with fire*. For God has put it into their hearts to accomplish his purpose<sup>182</sup> by agreeing to give the beast their power to rule, until God’s words are fulfilled. The woman you saw is *the great city* that rules over the kings of the earth,” (Revelation 17:16-18)

The “harlot” (this massive powerful expanse from Israel, certain Arabian states and NATO powers) “***by agreeing to give the beast their power to rule***” (giving the neo-Ottomanist) their power is exactly the phenomenon we see today with NATO allowing Turkey to rule Asia Minor and is exactly why Daniel says:

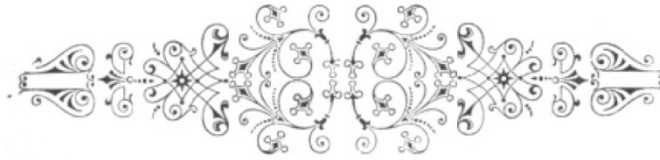
“And his power will be mighty, but ***not by his own power***, And he will destroy to an extraordinary degree And be successful and do *as he pleases*; He will *destroy mighty men and the holy people.*” (Daniel 8:24)

This part of the prophecy is being fulfilled in your reading. One must consider why God chose a “beast” and a “harlot” to describe the threat. To the Muslim world, this Babylon is considered a controlling burden that must be destroyed. Even Jerusalem is that “burdensome stone” that whoever lifts it up must be broken.

For the reasons expressed above and the reasons expressed below the case against singling Rome must be dismissed *with prejudice*.

---

<sup>182</sup> That is set up a snare. See Gog in Ezekiel 38 “I will put a hook in your jaw ...” also Ezekiel 32 to drag Pharaoh of Egypt in the net.



## DO NOT FEAR SODOM

“My people your guides lead you astray; they turn you from the path. The Lord takes His place in court; He rises to judge the people” (Isaiah 3:12-13)

For years I heard American tongues rattling ‘prophecy’ ‘prophecy’ ‘prophecy’ but only belabored about it when prophecy was unfulfilled. Now that it is being fulfilled, these cowards swallowed their tongues:

“But for the *cowardly* and *unbelieving* and *abominable* and *murderers* and *immoral persons* and *sorcerers* and *idolaters* and *all liars*, their part will be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.” (Revelation 21:8)

Even a Pope can act cowardly. When Pope Francis flirts with the Pachamama and ‘Mother Earth’ movement he aids in murdering souls and becomes a supporter of sorcery and idolatry. But Solomon did the same. We each have the responsibility to properly evaluate. If we were like the masses that follow the high priest no matter what he says or does, we would have yelled “crucify Him” for even Christ at His time was falsely considered a rebel. He too stood against the papacy of His time, yet did not reject their office and their authority when they were right.

There is this balance. It would not be surprising that when Enoch and Elijah show up that the ‘Sanhedrin’ would deny and denounce them while only a remnant few obey them. The West is comprised of nations that want to direct the Bible and not the Bible direct them. This is a fact that can be verified by countless fame seeking articles, books and TV hosts. One can spend months reading articles that daily push their labels “homophobia” “Judeophobia” “Islamophobia” “Xenophobia,” slapping more diseases by the same diseased people who came up with such phobias are themselves loaded with Verbophobia,<sup>183</sup> Theologicophobia,<sup>184</sup> Sophophobia,<sup>185</sup> Peniaphobia,<sup>186</sup> and Parthenophobia<sup>187</sup> and the worst

---

<sup>183</sup> Afflicted individuals a deep fear and anxiety of certain words. These days the word “Cop” bothers many.

<sup>184</sup> The fear of crosses or the crucifix

<sup>185</sup> The fear of learning. It come from the Greek word sophia, meaning "wisdom" or "knowledge".

<sup>186</sup> The fear and talk of “poverty”

<sup>187</sup> Irrational fear of virgins

of all Christianophobia. These always direct this Semitic Bible to be reinterpreted to fit views that flip on a shilling.<sup>188</sup>

The fallen Christian is a coward. He fears addressing Sodom. There is no watchman at the city gates; only calls for love as mobs demonstrate robbing washing machines and plasma televisions and the non-denominational churches churning massive crowds looking for soft bread baked with fast acting yeast are now taking a hiatus because of a plague.

Choose wisely between cowardice and this:

“Who is like unto the LORD our God, who dwells on high, Who humbles Himself to behold The things that are in the heavens and in the earth? He *raises the poor out of the dust*, and lifts the *needy* out of the ash heap, that He may seat him with *princes*—with the *princes of His people*. He grants the barren woman a home, like a joyful *mother of children*. Praise the LORD!” (Psalm 113)

“Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall *tribulation*, or *distress*, or *persecution*, or *famine*, or *nakedness*, or *danger*, or *sword*? As it is written, “For your sake we are *being killed* all the day long; we are regarded as *sheep to be slaughtered*. No, in all these things *we are more than conquerors* through him who loved us. For I am sure that *neither death* nor *life*, nor *angels* nor *rulers*, nor *things present* nor *things to come*, nor *powers*, nor *height* nor *depth*, nor *anything else in all creation*, will be able to *separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord*.” (Romans 8:35-38)

When Isaiah spoke of Sodom, he was not referring to a gay parade during his time, and like ancient Sodom and Gomorrah, which was buried for centuries under the rubble, is today uncovered known as “Mystery, Babylon the Great”. It is no longer a “mystery” considering what we see happening in this world, this riddle is now easily solved. All the prophets give matching and fitting nicknames regarding the behavioral aspects of their intended subject: “Sodom and Egypt” “they parade their sin *like Sodom does*, and they do not even try to hide it” (Isaiah 3:8). This mega whore city (cities) emulates Sodom. Obviously then, this is not the original Sodom but are (as the prophet says) His people now *behaving “like Sodom”*.

Prophecy can never be understood by use of complexity and sophism. If we are to come to God as children then we come with simplicity. Does a shepherd or a carpenter spin his wheel dissecting how God created the wood or does he simply admire what God gave him, then chooses the best type of wood for the product depending on its softness or hardness. He then uses proper tools to tame the wood. No wise shepherd takes his sheep to the valley of the wolves to instruct them how to tame the wolf. A shepherd cannot shepherd by allowing his fear of the wolf to become an obstacle in grazing sheep.

## HOMOPHOBIA

All the faithless that read the Bible without understanding the allegoric sense, God to them would seem like a schizophrenic god. After all, I can quote several end times prophecies where God sounds like He is pro-Israel and loves Jerusalem and defends her, and then we find similar end-times prophecies where God seems to turn on Jerusalem and is scolding

---

<sup>188</sup> You grew up using dime, I grew up using shilling

Israel accusing her of being “Sodom and Egypt” and levels punishments of “fire” upon her. Either God is confused or the people are simply confusing themselves.

We shall answer this question by delving into more of these unpopular (and very uncomfortable) prophecies just to comb throughout the scriptures to exegete just one verse why God calls Israel “Sodom and Egypt” and then defends Jerusalem.

But before I continue on, I must admit that I myself am afflicted with homophobia and if homophobia is what constitutes American exceptionalism and makes it distinct, I counter with ‘no’ all your cultural superiority complex knows, is to churn worthless labels, for a Muslim could counter with: why your exceptionalism has a phobia about child brides? America is loaded with pedophiles that claim that consent is all you need.

In the West, I always get the same-parroted reply that since God is love, we must love everyone. I counter with, if your God, without exception, extends His love to everyone, be they Nazi, homosexual or pederast; why can’t your God extend love to the homophobe? Why only the homophobe your little god hates?

Therefore, it is you who manufactured a schizophrenic God. Mine tells all three, the racist, the homosexual and the pederast that their *repentance* is love for both, God and fellow man, or let us say fellow-child.

Which of the two has the correct definition of God?

Therefore, none of your labels are valid, for you are infected with God-phobia regardless that God loves you even though you are filled with spiritual infections. Therefore, I need not your brand of healing and I pray that God plague me with homophobia and I pray never to recover. I can understand the sinful nature of a man with the “lust of the flesh,” for a woman, but not a man lay with someone he thinks is an evolved hairy ape.

But by no means this stops me from talking with or even dying for an ape loving man and treat them as any other, be they an Amazonian or a cannibal—without discrimination. But this by no means should prevent me to feel disgust. The haranguing and argumentation really boils down to this: does God exist, and if He does, *did He* or *did He not* prohibit such acts?

Another way to put it succinctly is to ask; you have a social experiment going, let us wait for the rainy day and see how it turns out if God pours down fire as in Pompeii. Yet your American exceptionalism rejects this quest to await God and quickly bans, humiliates, arm-twists, socially distances and persecutes us by the same bullying you claimed to want to prevent. You even made the grand claim that homosexuals have already endured a holocaust even though the fiery rain has not poured out yet.

Perhaps the answer to the question ‘if God exists’ lay in the hands of the scholar who believes that God must be schizophrenic for if he loves His people “Israel” “how can we make sense of the Holocaust?” Even Jews always asked me “where was God during the Holocaust?”

But this does not mean that God is schizophrenic. People who believe that a man can become a woman and a woman can become a man are schizophrenics. People today do not mind blaming God for everything including their abnormal behavior. Yet these same people, who do not mind worshipping nature and mother earth, regardless that ‘mother earth’ (which has no spirit) at times sends hurricanes, earthquakes and volcanoes that ruthlessly burry entire communities like Pompeii, yet they do not get angry or hate their goddess ‘mother earth’ but still want only us to hate our God.

And I ask a Jesus style question: why?



In everything we need to be careful not to tow the line and roar like lions for every short-lived fad. The damned always fall for an aberration: a spec of dust in the sea of history to be viewed—once the waves calm decades later—to be complete insanity. The seas roared for Stalin’s Communism and Hitler’s Nazism both fell alongside millions upon millions who blindly followed. It roared for Bar Kozba during the Jewish Roman revolt and the Hebrews fell. Today the seas roar for Sodom and millions more will perish to only realize in the end of it all that mankind is like the giant but stupid beast herded and controlled by few foxes. *The wise does not change with the wind*; had this Sodom experiment historically succeeded where is it but with archeologists who are trying to unearth Pompeii and Sodom from under the sea of rubble?

But today’s Sodom is no Pompeii. It is massive hinted in much allegory, which Jesus said: “I speak to them in parables, because seeing they do not see” and Isaiah calls this conglomerate city: “you rulers (plural) of Sodom” (Isaiah 1:10) for every prime minister and president rules his own Sodom. Today it is here and if you disagree with it, the system bans you where today you will lose your job and tomorrow you better accept a mark or else you are banned until you comply.

If we, the homophobes, are the schizophrenics, is this how America treats the mentally ill? And if God loves everyone, and indeed, we all ought to extend His love to everyone, including (but not limited to) the adulterer, winebibber, homosexual, bestialist, devil-worshipper ... should these (with the unconditional love message) not also extend their love to the homophobes? When was the last time any of these that carry the banner “God is Love” extended such love for homophobes? Such “love” has been nothing so far but the purest unadulterated hatred for homophobes and only unconditionally loving the debased.

But God never leaves us without tests and trials. Sodom first came for Chick-Fila, and we did speak out regardless that we did not own a fast-food restaurant. Then Sodom came for the Christian bakers, and we did speak out regardless that we were no bakers. Then Sodom came for the athletes, converted these, and suddenly everyone was silent for the people loved the coliseum.

After Sodom won the coliseum, when we spoke out, now our American ‘Christian’ colleagues banned and attacked us with several articles accusing us of homophobia and even went as far as claiming we reverted back to Islam. We began to even realize that these “Christians” excel in slander worse than CNN.<sup>189</sup>

The experiences finally opened our eyes to realize that we ran from the Islam of Arabia’s Mecca to only sojourn in the Mecca of Sodom. Now they tell us that: “if you do not like it here go back to where you come from” so while they claimed they are not racist, they were the epitome of racism.

So where will we go from here?

“Save me, O Lord, for there is now no saint: truths are decayed from among the children of men” (Psalm 11:2)

“Thou, O Lord, wilt preserve us: and keep us from this generation for ever.” (Psalm 11:8)

We once thought to sojourn in a different Christian nation since we were Islamophobic and homophobic moved and hid in Mexico. There were no Muslim fundamentalists there but Generation Sodom was also growing including paganism and all sorts of Mayan and Aztec syncretism had crept into Mexico. So we ran away from there adding another phobia

---

<sup>189</sup> See at the end of this book about the slander this author endured from CNN.

to our other phobias: our fear of living in a society infested with growing paganism. And now we learned what John meant when he added to “Sodom” this “Egypt”.

Finally we researched the Bible to see where homophobes, Islamophobes and paganophobes should go. I found several prophecies which I shall share as I move along. They must prepare and await an escape to the wilderness:

“And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, in which she is to be nourished for 1,260 days” (Apocalypse 12:6)

And now you understand the dual nature of Isaiah’s prophecy and why John the Baptist dwelt in the wilderness:

“A voice is calling, “Clear the way for the LORD *in the wilderness*; make smooth *in the desert* a highway for our God.” (Isaiah 40:3)

The days that we live in, it is becoming extremely difficult to be critical of anything. People who claim to have obtained salvation are so easily offended “And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another.” (Matthew 24:10)

Today the masses seem to be walking high on a tightrope without any balance falling either right or left to the abysmal. While indeed there are extremes, for we are not to harm or discriminate against someone because he is homosexual, but this does not mean we sing hallelujah together in support of such lifestyle as if God instantly decided we are equally yoked. It is one thing to be critical of what goes on in Israel or Black Lives Matter and it is another thing to be a hate-mongering racist and anti-Semite. Throwing labels is like throwing a rock in a well, it takes one foolish person to throw in the rock, and then it takes a dozen wise men to haul it out. Yet today one can easily get clobbered of being anti-Semitic or racist, such labels are stretched too far.

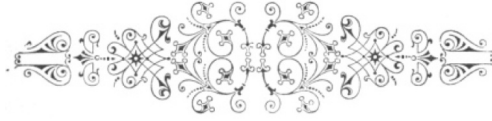
SECTION II  
“ EGYPT ”

GOD ALLOWS MAN TO TURN BACK THE CLOCK TO EGYPT

SLAVERY IN GREAT EGYPT

CHRIST'S EARTHQUAKE

OUR EXODUS OUT OF EGYPT



## THEY DO NOT UNDERSTAND ALLEGORIC “EGYPT”

As to Christ’s landing on His Second Coming almost all refer to Him landing on the Mount of Olives, which shakes in a massive earthquake at His touchdown. But did these ever consider this:

“Behold, the LORD rides on a swift cloud, and *will come into Egypt*; the *idols of Egypt* will totter at *His presence*, and the heart of Egypt will melt in its midst.”  
(Isaiah 19:1)

Is Christ landing in Egypt and His landing in Egypt causes a massive earthquake? Or is this Christ coming to punish “Babylon the great” and her “daughters” this allegoric “Sodom and Egypt?”

Choose, and choose wisely.  
How about this one:

“In My zeal and in My blazing wrath I declare that on that day there will surely be a great *earthquake* in the land of *Israel*. The fish of the sea, the birds of the heavens, the beasts of the field, all the creeping things that creep on the earth, and *all the men who are on the face of the earth* will *shake at My presence*; the mountains also will be thrown down, the steep pathways will collapse and every wall will fall to the ground. I will call for a sword against him on all My Mountains” declares the Lord GOD. “Every man’s sword will be against his brother.” (Ezekiel 38:19-20)

Is this a different earthquake from Isaiah 19’s “the *idols of Egypt* will totter [shake] at *His presence*?” It causes a great shake “at My presence,” is also the same presence in Zechariah 14 and Isaiah 19 and here it involves “all my mountains” (Christian nations) with a full out war against Gog. But prior “mountains also will be thrown down” is a massive fall of several nations including “every man’s sword will be against his brother,” that is “nation against nation,” which is also in Isaiah 19 including civil unrest and massive catastrophes. We find the same in Revelation 16:

“Then there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder and a *severe earthquake*. *No earthquake like it has ever occurred since mankind has been on earth*, so tremendous was the quake. *The great city split into three parts*, and the *cities of the nations collapsed*. God remembered Babylon the Great and gave her the cup filled with the wine of the fury of his wrath. Every island fled away and *the mountains could not be found*.” (Revelation 16:18-20)

This “earthquake” is the same in all these prophecies.  
Ezekiel 38 ends with this:

“I will magnify Myself, sanctify Myself, and make Myself known in the sight of many nations; and they will know that I am the LORD.” (Ezekiel 38:23)

Mankind does not seek God *even* after massive catastrophes. The Holocaust did nothing to have Israel repent and neither when the world begs the rocks to “fall on us” will the stubborn heart of man repent. This time, it is when every nation collapses. It is only occasional that man can only learn by war, death and mayhem where he always needs God to bail him out.

This “Sodom and Egypt” are two big words. Just how much of prophecy speaks how the world goes back to Egypt shall shock you and shake you. This should baffle the literalist unless he comprehends Revelation 11’s “Sodom and Egypt where their Lord [Christ] was crucified.” But by such application the entire literalist naming convention is set upside down and downside up. Christ is mainly coming to defeat an allegoric Egypt by shaking the earth with an allegoric earthquake “the idols of Egypt will totter at His presence”.

Yet there is even another prophecy that says Christ comes out of Arabia. This, like Paul, equates to Galatians 4 is the Sinai (the seed without the promise) as is in Arabia:

*“God came from Teman,<sup>190</sup> The Holy One from Mount Paran. Selah His glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of His praise ... Before Him went pestilence, and fever followed at His feet. He stood and measured the earth; He looked and startled the nations. And the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills bowed. His ways are everlasting. I saw the tents of Cushan in affliction; the curtains of the land of Midian trembled.”* (Habakkuk 3:3, 3-7)

My Jesus-style question: is Christ landing in *Egypt*, or *Jerusalem* or is He coming out of *Midian* (Arabia)?

To choose any of the three as the *only* answer creates a *contradiction*. The Jesus-style checkmate is; unless one chooses “all of the above” this becomes an impossible riddle to answer, of course, unless we confess the usage of allegory.

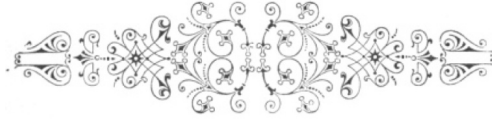
Indeed, in Isaiah 19, He *is* coming to Egypt, yet He is *not*. Indeed, in Zechariah 14, He *is* coming to Jerusalem, yet He *is* not, and in Habakkuk He *is* coming out of Arabia and yet He *is not* for He destroys Babylon the Great, which encompasses many cities. While my sentence here sounds like a load of *contradictions* it is *not* and we repeat it to understand that prophecy is all encompassing.

As we shall see, He is dealing with the falling away, a spiritual entity He calls “Sodom and Egypt” when Christendom goes backwards to what constitutes paganism with all of its bad fruits, for pagans were filled with homosexuality. He is also dealing with “Arabia,” what

---

<sup>190</sup> St. Cyril the Jerusalemite takes Teman to its literal meaning “south,” lies south of Jerusalem which is Bethlehem, where Christ was born, does not lie to the north or east or west of Jerusalem- rather to the south of it, and when it says “but I will send a fire upon Teman, which shall devour the palaces of Bozrah (Amos 1:12) as the divine fire i.e. Christ incarnate comes, it shall burn the palaces of Bozrah. The word (Bozrah) means in Hebrew “fortress” or “shed” that is to say, Christ, through His incarnation, burns the Devil’s evil and arrogance.

constitutes the Muslim world and He is also dealing with the spirit of Antichrist that uses *both: beast and harlot*. As long as we understand this basic dichotomy between *beast* and *harlot* the prophecies will fall into place.



## GOD DEALS WITH JERUSALEM (SODOM AND EGYPT)

Jerusalem is where God gathers Israel to purge her sin, and for her ultimate redemption when it denounces earthly Jerusalem for heavenly Jerusalem. Even the return of Israel, not once was this unconditional void of repercussion when sin and disobedience enters. It is only by understanding this we can understand any Old Testament prophecy. For example:

“To *all* the world *Jerusalem* shall be a stone immoveable; *lift it* who will, shall be *torn unmercifully*” (Zechariah 12:3)

Jerusalem is a trap, which the beast will “lift it,” means to carry it like a beast of burden and is why the Bible uses the term “beast”. This “harlot” they lift is earthly Jerusalem including her daughters. The beast that carries her will be “torn unmercifully”. John’s beast lifting the harlot simply complements Zechariah 12 and Zechariah 14, which are espoused as the victory of earthly Jerusalem by the literalists touted as Christ coming to rescue it from its enemies. The prophecies will surprise these:

“The *burden* of the word of the LORD *against* Israel” (Zechariah 12:1)

“The word of the Lord *against* Israel,” God here is clearly setting up a burden, not a victory. No prophecy can contradict Numbers 24—*it is the foundation*—God here is declaring a judgment against Israel and He is obviously standing to rescue only the Hebrews who join the *Israel of God* and is telling how He redeems this remnant and punishes the rest:

“Jerusalem, when your possessions will be *plundered* and divided up within your very walls” (Zechariah 14:1)

All these prophecies are basically saying the same thing. By now, no one can file Micah 5’s punishment of Israel to history, since no scholar dare attribute such method to Zechariah’s prophecy. How can any scholar file this punishment to Sargon II, Sennacherib, Nebuchadnezzar or Titus? All scholars agree that Zechariah is clearly speaking of Christ’s Second Coming.

Therefore, Micah 5 is ‘the complete destruction of Israel’s cities,’ Isaiah 17 “The *fortified city* will disappear from *Ephraim*” “in that day the glory of Jacob will *fade*” and Hosea 1:5 “On that day I will *break* the *bow* of *Israel* in the valley of *Jezreel*.”<sup>191</sup>

Once you have the truth, you find no contradictions, none can defeat a Christ-like question. It is impossible. This is how we trust in Christ when we obey “I speak in parables,” obey not and be a tare. Zechariah further confirms:

---

<sup>191</sup> Jezreel is in Har Megiddo (Armageddon)

“The city will be captured and the women raped” (Zechariah 14:2)

Without question, there are two holocausts:

“Therefore this is what the Sovereign Lord says: As I have given the wood of the vine among the trees of the forest as *fuel for the fire*, so will I treat the people living in Jerusalem. <sup>7</sup> I will set my face against them. Although they have come out of the fire, the *fire will yet consume them*. And when I set my face against them, you will know that I am the Lord. <sup>8</sup> I will make the land desolate because they have been unfaithful, declares the Sovereign Lord.” (Ezekiel 15:6-8)

Regardless that Israel came out of the fire (the Holocaust) there shall be another one. Eber is annihilated while THE ISRAEL OF GOD is not since we have this split:

“And the captains *of thousands of Juda* shall say in their hearts, we shall find for ourselves the inhabitants of Jerusalem in the Lord Almighty their God.” (Zechariah 12:5, Septuagint)

“The captains of thousands of Juda” “shall find” “the inhabitants of Jerusalem in the Lord Almighty their God,” and we ask: is this “Jerusalem” they finally discover “heavenly” or the “earthly Jerusalem?” Even when asking questions we need to apply the way Christ asked them:

“John’s baptism—where did it come from? Was it from heaven, or of human origin? They discussed it among themselves and said, If we say, ‘from heaven,’ he will ask, ‘Then why didn’t you believe him?’” (Matthew 21:25)

Was Paul’s Jerusalem in Galatians 4 from heaven or from earth?

If this “Jerusalem” in Zechariah 12:5 is earthly Jerusalem, you must respond to this very strange concept that “the captains of thousands of Judah” will only find the true God “in the inhabitants of Jerusalem” makes the Jews of Tel Aviv and the Jews of every other city in Israel and even in New York and elsewhere believe in the *wrong God* and only the Jews in downtown Jerusalem are good Jews who believe in the *true God*? Even the prophet Amos brings this issue and warns:

“But do not resort to Bethel and do not come to Gilgal, Nor cross over to Beersheba; For Gilgal will certainly go into captivity and Bethel will come to trouble.” (Amos 5:5)

Every Jewish city is judged. Every city in entire Israel is destroyed even earthly Jerusalem itself as declared by Christ and Micah to be destroyed. The answer to this dilemma is simple: Israel will finally seek to find the inhabitants of [heavenly] Jerusalem and their God. There is only *one way* to seek help from Jerusalem’s residence:

“You have come to Mount Sion and to the city of the living God, the **heavenly Jerusalem**, to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and



church of the firstborn who are registered in heaven, to God the Judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel.” (Hebrews 12:22-24)

This is a corporate entity! A corporate relationship!<sup>192</sup> None of the Protestant scholars would accept this (that we can come of the saints in heaven) unless they repent since such denial is part of this beastly system:

“And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, and His tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.” (Revelation 13:6)

To deny how God operates “His tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven” is blasphemy. Coming to Christ (as scriptures and *only* the apostolic succession churches teach) is to come to *all who dwell in Heavenly Jerusalem!* These are the “inhabitants of Jerusalem”. Now you understand why they vehemently attack the way we interpret the Israel of God. But it is everywhere in scripture once you apply Christ’s warning to unlock parables. And here, Jerusalem above answers the call:

“Then the LORD my God shall come, and all the saints with thee.”

Indeed, this punishment of Israel is also confirmed and well explained in an unpopular prophecy:

“For a long time Israel has been *without the true God*, without a teaching priest, and without law; but when *in their trouble they turned to the LORD God of Israel*, and *sought Him*, He *was found by them*. And *in those times there was no peace* to the one who *went out*, nor *to the one who came in*, but great turmoil was on *all the inhabitants of the lands*. So *nation was destroyed by nation*, and *city by city*, for God troubled them with every adversity.” (2 Chronicle 15: 3-6)<sup>193</sup>

What scholar will interpret this as historic, especially when Christ Himself in Matthew 24 refers to 2 Chronicle 15: 3-6 when He said that just prior to Second coming that:

“For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and in various places there will be famines and earthquakes. But all these things are merely *the*

---

<sup>192</sup> When God says “let us go down and confound their speech,” it was the angels descended but God did not say “Go ye down and confound,” but, “Let us confound their speech;” showing that He so works by His servants, that they are themselves also fellow-laborers with God, as the apostle says, “For we are fellow-laborers with God.” 1 Cor. iii. 9 (Augustin’s City of God by Philip Shaff page 449)

<sup>193</sup> 2 Chronicle דְּבָרַיִּהִימִים *Dibrê Hayyāmîm* 'The Matters [of] the Days' is a Hebrew prose work constituting part of Jewish and Christian scripture. It contains a genealogy starting from Adam, and a narrative of the history of ancient Judah and Israel until the proclamation of King Cyrus the Great (c. 540 BC).

*beginning of birth pangs.* Then they will deliver you to *tribulation*, and will *kill you*, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name. At that time many will fall away and will betray one another and hate one another. Many false prophets will arise and will mislead many. Because lawlessness is increased, most people's love will grow cold. But the one who *endures to the end*, he will be *saved*. This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all the nations, and *then the end will come*. Therefore when you see the *ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION* which was spoken of through *Daniel the prophet*, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), then those who are in Judea must flee to the mountains. Whoever is on the housetop must not go down to get the things out that are in his house. Whoever is in the field must not turn back to get his cloak. But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! But pray that your flight [escape] will not be in the winter, or on a Sabbath. For then there will be a great tribulation, such as has not occurred since the *beginning of the world until now*, nor *ever will*. Unless those days had been cut short, *no life* would have been *saved*; but for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short. Then if anyone says to you, 'Behold, here is the Christ,' or 'There He is,' do not believe him. For false Christs and false prophets will arise and will show great signs and wonders, so as to mislead, if possible, even the elect. Behold, I have told you in advance. "So if they say to you, 'Behold, He is in the wilderness,' do not go out, or, 'Behold, He is in the inner rooms,' do not believe them. For just as the lightning comes from the *east* and flashes even to the *west*, so will the coming of the Son of Man be."

Is this fulfilled? 2 Chronicle 15: 3-6 is only the beginning of sorrows. And this is a global turmoil in cities that will finally bring only a remnant Jews to repentance during a time of civil strife within Israel itself where who leaves finds no peace and who escapes persecution from other lands goes to Israel will also find no peace but in those days nations will war with other nations even city against city (civil strife) as another unpopular prophecy reveals:

"And the people shall rush one upon another. And *every man against his neighbor*: the *child shall make a tumult against the ancient* and the *base against the honorable*" (Isaiah 3:5).

We already see this slowly rising in Italy, France, Spain and England, whether in Kosovo or Venezuela, the pattern is the same even in the United States this nation is divided, pitting person against person, race against race until it cracks like brittle where the first to go is the middle ground, bridges between communities are frayed, and then destroyed.

The persecution of the elderly will become immense and gangs will replace city rats in infesting neighborhoods and the elderly are massacred. Today everyone is searching for leadership and none will find it to even prove the American experiment will fail. Trump, like Berlusconi of Italy, Orban in Hungary, and Erdogan in Turkey these do not really go away, they use valid arguments (the cruel press) to sway the crowds who are under their thumb will continue to rise and truth becomes dangerous to tell no matter what side one takes. Neither side is good. One side will use COVID-19 and racism while the other side uses the call for freedom and prosperity. Unless they address Sodom and Egypt they are all cursed and the only solution during these days is what Christ advised; run to the wilderness, save

your family, your children, wives and go into hiding. Men are responsible for their family. Ezekiel's prophecy from chapter 14:13-14 says:

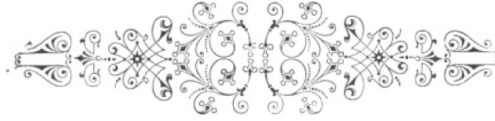
“The word of the Lord came to me: “Son of man, if a country sins against me by being unfaithful and I stretch out my hand against it to *cut off its food supply* and *send famine* upon it and *kill its people* and *their animals*, even if these three men—Noah, Daniel and Job—were in it, they could save only themselves by their righteousness, declares the Sovereign Lord.”

God has a rule—He spares no one—even if He destroys the earth to only rescue Noah, Daniel and Job He would do it and destroy the rest of Sheth.

In time prepare to flee your city. It is always a crucial key that when we analyze the Old Testament to see that the ancient Temple (in ancient Jerusalem) is a microcosm of the New, which is *Universal* where the church is not in the “great city” (small Jerusalem) but the “holy city” (“Holy Jerusalem”) is a grand expanse that will (like John the Baptist) end up in the wilderness to worship in a moveable tabernacle. For Christ's Universal Temple to parallel, we need a grand adjustment in thinking. The Jewish theologian (like his Protestant counterpart) is still stuck with applying the literal and is why today's Mount of Olives is nothing more but a giant graveyard where in the past three millennia; Jews have filled it with over 150,000 graves making it the largest gravesite in Israel's history.



They believe that being buried there will forgive their sins once the Messiah steps foot on it as if salvation is by dirt alone. And we ask: is such an interpretation heavenly or earthly? The literal Mount of Olives is nothing more than a giant sepulcher. Zechariah 14 is not only about a literal earthquake. It is a similar event, that when Christ saw the corruption on the ancient temple and He thrashes the moneychangers and turns the tables upside down and so here, in Zechariah 14, He splits His Mountain. So likewise, His Mountain (His temple, the worldwide church, the court of the Gentiles) becomes a whitewash sepulcher and so in a similar fashion He threshes “the court of the Gentiles,” turns the tables and splits His Mountain east and west and where one part shifts towards the south, the other part shifts towards the north (most likely towards Antichrist).



## THEY IGNORE ALLEGORIC JERUSALEM

Jerusalem is this dilemma that Protestant interpreters miss which is etched by every prophet. Take any one of them:

“Behold, the days are coming, says the LORD, that the city shall be built for the LORD from the Tower of Hananel to the Corner Gate.” (Jeremiah 31:38)

Is this speaking of current Jerusalem in Israel today? If so, how is it “built for the Lord?” Even further, this city “built for the Lord” “shall not be plucked up or thrown down anymore forever” (Jeremiah 31:40).

Even if one takes the millennium approach of a one thousand year reign how could it be “forever?” and is why this millennial reign is debatable since the wrath is the burning of earth itself.<sup>194</sup>

So if this is today’s Jerusalem, how is it an eternal Jerusalem, which can never be uprooted “shall never be plucked” (demolished or taken captive) when Zechariah’s prophecy says what seems to be the opposite:

“For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city.” (Zechariah 14:2)

How about this:

“Jerusalem shall stand, when all is over, where Jerusalem stood.” (Zechariah 12:6)

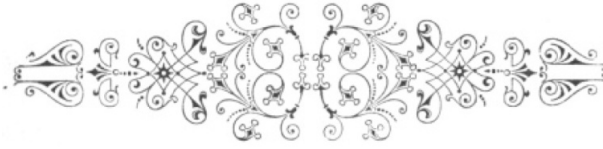
Is Zechariah 12:6 speaking of the current new and modern Jerusalem to replace atop the old site of Jerusalem after it was captured in 1967? If so this will generate a Jesus-style checkmate since:

“New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God” (Revelation 3:12)

Did this happen in 1967?

---

<sup>194</sup> **2 Peter 3:10** “But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, and then the heavens will pass away with a roar, and the heavenly bodies will be burned up and dissolved, and the earth and the works that are done on it will be exposed.” **2 Peter 3:7** “But by the same word the heavens and earth that now exist are stored up for fire, being kept until the day of judgment and destruction of the ungodly.” **Malachi 4:1** “For behold, the day is coming, burning like an oven, when all the arrogant and all evildoers will be stubble. The day that is coming shall set them ablaze, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch.” **Revelation 21:1** “Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and the sea was no more.”



## CHRIST SHAKES CHRISTENDOM

It is this vital issue where God honors Jerusalem in the scriptures, which we must address here. The novice (including many Protestant scholars) examine the Bible of a star falling and then reads about the sun no longer giving its light and the moon turning red. With such cataclysmic event he concludes it being a future event. So he monitors the cosmos or he reads the daily papers coincidentally running into some report about some asteroid creeping closer towards planet earth. Perhaps he reads a poorly researched book titled “Blood Moons” that gauged the timing of the end from the stock market. The author attracts the sucker by setting a date predicting cataclysmic events that coincide to when the moon turns into blood. And he then panics sharing his finding in a Sunday School or comments on a blog attacking any critic of his favorite Hebraic author to only find out way later that these dates have come and gone and that he was duped and wasted \$20 on a worthless book deceiving others while he himself was being deceived. But after all is gone he forgets whom he slandered in the process as the true servant had warned him not to fall into such traps. The tare is known to always hate the true messenger and follow with blind respect the false guides.

But what he does not realize (because he fails to follow Christ’s instruction to unlock allegories) is that the sun is already dimming<sup>195</sup> alongside an allegoric mighty earthquake and Zechariah 14’s short trimmers has already struck when Christ shakes the allegoric Mount of Olives splitting it from east to west, and then moving one half southerly and the other northerly splitting the very foundations from under beneath his feet while people are marrying and given in marriage. Read the prophecy of Christ’s coming carefully:

“The Lord will go out and fight against those nations, as he fights on a day of battle. On that day [1] his feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, east of Jerusalem, and the Mount of Olives will be split in two from east to west, forming a great valley, with half the mountain moving north and half moving south. And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and [2] then the LORD my God shall come, and all the saints with thee.”

Let us first apply a completely literal interpretation without applying the allegoric sense and see the obvious flaws of such approach. Christ first comes and stands on the Mount of Olives since obviously this is what it says: “in that day his feet will stand on the Mount of

---

<sup>195</sup> This is not a situation of natural catastrophes but spiritual hunger as we see today extending “from sea to sea”: “Behold, days are coming,” declares the Lord GOD, when I will send a famine on the land, not a famine for bread or a thirst for water, but rather for hearing the words of the LORD. People will stagger from sea to sea and from the north even to the east; they will go to and fro to seek the word of the LORD, but they will not find it.” (Amos 8:11-12)

Olives” (v.4). The Mount of Olives then literally splits from east to west and one half goes towards the south and the other half north. Then the people flee into the valley keeping in mind that Christ’s literal feet is what splits this literal mountain, so He then must be on earth physically. And after the flight of these people into the crevice which reaches to Azal it says “then, [after the feet of Messiah split the Mount of Olives and everyone fled], the Lord my God *shall come* and all the saints with Him”.

Did He not come already when He stood on the Mount of Olives? Then He comes again with the saints? Do we have three comings, one to be crucified and another to touch and split the Mount of Olives and yet another coming with the saints? Of the Coming of Christ Paul writes:

“For the Lord himself *shall descend from heaven* with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with *the trump of God*: and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord” (1 Thessalonians 4:16)

Where then are these uncollected faithful escaping to “Azal”? Are these not to cling to Christ like a magnet as He descends from heaven to meet Him in the air?

When there is a *contradiction* there is an *allegory* mingled with the literal. The prophecy actually goes along with what Paul predicted that a “falling away must come first” (II Thessalonians II) just when the man of sin is revealed where Christendom becomes nothing more than a whitewashed tomb, Antichrist is then revealed to persecute the saints. This is the ultimate shaking of this earthquake that shakes up Christendom where the prophets instruct to “flee”. The “split” is the whole crux of our story from; the splitting of the Red Sea to the Pesach (Arabic Faskh to split, to separate), which is the story of the Passover. How many consider Christ’s earthquake when He instructs we escape to Azal:

“Then you shall flee *through [1] My mountain valley*, for the mountain valley shall reach to *Azal*. Yes, you shall flee [2] *as you fled from the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah*. Thus the LORD my God will come, *and* all the saints with You. (Zechariah 14:5)

We have two issues here [1] “My mountain valley” is key. In Zechariah 14, He calls the Mount of Olives, “My Mountain” and this escape out of His mountain that was defiled is not a standalone prophecy for it coincides with several prophecies from Isaiah 11 (Second Exodus) to Revelation 12 (the woman’s escape into the wilderness) and John’s instruction to leave this harlot city even corresponding to [2] King Uzziah’s abomination of desolation. Christ’s Mountain is His Kingdom and not just the literal Mount of Olives.

So in this case it is Christ’s Church, splitting where His remnant escape to Azal: “Then you shall flee through My mountain valley for the mountain valley shall reach to Azal” this literal Azal was a place directly adjacent to both Wady Yasul (Nahal Azal) and the area of the ancient King's Gardens at the juncture of the Hinnom and Kidron Valleys is where Jewish historian Flavius Josephus’ account of an earthquake which caused a landslide during King

Uzziah's reign blocking up the kings' gardens in the valley.<sup>196</sup> However, if we are to take an allegoric interpretation, Azal is a Semitic word, which literally means: "seclusion" as away from any city "to separate oneself" "to seclude" "wilderness," "empty expanse," "uninhabited," "complete separation," "isolation".<sup>197</sup> And such an interpretation coincides with Christ's instruction, that when Jerusalem is surrounded to flee and be separated. This is also obvious from Zechariah "to flee" that is to run and as John instructed in Revelations to escape out of this harlot he called "Mystery Babylon," an issue perhaps God is already getting us used to as we already experience due to the Covid-19 pandemic and the civil strife against the police ("lawlessness will abound") where many already and wisely are fleeing the city life. As we examine the rest of this prophecy, this becomes clear; God will guide the remnant Hebrews to the heavenly Jerusalem.

This is an allegoric parallel to parting the Red Sea: "you shall flee as you fled from the earthquake in the days of Uzziah" the escape to Azal becomes the fulfillment of Revelation 12 where "the woman flees to the wilderness" and the "red dragon" chases after her with a flood yet the earth swallows the flood and she is nourished for 3.5 years hiding from the dragon until the Christians are rescued and the dragon is swallowed up. This is why Zechariah alludes to Uzziah who was afflicted with sores on his forehead and the undefiled priests who escaped made it. Zechariah is saying to flee Antichrist (symbolic of Uzziah) and not to be defiled for God is about to smite the foreheads of the acolytes of Antichrist (the "first woe") just as He smote Uzziah's forehead with leprosy. This first "woe" is when the demons for five months torment the ones who do not have the mark of God on their foreheads (Revelation 9:4) with soars. This "first woe" is a plague which strikes the foreheads with sores:

"So the first *angel* went and poured out his bowl on the earth; and a *harmful and painful sore* afflicted the people who *had the mark of the beast* and who worshiped his image." (Revelation 16:2)

"and they blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pain and their *sores*; and they did not repent of their deeds." (Revelation 16:11)

This is the first "woe" since:

---

<sup>196</sup> See *Antiquities of the Jews*, book 9, chapter 10, paragraph 4, verse 225, William Whiston. It also accords with the *LXX* rendering of Zechariah 14:5, which states a valley will be blocked up as far as Azal. Additionally, the Israelis officially named this valley אַזַּל (Azal). And such an exodus was how Christians fled the city of Jerusalem. Eusebius, the fourth-century Christian historian who was the bishop of Caesarea explains: "Furthermore, the members of the Jerusalem church, by means of an oracle given by revelation to acceptable persons there, were ordered to leave the City before the war began and settle in a town in Perea called Pella (Arabic Fella: to flee). To Pella, those who believed in Christ migrated from Jerusalem." Eccl. Hist., III, 5 The Christians fled about 90 miles from Jerusalem to Pella (Today is called Tabaqat Fahl). The ultimate fulfillment of Zechariah 14 explains that half the city of Jerusalem will go into captivity but the other half who are not cut off (Zechariah 14:2) will flee as explained, outside the city to an allegoric "Azal" while the remnants are destroyed.

<sup>197</sup> *A Dictionary of Modern Written Arabic* By Hans Wehr pg. 714 "Azl" "to remove, set aside, isolate, separate, segregate, detach ..." also see <https://www.almaany.com/ar/dict/ar-ar/عزل/>



“They [scorpion like creatures] were told not to hurt the grass of the earth, nor *any green thing*, nor any tree, but only the people who *do not* have the *seal of God* on their *foreheads*.” (Revelation 9:4)

“They have tails like scorpions, and stings; and in their tails is their power to hurt people for five months. They have as king over them, the angel of the abyss; his name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in the Greek he has the name Apollyon. The *first woe has passed*; behold, *two woes* are still coming after these things.” (Revelation 9:10-12) “They were told not to hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but only the people who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads.” This would be a last chance when people flee and hunker down for the long haul since food is still accessible and no tree is harmed yet. This is the escape just prior to the destruction of cities which involve the two other woes mentioned in Revelation 11 and Ezekiel 16 against “Sodom and Egypt”:

“Behold, this [homosexuality] was the guilt of your sister Sodom ...” (Ezekiel 16:49)

“Then it came about after all your wickedness (‘*Woe, woe* to you!’ declares the Lord GOD)” (Ezekiel 16: 23)

Here we have the last two woes left. The second woe will then strike:

“And at that time there was a *great earthquake*, and a *tenth of the city fell*; seven thousand people were killed in the earthquake, and the rest were terrified and gave glory to the God of heaven. The *second woe* has passed; behold, the *third woe* is coming *quickly*.” (Revelation 11:13-14)

By “tenth of the city fell” we must not discount that this is the destruction of one tenth of all harlot cities and the last woe is the destruction of the rest (“remnant of the city” in Numbers 24). By “seven thousand people were killed” we must not deduce an accounting system here but completeness of the number “seven” that all the inhabitants of such cities have been annihilated.

It all starts by this allegoric demographic earthquake which is also linked to the Great Exodus in the amazing prophecy by Isaiah chapter 11 which scholars are also baffled about which we shall dissect and explain in detail later on. All these prophecies compliment each other and explain the same events; each prophecy giving us more pieces of the prophetic puzzle. This means: the remnant Church will completely go underground returning to its infant stage: to the catacombs, but further from the city since the destructive powers has a further outreach with nuclear catastrophes. In other words, in the Midst of the week, when the acolytes of Antichrist set up the Abominable Communion, avoid the great schism (splitting of the Mountain) remaining in the crevice of the valley (go underground) far away: “Then you shall flee through My mountain valley ...” (Zechariah 14:5) and be fed by the priests who ran from Uzziah (the Antichrist of the time). We shall delve deeply into all this but for now a glimpse:



“Forces from him [this Antichrist] will arise, desecrate the sanctuary fortress, and do away with the daily sacrifice. And they will set up the abomination of desolation.” (Daniel 11:31)

Christ Himself warned about this Abomination of Desolation stopping the “remembrance” of Christ’s sacrifice. Here Daniel speaks of “forces from him,” the “him” is an Antichrist and he has allies (Protestant acolytes and fallen away Catholics and Orthodox) who carry out his plan to do away with the “daily sacrifice” (Catholic and Orthodox Holy Communion) and evolve it to the point to becoming an abominable sacrilege.

Search for the most attacked and slandered (like Transubstantiation) is where you find what is holy, search for the prominent attackers and slanderers and is where you find the prominent tares. Transubstantiation where Communion becomes a “daily” and a literal “sacrifice” is only an Apostolic Succession practice, which has been attacked for centuries by only and prominently Protestant tares.

And such an interpretation is not without merit the remnant defiant priests will feed the flock in the wilderness and is why the “woman” in Revelation 12 is “fed in the wilderness” and the earthquake in Uzziah’s day was a punishment for the wicked and a blessing for the pure. That is, the faithful shall see Christ “they shall see [Him] eye to eye” (Isaiah 52:8). Even the priests who escape the harlotry to survive they remain in the crevice of Azal (to remain pure) as this unpopular prophecy reveals:

“Depart! Depart! Go out from there, Touch no unclean thing; Go out from the midst of her, be clean, you who bear the vessels of the LORD.” (Isaiah 52:11)

The ones who “bear the vessels of the Lord” the undefiled priests are in “the midst of her” (Babylon) and are told to depart. So now we gain insight regarding the instruction by John when he warned: “Come out of her my people.” This “mighty earthquake” is not only the literal earthquake but also a demographic shift, both regional and religious and *its mild trimmers have already begun just as you see Sodom forming*.

Now let us put the prophetic puzzle together on the mighty earthquake and when it is all done—everything will come to light:

“And there were noises and thunder and lightning; and there was a great earthquake, such a mighty and great earthquake as had not occurred since men were on the earth. Now the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. And great Babylon was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath.” (Revelation 16:18-19)

How the harlot city emerges as explained in the Book of Revelation, it is formed due to “a mighty earthquake”. This ties with Christ’s allegoric earthquake even to the Sixth Seal:

“And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;<sup>13</sup> And the stars of the heavens fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree cast her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.<sup>14</sup> And the heavens departed as a

scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. (Revelation 6:12-14)

Today many who read this allegory strictly interpret in a literal sense. The prophecy is of a dual nature. So as they read the word “earthquake”—that in their mind—it would simply constitute a local earthquake of high magnitude in Jerusalem. An allegoric earthquake metaphorically represents a much bigger picture: *shaking the heavens (casting out Lucifer) and the earth out of its axis* (major demographic shifts) and even *blocking off the sun* (the light of Christ dims). This is massive and is why it is called “a mighty earthquake that had not occurred since men were on earth”. Another clue is found in Matthew 24:29-30:

“Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.”

This prophecy by Christ gives us the solid interpretation of Zechariah 14 “the powers of the heavens will be shaken” and His coming is described as such:

“For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark” (Matthew 24:38)

How could people be having weddings “giving in marriage” if the sun literally diminishes? If this were a literal event, no one on earth would live to have a wedding. Unless this sun is an allegory regarding the light of Christ dimming upon the earth signaling a falling away, such verses can be difficult to comprehend. The falling away comes, tribulation and world wars ensue, people are still marrying and given in marriage, then surprise, Christ comes. “My mountain valley” is the key to unlock the riddle. Christ is allegorically calling the Mount of Olives “My Mountain”. A Mountain is a Kingdom<sup>198</sup> and in this case this was Christ's Kingdom (the Church). This is the falling away of 2 Thessalonians 2.

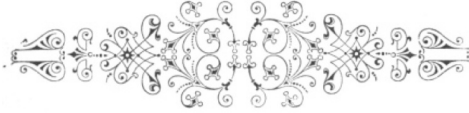
This is not a situation of natural catastrophes but spiritual hunger as we see today extending “from sea to sea” as explained in this unpopular prophecy:

“Behold, days are coming,” declares the Lord GOD, when I will send a famine on the land, not a famine for bread or a thirst for water, but rather for hearing the words of the LORD. People will stagger from sea to sea and from the north even to the east; they will go to and fro to seek the word of the LORD, but they will not find it.” (Amos 8:11-12)

---

<sup>198</sup> Mountains refer to kingdoms "And it shall come to pass in the Last-Days that the mountain of the LORD's house shall be established in the top of the mountains." (Isaiah 2:2-4) Jeremiah 51:25, "Behold, I am against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the LORD, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain." Jesus refers to governments and kingdoms as opposed to literal mountains, "If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you." (Matthew 17:20)

At some point in time, the remnant will be required to submit to sacrilege like a mandate to support Sodom where they need to “Flee through My Mountain valley” is a clear instruction. It is not called “Egypt” for no reason, for the plagues emulate ancient Egypt including the Exodus. In other words, similar to ‘Moses confronting Pharaoh’ to ‘let my people go’ and ‘the priests confronting Uzziah’ not to desecrate the holy temple; all these will prohibit true Communion and desecrate what is holy and chase the Christians who refuse their mark and will join none and they escape entering the crevice, “the valley of the mountains” “then the Lord My God will come and all the saints with Him”.



## EGYPT THE GREAT HAS BEEN REBORN

Christ's Mountain encompasses the entire earth. When we think of its inception till now, it nearly spread throughout the entire globe and while Catholics lost to Islam and later 1/3<sup>rd</sup> was lost to Protestantism, Christianity spread into other places from Mexico to South America and to today's China. There is no spot on earth where it did not go. Departure is no threat to God's Corporation for none are indispensable and any is easily replaceable by God:

“And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.” (Matthew 24:14)

The gospel of the Kingdom indeed reached out to the whole earth but this prophecy is not yet fulfilled for it is speaking of massive conversion after the falling away when at some point Enoch and Elijah come “This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all the nations, and *then the end will come.*”

Prophecy is not western centric and we have a bulk of prophecy where God replaces what was lost to be replaced from China, Africa and the Muslim world where many have not acquired a taste for the Sodom recipe. This mighty earthquake is splitting the nations apart between future sheep (wheat) and goat (tare). And today Christendom's nations that follow Eastern Christianity, sure enough, shortly after the Fatima prophecy, and as St. Mary predicted, Communism fell and before the annihilation of entire nations, the Soviet Union dissolved in December 1991, resulted in eleven new countries splitting and by 1992, Yugoslavia had split into five successor states, namely Bosnia and Herzegovina, Croatia, Macedonia, Slovenia and the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia, which was later renamed Serbia and Montenegro which we believe shall be invaded by the Assyrian for some or all of these will grow into syncretism becoming the “kingdoms of the idols”.

So the epicenter and the shockwaves begin in the eastern church: the Middle East, the Balkans, the former Soviet countries, Africa, Eastern Europe, Asia Minor (Turkey), the Malabar coast of South India ...

Just take India alone; Prime Minister Narendra Modi's followers adhere to nationalistic populism. One needs to take a glimpse into the rising persecution of the 65 million Christians in India from 1.3 billion with so many of these are pagan frenzy Hindu nationalists (which the tare, Steve Bannon, a claiming Catholic supports). Many of these movements like Bannon's sounds tempting for the Christian to join but Christ's earthquake on Mt. Olive warned not to join these mountain splits but run into the crevice.

So when the Soviet Union dissolved in December 1991, it resulted in eleven new countries splitting: Armenia, Azerbaijan, Belarus, Georgia, Kazakhstan, Kyrgyzstan, Moldova, Tajikistan, Turkmenistan, Ukraine and Uzbekistan while in the Baltic states we have Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania split in September 1991. Most of these will ally with the Assyrian (neo-Ottomans).

More will join the neo-Ottoman (the Assyrian, Gog) from the Albania and Yugoslavia split. By 1992, Yugoslavia had split into five successor states,

namely Bosnia and Herzegovina, Croatia, Macedonia, Slovenia and the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia, which was later renamed Serbia and Montenegro in 2003 and eventually split in 2006 into two states, Serbia and Montenegro. Serbia was then further split with the breakaway of the partially recognized state of Kosovo in 2008.

Czechoslovakia dissolved splitting into the Czech Republic and Slovakia in 1992.

The earthquake is shaking everything. Simultaneously, we will see the formation of the northern league. God warns continually of “the army of the north” “northern army” and “Gog and Magog” and with the split from Russia by the Muslim Southern Russian states to becoming a coalition of northern neo-Ottoman states arising from the “north quarters” or “the sides of the north”.

We have not even discussed this mighty earthquake that already shook the Levant, where will Syria, Iraq go and then we have Libya. These are so weakened that Turkey is ready to devour after NATO aided Turkey and Iran by smashing Iraq, Libya and Syria. Even till the eruption during the Arab Spring, the United States by far were the catalysts in aiding Lucifer’s agenda. And where will northern Iraq (Karkuk, where the oil reserves are) go after the West created the mess in Iraq? These go to the Assyrian (Turkey).

Keep in mind in Daniel 11, he invades Egypt and Libya as added trophies. His invasion includes Calno, Cherchemesh, northern Israel and Iraq and takes the whole of the Levant as Isaiah 10 clearly describes. This is why perhaps this “king of the north” is given that title “Assyrian” because he controls what was once ancient Assyria.

And in Arabia we have Saudi Arabia (north) versus Yemen (south). Then we have the Israeli state (north) versus the Palestinian state (south).

The Middle East is already set to unravel where some join the Assyrian while others like Egypt rejects him to only fall by the Assyrian’s military might which will reach its ultimate strength within a decade or two given military aid by NATO nations where Turkey will become a nuclear superpower with aid from Russia.

Turkey is already working on its nuclear program and when it gains nuclear warheads and intercontinental ballistic missiles begin to prepare. Out of the three planned nuclear power stations, the one furthest along is that in Akkuyu, on Turkey’s southeastern coast near the city of Mersin. Two other plants are being constructed or planned, in Sinop on the Black Sea and Igneada in Eastern Thrace, also on the Black Sea, near the border with Bulgaria.

Turkish President Recep Tayyip Erdogan has publicly voiced his ambition to establish Turkey as a nuclear-weapon state. “Some states possess missiles armed with nuclear warheads and they tell us that we cannot also acquire such weapons. This is something I cannot accept,” he said to members of his Justice and Development Party (AKP) in September 2019.<sup>199</sup>

There are two uranium deposits in Turkey. The first, and the older of the two mining areas, is located in Temrezli in the Yozgat province of central Turkey. A second deposit was discovered near the city of Sefaati, in the same province. In 2015, exploration and operation of the site was undertaken by an American company but three years later it pulled out of the area, in part because of the increasing tension in relations between the United States and

---

<sup>199</sup> *Are Turkey’s nuclear power ambitions a threat to regional safety?* “Foreign Minister Nikos Dendias expresses fears of a new ‘Chernobyl’ in the Eastern Mediterranean in call with his US counterpart” by Vassilis Nedos, Yiannis Souliotis 12.03.2021

Turkey. It is believed that Turkey's diplomatic overtures and maneuvers in uranium-rich African countries, including Niger and Chad, is part of its wider nuclear ambitions.<sup>200</sup>

Ask 10 experts on Turkish politics whether the United States should worry about Ankara's nuclear weapons ambitions and you'll likely hear 10 denials. Get beyond the Washington Beltway and you'll get something different. The **Israelis** worry Turkish President Recep Tayyip Erdogan is getting all too close to a nuclear-armed Pakistan that likes to share nuclear technology. **Turkish environmentalists** spotlight that Erdogan's uneconomic and unnecessary nuclear power program may pose proliferation risks. The Greeks whisper about Erdogan's nuclear bomb posturing. Any sound US approach to Turkey demands that American officials listen to these foreign voices.

There are popular reasons to think Turkey won't acquire nuclear weapons. It's in NATO and already has **50 American B61 nuclear bombs** at a joint US-Turkish airbase. It also forswore acquiring its own nuclear weapons, is party to the Treaty on the Non-Proliferation of Nuclear Weapons (NPT), and has ratified the Comprehensive Nuclear Test Ban Treaty. So, what suggests Turkey may want to go nuclear in the not too distant future? Three things.

First, President Erdogan says he wants the bomb. Last fall, **he complained** before the UN General Assembly that the NPT bars states like Turkey from developing nuclear weapons but ignores that other states have them. Earlier, he **told** members of his Justice and Development Party that "some countries have missiles with nuclear warheads, not one or two. But [they tell us] we can't have them. This, I cannot accept." He then said nuclear weapons are an enormous source of power for Israel.

Similarly, Greek and international analysts suggest that the overtures by Turkish officials to members of Pakistan's political and military establishment are also part of a wider attempt to establish Turkey as a nuclear power, as Pakistan is one of the nine countries in the world that possess a nuclear arsenal. In fact, according to international reports, a treaty by which Pakistan would provide technological expertise on the construction of nuclear arms, and potentially even long-range missiles, to Turkey was the subject of the meeting between Turkish and Pakistani military officials in Ankara at the end of December.<sup>201</sup>

Even George Friedman one of U.S. best geopolitical forecaster, and strategist on international affairs warns of WWII to probably be started by a coordinated Turkish-Japanese sneak attack against the United States and its allies lobbing nukes at major cities. Friedman predicts that the attack will take place at a time in which the US will be taken completely off guard.<sup>202</sup>

---

<sup>200</sup> Ibid

<sup>201</sup> Ibid

<sup>202</sup> Nazaryan, Alexander (31 May 2012). "The Next 100 Years," *NYDailyNews.com*.

## THE DEMOGRAPHIC EARTHQUAKE IN THE WEST—COMING SOON TO THEATERS NEAR YOU

Erdogan held a blatantly rigged referendum, which marginalized parliament and gave him dictatorial powers. By the day of the referendum in 2017, some 145,000 people had been detained, 134,000 sacked, and 150 media outlets closed.

“Who made the world like a wilderness and overthrew its cities, *who did not allow his prisoners to go home?*” (Isaiah 14:17)

No act of persecution was too petty or cruel: one opposition MP, who denounced the “yes” vote, found that his 88-year-old mother had been discharged by way of retaliation from a hospital where she had been under treatment for two-and-a-half years. Turkish elections are not a complete farce as in Egypt and Syria, as was shown by the election of an opposition candidate as mayor of Istanbul earlier. But the political process as a whole is now so skewed towards Erdogan that it will be extraordinarily difficult to dislodge him. This is a feature of the 21st-century type coup: once in office, leaders are proving more difficult to evict than a junta of military officers a century earlier.

This style of revolt is on its way westwards. In this revolt, labels matter not, be they painted left or right, the Brexit referendum took place in June 2016, the Turkish military coup and Erdogan’s counter-coup in July, and Donald Trump’s election as president in November. Johnson, Erdogan and Trump are alike in specializing in aggressive patriotism, defense of an endangered national independence, and nostalgia for past glories. Now we supposedly have the Democrats ousted Trump and it makes no difference since media, sports, and every avenue twists all arms that refuse to comply with a specific political or immoral agenda. Turkey and all western nations from Britain to the United States are all experiencing a slow-moving coup d’etat in which a government progressively closes down or marginalizes effective opposition to the tyrants rule. It concentrates power in its own hands by stifling everything from political to sports to media, denouncing its opponents as traitors to the nation, displacing critics in its own ranks, and purging non-partisan civil servants—all of whom will support the rising neo-Ottoman alliance. We already see the Turk, Boris Johnson<sup>203</sup> England’s plan to split from the EU giving Germany the lead to control the northern league.

---

<sup>203</sup> Watch Boris in search of Ali Kemal



MEDIA AND TELECOMS JULY 24, 2019 / 6:27 AM / UPDATED 2 YEARS AGO

## Turks welcome 'Ottoman grandson' Boris Johnson as British leader

By Ali Kucukgocmen

4 MIN READ



ISTANBUL (Reuters) - Turkey celebrated incoming British prime minister Boris Johnson's Turkish heritage on Wednesday, with politicians and media proclaiming that the "Ottoman grandson" could strengthen ties between two countries on Europe's fringes.



A war between nations is on the horizon. Why are nations stockpiling weapons<sup>204</sup> like never before? We already are beginning to see these. We had ISIS and Turkey wanting Syria, we have ruthlessness in Mexico, Brazil, Venezuela, unrest in France, Syria, Iraq, Libya; a hobbled Europe and regional rivalries between Arabia versus Yemen and Arabia versus Tehran (see Isaiah 21), trouble between Islamabad and New Delhi, and on the Korean Peninsula, Pakistan and North Korea.

Borris Johnson will expedite the process and give aid to his ancestors, the Turkish allies making clear expressions he desires to unite Turkey with Europe. The Assyrian's plant, Borris Ali Kemal Bey is already in England. How quick are we moving? It is like birth pangs, the closer we get there (by 2023) the faster and the more the nations rage (by 2036-2038).

And now we will begin to see how such splitting ends: "will send leanness among his fat ones" (Isaiah 10:16) which is a massive depression that sparks a similar civil strife dwarfing anything we have seen in the Arab Spring. This weakens parts of Europe for the Assyrian to do his deed.

---

<sup>204</sup> "After another booming year of sales, the United States remains the world's dominant exporter of major conventional weapons. In 2019, the Trump administration notified Congress of at least \$85 billion in sales. From 2002 to 2019, the Bush, Obama, and Trump administrations sold over \$640 billion in arms to 167 different nations." "American weapons have wound up in the hands of the Islamic State and other terrorist groups, landed on the black market in Yemen and elsewhere, been used by oppressive governments to kill their own people, and enabled nations to engage in bloody military conflicts. American arms sales have helped prop up authoritarian regimes, encouraged military adventurism, spurred arms races, and amplified existing conflicts."—CATO Institute Highlights and Trends, October 27, 2020. All the data on arms sales in this report come from the Security Assistance Monitor, <https://securityassistance.org/>.



In Great Britain there is a shift between the left-leaning North and the right-leaning South. Edinburgh (north) is the second largest financial centre in the UK after the City of London ranks ahead of Qatar, Oslo, Glasgow, Dublin, Abu Dhabi, Brussels, Milan, Madrid and Moscow in the Global Financial Centers Index.

In Italy a struggle stems from the populist, anti-immigrant Lega-Nord (north league) opposing subsidies to the less prosperous south under the slogan “Roma ladrona” (Rome Big Thief).

In Spain is a civil strife that will soon explode into civil war, another struggle is stemming from Catalonia (north). In Spain we also have the rise of Vox, Spanish ultra nationalism whom we met with one of their leaders Victor Gonzales when we visited Spain.

Then we have the most major; Europe’s North-South divides over Eurozone issues and east west over the migration crisis.

These days we have parties advocating the creation of new, small states in Spain, Belgium, Italy, Scotland and elsewhere in Europe. Belgium has the Dutch-speaking north wanting to split from the poorer south of the country.

We have populist racial-nationalistic or ethno-racialist völkisch movement in Germany. The term “völkisch,” is closely associated with National Socialism concerning a people as a purported race. You can even know them by their hairstyle:

“Do not cut the hair at the sides of your head or clip off the edges of your beard. ‘Do not cut your bodies for the dead or put tattoo marks on yourselves. I am the Lord.’” (Leviticus 19:27-28)



Even Leviticus 19:27-28 is a prophecy. Today’s neopagan tattoos with clipping the sides of the hair have become quite the fashion everywhere. What the message is being sent by the prophets are simple to comprehend: this mountain split is no small issue. It is our warning sign; Moses is parting the Red Sea, now enter ye the crevice between the drowning pillars of the raging walls that will eventually consume Pharaoh’s army. Do no violence. Advocate for true peace.

Today, the true Christian must avoid rallying behind such splits and remain far from the rising powers and remain in the valley. All Christendom is splitting. Today the West is already caught in the mousetrap caused by the tug between multiculturalism, which conservatives abhor, versus ethnocentrism, which the liberal despises. We join neither. This is “neighbor fighting neighbor”. Our concern is Pharaoh and the mighty pagan Egypt that will soon come after us. Revived pagan Egypt is like its sister Arabia is a Mother of Harlots that brought Islam and with the West becoming pagan we have no one left to defend us. To

find the harlot daughter of pagan Egypt we need to look no further than where we are. Just look all around you and see from East to West and from North to South; the rivers (different ethnic backgrounds) are already consuming Thor.

#### THE SPIRITUAL AND MORAL SHIFTS AND ITS AFTERMATH

“Sodom and Egypt” has already fractured Christendom’s social fabric through the spread of revolutions and movements we would never have considered decades prior; within the homosexual revolution was invented; a non-binary gender, bigender, trigender and pangender; transgender and cisgender.

The decaying church in the West that is unable to respond to the social upheaval opened the floodgates to the revival of a global Islamic revolution that threatens world peace.

Un-unified and with so many social, cultic and moral divides, the remnant faithful must be careful not to join the splitting of this mountain. For example, in the U.S., during Obama’s presidency, conservatives created Tea Party chapters and many joined. Mormon Glenn Beck became an icon of such movement and many were the Christian Evangelical pastors that undermined theology for the sake of unity with Beck from the smallest to the more popular like Franklin Graham they rushed to scrub away their refutations of Mormonism lest they offend the likes of Beck and Mitt Romney because these were Mormon. In this generation you shall find no shortage of hypocrites and traitors. The fear of Obama served as a powerful recruiting tool where “Birthers” swelled the Tea Party ranks and even had a so-called conservative LGBT members.

But all this simply became a platform to sprout forth and usher in provocateurs spreading neopaganism; Alt-Right revolution, Identitarian revolution and racialist revolution where the Christians, without realizing, found themselves unequally yoked. These new movements are not confined only in the U.S., they have become a global phenomenon. Under the guise of opposing and confronting the liberal and socialists with their ‘social justice’ banner now we have ultra-nationalist, populist, neofascist, neo-Nazi revolutions and the vehemently anti-Christian Hindu revolution in India (which the idol of the alt-Right Steve Bannon loves).

And besides the rise of Islamism, Christians now must also contend with the rise of Aztec paganism and the cult of death in Mexico, rise of ancestor worship in Japan, anti-globalism, feminist revolution, ecofeminism and environmental revolution ...

Such are the spiritual mighty earthquake’s trimmers reversing the spin of the earth backwards to ancient times. The systems that create confusion, civil strife, civil unrest where “neighbor fights neighbor,” are set in motion to plunge societies into complete moral and social decay. Then come the chaos predicted in Isaiah 19. Keep in mind that the spark will happen in one day:

“It shall come to pass in *that day* that a *great panic* from the LORD will be among them. *Everyone will seize the hand of his neighbor*, and raise his hand against his neighbor’s hand” (Zechariah 14:13)

The sum of all this, catapults dangerous ideologies from Muslim and Eugenics to racialist, neopagan and ultra-nationalist including homosexuality like a torrent—a flood from the mouth of the dragon—sweeping throughout the world ready to consume the saints.

And this is why end-times prophecy is more complex than it was for ancient Israel since this one is global and ancient Israel is a comparative microcosm. Today, the “earth shakes” and “the seas roar” and all the systems that prepare mankind for his downfall are already set in motion and mankind has never stockpiled more weapons since the beginning of earth. From Turkey to Germany and from Japan to China, there is a 2027 plan to amass and launch all sorts of sophisticated weaponry.

These days, the moment we say anything against such movements and instantly, the anti-Christ sycophants with their little bags of labels toss pebbles at us accusing us of “spreading hate” and for this (in the name of love) these will eventually murder us.

And without an ability (as it was before) to have a majorly cohesive Christian leadership to confront all this, this mighty earthquake like a torrent will further divide societies from within, that with so many different ideologies in major nations, it creates antagonism that causes a creation of a global Egypt where the ideological divides will have cataclysmic results: “neighbor fight against neighbor” “city against city” and “kingdom against kingdom” (see Isaiah 19).

But such divides will have one thing in common: the agreement with this allegoric pagan Egypt to do evil where we will never blend in unless we take their mark. All this ushers in a supposed melting pot: the worldwide spread of an Anti-Christian spirit, which will eventually force every nonconformist to hide in the crevice of Azal.

This is an earthquake that has the earth splitting northwards and southwards while the globe’s axis shifts running in reverse where the message of heaven quickly retracts, departing, rolling upwards, away from the earth like a springing scroll. (Isaiah 34:4)

And if Lucifer can easily persuade the masses to support probing fecal matter, why would it be surprising to believe he can also have the masses copulate with idols?

And with God pulling back His light (“the Sun will grow dark”), Christendom will turn to Syncretism reverting us backwards to ancient Sodom, ancient Egypt and ancient Samaria.

With all these trimmers, this church of Laodicea will usher in the “great falling away” mentioned in II Thessalonians II driving Christendom further into being converted to Samaria where the depths of the pit unleashes the destructive locusts that will consume whatever green tender shoots are left on Christendom’s tree. It will soon forget that Christianity encompasses all races, yet evil attempts will reverse God’s order and divide “Jew” from “Gentile”.

Simply put: God says have it your way.

## EZEKIEL 32

And from Jerusalem being called “Sodom and Egypt” in Apocalypse 11:8 is also fully covered in a major key to unlock this prophetic riddle is in Ezekiel 32. Though you will not see an interpretation linking Ezekiel 32 to Jerusalem’s Apocalypse 11:8, the prophecy speaks of it in this figurative Pharaoh “You are like a monster in the seas” “Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh king of Egypt” and God predicted the revival of this mystery Egypt by His carcass to being allegorically discovered and found and brought back to life from the sea: “I will therefore spread My net over you with a company of many people, and they will draw you up in My net”.

The prophecy depicts many nations will cooperate to bring this mummy from the sea.<sup>205</sup> What no one considers is that it is not only the two witnesses who will come to this Jerusalem-Egypt but Christ Himself lands into this “Egypt,” Isaiah 19 says:

“The burden against Egypt. Behold, the Lord rides on a swift cloud, and will come into Egypt; the idols of Egypt will totter at His presence, and the heart of Egypt will melt in its midst.” (Isaiah 19:1)

Christ’s presence “will totter,” as in an earthquake “the idols of Egypt,” the same phenomenon He does when He stands on Mount Olives matches perfectly John calling Jerusalem and her daughters as “Sodom and Egypt”. Christ, in this unpopular prophecy comes to shake up “the idols of Egypt” (the whole of Jerusalem, literally and allegorically the fallen church), which will “totter at His presence”. In other words, He comes to punish Jerusalem including a Christian world turned syncretistic pagan that Isaiah and John calls “Egypt”.

This throws a monkey wrench into many references where certain nations are intended but are given a nickname lumping much of Christendom into this allegoric Egypt, an allegoric Babylon and an allegoric Sodom and even an allegoric Moab for you do not have to find a “Sweden,” “the U.S.,” or Switzerland in the Bible—these are already included in allegory. If Jerusalem is renamed “Egypt” in Apocalypse 11:8 what other names are given for other nations? What will Rome be called? And now we even begin to understand the Second Exodus from what Isaiah 11 says:

“And the LORD shall utterly destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea; and with his mighty wind shall he shake his hand over the river, and shall smite it in the seven streams, and make men go over dry shod.” (Isaiah 11:15)

Literal Egypt does not have “seven streams”. Here too God calls the remnant’s exodus out of “Egypt” which interpreters were puzzled what to do with this prophecy, which speaks of a major Second Exodus out of an allegoric Egypt (Mystery Babylon). Interpreters were confused because there are no Jews in today’s Egypt. But “the seven streams” is where the harlot sits upon the seven-headed beast. The beast carries the woman. The two have a symbiotic relationship that rules the world and God has a rescue plan.

The code to unlock it all is now made simple where all can easily interpret what’s coming better than the scholars. Even Isaiah 19 now becomes a breeze to interpret this prophecy against Egypt:

“See, the Lord rides on a swift cloud and is coming to Egypt. The idols of Egypt tremble before him, and the hearts of the Egyptians melt with fear. “I will stir up Egyptian

---

<sup>205</sup> The story of the life and death of Osiris is related in the myth called "The Legend of Osiris and Isis." This myth is recounted in Egypt’s hieroglyphic inscriptions, in papyrus funerary texts, and in paintings and sculptures. God mocks the world for adapting the myth of Osiris which claims that Osiris set out on a journey to civilize and bring order to the entire earth and as he was gone a conspiracy took place where he was lured to lay in a coffin and fellow conspirators, slammed the door of the chest shut and fastened it with nails and molten lead. They then carried the chest out and tossed it into the river whereupon Osiris drowned and the chest was carried out to sea.

*against Egyptian—brother will fight against brother, neighbor against neighbor, city against city, kingdom against kingdom.” (Isaiah 19:2)*

Now we understand what Christ meant in Matthew 24 “nation will rise against nation.” Literal Egypt is but a single nation, yet here it says “kingdom against kingdom”. God gives us the progression how it all escalates from small “brother against brother” to simmer “neighbor against neighbor” (civil unrest) to hot “city against city” (state vs. state or region vs. region) to boiling hot “nation against nation”. And today we already see simmer:

“From 2011 to 2019, the number of riots rose by 282% and general strikes rose by [whopping] 821%. This reflects a longer-term trend, with riots around the world increasing by 282% in the last decade, while general strikes are up by 821%. Europe experienced the most protests, riots and strikes”

“Civil unrest in sub-Saharan Africa rose by more than 800% over the period, from 32 riots and protests in 2011 to 292 in 2018.”<sup>206</sup>

The seas roar prior to the judgment and today it is increasing at an alarming rate nearly triple “282%” and double quadruple of strikes “821%”. This turmoil is also confirmed in 2 Chronicles:

“For a long time Israel has been *without the true God*, without a *teaching priest*, and *without law*; but *when in their trouble they turned to the LORD God of Israel*, and sought Him, *He was found by them*. And *in those times there was no peace* to the one who *went out*, nor *to the one who came in*, but great turmoil was on *all the inhabitants of the lands*. So *nation was destroyed by nation*, and *city by city*, for God *troubled them with every adversity*.” (2 Chronicle 15: 3-6)

This is a global turmoil that will finally bring a remnant Jews to repentance during a time of civil strife within Israel itself where who leaves finds no peace and who escapes persecution from other lands and goes to Israel will also find no peace even in Israel but in those days nations will war with other nations even city against city (civil strife).

"And the people shall rush one upon another. And every man against his neighbor: the child shall make a tumult against the ancient and the base against the honorable" (Isaiah 3:5).

The persecution of the elderly will become immense and gangs will infest many cities of the world.

#### A WORLD TURNING PAGAN

God allegorically even explains how the world turns pagan:

---

<sup>206</sup> Defenseweb July 14<sup>th</sup>, 2020

“Thus says the Lord GOD: ‘I will therefore spread My net over you with a company of many people, And they will draw you up in My net. Then I will leave you on the land; I will cast you out on the open fields, and cause to settle on you all the birds of the heavens. And with you I will fill the beasts of the whole earth. I will lay your flesh on the mountains, and fill the valleys with your carcass. ‘I will also water the land with the flow of your blood, even to the mountains ...” (Ezekiel 32:3-5)

“Draw you up in My net?” And what is this mummy of Pharaoh being dragged by many nations in God’s net all about? To understand prophecy you cannot skip. The world is already dragging this Mummy in the net and the message on the coffin says this: so you do not want the religion of the carpenter? Then consume Pharaoh’s carcass as a Eucharistic sacrifice:

“With you I will fill the beasts of the whole earth”.

With pharaoh’s carcass (paganism) God will “fill the beasts [empires] of the whole earth” and “I will lay your flesh on the mountains” “and cause to settle on you all the birds of the heavens” is the same message God is saying over and over that before He comes, the world would revert backwards, way backwards to re-consume pre-Abrahamic and pre-Christian muck.

“Mountains” are kingdoms and empires. Example: “My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill” (Ezekiel 34:6) which means the Israel of God was scattered to different nations (hills and mountains). Another example of an allegoric mountain is when Christ spoke of having the faith of a mustard seed that His disciples will “move mountains,” that they will convert nations, which was fulfilled and this Egypt wants to undo. “The birds of heaven” are the priests of a fallen Church resting on ancient Egypt and consuming Pharaoh’s ancient mummy brought back out of the sea after having been buried for so long and unraveled after its religion has been dead for nearly three millennia.

And if you think this prophecy is far off study the Amazon Synod to see how close we are in posting totem-polls in Amazon churches which sets a precedence to many nations that are reverting to pre-Christian ultra-national pride in Europe. While it includes women becoming priests, eventually the man of sin will not “honor the desire of women”. The focus on women priests hides the underlining of what some evil men want to pass: a syncretistic theology that will eventually generate the “abomination of desolation” and if Christ says “this is My Body” and the “Temple” was used allegorically as “My Body” which He said He will revive it in three days, the body becomes “temple” and now we begin to understand in a way how Antichrist desecrates the Temple of God.

The cry of the Christian is well recorded in Psalm 80. Pay close attention:

“O God of hosts, restore us and cause Your face to shine upon us, and we will be saved. You removed a vine from Egypt; you drove out the nations and planted it. You cleared the ground before it, and it took deep root and filled the land. The mountains were covered with its shadow, and the cedars of God with its boughs. It was sending out its branches to the sea and its shoots to the River.” (Psalm 80:7-11)

Psalms 80 confirms *exactly* how we interpreted Ezekiel 32. Always let the scripture interpret itself for God is both *author* and *interpreter*. God allows the rebellion and says He took the vine of Egypt's paganism spread it to the mountains (nations) and the seas (different languages) and even to the "river" (Tiber).<sup>207</sup> Even the Catholic center is not immune.

These prophecies are not tracking paganism in general, but that His "river" was infected with it. This infection began in the Synod in 1985 when Pope John Paul II defined *inculturation* in *Redemptoris Missio*, n. 52, as:

"The intimate transformation of authentic cultural values through their integration in Christianity and the insertion of Christianity in the various human cultures."

This means that *inculturation* is characterized by a dual movement towards cultures via the incarnation of the Gospel and the transmission of its values, and a movement towards the Church that involves the *incorporation of values that come from the cultures the latter encounters*. Therefore, a fruitful cross-fertilization can follow.<sup>208</sup> Pope John Paul II sent his encyclical letter filled with sophistry to all bishops throughout the Catholic Church:

"My thoughts turn immediately to the *lands of the East*, so *rich in religious* and philosophical traditions of great antiquity. Among these lands, India has a special place. A *great spiritual impulse* leads Indian thought to *seek an experience* which would *liberate the spirit* from the shackles of time and space and would therefore acquire absolute value. The dynamic of this quest for liberation provides the context for great metaphysical systems."<sup>209</sup>

God sees the bulk majority of his nations as pagan and He is giving them up to Pharaoh's religion. He takes them to the time-tunnel backwards to satisfy the world's hunger of what it was like to live under the yoke of Egypt. He will satisfy their curiosity what Israel had to endure under the Pharaoh. He will then take a remnant of people out of this neopagan Egypt. The time is coming when people shall eat human flesh just as they did in ancient Egypt.

Why does prophecy focus so much on this allegoric Egypt? It is because this prophecy when read allegorically gives the tare the opposite message. If one understands the prophecy to be regarding some Pharaoh in literal Egypt, they will miss the following:

---

<sup>207</sup> The church is the "river" which is tested during its tribulation: "I heard the man dressed in linen, who was above the waters of the *river*, as he raised his right hand and his left toward heaven, and swore by Him who lives forever that it would be for a time, times, and half a *time*; and as soon as they finish shattering the power of the holy people, all these *events* will be completed" (Daniel 12:7) Also see Psalm 72:8 "May he also rule from sea to sea and from the River to the ends of the earth." Also see Zechariah 9:10

<sup>208</sup> See *Inculturation and interculturality* in John Paul II and Benedict XVI 29/03/2010 | Francesco Follo

<sup>209</sup> Pope John Paul II, "ENCYCLICAL LETTER *FIDES ET RATIO* OF THE SUPREME PONTIFF JOHN PAUL II TO THE BISHOPS OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH ON THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN FAITH AND REASON" "CHAPTER VI THE INTERACTION BETWEEN PHILOSOPHY AND THEOLOGY"



“I bring your destruction among the nations, into the countries which you have not known.” (Ezekiel 32:9)

This means that the cult spread into nations that ancient Egypt never knew. In other words, this is not regarding the Middle East. This is regarding the harlot mega conglomerate. Think the farthest corners of the earth that never had historic dealings with ancient Egypt. And now we begin to comprehend, the literal application how this Pharaoh carries the harlot:

“Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh king of Egypt, and say to him: ‘You are like a young lion among the nations, And you are like a monster in the seas, bursting forth in your rivers, troubling the waters with your feet, And fouling their rivers.’”

How is “Egypt” a “young lion among the nations?” This cannot be today’s Egypt “like a young lion” “fowling the rivers” infects and controls many nations.

The Egypt metaphor is key to understanding the harlot for this will repeat the whole story of Moses to bring God’s people out of Babylon to “Come out of her, my people, so that you will not participate in her sins and receive any of her plagues” (Revelation 18:4). This includes all what God’s people experienced in ancient Egypt; persecuting God’s remnant by enslaving them and murdering their children by abortion and their elders by Euthanasia (more on that later). It includes a great Exodus unlike you have ever seen since the creation of man. It includes the mumbling and complaining of the tares, the bickering and the true Manna (Eucharist) consumed in the wilderness.

Scripture gives tremendous prophecies no one ever fathomed. It will include the plagues and the drying of the sea. It will include the mark of His blood on your doorposts and lintels, the true perpetual sacrifice that saves ... all of it.

Let us explain this again. God said He will restore the nations as Sodom and it is being fulfilled in your reading and He said your Jerusalem will be “Sodom” and that too is being fulfilled in your reading. While this does not match your traditional interpretation, all you need to do is to look around and it all adds up. Trust us. It is only the beginning. Pay very close attention: “I will therefore spread My net over you with a company of many people”. God sets the trap and the nations “many people” pull the net bringing this stench ridden ancient buried carcass out from the sea into the open where nations consume it: “I will leave you on the land” so that the fallen church (the nations of Christendom) will settle on its carcass and consume of it. “With you I will fill all the beasts of the earth” that the powerful nations will consume Egypt’s ancient religion worshipping Pharaoh consuming him as an abominable Eucharistic sacrifice. The rest has the needed clue:

“And the riverbeds will be full of you [Pharaoh]. When I put out your light, I will cover the heavens, and make its stars dark; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give her light. All the bright lights of the heavens I will make dark over you, and bring darkness upon your land, says the Lord GOD. I will also trouble the hearts of many peoples, when I bring your destruction among the nations, into the countries which you have not known.”



And this last verse (there is usually one verse God leaves for you as a clue) is the key that proves our main point: “I will bring destruction among the nations, into the countries which you have not known.”

Such massive destruction will come to these nations that ancient Egypt did not know (think major cities all over the globe).

These are not Egyptian and neither does it have anything to do with today’s literal Egypt which is eventually redeemed:

“In that day there *will be an altar to the LORD in the midst of the land of Egypt*, and a pillar to the LORD at its border.” (Isaiah 19:18-19)

“Then the LORD will be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians will know the LORD in that day, and will make sacrifice and offering; yes, they will make a vow to the LORD and perform it.” (Isaiah 19:21)

And we ask, is this “sacrifice” that the Egyptian converts will perform an animal sacrifice? Is Egypt, as some interpreters say of Jerusalem, will build a temple with animal sacrifices? Or is this the daily perpetual sacrifice of grain?

There is only two ways to answer this Jesus-style question: 1—you allegorize this literal sacrifice, and by that you are accustomed to allegorize literals and literalize an allegory or 2—this is the perpetual Eucharistic sacrifice.

Choose, but choose wisely.

Without Christ’s instruction “I speak in parables” the unworthy will gain the reverse of the message. On the one hand, we have foreign nations—that ancient Egypt never met and neither did they ever meet ancient Egypt—*until the time of the end* and then we have literal Egypt which is also punished yet converts.

With the revival of the allegoric Pagan Egypt, God “covers the sun with a cloud” where the light of the Carpenter from Nazareth is diminished. You hate the wooden Cross, then suffer the metal sword. “All the bright lights of the heavens I will make dark over you.” This means the reverse of what we thought in the past. Indeed, your ancient Egypt’s religion revived, especially in Northern Europe, in what was once the Germanic culture, there is a return to Ásatrú, Heathenry, Odinism, Wotanism, Theodism and Ariosophy (wisdom concerning the Aryans) the Genesis and “Ario-Christianity” is all prophesied in the Bible in a simple allegory. In Western Europe, in what was Celtic and Celto-Romano culture, now there is a return to Druidry “Old Religion,” Celtic Reconstructionism, Wicca and Goddess Worship. In Southern Europe where once was the Hellenic and Latinate culture, there you will find a return to Hellenismos, Religio Romana, Stregheria (la vecchia religione).

To God instead of having us chasing after the rabbit hole trying to figure out which god stemmed from where, He sums them up all under one: Thor, the sun god in Norse mythology was also the Egyptian Osiris and Kneph, the Phœnician Bel or Baal. It all connects:

“The beliefs of the Hindus, Persians, Egyptians, Greeks, Romans, and Celts have all yielded striking comparisons [to each other], and the Norse Gods display significant resemblances to members of other pantheons.”<sup>210</sup>



And it all stems from the Greco-Egyptian Paganism, Horus, originally was a sky god (hence the falcon's head) became one of the most important Egyptian gods. Over time Horus absorbed the characteristics of many other deities. As Diodorus Siculus, who spent four decades studying history examining the origins of the Greek gods concluded they all came from Egypt and even Egypt's religion stems from Cush. This is Nimrod's territory (Babel) and is perhaps why Antichrist is called Nimrod in Micah 5. The world is truly heading towards Babel.

And so John calls this harlot what she is: “Sodom and Egypt”.

Who would have dreamt that such cults would revive? But this is not the only thing amazing. What is amazing is that now we can decipher “into the countries which you have not known” and by finding the infected nations we can then pinpoint Mystery Babylon.

Now we come to understand what John meant when he prophesied about “Egypt” in “Sodom and Egypt” even including the beast. Just to explain the “Sodom” takes much work. Now we come to show that it takes much work to explain this “Egypt”.

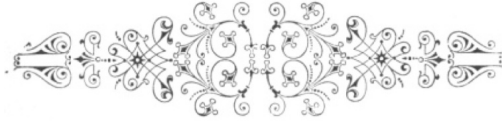
This “Mystery Babylon” is no longer a mystery once the angel explains:

“I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carries her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.” The beast that thou saw *was*, and *is not*; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that *was*, and *is not*, and yet *is*. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits.” (Revelation 17:7-8)

The seven past empires revive and the harlot has control of the beast and God sees these are all the past pagan empires now become the 8<sup>th</sup>.

---

<sup>210</sup> A History of the Vikings, Oxford University Press, P.p, 319



## THE SIGNS BEFORE THE FALL

From Amos 4:

“But I gave you also cleanness of teeth in all your cities, and lack of bread in all your places; yet you have not returned to Me,” declares the Lord.”

Who today studies this prophecy? Famines will be the sign.

“Furthermore, I withheld the rain from you while there were still three months until harvest. Then I would send rain on one city, but on another city I would not send rain; one part would be rained on, while the part not rained on would dry up. So the people of two or three cities would stagger to another city to drink water, But would not be satisfied; yet you have not returned to Me,” declares the Lord.”

Example of this when California recently experienced the terrible 5-year drought from 2012-2016, and another notable drought 2007-09, 1987-92, 1976-77 while it rained elsewhere.

“I struck you with scorching wind and mildew”

“Researchers suggest that the most damaging U.S. hurricanes are three times more frequent than 100 years ago, and that the proportion of major hurricanes (Category 3 or above) in the Atlantic Ocean has doubled since 1980.”<sup>211</sup>

“The caterpillar was devouring your many gardens and vineyards, fig trees and olive trees; yet you have not returned to Me,” declares the Lord.”

The 2020, locusts is unparalleled since decades ago have swarmed in large numbers in dozens of countries, including Kenya, Ethiopia, Uganda, Somalia, Eritrea, India, Pakistan, Iran, Yemen, Oman and Saudi Arabia.

“I sent a plague among you as in Egypt”

Anyone today questions we are already in the era of plagues?  
So what comes next? Upon the harlot (“Sodom and Egypt”):

“See, the Lord rides on a swift cloud and is coming to Egypt. The idols of Egypt tremble before him, and the hearts of the Egyptians melt with fear. “I will stir up Egyptian against Egyptian—brother will fight against brother, neighbor against neighbor, city against city, kingdom against kingdom.” (Isaiah 19:2)

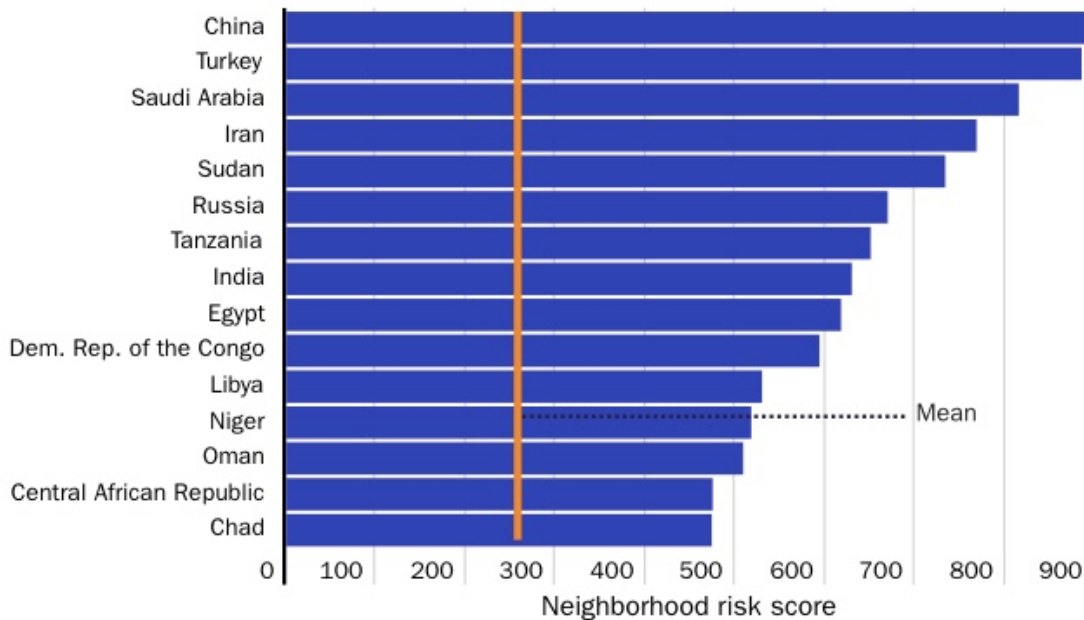
---

<sup>211</sup> See EDF.org “one of the leading environmental organizations”. While these blame climate change, scripture says its God’s scourge.

This is both literal and allegoric Egypt since “Their bodies will lie in the public square of the great city—which is figuratively called *Sodom* and *Egypt*—where also *their Lord was crucified*” (Revelation 11:8). So this is the self-destruct of this “harlot” for it cannot be said of Egypt today being “nation against nation” for Egypt is but one nation. But even literal Egypt was severely hit with massive civil unrest where during the Arab Spring Cairo went against Port Said where neighbor was literally fighting neighbor dividing between secularist and Muslim Brotherhood. But we must also consider that this verse concerns neighbor state vs. neighbor state.

Figure 2

**Countries in the riskiest neighborhoods, 2020**



Sources: “UCDP/PRIO Armed Conflict Dataset,” Uppsala Conflict Data Program, Peace Research Institute Oslo; Michael J. Abramowitz, “Freedom in the World 2018: Democracy in Crisis,” Freedom House, 2018; “Fragile States Index,” Fund for Peace; Mark Gibney et al., “The Political Terror Scale 1976–2019,” 2020; *Global Terrorism Index 2018: Measuring the Impact of Terrorism* (Sydney, Australia: Institute for Economics & Peace, November 2018); and “Corruption Perceptions Index, 2018,” Transparency International.

(notice the riskiest neighborhoods is the heaviest influx of prophetically highest rate of conversion)

Years ago we had warned regarding the Western Spring and it is already upon us and this will explode where neighborhoods will rob and kill other neighborhoods as the war on law and order continues. Between May 25 and November 18, 2020, protests occurred in more than 4,446 cities worldwide, including in all states, territories and Washington, D.C., and internationally in more than 60 countries.<sup>212</sup> The nations are under a curse of no return. Then the coming wars:

<sup>212</sup> See Center For Disaster Philanthropy “U.S. Civil Unrest” January 21, 2021

“I killed your young men with the sword, along with your captured horses, and I made the stench of your camp rise up in your nostrils; yet you have not returned to Me,” declares the Lord.” (Amos 4:10)

Then God has it:

“I overthrew you, as God overthrew *Sodom and Gomorrah*, and you were like a log *snatched* from a *fire*; yet you have not returned to Me,” declares the Lord. “Therefore so I will do to you, Israel; because I will do this to you, prepare to meet your God, Israel.” For behold, He who forms mountains and creates the wind, and declares to a person what are His thoughts, he who makes dawn into darkness and treads on the high places of the earth, the Lord God of armies is His name.”

While some can argue that Amos 4 is for Israel, Isaiah 19 and Jeremiah confirms it extends to much more:

“*As* God overthrew *Sodom and Gomorrah* and the neighbor *cities* thereof, says the LORD; so shall *no man abide there*, [in Babylon] neither shall any son of man dwell therein.” (Jeremiah 50:40)

“As [when] God overthrew Sodom ...” leaves no room to argue, this is not ancient Sodom and Gomorrah, it is in the same style it was destroyed: hell-fire is powered from above.

Jude chapter 1 also confirms the harlot’s destruction clearly says “cities”:

“Just *as Sodom and Gomorrah* and *the cities* around them, since they *in the same way* as these *indulged in gross immorality* and went *after strange flesh*, are exhibited as an example in undergoing the punishment of eternal fire. Yet in the same way *these men*, also by dreaming, defile the flesh, and *reject authority*, and revile angelic majesties.” (Jude 1:7)

It was in fact Enoch (one of the two witnesses) who prophesied all this:

“It was about *these men* that *Enoch*, in the seventh generation from Adam, prophesied, saying, “Behold, *the Lord came* with many thousands of His holy ones *to execute judgment upon all*, and to convict all the ungodly of all their ungodly deeds which they have done in an ungodly way, and of *all the harsh things* which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.” (Jude 1:14-15)

So it will be illogical to exclude Enoch from warning Israel when he comes and is martyred about the same subject matter.

God will not spare anyone who supports Sodom. “It was about these men” that is, the type of men in “Sodom and Gomorrah” and in “Egypt” is why Christ comes to “execute judgment”:

“The Lord, after *saving a people out of the land of Egypt*, subsequently destroyed those who did not believe.” (Jude 1:5)

Mystery Babylon is also Mystery Egypt.

“And turning the cities of *Sodom* and *Gomorrha* into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly and *delivered just Lot*, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked” (2 Peter 2:6-7)

Peter, like Paul in Romans 1, ties it all together as he forewarns that it will be like Noah and Lot, only the ones who resist will be saved. The dwindling of Christianity is proof of Christianity for the prophets foretold this.

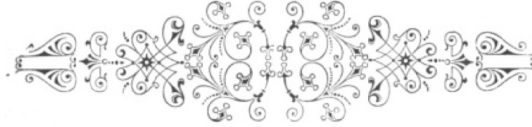
Jerusalem and the Christian nations (born of Jerusalem) today their cities have become “Gomorrah” while their “rulers” are “rulers of Sodom”. The kingdoms of Sodom and Gomorrah (just like the “Great City” in Babylon) were five cities allied with other cities of Admah, Zeboim, and Bela. These cities, also known as the “cities of the plain” (Genesis 13:10). So when God says “people of Gomorrah” He is alluding to this alliance of cities as in support of Sodom.

The gay happy city is finally destroyed:

“On the *land my people will come up thorns and briers* yes, on all the *happy homes in the joyous city*; because the palaces will be forsaken, the *bustling city* will be *deserted*. The *forts* and *towers* will become *lair forever*, a joy of wild donkeys, a pasture of flocks”— (Isaiah 32:13-14)

Do you see this word “forever?”

Here it says that judgment is poured on “the land of my people” and that their “towers” (high-rises or principalities) “become lairs *forever*”. The word “forever” deserves a pause. If what was meant by this is Israel when the Romans destroyed it, how is it destroyed *forever*? It is here today. Therefore, every city in Israel including Christendom that supports this debauchery will be destroyed. “Forever” means forever. This is the end of this wicked world. Having said this, is Jerusalem a place to hide? Better yet, is Jerusalem immune, especially after it kills the two witnesses?



## THE DESTRUCTION OF MYSTERY BABYLON IS MASSIVE

Jeremiah 25 gives the rule:

“They said, ‘Repent now everyone of his evil way and his evil doings, and dwell in the land that the LORD has given to you and your fathers forever and ever.”

That if Israel is put in her land that she returns to God and if not:

“I am going to send for all the families of the north’ — this is the LORD’s declaration — ‘and send for my servant Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and I will bring them against this land, against its residents, and against all these surrounding nations, and I will completely destroy them and make them an example of horror and scorn, and ruins forever.” (Jeremiah 25:8-9)

“If my requests are heeded, Russia will be converted, and there will be peace. If not, she will spread her errors throughout the world, causing wars and persecutions of the Church. The good will be martyred, the Holy Father will have much to suffer, various nations will be annihilated. In the end, my Immaculate Heart will triumph. The Holy Father will consecrate Russia to me, and she will be converted, and a period of peace will be granted to the world.”—Fatima

“Various nations will be annihilated” caused many to question how could this be? It did not happen. These do not understand, had Russia not been consecrated this would have happened after WWII. The consecration of Russia simply bought us more time of peace and inevitably we will head towards “I will completely destroy them” and “various nations will be annihilated” but this time “forever.”

This ruler does not only invade Israel but the surrounding nations and they are destroyed “forever”. When did such prophecy happen? Have all the surrounding nations around Israel been destroyed forever?

“I will bring upon that land all the words that I have uttered against it, everything written in this book, which Jeremiah prophesied against all the nations” (Jeremiah 25:13)

This can *never* be historic but *future* since it clearly says that “*everything written in the book*” of Jeremiah will be fulfilled in this one event. This global massive punishment included even Israel:

“Thus the LORD, the God of Israel, said to me: “Take from my hand this cup of the wine of wrath, and make all the nations to whom I send you drink it. They shall drink and stagger and be crazed because of the sword that I am sending

among them.” So I took the cup from the LORD’s hand, and made all the nations to whom the LORD sent me drink it: *Jerusalem and the cities of Judah*, its kings and officials, to *make them a desolation and a waste*, a hissing and a curse, as at this day; Pharaoh king of Egypt, his servants, his officials, all his people, and all the mixed tribes among them; all the kings of the land of Uz and all the kings of the land of the Philistines (Ashkelon, Gaza, Ekron, and the remnant of Ashdod); Edom, Moab, and the sons of Ammon; all the kings of Tyre, all the kings of Sidon, and *the kings of the coastland across the sea*; Dedan, Tema, Buz, and all who cut the corners of their hair; all the kings of Arabia and all the kings of the mixed tribes who dwell in the desert; all the kings of Zimri, all the kings of Elam, and all the kings of Media; *all the kings of the north, far and near*, one after another, and *all the kingdoms of the world that are on the face of the earth*. And *after them the king of Babylon shall drink*. “Then you shall say to them, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Drink, be drunk and vomit, fall and rise no more, because of the sword that I am sending among you.’ “And if they refuse to accept the cup from your hand to drink, then you shall say to them, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts: You must drink! For behold, I begin to work disaster *at the city that is called by my name*, and shall you go unpunished? You shall not go unpunished, for I am summoning *a sword against all the inhabitants of the earth*, declares the LORD of hosts.’ “You, therefore, shall prophesy against them all these words, and say to them: “*The LORD will roar from on high*, and from his holy habitation utter his voice; he will *roar mightily against his fold*, and shout, like those who tread grapes, *against all the inhabitants of the earth*. The clamor will resound to the ends of the earth, for the LORD has an indictment against the nations; he is entering into *judgment with all flesh*, and the wicked he will put to the sword, declares the LORD.’ “Thus says the LORD of hosts: Behold, disaster is going forth *from nation to nation*, and a *great tempest is stirring from the farthest parts of the earth!* “And those *pierced by the LORD on that day shall extend from one end of the earth to the other*. They shall not be lamented, or gathered, or buried; they shall be dung on the surface of the ground. “*Wail, you shepherds*, and cry out, and *roll in ashes, you lords of the flock*, for the days of your slaughter and dispersion have come, and you shall fall like a choice vessel. *No refuge will remain for the shepherds, nor escape for the lords of the flock*. A voice—*the cry of the shepherds*, and the *wail of the lords of the flock!* For the LORD is *laying waste their pasture*, and the peaceful folds are devastated because of the fierce anger of the LORD. Like a lion he has left his lair, for their land has become a waste because of the sword of the oppressor, and because of his fierce anger.” (Jeremiah 25:15-38)

This Babylon includes “Jerusalem and the cities of Judah” is unquestionably Israel even a disaster over the city called by God’s name including “*the cry of the shepherds*, and the *wail of the lords of the flock!*” are the priests, bishops and cardinals. “All the kings of the coastlands across the sea” is definitely nations in Europe which prophecy does not disclose specifically which nations. This is a judgment on Babylon going from one end of the earth to the other.

Who can show when and how this happened in history?



“And in her [the harlot city] was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.” (Revelation 18:24)

And even Jesus Himself clearly said: “Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets,” so we cannot escape a judgment on Jerusalem since:

“For you, brethren, are become followers of the churches of God which are in Judea, in Christ Jesus: for you also have suffered the same things from your own countrymen, even as they have from the Jews: Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and have persecuted us, and please not God, and are adversaries to all men; prohibiting us to speak to the Gentiles, that they may be saved, to fill up their sins always: for the wrath of God is come upon them to the end. (1 Thessalonians 2:14-16)

Many Catholics and Orthodox argue that we cannot evade Jerusalem since the Jews, not only did they kill Christ and the prophets, but will be “adversaries to all men” and “the wrath of God is come upon them to the end.”

It is difficult to argue against this. This wrath being “to the end” and them being “adversaries” to Christ and Christianity is also “to the end” with the exception of whom God will redeem. Besides the redeemed Jews and Gentiles what is left out must then be completely destroyed when God finally judges the harlot.

No matter how politically incorrect this is for some westerners, Israel indeed killed the prophets and so many are the Jewish philanthropists, actors, personalities, politicians, financial moguls, writers and thinkers influence the dark side and are “adversaries to all men.” But we must also consider that Christendom turning pagan will have blood as well. Many Catholics from fear of Communism fell for Fascism while Nazi Germany had much more support from Protestants while millions from Poland were martyred.

The major factor for the expansion of Lutheranism in Europe was the Ottomans, which directly encouraged Protestantism, as in northern Hungary and Transylvania, where Calvinism (“Calvino-Turkism”) became the dominant religion. Supporting and protecting the Lutherans and the Calvinists against the Catholics was meant to be the cornerstone of Turkish policy in Europe.<sup>213</sup> Calvinists from as far back as the battle of Lepanto<sup>214</sup> stood with Muslim Ottomans while scripture was also clear that whoever takes part in persecuting Israel is also punished. In addition, whoever flirts with Jerusalem failed to heed Galatians 4 and Zechariah 14. All who are madly in love with earthly Jerusalem will perish by the sword and is perhaps why the Crusaders finally lost to the Muslims. However, Israel and the Church knew God and should have been more responsible. Revelation 18:24 is clear and this Harlot must encompass Jerusalem, the Mother as part of this structure.

---

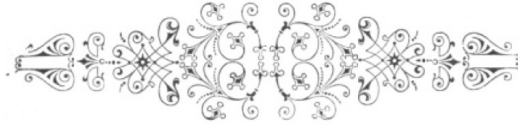
<sup>213</sup> Daniel Goffman, The Ottoman Empire and Early Modern Europe

<sup>214</sup> (1571) fleet of the Holy League, coalition of the Southern European Catholic maritime states (Spain, Venice, Genoa) decisively defeated the main fleet of the Ottoman Empire. Dan John led Holy League to defeat Turks

Now we understand why all theories are found wanting that when someone chooses “Rome,” another counters with “how does Rome rule Japan?” And then the reply is always found wanting. Yet another pinpoints Jerusalem for in it is found “the blood of the saints” and “the martyrs of Jesus Christ,” while another counters with the same question: “how does Jerusalem rule the kings of the earth?” and they too are found wanting.

Now you can *see* though you did *not*. Now you can *hear* though you did *not*.

Parables are easy to comprehend, but its conclusions goes against the will of man and is why they are rejected, but with such rejection, they will never properly unlock plain prophecy and in fact will reach an opposite conclusion.



“MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT”  
“SODOM AND EGYPT”  
IS BEING BORN

THE HIDDEN PAGANISM

When we say Muslim, some imagine an ISIS terrorist (the hardliner) ignoring that the majority Muslims are no bomb-strapping terrorists. Likewise when we say “pagan” many imagine barbarian savage rituals, warriors from some Amazon jungle, Wiccan witches' with black magic witchcraft.

These are not the only ones prophecy discusses. Today the sophisticated and educated listens to great Bach, Chopin, Handel Messiah, Mozart or the priest Antonio Vivaldi; worthy compelling symphonies and choirs that some take us inside the story of Christ. But let us face the reality, as you watch and listen to the talented performers re-play wonderful arts from the past, do you honestly for a moment believe the bulk majority of today’s performing artists (including those who watch and listen) truly believe in the message of the original artist? Try having a discussion with these on Christianity and all you see are whitewash sepulchers, “having a form of godliness,” that deny the power of God Who gave them the very life and talent: “Having an appearance indeed of godliness, but denying the power thereof. Now these avoid!” (2 Timothy 3:5)

While they sing about God, they deny that even God made the earth and the heavens. These (not the Amazon savage) are the most dangerous pagans. And when Timothy etched his prophecy regarding these, he was not speaking of street thugs; he was speaking of the elegant and the elite with the formality of religion:

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.” (2 Timothy 2:1-5)

Americans are accustomed to thinking that niceness is the mark of a saint. According to God all who have a “form of godliness” fit under one or all of these categories: “lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God”.

These are not street thugs, gangs and vampires but people with *formality* that mention God while they *deny His power*. The history of the Renaissance with its rebirth of sensuality and skepticism has already supplied the hatchling for what has already come; revival of pagan classics afforded a license of thought for the germination of novel theological ideas. As a result, paganism is now all around us and the proof of this is in a simple question: what

was and is still popular these days? Amongst the simpleton masses it's the series of Harry Potter, movies like Avatar and ancient Egypt's Thor and when it comes to fitness, Yoga tops them all. And amongst the so-called 'educated class' its philosophers who the Nazis and Fascists favored: Martin Heidegger, Nietzsche, Darwin and Carl Schmitt who sanctioned wholesale slaughter. Such sanctioning will soon come to haunt who do not agree with their ways.

Since the spread of Yoga in the U.S. after WWII it bounced from henceforth to become a universal phenomenon. Amongst African Americans, the insights of mind-body union are hotly debated claiming it came from ancient Egypt.



Regardless of all the arguments, that some claim to simply use Yoga for body toning, what cannot be denied is that Yoga practice stems from Vedic wisdom and its spiritual practices or disciplines originated from one of the six orthodox schools of Hindu philosophical traditions. All are pagan.

The success of such phenomenon with the deceptive educational material including all the massive popularity of these fictional books and movies prove one thing—there is a clear craving in self-deception that is massively growing believing that there is a more spiritually satisfying life in pantheism than in Christianity.

Even amongst the educated, today the most popular philosophers are Spinoza, Nietzsche and Walt Whitman.

And who in the university circles discuss the Bible, unless it is its most ardent critics?

These see God “as the eternal intelligibility of the world itself, now expanded to include the whole of reality.” Steven D. Smith, a law professor at the University of San Diego, in his book, “Pagans and Christians in the City: Culture Wars From the Tiber to the Potomac” argues:

“There is a civic religion that like the civic paganism of old makes religious and political duties identical, and treats the city of man as the city of God (or the gods), the place where we make heaven ourselves instead of waiting for the next life or the apocalypse. This immanent civic religion, is gradually replacing the more biblical form of civil religion that stamped American history down to the Protestant-Catholic-Jew [of] 1950s. Whether in the social-justice theology of contemporary progressive politics or the transhumanist projects of Silicon Valley, we are watching attempts to revive a

religion of this-world, a new-model paganism, to reclaim the city that Christianity wrested away from it centuries ago."<sup>215</sup>

"To reclaim the city that Christianity wrested away from it centuries ago?"

Smith being demonically motivated knows the scripture; it is an obvious war between two cities, which the pagan wants to reclaim his lost city. The Christian today fails to read and combat this enemy.

The movements and revolutions caused by the split from that allegoric earthquake on Christ's Mountain (Christendom) are global which also encompass the U.S., the Middle East (with Chrislam), Eastern and Southern Europe. And if one does not believe that Babylon the great is in its teenage stages, give it couple decades and see. What we see today is simply a microcosm of the things to come. It does not take a trends expert to see how this will explode to encompass much of this world. Christendom is splitting. From Chrislam's rising in the Middle East, to reviving the same Nordic mythology (that caused the birth of Nazism) in the West, today we have different types of Syncretism spreading in Europe, the Slavic nations, Latin America and all the way to Africa and the Middle East.

Today it is common to find a Church in the Middle East not void of some sort of Chrislam or compromising with Islam. Today in the Middle East, where in churches, they even mix the Muslim Nasheed (Islamic hymnals) with the Aramaic hymnals. Therefore, the persecution of churches in the Middle East and the rise of ISIS is the sifting mechanism—through fire—for the Christians to repent.

While in Russia, nationalism is becoming a distinct political force, Russian nationalists (anti-immigrant) growing from 2006 from only 14% to 28% in 2010 and in 2013 40% of the population support the idea. (Russia will have neighbor fight neighbor)

Christianity began to decline after the so-called enlightenment and today the way of Egypt (ancient pagan practices) has come to replace it. This is why Jeremiah 2:18 warns:

"And now what hast thou to do in the way of Egypt". (Jeremiah 2:18)

After examining what we have demonstrated here, one can comprehend why such prophecies that speaks of Egypt, Sodom and Samaria (another allegory of Mystery Babylon), at face value, seem to be addressing ancient history. But once it is understood how God predicted that Samaria will return and with it neopaganism; now we can read the prophecies and comprehend them with clarity; they are not exclusively for ancient Israel. Today we have Heathenry, also termed Heathenism or Germanic Neopaganism, is a modern pagan religion that surrounds the issue of white supremacy favoring Odinism or Wotanism. This is not the pre-Christian paganism of ignorance, but worse, for it represents a complete falling away and therefore has no excuse.

#### THE EAST BLOCK IS BECOMING HARLOT

And now we are beginning to see the Mount of Olives splitting in Eastern and Southern Europe: Belarus, Poland, Serbia, Croatia, Bosnia, Herzegovina, Ukraine and Russia where a

---

<sup>215</sup> The New York Times, December 12, 2018

revival is ensuing preferring the earliest cultures that are known to have used the Indo-European Swastika.

In the Eastern Block was the Vinca Culture of the Indo European nations in this case the Slavs and Vedic culture of Indo-Aryans, which attached great importance to the Swastika, known in Slavic world as 'Kolovrat' (two swastikas) which was a sacred symbol that carried a huge significance representing the pagan symbol of the Sun (Horos) which connects people with Slavic blood all over the World. Wooden Slavic monuments called "Idols" were usually depictions of Slavic gods and on most of these idols Slavs used to engrave them with Swastika.



Today Hors plagues the Slavic cultures. In Slavic mythology, Hors is the Slavic sun god comes from the Iranian word kursid (Khorshed) and Hebrew cheres meaning "the Sun". However, it all stems from the Egyptian Horus and Persian Khores with similar characteristics as Horz as a god of the Sun and like Svarozic is just another form of the Sun represented as the light of the Moon followed by the rising of the Sun. Thor, the sun god in Norse mythology was also the Egyptian Osiris and Kneph, the Phoenician Bel or Baal. It all connects:

"The beliefs of the Hindus, Persians, Egyptians, Greeks, Romans, and Celts have all yielded striking comparisons [to each other], and the Norse Gods display significant resemblances to members of other pantheons."<sup>216</sup>

The beast of Revelation is composed of a revived Greek (Leopard), Bear (Persian) and Babylonian (Lion). This encompasses much including the lands of the past ancient empires and perhaps much of the spiritual aspects as well. In essence, what Paul and John are telling us is that as we fall away, what we will have to face is the revival of all things past. In other words, Jesus' coming will be as He left: plagued with paganism.

And it all adds up. God's rescue of the faithful is similar to Israel drawn out of Egypt. It all stems from Egyptian idols. Now we know why Isaiah 19 regarding the Second coming

---

<sup>216</sup> A History of the Vikings, Oxford University Press, P.p, 319

addresses the world as “Egypt”: “the idols of Egypt will totter before Him” (every verse counts). Christ, in His first visit to Abraham came and destroyed Sodom (Genesis 19) and then He came as Messiah to destroy paganism (Isaiah 19) and in His Second Coming, He will do the same.

#### BUT THEY BELIEVE IN JESUS

Today is the world of oxymoron; expressions where one can find countless demonstrations carrying the image of Jesus and the cross alongside all sorts of pagan symbols and even gays are given the exception so long they say they are “Christian” and believe in “Jesus”. In Russia you can see flags of the Kolovrat (two swastikas) where nationalists march for what they called “Russian May Day” in northwestern Moscow. In these demonstrations they can be seen young and old including priests shouting “Russia is for Russians,” and angrier slogans, such as “get out, black dirt” – a reference to migrants from Central Asia and the Caucasus.



Today it has become hip to see Slavic culture and folklore who worship Slavic deities.<sup>217</sup> These carry the Kolovrat, an early Slavic symbol of the Sun curved outer three or four arms forming a broken circle. It has become common symbols on par with the crucifix. It is growing and spreading across Europe all the way into Russia by mixing paganism with Christianity.

---

<sup>217</sup> See Slavic Native Faith “often manifests in forms of nationalism, opposition to miscegenation and the belief in the fundamental difference of racial groups. Rodnovers often glorify Slavic history, criticizing the impact of Christianity in Slavic countries and arguing that these nations will play a central role in the world's future.” “harkens back to the pre-Christian beliefs and practices of ancient Slavic peoples” ““followers of some genuine pre-Christian Slavic, Russian or Slavic-Aryan Paganism” “The political philosophy of Rodnoverly can be defined as “nativism”, “nationalism” and “populism”, all of which render the Russian word *narodnichestvo*. This is often right-wing ethnic nationalism. Aitamurto suggested that Russian Rodnovers' conceptions of nationalism encompass three main themes: that “the Russian or Slavic people are a distinct group”, that they “have—or their heritage has—some superior qualities”, and that “this unique heritage or the existence of this ethnic group is now threatened—  
Wikipedia





They call it “Slavianstvo”, which in English is “Slavism”. These use the works of Julius Evola (1898–1974) where Myth, Culture and Tradition represent the primary mouthpiece of this movement and it includes all the Alt-Right in the U.S. where Breitbart News, the gay Milo Yiannopoulos cites Evola as godfather of their movement (Evolian Traditionalism) where millions consume Breibart’s fecal matter.

While such movements call for anti-Muslim immigration, one should ask, how is combating Islam by introducing Celticism to the West as a viable option? The tactic is simple to comprehend, fight what people abhor to feed them what they never expected to consume: “Sodom and Egypt.” Today even in the UK, Celticism has been mobilized for everything from devolution of political power in the United Kingdom to separatism in the American South and northern Italy to anti-immigration activism. It becomes obvious why Apocalypse proclaimed:

“The rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts. (Revelation 9:20-21)

Idol worship is returning exactly as scriptures foretold. How can the skeptic who is pushing such worship argue to refute God when He “proclaimed the end from the beginning” (Isaiah 46:10)? The pagan, after all, is doing his job accordingly; he is fulfilling biblical prophecies.

What we shall see coming ahead is more of ancient dead religions reviving from ancient Zoroastrianism in Iran to Buddhism in the Far East including Islam. These were crushed by Christian nations that controlled the world when the British Empire ruled India all the way to the east when Christendom triumphed over the Ottoman Empire and when Islam became somewhat dormant and we see it reviving today. As Islam rises, Christendom falls away.

In Latin America and many Spanish speaking Catholic nations we find all sorts of pagan cults sprouting from indigenous nativisms and utopias, to Folk-saint movements and spiritist cults which often use syncretism; that is, a mix of Christian and pagan symbols.

In Mexico a quarter million perished from the war on drugs. But cultic rituals accompany such use of drugs and as result death is ever present, and the resurrection of the



Santeria and Santa Muerte cults represents a new morbid normality that can only be compared to the gruesome executions of the ISIS cult in Syria. Santeria is an underground Caribbean religion in which African gods are identified with Roman Catholic saints, and of Palo Mayombe, a darker mix of voodoo and African gods with origins in the Congo. The Scripture even warns that even after much death and plague is poured upon the earth, the surviving still practice such sorceries.

#### ORTHODOX RUSSIA—INFESTED WITH HARLOTRY

Even in Orthodox Russia, while it heavily resisted, the plague grows with similarities to the Nazi occult, where the attempt is to blend neopaganism with Russian Orthodox Christianity as a political religion. This constitutes a danger regardless that the Moscow Patriarchy tend to condemn this ex cathedra. It all started brewing in the early nineties when it was marginal in small circles in the biggest cities until massive publications of Aleksandr Asov's "Book of Veles" derived from the ninth century before the introduction of Christianity. This is spreading to a wider public to nationalist organizations and large groups.

Ra, the ancient Egyptian god of the sun has spread in Russia and is claimed as the Russian Sun-god. It is no wonder why Isaiah prophesied: "The idols of Egypt will totter before Him [the Messiah]".

The signs that dark powers in Russia had been building an aggressive ethnic-oriented pseudo religion is taking old Slavic pagan traditions by building copies of old pagan monuments of wood and stone and then gather for some rituals where the divide and the war between Orthodox and the syncretistic faith is already beginning. The introduction of contemporary Slavic Paganism, Rodnoverie, contained strong nationalistic tendencies in reaction to globalization in Slavic seeking nations is not done by calling it "pagan" or "neopagan". The propagandists call it Vedism which to them reveals the importance of the connection to Eastern tradition derived from the Russian verb vedat' (to know) while some claim to be Pravoslavs (Orthodox Christian) linking to the nationalist movement.

The better term seems to be Rodnoverie<sup>218</sup> which also suites to academic discussions better than Vedism and Pravoslavie, both of which have their established meanings that have nothing to do with the revived pre-Christian Slavic spirituality. It was sold as a "spiritual exploration" of the Russian folklore with the goal to create an urban invisible movement that is political ultra-nationalistic, racist and anti-Semitic and is why the movement has got the extra attention. And with increased skepticism and the growth of atheism, many are ready to convert to the religion of their ancestors. Today many Slavs are resurrecting the ancient rituals and popularization of the religion of their ancestors. This

---

<sup>218</sup> In the early 1990s, disciples and leaders arose announcing "rodnovercheskih" communities, led by sorcerer Doctor of Philosophy and Ph.D. AN Nagovicyn. Other sorcerers like psychologist, GP Yakutovsky, AK Belov, KV Begtin (a candidate of physical and Mathematical Sciences), NN Speranski (scientist/geophysics), AV board, chemist, poet and publicist DA Gavrilov, Hasanov DA and others. Holding authority in these circles is also AA Dobrovolsky a national journalist and VN Bezverkhy who founded the secret "Society of the Magi" back in 1986 in Leningrad. The first officially registered neopagan religious association became the *Moscow Slavic Pagan Community* (MSYAO), registered by the Ministry of Justice of the Russian Federation in 1994 and the first pagan worship took place in Gorky worshipping the god of the sun – Horos

is exploding amongst youths in Ukraine. Rodnovery today are neopagans that worship ancient Slavic deities. The use of amulets of gold and silver, statues of deities made of wood, traditional clothes and musical instruments are building up a fortune for businessmen.

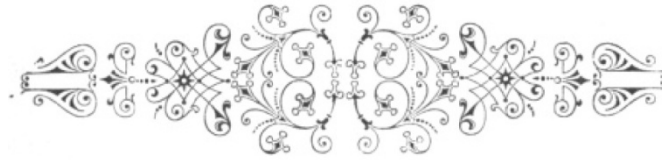
Even my Mexican sister in law in California has a store to sell Christian portraits is being visited more by customers asking for Santa Muerte and cultic icons instead of what she offers in her humble Christian store. Is it any wonder why scriptures also address Christ's coming to destroy idols of gold, silver, wood and stone?

Concerned about the rise of paganism, pope Francis began addressing it but ironically celebrated Pachamama. In a pre-Christmas speech 2018, the pope told some 20,000 pilgrims and tourists gathered in St Peter's Square in Vatican City: "Even we Christians, who are also the people of God, risk becoming worldly and losing our identity, 'paganising' the Christian style." Three days earlier in November of that year, the pope said at his Santa Marta guesthouse:

"The paganisation of life can occur, in our case the Christian life. Do we live as Christians? It seems like we do. But really our life is pagan, when these things happen: when we are seduced by Babylon, and Jerusalem lives like Babylon. The two seek a synthesis, which cannot be effected. And both are condemned. Are you a Christian? Are you Christian? Live like a Christian. Water and oil do not mix. They are always distinct. A contradictory society that professes Christianity but lives like a pagan shall end."

The Pope understands well the analogy in prophecy, as it seems, addressing the rise of paganism has become an annual feature. In 2016 in Assisi, Italy, he lamented that indifference among Christians was "giving rise to a new and deeply sad paganism". Prior in November 2014, in his daily homily for mass at the Vatican, the pope had urged the faithful against leading a "pagan life" for pagans are "enemies of the cross".

All this trouble stems from paganism which is spread by so-called the sophisticated and the educated who condition the masses by use of sophism and selected verbiage so that if peers read other refuting works that do not conform with their style including all their sarcastic allegories, they quickly ignore them and their students are trained to do the same. The devil sets his voice and so we must recognize the voice of our Shepherd.



## HOW THE SPIRIT OF ANTICHRIST UNITES ALL (EVOLUTIONISTS, PAGAN, JEWS, HINDUS AND MUSLIMS)

When Paul in Galatians 4 says that Jerusalem (Judaism) corresponds to Arabia we should pay close attention. My wakeup call was when I discovered that my web manager in Israel, a young man by the name of Max Gibson was dabbling into the forbidden fruit. Max adopted the Jewish name Mosheh Avraham, decided to leave his mother's Catholic faith and adopt his father's Jewish faith, had moved to Israel and become a member in one of the typical religious sects. I employed Gibson and helped him for over a decade not knowing he, for years, was writing Wiccan incantations under his Sumerian demon name Zosuk. My other Jewish assistant "Keith Davies" knew this and kept it secret. Avraham (Gibson) ended up a troublesome individual who believed he could summon demons for his service began to destroy our work to only end up in the hospital diagnosed as schizophrenic. He shut down the website, facebook and did all sorts of horrible things to our Christian work.

But such a curse was a blessing in disguise. The alarm bell had me digging deeper into my other Jewish colleague, Keith Davies, my assistant for years accompanied me in churches to proudly say to the public that he descends from King David's lineage via Israel Ben Eliezer known as Baal Shem Tov. After the wakeup call with Moshe, I finally decided to look up this Baal.

What I discovered linked all the dots and thank God He was refining me. Bel (Baal) Shem Tov was a major false prophet that set the direction for religious Jews worldwide. He derived his teachings to some extent from the Kabbalah and frequently employed kabbalist terminology to even claim he spoke to Messiah who instructed him to spread a message and convert the world to experience his "spiritual ascent" teaching the Lurianic doctrine of the raising of the holy sparks (nizozot) and that physical pleasure can give rise to spiritual pleasure and through contemplation of the alphabetical letters of the Torah man can open the divine worlds before him and receive mystical revelations: "the ideal of man is to be a revelation himself, clearly to recognize himself as a manifestation of God." If one is to mingle the Sufi theology of *Fana*, with *Kabbalism*, the only difference would be the two sister languages, one would do his incantations in Hebrew and the other in Arabic. Indeed, the Judaism of today is already the sister of Samaria. Through Keith's ancestor his demonic cult spread far and wide and it encompass the major portion of religious Jews worldwide.

Such concepts as Wisdom 2 exposed "spark from the beating of our heart" describe the essence of Sufism founded by Jalāl ad-Dīn Rumi.



The Kabbalist use is very similar to Rumi's Sufism. Rumi uses Satan's first deception with Eve. He lures women as creators of life and incites sexual pleasures by combining it with spirituality (so many are the so-called Christian authors who are getting into this). He explains the plight of the lost souls through reasoning which stems from the divine spark in the heart just as Wisdom 2 explained "reason a spark from the beating of our hearts" and searching for God and Self, seeking in the outer world for what really lies within as Wisdom 2 exposed "from the beating of our hearts" which stems from "the sun" and is later consumed by the sun "driven away by the beams of the sun".

**saint, who represents the spirit.<sup>156</sup> The image of the spirit as a white falcon imprisoned in the dwellingplace of crows and ravens is exactly the same as that often used for the soul: the snow of the corporeal world has to be dissolved by the Sun of Reality so that the bird can fly homeward. The summer and**

(Excerpt from *The Triumphal Sun: A Study of the Works of Jalāl ad-Dīn Rumi*)

Wisdom 2 exposed the scoffers when they say: "our life shall pass away as the trace of a cloud, and shall be dispersed as a mist, which [the soul] is driven away by the beams of the sun". Wisdom 2 is a prophecy rarely studied. What the prophecy explains is that the Crucifixion of Christ parallels with the persecution of Christians and if Jews used the Romans as the mule to carry out its evil plans to crucify our Lord, the same it shall be when they also plan the destruction of Christians, for they play a major part in creating the "isim" necessary from Marxism, Leninism, the advancement of Evolutionism, the very elements that caused more havoc to the massacring of Christians throughout history unfortunately came from Jews.

from our paths as from things impure. He calls blest the destiny of the righteous and boasts that God is his Father. Let us see whether his words be true; let us find out what will happen to him in the end [genocide]. For if the righteous one is the son of God, God will help him and deliver him from the hand of his foes. With violence and torture [death camps] let us put him to the test that we may have proof of his gentleness and try his patience. Let us condemn him to a shameful death [mass genocide]; for according to his own words, God will take care of him." These were their thoughts, but they erred; for their wickedness blinded them, And they did not know the hidden counsels of God; neither did they count on a recompense for holiness nor discern the innocent souls' reward. For God formed us to be imperishable; the image of his own nature he made us. But by the envy-of the devil, death entered the world, and they who are allied with him experience it." (Wisdom 2:12-23)

Shams-i-Tabrīzī (1185–1248), the master and mentor of Jalāl ad-Dīn Rumi, the most influential Muslim Sufi theologian and sage in all of Islam's history, taught that the sun is where the spirit come from and evaporates to. Rumi's influence transcends national borders and ethnic divisions: Sunni Turks, Shiite Syrians, Shiites Iranians, Sufi Egyptians, Sufi Tajiks, Sufi Pashtuns and other Central Asian Muslims including the Muslims of South Asia and many westerners. Even Japan's government is pushing to re-institute the worship of the sun goddess Amaterasu as their state religion and in Iran Zoroastrianism is growing and in Greece Hellenism is growing leaps and bounds and is currently recognized by the state while the Golden Dawn in Greece and CasaPound in Italy all look towards their misanthropes like Heinrich Himmler.



(ITALY, Ethnocentric Neo fascists with Nazi salute in front of the San Cassiano Cemetery in Predappio)

## WISDOM II A KEY TO UNLOCK GOG

Wisdom II describes to us what matches the Sufi Islam of Turkey and most of the Turkic other states that Erdogan wants to unite in his quest for Ottoman reunification. Psalm 22 pinpoints "Bashan" while Christ in Revelation 2 pinpoints "Pergamum" in Asia Minor as the "seat of Satan" and Ezekiel pinpoints "Gog" as "chief prince" of Mushki "Meshech" and Tabalani "Tubal" which are in the heart of Asia Minor who later on becomes the Assyrian of prophecy.

Therefore, to split Wisdom 2 from Psalm 22 and the rest of the prophetic scriptures misses a major clue not just as to who the enemy is, but the origin and nature of his belief system. It helps us understand who else is incorporated into this sphere of evil. Yet Wisdom 2 to the Protestant is not in their Canon of scripture.

There are literally libraries of examples confirming what Sufi Islam as well as Jewish Kabbalah, teaches which matches the basis of what Wisdom 2 revealed. For example, the founder of the Sufi Order in the West (US, Europe), teacher of Universal Sufism, Inayat Khan (1882 – 1927) reflects on this major Sufi teaching that the soul (just as Wisdom 2 exposed) is like a ray of the sun. Even the angels, who do not have physical bodies, in Sufi Islam are made of *nūr* (light), that comes from the divine Sun which is the Spirit of Allah. Sufism (like the Jewish Kabbaalism) teaches that all souls are made of light, or contain some part of that essence “a spark” or the “divine spark,” which is the essence of the whole manifestation.<sup>219</sup>

The divine Spirit is known by the mystics of all ages as the Sun, and therefore in all ancient mystical symbols the sun has been pictured as the sign of God. This conception gives further help in the knowledge of metaphysics. This Sun is that aspect of the Absolute God in which He begins to manifest and his first step towards manifestation is contraction, that contraction which is seen in all living beings and in all objects. It is first contraction that takes place and next expansion, which comes as a matter of course, as a reaction. The former tendency is the desire of inhalation and the latter exhalation. The contraction and expansion seen in all aspects of life comes from God Himself.

The omnipresent Light by this tendency becomes concentrated, and it is this concentrated Light of Intelligence which is the Sun recognized by the mystics. Shams-e-Tabriz mentions this in his verse: “When the sun of His countenance became manifest, the atoms of both worlds began to appear. As His light fell, every atom donned a name and a form.” The Hindus have called it in the Vedanta *chaitanya*, the Spirit or the Light of God. In the Qur’an it is mentioned: “We have made thy light out of Our Light, and of that Light We have made the whole universe.” In plain words this explains that when there was nothing—no form, no name, no person, no object—there was Intelligence. It is the contraction of that Intelligence which brought its essence into a form of Light, which is called the divine Spirit, and the expansion of the same Light has been the cause of the whole manifestation.

The manifestation is the exhalation of God, and what is called by Hindus *pralaya*—destruction or the end of the world—is absorption, which is the inhalation of God. The divine Spirit spreads Itself, which we call the manifestation containing various names and forms, and God contracts Himself, which humanity dreads and calls destruction. For this many blame God, many judge Him, and many think it unfair on the part of God to create and to destroy. But for God, who is the Only Being, this is the natural condition by which He eternally lives.

---

<sup>219</sup> See Khan, Hazrat Inayat, *The Heart of Sufism: Essential Writings of Hazrat Inayat Khan*. 2013-07-02 P.80

The soul, which is the ray of the divine Sun, in one sphere—the sphere in which it does not touch any earthly being—is called *malak*, or angel. Every soul passes through the angelic heavens; in other words, every soul is an angel before it touches the earthly plane. It is the angels who become human beings; those who do not become human beings remain angels. The human being, therefore, is a grown-up angel, and the angel is a soul who has not grown up. Infants who come on earth with their angelic qualities, and sometimes pass away without having experienced the life of the grown-up man, show us the picture of the original condition of the soul.

The idea that the angels are nearer to God is right according to this doctrine. Souls which have not journeyed farther are naturally close to the divine Spirit—they are angels. Someone asked the Prophet why man was greater than the angels, man who causes all the bloodshed on the earth, while the angels are always occupied in the praise of God. The answer was that the angels knew nothing of the earth, they knew God, and so they occupied themselves with God. But man is greater, for when he comes on earth he has much in the world to be occupied with, and he still pursues God.

All such will unite for modern Islam agrees with theistic evolution. Wisdom 2 describes with pinpoint accuracy that the haters of Christians falsely believe that from gaseous smoke of an explosion, like the sun, we come (evolution or theistic evolution), and that the soul returns to the sun. This is definitely Sufism extracted and refined from Hindu sources with its Western extensions from Theosophy to Jewish Kabbalah. Rumi explains what parallels Wisdom 2's definition:

“The divine spark then ensouls the body through the breath [just as Wisdom 2 exposed], spreading life and vitality from the heart and lungs. Human consciousness is due to such a metaphysical process, which brings the light of consciousness and the life principle into the heart. The divine spark exists always at the centre of our being [the heart] at zero point levels, and through the breath and blood, consciousness and life are infused into a living, breathing human being. Remembrance is recalling and living in this inner experience, which had strangely been forgotten, as the light has been so veiled.”<sup>220</sup>

And what difference is that from the Jewish Kabaalah? The Jewish Virtual Library states:

“In Safed, especially in the Lurianic Kabbalah, the idea of *nizozot ha-neshamot* ("sparks of the souls") was highly developed. Each "main" soul is built in the spiritual structure of "mystical limbs" (parallel to the limbs of the body), from which many sparks spread, each of which can serve as a soul or as life in a human body.”<sup>221</sup>

---

<sup>220</sup> Robert Frager/Sheikh Ragip, psychologist and Sufi Master in conversation with Jonathan Cott, On the Sea of Memory: A Journey from Forgetting to Remembering Random House, N. Y., 2005

<sup>221</sup> <https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/gilgul>

The Sufi Muslim Sheikh Ragip, provides lucid descriptions of essential Sufi practices and teachings:

“The secret of secrets is the divine spark within each of us ... It is to get in touch with that divine spark that God has placed within each human being. In the Koran it says that God breathed from the divine soul into Adam; another way of translating that would be that God placed a divine spark into every human being. And that divine spark is the secret of secrets. My master put it this way: That spark in us could set the whole universe on fire. Its greater than the universe itself because its a spark of what is infinite. And its within every one of us. Who we are is far more than who we think we are. “To practice remembrance,” you’ve said, “is to unveil the knowledge and power and beauty of this spark of God within us.”<sup>222</sup>

The Jewish Virtual Library also expounds:

“All the roots of the souls were in fact contained in Adam's soul, but they fell and were scattered with the first sin; the souls must be reassembled in the course of their gilgulim which they and their sparks undergo and through which they are afforded the opportunity to reconstitute their true and original structure.”<sup>223</sup>

Even Madam Blavatsky who described life’s origin as:

“material points without extension’ as the basis upon which the God’s and other invisible powers [in reality demons] clothe themselves in bodies. The divine spark then ensouls the body through the breath, spreading life and vitality from the heart and lungs. Human consciousness is due to such a metaphysical process, which brings the light of consciousness and the life principle into the heart. The divine spark exists always at the centre of our being at zero point levels, and through the breath and blood, consciousness and life are infused into a living, breathing human being. Remembrance is recalling and living in this inner experience, which had strangely been forgotten, as the light has been so veiled.”<sup>224</sup>

Sufism (like the Kabbalah) focuses on connecting spirituality with sensuality.

---

<sup>222</sup> Quoting Michael Aivanhohv in the *Origin And Nature Of Conciseness* by Christopher P. Holmes, P.p 1

<sup>223</sup> See A Dictionary of Kabbalah and Kabbalists by Dan Cohn Sherbok under Gilgul. Also see <https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/gilgul>

<sup>224</sup> *Origin And Nature Of Conciseness* by Christopher P. Holmes, P.p 1



erotic through sex and creation. The great Sufi mystic poets Hafez and Rumi revere union with God through a surrender to erotic love, divine love, and the love of friendship. I get chills from the depth of the surrender that Rumi writes about: "I merged so completely with love / and was so fused, that I became love / And love became me." I suggest reading such erotic poetry with your partner to honor the sensual sacrament of your relationship.

No wonder why Wisdom 2 revealed the scoffers focus on pleasure:

"Come therefore, and let us enjoy the good things that are present, and let us speedily use the creatures as in youth. Let us fill ourselves with costly wine, and ointments: and let not the flower of the time pass by us. Let us crown ourselves with roses, before they be withered: let no meadow escape our riot. Let none of us go without his part in luxury: let us everywhere leave tokens of joy: for this is our portion, and this our lot." (Wisdom 2:7-9)

Such ideas are no divine spark from the heart, but from below, from the bowl movements excreted by wizards like Baal Shem Tov and Jalāl ad-Dīn Rumi which sprouted from Hinduism and Sumer long before.

From ancient biblical times, Jews have struggled with paganism. Even throughout their existence under Christianity, they have combined a relationship between magic, mysticism, and liturgy. Even under Christian rule in the fifteenth century *Sepher ha-Mashiv*, the practitioners of this tradition as described by Israel's renown scholar Moshe Idel as: "interested in demonology and the use of coercive incantations to summon demons, angels, and even God" in order to hasten the Messianic Age.

Among recorded figures from early-modern times were Elijah Ba'al Shem of Chelm (1550–1583) and the Baal Shem of London (1708–1782). Yisrael Baal Shem Tov then began his activity as a traditional Baal Shem, before founding Hasidism one of the largest religious Jewish movements in the world.

So as it turns out, Keith's ancestor, his spiritual revival movement in contemporary Western Ukraine during the 18th century had spread rapidly throughout Eastern Europe developed the Baali Kabbalah involving approved methods between practical Kabbalah and meditative Kabbalah. This incorporated the use of amulets and psychic abilities.

So now I began to finally comprehend how Gibson (Moshe Avraham) obtained his delusions from Keith's ancestor.

In Israel today we find a sprouting Canaanite Reconstructionism with links to ancient Canaanite culture and the land—indeed the very soil—is highlighted alongside identity politics with Canaanism, that climaxed during the 1940s under the British Mandate which had significant effect on the course of Israeli art, literature and spiritual and political thought.

That one grew out of Revisionist Zionism with its early roots in European extreme right-wing movements, notably Italian fascism with most members were part of the Irgun or Lehi that committed the massacre of Dayr Yassin. While their influence was limited, the influence on art, literary and intellectual life in Israel was noticeable. Then amongst the religious, practical Kabbalah constituted an agglomeration of all the magical practices that developed in Judaism from the Talmudic period down through the Middle Ages. And while

the Talmud deceptively claimed it forbids divination it hid rabbinic mysticism, which focused around exegesis of Ezekiel's vision of the divine Chariot-Throne. The elite practical mysticism, as described in the Hekhalot literature, evolved into magical incantation elements.

So Israel today “gives comfort to Sodom” and is already “Samaria”. Either Isaiah was a ‘perfect guesser’ or there is a perfect God.

So many are the movements today that are rising to even accuse Christianity of the brutal destruction of the legacy of the “Great Ancestors”. Today, on many of these forums, Christianity is treated as an evil ideology created by Jews desiring to establish their own dominance of the world and the subjugation of all peoples. What the Jew and Muslim sparks will finally haunt them too where in the end a remnant will see their folly.

Whether European or Slavic, it's rooted in Nazi-style rhetoric full of latent or open Jew hatred and is rapidly growing throughout Europe, even in Orthodox Russia and the US. That is besides homosexuality that also came from pagans to shake up our moral fabric. Homosexuals including their acolytes biblically are considered pagan regardless if some claim to confess the Christian faith. The approval of homosexuality in itself is pagan and in the US such support has reached over half whom consider themselves professing Christians. This has been brewing since the 1990s, based on inspiration from the English-speaking world particularly the U.S. It was from the U.S., that this (including all the Eugenics) working with Jewish and gentile anti-Christian scholars was sent out like a flood catapulted all the way into Germany and is now being repackaged and resold allover again from the U.S.

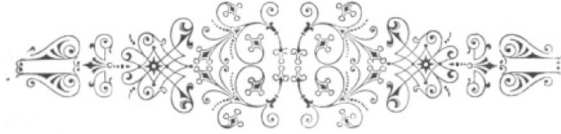
It is no wonder why on average Jews who joined the Wehrmacht were more than the German mules.

The scholarly revival of interest in ancient Germanic traditions (especially in Europe) arose as early as the 16th century. It culminated in the “Viking revival” of 19th and 20th centuries, prior to World War I. It had mostly disappeared after God judged Germany and is now reviving allover again. What took World War II to end (70–85 million people perished) is now back on the scene and is now originating from North America and Iceland since the early 1970s and is now growing rapidly in Europe where Christianity is treated as an evil ideology since (according to their claim) Christianity was created by Jews in order to establish their own dominance of the world and the subjugation of all peoples.

It is a cycle of violence, the Jewish elites had the Romans kill Christ and the Romans hunted them, and these same wealthy elitists want the end of Christianity and in the end their lovers will hunt them. The Jew is his own worst enemy.

Even from movements that seem to be ‘normal’ heterosexual, most of the neopaganism is being repackaged under ‘conservatism’ where we find Slavic neopaganism glorifying the “warrior culture,” affirming traditional gender roles, openly espouse ethnocentrism and critiques contemporary civilizational norms while roughly paralleling the ways in which Islam (in Turkey) and Hinduism (in India) are employed for political projects in the twenty first century.

And so now it becomes easy to understand how Antichrist unites all religions.



## THE PERSECUTION BY EXTERMINATION (EUTHANASIA)

During this time, civil unrest will permeate the cities under the Harlot, even including the whole of Israel. This is when “neighbor fights against neighbor,” “city against city ...” in a world engulfed in global civil unrest like that of pagan Egypt (the world):

“the Lord of hosts, will, take away from Jerusalem and from Judea the mighty man an mighty woman, the strength of bread, and the strength of water ...”

“And the people shall fall, man upon man, and man upon his neighbor:  
the child shall insult the elder man, and the base the honorable.” (Isaiah 3:1-2)

With an aging highest population being of baby boomers there will be a collapse of the health system. The solution then becomes Eugenics that will cause rampant Euthanasia, which will spread (2 Wisdom 2). It will first focus on the elderly than on Christians:

Let us oppress the poor just man, and not spare the widow, nor honor the ancient grey hairs of the aged. But let our strength be the law of justice: for that which is feeble, is found to be nothing worth. (Wisdom 2:11)

“I was wroth with my people, I have polluted mine inheritance, and given them into your hand: thou didst show them no mercy; upon the elderly hast thou very heavily laid thy yoke.” (Isaiah 47:6)

Prophecy even foretold about the rise of Evolution and Eugenics ‘survival of the fittest’ and “We came into being by chance” (Wisdom 2:2). These are evolutionists who see that the elderly should be exterminated since it is ‘the survival of the fittest’.

Let us lie in wait for the righteous one, because he is **annoying to us**; he opposes our actions, Reproaches us for **transgressions of the law** and charges us with **violations of our training**. He professes to have **knowledge of God** and **styles himself a child of the LORD**. To us **he is the censure of our thoughts**; merely to see him is a hardship for us, Because his life is not like that of others, and different are his ways. He **judges us debased**; he holds aloof from our paths as from things impure. He **calls blest the destiny of the righteous** and **boasts that God is his Father**. Let us see whether his words be true; let us **find out what will happen to him in the end** [genocide]. For if the righteous one is the son of God, God will help him and **deliver him from the hand of his foes**. With **violence and torture** [death camps] let us put him to the test that we may have proof of his gentleness and try his patience. Let us **condemn him to a shameful death** [mass genocide]; for according to his own words, God will take care of him." **These were their thoughts, but they erred**; for their wickedness blinded them, And they **did not know the hidden counsels of God**; neither did they count on a **recompense for holiness nor discern the innocent souls' reward**. For **God formed us to be imperishable; the image of his own nature he made us**. But by the **envy-of the devil, death entered the world, and they who are allied with him** experience it." (Wisdom 2:12-23)

Doctors will be Eugenists. They will proclaim their opinion about the Christian:

"he [the Christian] is annoying to us; he opposes our actions, Reproaches us for transgressions of the law and charges us with *violations of our training*."

"Violations of our training" and "Transgressions of the law?" What "training" and what "law"? The Christian always insists that eugenics violates both, civil law as well as the laws of science and the laws of God. The Christian complains that the eugenics so-called *science* is nothing more than *pseudoscience*. In other words, the persecutor of the Christian, the advocates of eugenics, quotes the Christian as saying that "[he, the Christian] charges us with *violations of our training*" and "*transgressions of the law*," so that eugenics goes contrary to *their vocation* as *scientists* and *moralists*. Who else besides the Christian insist that scientists must adhere to science rather than fiction? Do they not always advance by proclaiming their works as '*scientific*' when in our view it is pseudoscientific? And who had stopped them during the dark parts of their history? Was it not the Christians who are the main "obstacle in their way"?

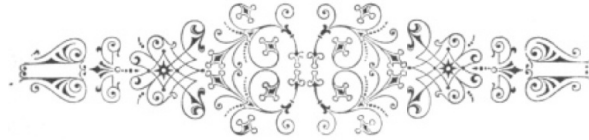
Amazing how this prophecy weaves in the Church as active in Christ's Passion and also includes how Christ and His seed are viewed by the Eugenist:

"to us he [Christ as well as the Christian] is the censure of our thoughts; merely to see him is a hardship for us, Because his life is not like that of others, and different are his ways. He judges us debased; he holds aloof from our paths as from things impure. He calls blest the destiny of the righteous and boasts that God is his Father."

Isn't this the crux of our book here? Am I not judging the Eugenist and the homosexual as "debased" while I plead the case to My Father in heaven to take refuge with Him? And is it not true that such 'final solution' was somewhat fulfilled. The Young Turks (these were not Islamist) in the name of Eugenics massacred the Christian Armenians, Assyrians and Greeks with supervision from the Germans (the pioneers of Protestantism) who later on massacred millions of Polish Catholics and Jews. The Armenians said 'God is our Father' just as Christ Who also said that God is His Father.

Does not “Blest the destiny of the righteous” remind of Christ’s speech “blessed are you when they persecute you for righteousness sake?” Christ was simply quoting Wisdom, a book that Protestants removed.

In England, Brexit will encourage regional and separatist movements in other European countries. Europe’s aging population will (in the view of the wicked) undermine economic output, shift consumption toward services—like health care—and away from goods and investment. This will cause Europe to soon resort to Euthanasia. A shortage of younger workers will reduce tax revenues, fueling anger towards immigration and mistrust in the elites causing armchair revolutionaries to lead. This will eventually revert us back to French revolution style. The focus on immigration will radically alter national cultures and cause a rise towards populism and ultra-nationalism, which will lead to “nation rise against nation”.



## A SUMMARY OF WHAT PROPHECY WARNS

Going forth from here, we shall disclose many prophecies that speak of the falling away, symbolized Jerusalem as “Egypt” and by extension the falling away in general experiences a massive ecclesial “earthquake” quickly spinning us backwards to a pre-Christian era which already struck. We are simply witnessing the aftershocks, which will continue and increase in severity and speed like birth pangs. This allegoric earthquake represents demographic and moral shifts backwards to pre-Christian history even including a throwback to paganism and tribal divides which can already be observed sprouting in Northern Europe. This will increase in time adding syncretism with Ásatrú, Heathenry, Odinism, Wotanism, Theodism and Ariosophy (wisdom concerning the Aryans). And in Western Europe, in what was Celtic and Celto-Romano culture, now there is a return to Druidry “Old Religion,” Celtic Reconstructionism, Wicca and Goddess Worship. And in Southern Europe where once was the Hellenic and Latinate culture, there you will find a return to Hellenismos, Religio Romana, Stregheria (la vecchia religione), Thor, the sun god in Norse mythology was also the Egyptian Osiris and Kneph, the Phœnician Bel or Baal. Then we have the rise of Aztec paganism and the cult of death in Mexico and Latin America while mingling such cults with Christian façade sprouting as far as Greece, with the Metropolis of Piraeus confronting the rise of the Golden Dawn. While the latter lost all its parliamentary seats yet casting a long shadow and continues to shape Greek politics into different movements like the New Democracy opening its doors to a number of far-right politicians, who ran successful campaigns in the recent election some of them had previously expressed strong xenophobic and anti-Semitic views.

We shall expound several prophecies on Mystery Babylon the Great where nations, regardless of who represents their spiritual fountain, be they of Mecca, Jerusalem or Rome comes the rise of massive lawlessness, plagues, instability, revolutions and inter-city disturbances and clashes between people from neighborhood against neighborhood to national conflicts unlike anything we have ever seen before.

Post Christian nations will split apart weakening them while Muslim nations will strengthen under “the Assyrian,” where a neo-Ottoman alliance is established as result of this demographic earthquake in southern Russian states and the Balkans. A retake of what once was Muslim regions spark from Jarablus in Syria spreading into Armenia, Syria, Iraq and northern Israel as well as into Eastern Europe.

Two post-Christian Protestant power pegs will join the Muslim confederacy and give allegiance to it. It will be the Apostolic Succession Christians who will be betrayed while Protestants will grow wealthier and prosper. The leaven of Protestant humanism and the Masonic Lodge will begin to consume more where the remnant un-conformists find themselves becoming isolated even further since laws will become lawless and in the name of “Mother Earth” the elderly are euthanized and Christian judges are pursued for attempting to keep the medical system follow the law.

Homosexuality and Lesbianism will create a huge crisis of masculinity for men were feminists rule. This opens the doors for fascist rulers to come up during this crisis period of unrest and instability in several countries as we have seen in Italy where ‘right versus left’ adding further civil strife, soon a Mussolini type figure will arise to supposedly ‘fix everything and bring order’.

Prophecy even defines the homosexual agenda which will become relentless wanting to enter the gates of justice and tear down all of Christianity’s moral fabric. In the United States we already witness the camp of theologians who argue that Sodom’s sin was not homosexuality. This is growing and surpassing the upright, arguing that Sodom’s sin was “the lack of hospitality” and waxing cold towards the poor migrants. So to these, Sodom was simply being frugally cheap and was guilty of “radical inhospitality” since they had “pride, excess of food, and prosperous ease”.<sup>225</sup> But such an interpretation perfectly describes the interpreters (tares) for their love is waxing cold and under their watch, divorce happens on a flip of a dime. Indeed these are also “haughty” (Ezekiel 16:49-50) and extremely spoiled. This describes exactly the very peoples who use these verses as an argument for homosexuality when such verses actually condemn them. These say that since Sodom was “unconcerned,” “arrogant,” and lacked charity that is why God destroyed them and not for the sodomy issue. Therefore, they conclude that the sin is not homosexuality but arrogance and inhospitality while completely ignoring “They were haughty and did detestable things before me.” The effect is that they “did detestable things,” (homosexuality) and the cause was “arrogance,” being “overfed,” and “unconcerned,” about others.

On the other side there is the fascistic in NATO and especially Germany. These cause a refugee crisis in Syria and in Iraq and no one cares and in fact hate the refugees who are fruitful and do multiply. These extract the cause and drop the effect in order to counter truth. The tares always employ sophistry and reductionism and scripture twisting is applied to fit an evolving and flip-flopping social standards. They constantly apply flawed interpretation; “arrogance” and being “overfed” is the leaven and the batch that such things spoiled are the people who did these “detestable things”.

The latter is the destruction of the whole batch and the former is the leaven. The homosexuals were always here, but now that the majority is supporting this, they desire to destroy everything God had ordained. How then can one explain “they parade their sin like Sodom does” if the sin of Sodom is only the lack of hospitality? How can these parade “lack of hospitality?” They parade the effects—“They parade their sin like Sodom does” Gay Pride! “They do not even try to hide it,” Coming Out Of The Closet! And “the look on their faces testifies against them” they look effeminate. Isaiah explains two camps:

“Youths oppress my people, women rule over them. My people your guides lead you astray; they turn you from the path. The Lord takes His place in court; He rises to judge the people” (Isaiah 3:12-13)

God has already filed a lawsuit. Count #1—children have become detestable. They are disobedient and disrespect their elders. Count #2—women rule over men.

---

<sup>225</sup> If in doubt search “Sodom” and Hospitality” on Google and review the massive articles and countless supposedly research material spreading misinformation from Jewish and so-called Christian scholars, writers and major media

The West reversed the order of what God intended to being fruitful and multiply and fill the earth instead of clustering in cities. They reversed the order of fertility and now men get married with men and this is spread worldwide from this Babylon. Evangelicals support birth control and some men even get clipped and in every church pastors are kowtowing to women and putting down the men as if the men are guilty of everything and the women are innocent of everything.

This corresponds to the first prophecy in Genesis where Eve was lured and then lured Adam. He listened to her and mankind is fulfilling the original sins. As a result, we have the highest rate of divorce mostly initiated by women. Today many will froth like rabid dogs and snap with scorpion stings when we express all this because the Holy Spirit is not within them but are of a different spirit because these tares twist the scriptures to fit and match the evolving sick culture.

Today's interpreters are even more cunning than the so-called reformers. Romans Chapter One is not simply an instruction on moral law; Paul here is shedding the light expounding the Old Testament prophets when "the wrath of God" is poured out at the end, in the last seal. Plagues will increase to a point were even mentioning God becomes prohibited over bodies that are cremated as result of the coming plagues. The anti-Christian sentiment will increase forcing apostolic succession Christians and Evangelical good Samaritans to comply in the West and the North, in India and in China. In much of the world the Communion will be abolished and then replaced with an abominable one by the great schism.

God allows the persecution since only by refining as gold is refined through fire (persecution) to finally replace what was lost when massive folds from non-Christian nations escapes in a massive exodus. This global migration will ensue where Christians who refuse to comply prepare for an escape out of major cities after much mayhem and holocausts. God will send Two Witnesses to combat Sodom and the sign of St. Mary will appear in heaven and the Mother of God will appear to the remnant as she will help convert masses of Muslims since Fatima and Guadalupe are words of Arabic construct; Fatima is an Arabic name and Wāda Lubba (Arabic for Guadalupe) literally means God is in her heart; the Sacred Heart.

There will be tremendous conversion, not from the elite, but from the very enemy the Fascists will continue wanting to pit us against; Muslim migrants, Hindus and others who will convert by the droves and join this exodus from the northern and western regions of the world even including from as far as China (biblical "Sinnim") to get ready that the earth swallows the waves of the "dragon" (the Assyrian Crescent and his fallen allies from fallen Christendom) for the woman of Revelation 12 defeats the dragon and stomps on his symbol (the Crescent). From Israel, to Syria, to the ends of the earth, the war from heaven will ensue to re-establish what was lost and destroy what Satan established.<sup>226</sup>

---

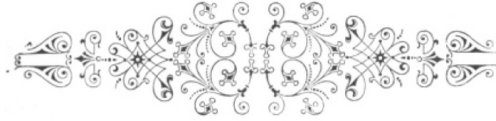
<sup>226</sup> Note: we shall dissect Mystery Babylon in much detail as to its cities in furthering chapters. Be patient.



SECTION III

THE ASSYRIAN

(HIS CONQUESTS AND HIS FALL)



## THE ASSYRIAN'S CONQUESTS

“And of the *ten horns* that were in his head, and of the *other* [11<sup>th</sup>] which came up, and before whom *three fell*; even of *that horn* that had eyes, and a mouth that spoke very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows.” (Daniel 7:20)

In Daniel 11, this one conquers Egypt, Cush (Sudan, Somalia) and Phut (north Africa) (collectively 3 horns). When prophecy deals with the beast it is always a 10-horned empire exclusive the 11<sup>th</sup> horn. Again, the 10-horned “beast” is simply the mule which the “harlot” (allegoric “Egypt,” “Babylon the Great,” “Sodom”) and Antichrist use it to carry out the harlot’s wishes (destroy Christians). This beast stems from Asia Minor, expands its sphere of influence towards the post Soviet Union includes Islamic nations of what used to be Southern Russia, Egypt, North Africa, Syria, Iraq and the Fertile Crescent. Most make the mistake of viewing the threat as mainly from the “beast”. But this view undermines the crucial factor, prophecy reveals that both, collectively (harlot and beast) are the greatest destructive threat to the church. This 11<sup>th</sup> horn is of the 10-horned sphere of the beast but since the allegories always mention the 10-horned beast, as to why it never says 11, is unknown. Prophecy does not disclose why. Is this one perhaps in control of *both harlot and beast*? This is why we have another lamb looking beast with two horns that mandates all to give allegiance to the 10-horned beast. Whether we have two beasts and a harlot or perhaps this second lamb looking beast with two horns stems from the harlot we must keep an open mind till things are clear in the horizon. Yet one thing is certain, that if it looks like a lamb it is a fallen entity, either Christian claiming or another heretical sect like Islam.

But before we can identify his expeditions, one point is crucial, is that when Christ speaks of the “Abomination of Desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet” and when Ezekiel 38 speaks of an invasion by “Gog” from the “land of Magog” (Asia Minor) we are forced to consider Daniel in a different light than what was fulfilled as a type in Antiochus Epiphanes. This rule should also apply to other prophecies by Isaiah. When this one in Daniel 11 conquers “Libya” (north Africa) and from his home territory this would set his natural enemies as Russia (north of Turkey) and southern Europe (north of Libya) where the remnants both Russia and southern Europe will be Apostolic Succession Christians. These are the closest nations to Turkey; Spain to North Africa (under his dominion) and Russia is across Asia Minor to the north.



So when we read Daniel 11 and see:

“And the galleys shall come upon him, and the Romans, and he shall be dealt *a heavy blow*.”<sup>227</sup>

Rome gives him “a heavy blow” and “tidings out of the east and out of the north shall trouble him” (v. 44) that would be north of Turkey which is Russia. These prophecies set his natural enemies as Russia and southern Europe where the remnants there are Apostolic Succession Christians.

The Assyrian starts off his campaign by correctly accusing certain nations of being pagan. First, let us pinpoint this man and consider every prophecy about him. Isaiah 10 records this “Assyrian” who says:

“Is not Calno [in Iraq] like Carchemish [in Turkey]? Is not Hamath [in Syria] like Arpad [in Turkey]? Is not Samaria like Damascus [in Syria]?” (Isaiah 10:9)<sup>228</sup>

Many contemporary interpreters file this prophecy to when ancient Assyria proposed (a design which it soon after tried to carry out under Sennacherib) to destroy Judah and

<sup>227</sup> Jerome, Commentary on Daniel p. 132

<sup>228</sup> It is a repeat of the wars of Sennacherib’s campaigns in the Levant who also is the destroyer of Babylon. He was of the Sargonid Dynasty of the Neo-Assyrian Empire.

Jerusalem, as it had destroyed Samaria as the first part of Isaiah's prophecies under Hezekiah (722 - 715 B.C). We shall argue that this fulfillment was simply a type since Micah 5 and Isaiah 14 also speaks of the "Assyrian" in an apocalyptic setting, which St. Cyril affirms.<sup>229</sup>

The phrase in verse 9 is a declaration for the re-unification of the Levant, lands that were previously his fathers' empire. The "Assyrian" is the one who conquers "Carchemish" (in northern Syria bordering Turkey), "Arpad" (Tell Rifaat also in northern Syria bordering Turkey) and "Damascus" (in Syria). He then desires to re-unify Hamath (in Syria) Calno (Iraq) and Samaria (northern Israel) as his next trophies. Isaiah 10 simply records the Assyrian's grand project to re-unify the entire Levant—that is the Fertile Crescent under his rule. This sound bite "Is not Calno like Carchemish? Is not Hamath like Arpad? Is not Samaria like Damascus," tell us how, where and why he initiates his campaigns. In other words, the Assyrian is saying this: why is Calno (near Baghdad) not part of Carchemish in Turkey and if Hamath in Syria is also included why then is Samaria in Israel not part of it as well? He desires to include what was once lost by the Ottoman Empire.

#### UNDERSTANDING THE ASSYRIAN'S MINDSET

The Assyrian's speech is a clue. It closely resembles many of Erdoğan's who continually calls to unite what was once an Ottoman dominion. In speech after speech, Erdoğan has always used this type of language similar to how Isaiah 10 expresses it "Is not Calno like Carchemish?" It was Erdoğan who supported the independence of Albanian Muslims in the Republic of Kosovo where Christ's demographic earthquake hit that region. Erdoğan was telling a cheering crowd in the capital of Priština that: "Turkey is Kosovo and Kosovo is Turkey."

In other words, is not Kosovo like Carchemish?

If there is anyone in the world today who resembles the Assyrian's speech it is Erdoğan. Is he the Assyrian of this prophecy? We cannot be certain at this time if it is he or another after him, for many follows his footsteps in emulation, but this has been a general message by the neo-Ottomanists. His language is similar when it comes to the Palestinians: they, too, are claimed as Ottoman Muslims. On one speech Erdogan said:

"God willing, our flag will continue to wave in the highest bastions forever. For this, what have we said? We have said one nation with Turks, Kurds, Laz, Caucasians, Abkhazians, Bosniaks and Roma people. I do not love a Turk for being a Turk, a Kurd for being a Kurd, or a Laz for being a Laz. I love them because Allah who has created me has created the 77 million people."

In other words is not Kurdistan like Turkey, is not Bosnia like Turkey?

If there is a master key to this code of the New Turkey, it is a re-imagined Ottoman-Islamic identity. As a historical term, Ottomanism refers to a nineteenth-century project of the Ottoman bureaucracy, inaugurated by the Reforms of 1839. These proto-Kemalist policies responded to divisive nationalist movements in the Balkans by articulating a supra-religious

---

<sup>229</sup> "By the Assyrian," says Cyril, "he here means no longer a man out of Babylon, but rather marks out the inventor of sin, Satan"—Edward Pusey, *The Minor Prophets*, Vol II, Chapter V, p. 74

combined with supra-ethnic Ottoman identity that served as the foundation of a single unified, westernized state. Loyalty to the sultan was replaced by loyalty to the Ottoman fatherland (*watan*) with Islam playing as the unifying central role than it did under Kemal's Republic.

This spark began when a demographic earthquake struck and collapsed the Soviet Union when the disintegration of Yugoslavia began including the systematic campaign of genocide against the Bosnian Muslims and the first Gulf War by the US and since then, this became the necessary spark to launch the Neo-Ottoman dream as a new domestic and foreign policy by creating a multicultural, pro-European, and Islamic hegemony attempting to join the EU.

In other words, to understand the Assyrian's war campaigns and what his empire encompasses, we must examine the entire theme from Isaiah 10 (his takeover of Carchemish), then Isaiah 11 the massive Christian escape from allegoric Egypt, which Isaiah refers to as the second exodus. Such theme was never fulfilled in history and is why they do not make sense *historically* since *collectively* they are meant for the *time of the end*. This is especially true when we see in Isaiah 10 how God smites the Assyrian:

“And the LORD of hosts shall stir up a scourge for him according to the slaughter of Midian at the rock of Oreb: and as his rod was upon the sea, so shall he lift it up *after the manner of Egypt*.” (Isaiah 10:26)

“*After the manner of Egypt*” is what caused the exodus of Moses. So here this prophecy is speaking of an end-times exodus. Therefore, this “Assyrian” in Isaiah 10 can never be Sennacherib, especially since the whole Christian exodus is in the following chapter 11. This is indeed an exodus also “after the manner of Egypt”. None of this happened historically. When fitting the prophetic puzzle together, unless we have the correct piece, none of the other prophecies would make any sense. To show this, we need such geographic locators of origin and expeditions or else it becomes difficult to pinpoint the Assyrian's ambitions.

Allow us to show what we mean by conclusive evidence. He wants to include Calno (the site of ancient Babylon near Baghdad) qualifying him as “king of Babylon”<sup>230</sup> and Daniel tells us that one will conquer Egypt qualifying him as Pharaoh of Egypt, he conquers Libya and Cush qualifies him as Nimrod.

“then shall he say, Have I not taken the country above Babylon and Chalanes [Calno], where *the tower was built*? And have I *not taken Arabia*, and *Damascus*, and *Samaria*?” (Isaiah 10:9)

This “Assyrian,” is no doubt “Gog, of the land of Magog” becomes the ruler of “Babylon” (“Chalanes, [Calno] where the tower was built”) and also takes “Arabia,” “Damascus,” in Syria, and “Samaria” (northern Israel, Israel's “neck”).

So let us consider the extent of all this; being “chief prince of Meshech and Tubal,” now become “the Assyrian” (since he conquers “Babylon” and Calno in Iraq) he also becomes “Pharaoh of Egypt,” and his conquering of Arabia and Israel in Isaiah 21 by Persia (Iran) which is Gog's ally in Ezekiel 38. He is then also mentioned by Jeremiah 51:27 “Ararat,

---

<sup>230</sup> For example, Cyrus, though he was king of Persia when he conquered Babylon he became king of Babylon (see Ezra 5:13)

Minni and Ashkenaz”—Magog, “Ararat” is where the Ark of Noah settled—and “Assyria” is in Psalm 83 invading Israel with “the people of Tyre” (Lebanon) so now he also qualifies as “the Prince of Tyre” which is in Lebanon where in this very prophecy in Isaiah 10, God declared that Christ finally defeats Lebanon “Lebanon shall fall by The Mighty One” (Isaiah 10:34). And in Ezekiel 28 the “Prince of Tyre” (Prince of Lebanon) is obviously an Antichrist:

“Son of man, say unto the *prince of Tyre*, Thus saith the Lord Jehovah: Because thy heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, *I am a god, I sit in the seat of God, in the heart of the seas*, (and thou art a man, and not God,) and thou set thy heart as the heart of God” (Ezekiel 28:2)

“You were in *Eden*, the garden of God (Ezekiel 28:13)

“You were the anointed cherub who covers.” (Ezekiel 28:14)

Therefore, this “Tyre” is not the ancient Tyre though the ancient fulfillments are a type for the destruction, but the prophecy is for Mystery Babylon.<sup>231</sup> So we now know for certain that this is the same figure in Isaiah 14 since his title in that chapter is “the Assyrian”. And since he is “the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal,” which is in “Ionia” that is “Yavan” in Turkey in the “north,” Zechariah 9:14 says: “Then the LORD will ...

---

<sup>231</sup> “And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the LORD: it shall not be treasured nor laid up; for her merchandise shall be for them that dwell before the LORD, to eat sufficiently, and for durable clothing.” How is ancient Tyre redeemed unless this is regarding Tyre’s falling away depicting the Harlot of Babylon “whose traffickers are the honourable of the earth” (Isaiah 23:8) “He stretched out his hand over the sea, he shook the kingdoms: the LORD hath given a commandment *against the merchant city*, to destroy *the strong holds* thereof.” (Isaiah 23:11) This is the first or second woe, one of the two woes of Mystery Sodom in Ezekiel 16:23: “Then it came about after all your wickedness (*Woe, woe* to you!’ declares the Lord GOD)”. The year 2038 (see Isaiah 23:17) “seventy years” from when Jerusalem went to Israel June 5<sup>th</sup>, 1967 will be 2038 “Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the Lord’s hand *double [2 woes] for* all her sins.” “Babylon is fallen is fallen” Isaiah 40 continues with: “The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: And the glory of the Lord shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.” Isaiah 40 ultimate fulfillment is the cry of John the Baptist in the wilderness (the church in the wilderness) to also prepare from the Second Coming. St. Bridget of Sweden: “When the feast of St. Mark shall fall on Easter [April 25, 2038], the feast of St. Anthony on Pentecost [June 13, 2038] and that of St. John the Baptist on the feast of Corpus Christi [June 24, 2038], the whole world shall cry, *Woe!*” (Spring of 2038) see The Christian Trumpet by Fr. Gaudentius Rossi Pellegrino p 23. April 22, 23, and 24 of 2038. Easter Sunday falls on the feast of St. Mark, April 25, 2038. This is one of two “woe” of Ezekiel 16:23. On 25 January 1938, *The New York Times* reported “*Aurora Borealis* Startles Europe; People Flee in Fear, Call Firemen.” The celestial display was seen from Canada to Bermuda to Austria to Scotland, and short-wave radio transmissions were shut down for almost 12 hours in Canada.” In September of 1938, Dr. Carl Stoermer of the Institute of Theoretical Astrophysics in Oslo, Norway, published an article in a scientific journal indicating that the incident of January 25 was of unaccountable origin and mysterious in nature. He wrote that throughout the exhibition there was a noise “similar to the sound of burning grass and brush” in contrast to the silence of an aurora borealis. In spite of much study and investigation, scientists were unable to explain the great light that “struck fear into the hearts of millions” (F. Johnston). Rand McNally, Jr., a renowned nuclear physicist who worked on the Manhattan Project during World War II, has discovered that some of the properties of the 1938 “great light” matched almost exactly the artificial aurora created in the 1958 Johnston Island “Teak” atomic test.



march forth in the whirlwinds of the *south*” going north to fight “Ionia” all this makes it crystal clear that we might have pin-pointed this branch of Antichrist and the Temple where one of the two desecrates.

Therefore, he rules several entities while establishing himself on the temple of God. Antichrist can qualify to having all such titles, after all, Cyrus, the King of Persia after conquering Babylon was also called “king of Babylon”:

“However, in the first year of Cyrus king of Babylon, King Cyrus issued a decree to rebuild this house of God.” (Ezra 5:13)

His kingdom becomes the “Assyrian” Empire because he says “I will remove the boundaries of nations” (Isaiah 10:13) and Israel obviously makes a covenant with the Assyrian since “Jacob shall no more trust in, them that injured them; but they shall trust in the Holy God of Israel, in truth.” (Isaiah 10:20) And only a remnant will believe since “And though the people of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a *remnant of them* shall be saved.” (Isaiah 10:22) This is obviously not fulfilled prophecy and “Carchemish” is key. He desires to re-unify what once was his ancestors’ empire and he wants to accomplish what “his fathers fathers” a couple generations ago failed to accomplish and is why he laments why is Calno (in Iraq) not part of Carchemish which belonged to Turkey.

And it is not as if we are drawing an ill-proven Hal Lindsey style grand theory here. Unlike these fanciful far-fetched theories by prophecy buffs, we can add where the rubber meets the road. What is so amazing today is that the takeover of Carchemish is already being fulfilled by aid of harlot-America. Carchemish is split between two borders; one half is in Syria’s Jarablus and Karkamis (the other half) is on the Turkish side. Turkey’s Recep Tayyip Erdoğan united the two on 24 August 2016 supported by the US-led coalition “Operation Euphrates Shield”.



(above notice Karkamis on Turkey’s side and Jarablus on Syria’s side both combined are biblical *Carchemish*)

The U.S. is aiding and abetting the Assyrian giving Carchemish to Turkey the enemy of the Christians of the Levant. Not once did the U.S. shed tears over the multitudes of Christians suffering in Iraq, Syria or Armenia when Turkey through its ally Azerbaijan just invaded Armenia.

Prophecy is being fulfilled in your reading.

So is the U.S. concerned about standing for God or for Gog? If the U.S. was such a 'Christian nation', the U.S. with its might to reach to the moon and invent the stealth and nuclear weapon could not put its best interpreters to understand prophecy?

Through Operation Euphrates Shield, Turkey now controls the whole of Carchemish and Dabiq, the strategic town of Islam's false version of the apocalypse, which is crucial to their Muslim propaganda. Erdoğan proclaimed:

"We entered Afrin, Jarablus [Carchemish], and Al-Bab. Now we will enter the east of the Euphrates."

"The east of the Euphrates" is Iraq (Babylon) "is not Calno [in Iraq] like Carchamish?"

One thing we need to understand about Erdoğan; he usually keeps his word. He will occupy northern Iraq, "the richest of the provinces" where Karkuk and the oil wealth is. Erdogan of Turkey declared:

"Turkey is not only a land where 79 million citizens live. It is the hope of all the persecuted millions in Palestine, Syria, Libya, Yemen, Africa and western Asia."<sup>232</sup>

This man wants Israel, Syria, Libya, Yemen and the whole of Africa and Western Asia.

When the Assyrian comes up prophetically most think Assyria is strictly Iraq. Ancient Assyria encompassed present-day northern Iraq (which was Kurdistan) southeastern Turkey and northwestern Iran.

With all these under his belt, this qualifies him to be "the Assyrian".

The Assyrian is also a punisher of parts of this "Mystery Babylon" and is defined by Jeremiah 51:27 as "Minni" "Ararat" and "Ashkenaz" (Kurds and the Turks, both US allies) who will also unite with Persia (Iran). While Ashkenaz being Germany is a hypothesis by some it has no historical, genetic or linguistic support. However, the ones who abandoned the covenant (fallen, harlot) will aid Antichrist. The Assyrian is the punisher of Mystery Babylon's Arabia. Isaiah 21 says Persia is included in this onslaught and Ezekiel 38 tells us Persia is part of this Gog coalition.

The prophecy also involves an attack on Israel. The verse adds: "Is not Samaria like Damascus". In other words, Samaria in Israel is part of this agenda and *Carchemish has already been taken*.

## ISALAH 10 IS PUNISHMENT OF ISRAEL AND THE FALLEN CHURCH

---

<sup>232</sup> See Turkey's official website at [www.tccb.gov.tr](http://www.tccb.gov.tr) from Arabic)



“As my hand seized the kingdoms of the idols, kingdoms whose images excelled those of Jerusalem and Samaria shall I not deal with Jerusalem and her images as I dealt with Samaria and her idols? When the Lord has finished all his work against Mount Zion and Jerusalem, he will say, “I will punish the king of Assyria for the willful pride of his heart and the haughty look in his eyes.” (Isaiah 10:10-12)

So first is the punishment of harlot-Israel then upon the Assyrian.

“Though your people be like the sand by the sea, Israel, only a *remnant* will return. *Destruction* has *been decreed, overwhelming* and *righteous.*” (Isaiah 10:22)

“The Lord, the LORD Almighty, will carry out the *destruction decreed* upon the whole land.” (Isaiah 10:23) “Very soon my anger against you *will end* and my *wrath* will be directed to *their* destruction.” (Isaiah 10:25)

Isaiah confirms John’s Apocalypse:

“For true and *righteous* are His judgments, because He has judged the great harlot who corrupted the earth with her fornication; and He has avenged on her the blood of His servants shed by her.” (Revelation 19:2)

Only after Jerusalem’s punishment will God switch His wrath on the Assyrian and have mercy on Judah:

“Therefore this is what the Lord, the LORD Almighty, says: “My people who live in Zion, do not be afraid of the Assyrians, who beat you with a rod and lift up a club against you, as Egypt did.” (Isaiah 10:24)

Isaiah affirms:

“Speak tenderly to Jerusalem, and proclaim to her that her *hard service has been completed*, that *her sin has been paid for*, that she has *received from the LORD’s hand double for all her sins.*” (Isaiah 40:2) “Do not be afraid, you *worm Jacob, little Israel*, do not fear, for *I myself will help you,*” declares the LORD, your *Redeemer*, the Holy One of Israel. See, I will *make you into a threshing sledge*, new and sharp, with many teeth. You will thresh *the mountains* and *crush them*, and *reduce the hills to chaff.*” (Isaiah 41:14-15)

#### RUSSIA DEFEATS TURKEY AND RESCUES THE JEWS

And who will God send to help them? It will be to the surprise of Protestant interpreters who misinterpreted “Gog” as “Russia”. It will be the same nation that destroyed Nazism and opened the camps during the Holocaust; Russia:

“I have raised up *one* from the *north*, and he has come, one from the *east* who *invokes My name.* He will march over rulers as if they were mud, like a potter who treads the clay.” (Isaiah 41:25)

Keep in mind this one must come from a direction that is considered both “east” and “north”



From the proximity of Turkey (Gog), there is only one nation considered to be “north” and even expands as far as the “east,” even beyond Japan “the rising sun”. This is definitely Russia. And how did we deduce Russia? Daniel gives us his ending:

“But reports from the east and the north will alarm him [an Antichrist], and he will set out in a great rage to destroy and annihilate many. He will pitch his royal tents between the seas [Istanbul] at the beautiful holy mountain. Yet he will come to his end, and no one will help him.” (Daniel 11:44-45)

“Tents” as we examined earlier are temples, shrines and in this case will be mosques. Erdogan indeed set his temple “at the beautiful holy mountain”. “Reports from the east and the north will alarm him”. So if Gog was from Russia (as some Protestant interpreters suggest), north of Russia is the Arctic Ocean, not an enemy.

To further prove our point, Zechariah 6 speaks of four chariots:

“Now I lifted up my eyes again and looked, and behold, four chariots were coming forth from between the two mountains; and the mountains were bronze mountains, the first chariot had red horses, the second black, with the third chariot white horses and with the fourth chariot strong dappled horses. Then I spoke and said to the angel who was speaking with me, “What are these, my lord?” The angel replied to me, “These are the four spirits of heaven, going forth after standing before the Lord of all the earth, with one of which the black horses are going forth to the north country; and the white ones go forth after them [to the north], while the dappled ones go forth to the south country. “When the strong ones went out, they were eager to go to patrol the earth.” And He said, “Go, patrol the earth.” So they patrolled the earth. Then He cried out to me and spoke to me saying, “See, those who are going to the land of the north have appeased My wrath in the land of the north.”

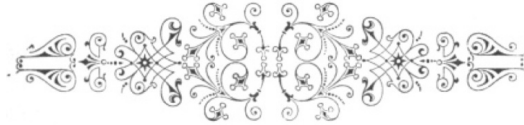
The four horses have no rider, so they do not involve man. “These have quieted my spirit” after disasters hit the north country with red and black horses which denote extraordinary judgments, and the white ones which denote extraordinary deliverances by the “white horses,” which went towards the north country, while the common mixed providences went all the world over. “These have quieted my spirit in the north-country,” (God lifted up His judgment) which had of late been the most remarkable scene of action with reference to the church in Russia after Fatima; that is, by these uncommon appearances and actings of providence God's wrath is executed upon Communism brought forth by Lenin, and with two world wars (as Fatima predicted) his favours are finally conferred upon the church in Russia.

So now we can deduce one of the seven luminaries, seven pillars or “seven shepherds” of Micah 5:

“and this *one* shall be peace. When the Assyrian comes into our land, and when he treads in our palaces, then we will raise against him *seven shepherds* and eight princely men. They shall *waste with the sword the land of Assyria*, and the land of Nimrod at its entrances; *thus he shall deliver us from the Assyrian*, when he comes into our land and when he treads within our borders. Then the *remnant of Jacob* shall be in the *midst of many peoples*, like dew from the LORD, like showers on the grass that tarry for no man nor wait for the sons of men. “ (Micah 5:5-8)

The same people who were the first to liberate the Jews from the Nazi camps will be the same people who will liberate them from the Assyrian (Ottoman Empire).

The Assyrian, like Hitler, believing he will be victorious, he will set out hysterically to commit mass atrocities to only see his end. He sets his royal “tents” (temples or even castles) between the seas and the “beautiful holy mountain” (Hagia Sophia). This is what we mean when we say that prophecy must inductively fit all the pieces of the puzzle perfectly.



## THE ASSYRIAN (EVEN MICAH PREDICTS ISRAEL'S DEFEAT)

Many will counter our interpretation of Isaiah 10 as fulfilled in Sennacherib's campaign against Judah. Such an argument fades once we examine Micah 5. Our argument even holds as Isaiah 10 speaks of this "Assyrian," and we already witness one who is cyber rattling with Damascus, already speaks of dominating northern Iraq, northern Israel and the rest of Asia Minor. This is where the battle begins, in Syria and Iraq, exactly the process what we have been witnessing in the last three decades.

Another myth we shall dispel here is this: many say that to understand the end of times one must focus on Jerusalem surrounded by enemies where Israel will be the victor. This is not how scripture explains it. Prophecy explains it in a seeming contradiction; the *Hebrews without God* will end and *Israel with God* will become victorious (Numbers 24). Jerusalem is where it all *ends* and Carchemish is where it all *begins*.

The Assyrian is so crucial that he is even mentioned in the prophecy of Micah 5 (birth of Christ in Bethlehem) as the punisher of Israel and in Isaiah 10 and Isaiah 14 he arises to torment the nations.

This is why ignored prophecy is crucial. Micah 5 is not only a prophecy about Christ's birth but also about His Second Coming. It is therefore impossible to claim these events as historic. God addresses the victors as for only the "remnant" while the rest are decimated.

The whole prophecy, if read at face value becomes like Numbers 24. God rescues only a "remnant" and destroys Israel's chariots and destroys all of Israel's cities:

"... I will destroy your chariots. cut off the cities of your land and throw down all your strongholds" (Micah 5:10-11)

Tel Aviv, Israel's Dimona and Soreq Nuclear facilities and all the strongholds gone. Iran's Mullahs have already threatened to strike Dimona and Israel went on "red alert" 30 times as anxiety grew from the situation in Damascus Syria. Israel did just that to Iraq's Osirak and Iraq attacked Iran's two power reactors and the U.S. bombed the Tuwaitha and Saddam launched scuds at Dimona. The prophecy of the birth of Christ in Bethlehem makes this scenario clear:

"Therefore will he give them [Israel that is] up, until the time that she which travails hath brought forth: then the remnant of his brethren shall return unto the children of Israel." (Micah5:3)

Micah 5 says: "Therefore he will give them up" and that only "the remnant of his brethren" are saved when they "return" (repent) and join the "children of Israel" (the church).

"Give them up" to what? Paul in Romans 1 tells you why He even gives Christendom up:

“Therefore God gave them up in the lusts of their hearts to impurity, to the dishonoring of their bodies among themselves,<sup>25</sup> because they exchanged the truth about God for a lie <sup>26</sup> For this reason God gave them up to dishonorable passions.”

Romans 1 continues with “men laying with men ...” exactly what you see modern Israel supporting. God is not mocked. Only a “remnant of His brethren” makes it. In Micah 5, the woman in travail is the same in Apocalypse 12 is our persecution. Her Son “She gave birth to a son, a male child, who “will rule all the nations with an iron scepter” (Revelation 12:4) gives up on the Hebrews for their sins and for rejecting Him “Therefore will he [Christ] give them up” until the church is refined through persecution and only then “the remnant of his brethren” (a remnant of Hebrews) will have a common enemy (the Assyrian) and the persecution from this common enemy will help the remnant Hebrews “return unto the children of Israel” (that is join the Israel of God).

So what does this do to these who read scripture and read the name “Israel” and always think the Hebrews? The Israel of Moses’ time were both Hebrew and Gentile and were called Israel and today’s Israel is not of God and only the remnant Church is *the Israel of God*. Even God Himself makes this clear:

“Listen to this, you descendants of Jacob, you who are **called by my name of Israel** and come from the line of Judah, you who take oaths in the name of the Lord and invoke the God of Israel—**but not in truth or righteousness**—you who call yourselves citizens of the holy city and claim to rely on the God of Israel” (Isaiah 48:1-2)

“You have neither heard nor understood” (Isaiah 48:8)

“For my own name’s sake I delay my wrath; for the sake of my praise I hold it back from you, so as not to destroy you completely” (Isaiah 48:9)

“Called by my name of Israel?” God’s name is Israel and the Israel of God is Christ’s seed and the seed of the woman. Israel does not even have the truth “invoke the God of Israel— but not in truth or righteousness” yet “call yourselves citizens of the holy city”. God says they do not practice righteousness and God delays His wrath and He will not destroy them “completely”. In other words, His wrath is set and He will keep a remnant just as Micah 5 said.

“Come together, all of you, and listen: which of the idols has foretold these things? The LORD’s *chosen ally* will carry out his purpose against Babylon; his arm will be against the Babylonians.” (Isaiah 48:14)

Interpreters attempt to attribute this prophecy to Israel’s return from Babylon as result of Cyrus decree. How is this exodus out of Babylon make any sense when God forewarns here that this allegoric “Babylon” is about to be destroyed, especially when He is not asking them to migrate but to flee for their lives:

“Leave Babylon, *flee from the Babylonians!* Announce this with shouts of joy and proclaim it. Send it out to the ends of the earth; say, “The LORD has redeemed his servant Jacob.” (Isaiah 48:20)

This is no exodus to Israel but to the “desert”. God is asking them not to worry for He will provide:

“They did not thirst when he led them through the deserts; he made water flow for them from the rock; he split the rock and water gushed out.” (Isaiah 48:21)

Why is He asking them to leave this Mystery Babylon? Because He is about to destroy it:

“There is no peace,” says the LORD, “for the wicked.” (Isaiah 48:22)

If God was asking Israel to leave ancient Babylon after Cyrus decree, Cyrus has already hit Babylon. And what punishment for the wicked?

“You are wearied with your many counsels; Let now the *astrologers*, those who prophesy by the stars, those who predict by the new moons, stand up and *save you from what will come upon you*. Behold, *they have become like stubble, Fire burns them; they cannot deliver themselves from the power of the flame ...*” (Isaiah 47:13-14)

This is the destruction by fire “power of the flame” prophesied by all prophets regarding the end. What is also interesting is that this destruction on both Israel and Arabia is clearly reflected in the theme of Isaiah 47 to Isaiah 48 calling Israel in Isaiah 47:1 “Virgin Daughter Babel”:

“Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin *daughter Babel*,<sup>233</sup> sit on the ground: there is no throne” (Isaiah 47:1)

That is not a daughter of the harlot, but daughter harlot herself. When God uses “Virgin” is because she claims to be one since Israel calls on the name of God but not in truth or righteousness. Jerusalem at this point is born of Canaan:

“Your birth and your nativity are from the land of Canaan; your father was an Amorite and your mother a Hittite.” (Ezekiel 16:3)

This is a major clue and continues through Isaiah 48 witnessing to the escapees (Israel and Arabia) for their denial of The Trinity:

“Come near to Me [Christ], hear this; I [Christ] have not spoken in secret, from the beginning; From the time that it was, I [Christ] was there, And now the Lord God [the Father] and His Spirit [the Holy Spirit] Have sent Me [the Son].” (Isaiah 48:16)

---

<sup>233</sup> The Hebrew is *Bat Babel Batula* ("בְּתוּלַת בַּת־בְּבֶלֶל") literally “Virgin daughter Babel” and not “daughter of Babylon” as some translations render it. See Keil and Delitzsch OT Commentary

Islam and Judaism have certain theology in common—both have in common with the Arian heresy and both gain their wizardry from ancient Sumer where all religious Jews adhere to the Kabbalah and the Muslim Shiite Iran and the Sufi Turks adhere to a very similar concept. If Babylon does not include Israel the scholars shall tell us why it says regarding Babylon the following:

“In those days, and at that time, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together; they shall proceed, weeping as they go, seeking the Lord their God. They shall ask the way till [they come to] Zion, for that way shall they set their face; and they shall come and flee for refuge to the Lord their God; for the everlasting covenant shall not be forgotten.” (Jeremiah 50:4-5)

Jeremiah 50 is strictly about this Great Babylon! “the children of Israel” and “the children of Judah together” flee Babylon towards Mount Zion, the Jerusalem of heaven. To Zion, the chaste virgin shall they flee for refuge to the Lord their God. The Israel of God and Judah are distinct.

Micah 5 continues:

“I will pluck out the Asherahs out of your midst so will I destroy your cities” (Micah 5:13)

This is a rule: God is not mocked. God is upset about the spread of neopaganism amongst the secular and the Kabbalah infests Judaism’s entire religious sector.

“I will wreak vengeance in anger and wrath upon the nations that have not listened” (Micah 5:14)

This includes all of fallen Christendom, what was meant to be the Israel of God. Zephaniah confirms:

“I will stretch my hand against Judah and against all who live in Jerusalem. I will destroy every remnant of Baal worship in this place, the very names of the idolatrous priests” (Zephaniah 1:4)

“I will bring them again also out of the land of Egypt, and gather them out of Assyria; and I will bring them into the land of Gilead and Lebanon; and place shall not be found for them.” (Zechariah 10:10)

Why would God here be making such a declaration? Israel came out centuries ago out of Egypt, and ages after Assyria had fallen to the Babylonians, and the Babylonians to the Persians. The figurative sense here is that God will bring out the remnant church from Assyria (the beast) and Egypt (the harlot).

“And he shall pass through the sea with affliction, and shall smite the waves in the sea, and all the deeps of the river shall dry up: and the pride of Assyria shall be brought down, and the sceptre of Egypt shall depart away.” (Zechariah 10:11)

None of this makes any prophetic sense unless we understood Apocalypse' "Sodom and Egypt" He sends the plagues upon both "Assyria" (beast) and "Egypt" (harlot).

### THE MUSLIM INVASION

In Isaiah 10, God discloses to you His plan on the coming war, which the plan has already been drawn. Since the inception of ISIS we always said and maintained that Turkey would eventually take control. They did and in 2016 we wrote even referring to the past years prior:

"We said it years ago, ISIS will be replaced by Turkey, which is now called Euphrates Shield. When Dabiq is taken by the Euphrates Shield, the sounds of victory and Allah-Akbar will be heard throughout the Middle East. Turkey will self-fulfill parts of this twisted prophecy by declaring 'Islam won,' the AKP Neo-Ottomans have already "conquered Constantinople" in accordance to the Dabiq prophecy. And now it will conquer Syria, later Iraq and then Egypt and Libya and then to Jerusalem. And by that the neo-ottomans will fulfill not just Islam's twisted prophecy, but also Daniel's true prophecy."

We always tell people not to be alarmed every time they see a little dog bark, but to look for the bigger dog who will soon use him. ISIS was simply a way for the devil to move his first two pawns. Operation Euphrates Shield added the other half of Carchemish (Jarablus), which is now a puppet-regime ran by Islamists under Turkey's control and that fulfills the spark of this prophecy.

When Erdoğan says: "Now we will enter the east of the Euphrates" he is speaking of invading northern Iraq. He already thorough Azerbaijan invaded Armenia. In few years we shall quote these very lines here to remind. This brings us to "Is not Calno like Carchemish?" Calno is in the district of Iraq's Baghdad the ruins of Ctesiphon, literally ancient Babylon, a pride of Islam's victories throughout history was this site and a symbol of several Muslim battles defeating their Christian enemy the last was during World War I in November 1915 where the Ottoman Empire defeated Britain attempting to capture Baghdad and drove them back before trapping the British force and compelling it to surrender.

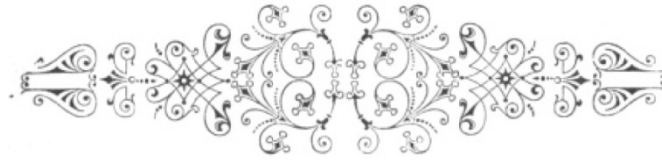
In Isaiah 10 God is sending us one of Christianity's greatest enemy—the Turks, Medes and the Persians who will invade what Isaiah refers to as "the kingdoms of the idols" because by then fattened Europe would have weakened and becomes infested with ultra-nationalism which desires to gain its own identity by each nation going backwards to its original pagan culture, which we are already seeing the first manifestations. Christianity is what unified Europe and not tribalism. This nonsense including Brexit which Boris Johnson (Borris Ali Kemal Bey) will weaken Europe and the Assyrian and his allies (most likely Japan and Germany) will initially reclaim parts of Europe after they conquer the Levant.





The Assyrian's unification plan includes uniting *Calno* (Baghdad Iraq) to *Carchemish* (on the border of Turkey and Syria) and is why he says: "is not Calno like Carchemish?" He wants to unite Syria to his empire and is why he says: "Is not Hamath like Arpad?" and he also wants to add Israel as another trophy and is why he adds: "Is not Samaria (north of Israel) like Damascus?"

In the process the Assyrian invades Damascus to fulfill "Is not Hamath like Arpad" "is not Samaria like Damascus".



THE ASSYRIAN  
(THE DESTRUCTION OF SYRIA IS THE VICTORY FOR SYRIA)

And now we begin to understand the popular Isaiah 17 prophecy and who destroys Damascus, which Evangelicals hyper about Israel's victory over Syria. But Isaiah 17 says that both Israel and Syria will lose to the Assyrian but notice who is the ultimate victor? Here are the verses:

“Damascus will cease from being a city, and it will be a ruinous heap ... The fortress also will cease from Ephraim, the kingdom from Damascus, and the remnant of Syria: they will be as the glory of the children of Israel,” Says the LORD of hosts. “In that day it shall come to pass that the glory of Jacob will wane, And the fatness of his flesh grow lean.” (Isaiah 17:4)

Protestant commentaries apply this prophecy historically<sup>234</sup>, but this is impossible since “In that day a man will look to his Maker, and his eyes will look to the Holy One of Israel.” (Isaiah 17:7)

“The Kingdom from Damascus” is the Christian Church in Syria of the Kingdom of Christ. The first church established which the U.S. aided her enemy. “The remnant of Syria” is the war refugees after the mass destruction. Why does Isaiah differentiate between one from the other, is that the other “remnant of Syria” is to convert to the Kingdom of Damascus and the “glory of the children of Israel”. We have already seen the destruction of most of Syria with the exception of Damascus, which is coming. Christians should avoid a booklet narrative on prophecy. Israel “leanness” (weakens) and Ephraim’s territory is lost (Nablus, Ramallah) become under control of the Assyrian.

Now the Assyrian’s dream “Is not Samaria like Damascus?” is *accomplished*. Samaria is in northern Israel.

And notice again who the real victor is:

“the Kingdom from Damascus and the remnant of Syria: They will be as the glory of the children of Israel”

---

<sup>234</sup> For example, Barnes Notes: “And the remnant of Syria - That which is left of the kingdom of Syria after the capital Damascus shall be destroyed. “They shall be as the glory of the children of Israel” - That is, as the defenses, or the strongly fortified towns and fastnesses of the kingdom of Israel shall pass away or be destroyed, so shall it be with the kingdom of Damascus.” John Wesley (amongst many others) claims it was fulfilled by Tiglath-pilneser, yet when it came to verse 7 he says: “They shall sincerely respect, and trust, and worship God, and God only”. How did Tiglath-pilneser’s attack convert the Syrians to God is unexplained, yet nevertheless claimed.

We must always remember that the Lord works in mysterious ways. The Syrian refugees and migrants who are a result of this catastrophe caused by U.S. led NATO are tomorrow's saints.

The key to doing God's will is simple: stand for what is right, be charitable regardless if the victim be they Jew or Gentile, Muslim or Hindu and even if he is a Sodom Generation for we want all these to repent. Stand for what is good and always stand against evil, which presents its face in many colors.

Syria was the first place where God sent His Gospel and so it is where the process of reclaiming God's people begins and this is how the remnants will recognize Christ: through pain and agony. Indeed. The Lord will redeem starting in the East:

“God, the Lord God speaks; He summons the earth from east to west.” (Psalm 50:1)

“For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.” (Matthew 24:27)

While one could argue that this is simply a direction Christ makes from east to west, Christ's Glory comes from the east where He causes the West to “fear”:

“They will fear the name of the Lord in the west, and His glory in the east; for He will come like a rushing stream driven by the wind of the Lord.” (Isaiah 59:19)

The cities will be so destroyed that so few are found standing:

“It shall be as when the harvester gathers the grain, and reaps the heads with his arm; It shall be as he who gathers heads of grain in the Valley of Rephaim. Yet gleaning grapes will be left in it, like the shaking of an olive tree, two or three olives at the top of the uppermost bough, Four or five in its most fruitful branches,” Says the LORD God of Israel.” (Isaiah 17:5-6)

“In that day his strong cities will be as a forsaken bough And an uppermost branch, Which they left because of the children of Israel; and there will be desolation.” (Isaiah 17:9)

How one treats foreigners is what represents a person. This is how Boaz treated the foreigner:

“Let your eyes be on the field which they reap, and go after them. Have I not commanded the young men not to touch you? And when you are thirsty, go to the vessels and drink from what the young men have drawn.”

“So she fell on her face, bowed down to the ground, and said to him, “Why have I found favor in your eyes, that you should take notice of me, since I am a foreigner?”

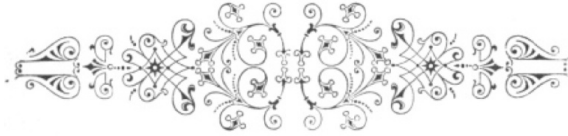
I look up an old dictionary of the Bible and under the fields of Boaz I find my grand father's land. Our cucumber fields are even in the scriptures set for a magnificent prophecy all ignore

and the memories take me back to a dream I had as a little child hovering in the clouds of these cucumber fields and only on the hills do I finally comprehend it and I asked my mother why is the land below look like squares and she said how would you know, you were never on an airplane? I saw it as soldiers ready for battle! That is for another lesson. If your Christ hates foreigners my Christ loves them.

“Therefore you will plant pleasant plants and set out foreign seedlings; In the day you will make your plant to grow, And in the morning you will make your seed to flourish; But the harvest will be a heap of ruins in the day of grief and desperate sorrow.” (Isaiah 17:9-14)

God doesn't hate foreigners. He hates the foreign seeds, a church growth that is all fraud “set out foreign seedling” which grows to become a heap of heretics.

SECTION IV  
UNLOCKING  
THE SEVEN SEALS



## THE APOCALYPSE SPANS ENTIRE CHURCH HISTORY

In addition to what we have said so far, it is impossible to comprehend the Abomination of Desolation spoken of by Daniel without understanding 2 Thessalonians 2 “the falling away must come first” that is the growth and increase of the tares to overcome the wheat. It is only then can we comprehend the Apocalypse which includes a schism that links to Daniel’s Abomination of Desolation. The Apocalypse is the only book in the Bible that one can chart history in sequential order, especially in the seals. But without knowledge of history any attempt to decipher the scriptures will prove fatal since God instructs in Isaiah 46:9 to “Remember the former things of old”. So without history how can anyone correctly explain prophecy?

The thing that struck me as I read the Apocalypse is not its complexity but (as you shall see) its simplicity. Interpreters who either ignored the history or opposed it simply fragmented the book and lumped it into a manual that can only be put to good use when we see the “Abomination of Desolation” and only then do we (as this absurd view goes) jump to the Apocalypse to see how an Antichrist figure comes into the scene and from henceforth we follow the manual and await a first seal with a man they claim is an Antichrist riding a white horse, then all hell breaks loose when red and black and pale horses follow, asteroids then strike major cities and massive earthquakes follow.

This approach is far from what Apocalypse instructs and is so devoid of the allegoric sense is far from the truth as explained in the book itself given to us by a loving God Who directs us each step of the way. To prove our point, the Apocalypse starts off in chapter 1, the Seven established churches by Christ in Asia Minor, the church goes through a tribulation for an allegoric “10 days,” (the catacombs and the coliseum) and then it says: “Come up here, and I will show you things which must take place *after this*” (Revelation 4:1) is a clear instruction of a sequential order of things to come “after this” Christ (after admonitions to these churches) takes us into chapter 6, on a sequential order of seven seals and we find an entire cycle from beginning with the triumph of the church in the first seal where we find a rider on a white horse who is a bringer of victory via his bow war. This one (a slandered champion of the faith) releases the church from its captivity and then a red, black and grey horses follow massive unrest culminating into internal wars where within Christendom they will kill one another. Starvations and famines ensue till the closeness of the end of the age where a moment of tranquility takes place after the fifth seal. Then the sixth seal is broken in our time prior to the final seventh seal where there is quietness in heaven for a short while (an hour) before the wrath is poured out in full measure in Revelation 8. Then in the same chapter it kick starts explaining this whole cycle again in a different vision yet for the same time duration (which continues to chapter 11) but this time with seven trumpets:

“And I saw the seven angels who stand before God, and seven trumpets were given to them.” (Revelation 8:2)

While the seven seals are regarding the cataclysmic events of war throughout church history, continuing in the Apocalypse it then gives us this entire *beginning to end scenario* in the trumpets providing the spiritual changes resulting from such events. The trumpets are a different picture regarding the gradual falling away continuing from chapter 8; seven angels four of whom blast their trumpets leaving the other three with the last 3 woes to strike humanity which is where we stand today.

Simply put, the seals are a message to John, strictly to what happens to the church, similar to what Daniel registered in what happens “to your people” (Daniel 9:24, 10:14).

So the starting point is crucial from where the breaking of the first seal begins. After the seven churches are addressed, a prophecy regarding the persecution by pagan Rome is given:

“Do not fear any of those things which you are about to suffer. Indeed, the devil is about to throw some of you into prison, that you may be tested, and you will have tribulation ten days. Be faithful until death, and I will give you the crown of life.” (Revelation 2:10)

The “ten days” is spoken in a metaphor to mean a span of time. If such ten days are literal, why and to what significance would John be given such instructions over a ten day prison term warning the churches will be enduring an entire “tribulation” while asking them to be “faithful until death”? The text says “tribulation” and not an overnight arrest awaiting a judge to release them from a 10 day solitary confinement. The disciples’ entire lives were in and out of jail. This is a tribulation period regarding the Roman persecution. To object that a “ten day” period of persecution cannot last decades is to also object when Christ said: “behold I am coming quickly” (Revelation 22: 12, 22:20).

We then read through chapter 3 with admonishments giving warnings of the types of falling away; not to listen to the synagogue of Satan by claimants to be Jews, warns of being lukewarm (indifference). The warnings to the church mimics the entire history of the tares and then in chapter 4 we are given the pointer to an eventful proclamation:

“After this I looked, and there before me was a door standing open in heaven. And the voice I had first heard speaking to me like a *trumpet* said, “Come up here, and I will show you what must take place after this.” (Revelation 4:1)

This is no “end times” event. “After this” means from this point (the Roman coliseum) forward, from after the 10-day prison (tribulation) symbolized as duration of allegoric time “have tribulation ten days” and from henceforward. These are not events just for the end of days, but *the expanse of time* from when the Seven Churches were established in Asia Minor to the end. Notice that Christ, while speaking to the Seven Churches at Asia Minor warns that He is coming to them “as a thief”:

“But if you [the church at Sardis] do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know at what time I will come to you.” (Apocalypse 3:3)

How could Christ (who has not yet “come like a thief”) be coming to Sardis? Unless the church at Sardis, while literal, also includes an allegoric sense regarding the church *that*

*during which, Christ comes.*<sup>235</sup> Therefore prophecy is multidimensional for He describes the condition of His churches to the ends of days when He “come like a thief”. It is the full cycle from beginning to the end at the church of Philadelphia where the church is finally reestablished in the New Jerusalem. This is crucial for without it many project Apocalypse to be strictly for the ends of days. It *is* for the ends of day yet it *is not*. It *is* in the sense that God speaks “the end from the beginning” and it is *not* since it repeats history.

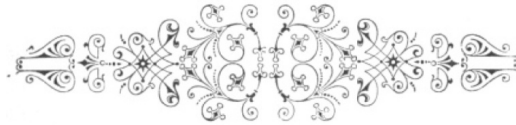
This description (after an introduction from heaven in chapter 5) begins in chapter 6 at the starting point of the first seal where it says “after this,” that is, after the tribulation from pagan Rome. This “tribulation” (10 days) is the Roman persecution and the coliseum. We all have a general idea of these times. So “after” the church’s tribulation of 10 allegoric days (meaning a short while) it is only then that the first seal is broken. So whatever initiates the ending of this persecution is the first seal.

In the next chapters we will dispel the most common myths like: Apocalypse was written strictly for the end times. No. God was not only concerned with the laziest church during the end of days, Apocalypse was written to *instruct the church for all times* as we shall examine in detail. Another myth: there is a thousand year reign of the Kingdom before the end of the world. No. The first allegoric “Gog and Magog” in Revelation 20 is the Ottoman Empire (the 7<sup>th</sup> beast) which came a thousand years after the era of the White Horse and these hordes are forming today (as the 8<sup>th</sup> beast) which we explained in the first section comes again as punishment for the laziest fallen church just before Christ comes. They come up twice. The church fathers debated such issues obviously did not have our history.

---

<sup>235</sup> At the end of days the church will only have but a small remnant: “You have a few names even in Sardis who have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with Me in white, for they are worthy.” (Revelation 3:4)





## UNLOCKING THE FIRST SEAL (THE RISE OF THE CHURCH)

“And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.” (Revelation 6:2)

But right after the tribulation of the Roman Coliseum came Constantine. This would make Constantine this rider which we will not belabor the counter arguments of his critics but provide a note. Those who attack Constantine are constantly using the elements provided by Zosimos (not a historian) but a pagan who hated Constantine for eradicating paganism. How then accuse Constantine of being pagan when a pagan angry that Constantine removed and destroyed paganism by war? Many quote Voltaire (a revolutionary who greatly influence the bloody French Revolution) hates Constantine and hates Christianity. Gibbon laments that Constantine ended pagan Rome in his “Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire” which, according to Gibbon, the fall is due to Christianity’s victory over paganism. Then we have James P. Carroll in *Constantine’s Sword*. In the last seven of his 60 chapters, Carroll, an ex-priest, offers a proposal for Christian “repentance” arguing that the Catholic Church must convene Vatican III, flag and confess anti-Jewish distortions in the New Testament, reject the Nicene Creed in favor of something more Unitarian (like Islam’s), dismantle the cross at Auschwitz “a removal of the horizontal beam, an uprooting of the vertical, a reversal of the instruction Constantine gave his soldiers” (p. 604).

As we said before, if one searches the most slandered individuals in history is where the wise finds a saint, and if one searches for who slandered them is where you find the prominent tares. The tares’ duty is but to create a stigma so that as soon as a name like “Constantine” comes up, (just like Pope Pius XII) it makes one hesitate to defend. But one must ask: why the two types of tares; the liberal and the Protestant both agree on Constantine? No historian argues against Constantine ending the persecution.<sup>236</sup>

Why then paint the rider of the “white horse” as Antichrist and bringer of a bad omen? This argument is completely debunked especially when a “white horse” is what Christ eventually rides:

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and He who sat on it is called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He judges and wages war.” (Apocalypse 19:11)

---

<sup>236</sup> Contrary to common myth adopted by many Evangelicals, that Constantine made Catholicism the official religion of the Roman Empire, the signing the Edict of Milan in 313, often referred to as the Edict of Toleration, Constantine simply made it permissible to be a Christian, officially ending centuries of Christian persecution which was extremely intense under the previous emperor, Diocletian and restored confiscated Christian property. Christianity would not become the official state religion of Rome in AD 380 – well after Constantine’s death in the Edict of Thessalonica.

So why does the Protestant miss the first seal?

Answer: pure prejudice, theological misconception and pure unadulterated hatred and is why these can never interpret scripture. Never. It is impossible for the tares to establish correct interpretation. The horses are: 1—white (peace through war), then 2—red (massive war), then 3—black (massive famine) and then 4—pale (massive death). Misinterpreting the first seal misses the cause of Christianity's rise; its kick-starter was the rider of the white horse. They also miss the cause of Christianity's weakening: the rise of the red horse, which came after the white. In the Bible (old and New testaments) it has never once indicated that a white horse as a bringer of an evil omen; all white horses in scripture are bearers of good news. This makes it difficult to sustain such arguments. How could a rider of a white horse in Revelation 6 be an Antichrist while the white horse of Revelation 19 (all agree) is Christ's? These would argue that Revelation 19 describes the rider as "righteous and true" while we have no such mention for the 1<sup>st</sup> seal rider. But such an argument is also shattered once we examine the only other single reference of a "white horse" in Zechariah 1:8. That "white horse" (Cyrus) comes after a "red horse" and has no compliment being "righteous and true," yet was righteous even according to Protestants. This would compel us to ask a Jesus-style question: was Cyrus (the rider of that white horse in Zechariah 1:8), who brought liberty for Israel, an Antichrist? Cyrus came after a "red horse," which represented the persecution of God's people by Babylon.

And the last rider (Christ) the "faithful and true" also "makes war" (to end persecution and bring peace) rides a "white horse" and mimics the same rider in the first seal. Why then depict "white" with "unrighteousness" and "false peace"? The typical faulty argument goes like this:

"It is to be observed that the next three horses (verses 3 to 8) are of obvious evil import. Does not this suggest the possibility that all four, including the first horse, are of a foreboding and threatening nature?"<sup>237</sup>

Why then not apply the same logic in Zechariah:

"I saw by night, and behold a man riding upon a red horse, and he stood among the myrtle trees, that were in the bottom: and behind him were horses, red, speckled, and white. And I said: What are these, my Lord? And the angel that spoke in me, said to me: I will show thee what these are: And the man that stood among the myrtle trees answered, and said: These are they, whom the Lord hath sent to walk through the earth." (Zechariah 1:8-10)

In Zechariah, God declared that He sends these horses one of which is white. The reason they twist the scriptures is that the greatest of hypocrites are those who reject the wars by Constantine to wipe out paganism and Roman tyranny are the ones who follow the causer of paganism and tyranny: Martin Luther (see final section). Yet these same people hypocritically accept U.S. wars saying it was just and biblically justified. Indeed, the war against Nazism and the cold war against Communism were just wars. General Patton could

---

<sup>237</sup> This is a typical comment we obtained from a forum

easily be depicted riding a white war-horse with a bow in hand as a bringer of peace through war. But what about the war that ended the killing of the saints including the drift into Arianism: to deny that in any true sense God is not the Trinity which Mohammed (like Arius) tirelessly advocated Unitarianism in his Quran.

Constantine crushed these. But when it comes to this specific rider of the white horse, the schismatic (just like the Arians) are colorblind. Had it not been for sectarian divides, all interpreters would universally accept that if a horse is white, it is the bearer of good news that persecution has ended with victory for God's people as when Cyrus brought victory against Babylon (which repeats).

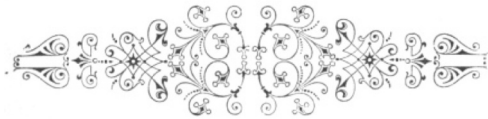
Even these have no problem with Cyrus, regardless that Cyrus (unlike Constantine) we have no record of him even being a registered 'believer'. They after all, universally accept that if a horse is red, it is a period of massive wars, and if it is pale, it is a period of massive death, and if it is black, it is a period of global famines, and if it is the shaking of mountains (the "earthquake" in the sixth seal); it is an era of massive rebellions, splits and demographic shifting; and if it is the dimming of the sun (as in the sixth seal); it is a massive falling away.

What is most concerning for today is the sixth seal, for it has both "earthquake" and "dimming of the sun" (see sixth seal explained later).

Since wars (red horse) and famines (black horse) existed throughout history, we need to be careful where to pinpoint this era. We need to keep in mind, that when God uses a word that its outcome is massive. So when He uses "red" we must be looking for the reddest era in Christian history: the most massive wars and the highest numbers of killing. And if it is pale, we must acknowledge the palest era in history (the most massive famines) ... We cannot pick and choose whom we like or whom we hate and weave them into or out of the fabric of our private interpretation.

To avoid having to deal with the most obvious, the "crown given to him" being Constantine (who was a bringer of good news to the suffering church at Rome) many would sprint this horse—way into the future—to the ends of days making it the carrier of the worst news ever: the Antichrist. These reverse what is good to bad and what is bad to good. What would have happened to these interpreters had an ancient prophet foretold that a rider would someday come on a white donkey? Would they reject Him as Antichrist or accept Him as Messiah?

Yet even Christ's second coming is on a white horse. To these prejudice interpreters, it is as if God was simply interested in warning the escape artists (rapture crazed) who sit quite comfortably in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. To these, God had no good tidings for the suffering church at Rome!



## CONSTANTINE THE GREAT

“And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.” (Revelation 6:2)

The white horse in Revelation 6 is a type of Cyrus, having a bow and a crown is the conquering of God (Christendom) “conquering and to [further] conquer” the world for Christ. This is no short time span and involves victory by conquering and continual conquering of pagan lands. This prophecy never predicted an end of wars, on the contrary, at times; peace could never be obtained without war and any “white horse” rider is *always* concerning justified wars. Evil will always be with us till the end. The prophecy did not promise the end of strife, struggle, heresies, betrayals and warfare. These will still be with us to the end. And it is not as if it marks the most wars in history (as the red horse). It simply means that at crucial times the only way out in order to initiate peace and truth prevail is by war.

So the wars during the era of the white horse conquered paganism and continued to conquer the greatest threat which was a prelude to Islam: Arianism. This threat came again in Gog’s Islam. Yet in the end (and unlike the red horse) such heresies were always defeated through conquering and is why even the conquering Christ in Isaiah 48:16 deals with Israel on the issue of the Trinity:

“Come near me and listen to this: “From the first announcement I [the Father] have not spoken in secret; at the time it happens, I am there.” And now the Sovereign LORD [the Father] has sent me [the Son], endowed with his Spirit [the Holy Spirit].”

Arianism (anti-Trinity) was more a reaction to the Nicene creed and by the end of the 4th century it had surrendered its remaining ground to Trinitarianism through utter defeat.<sup>238</sup> In Western Europe, Arianism, taught by Ulfilas, an Arian missionary to the Germans, took the Goths, Longobards and the Vandals. By the 8th century, it had ceased to be the mainstream belief adopting Nicene orthodoxy when Orthodoxy was enforced by Clovis I of the Franks (496 AD), then Reccared I of the Visigoths in 587 and Aripert I of the Lombards in 653. With the pagans, Kings Clovis I and Æthelberht of Kent defeated the

---

<sup>238</sup> History simply repeats and there is nothing new under the sun. This is why when one views authors like James Carroll advocates the Church must abandon claims to universal and objective truth, realize the Gospels are anti-Semitic, abandon theology of the atonement by Christ for the sins of mankind, forget the belief that Jesus is the only means of salvation “to embrace a pluralism of belief and worship, of religion and no religion, that honors God by defining God as beyond every human effort to express God” and adapt Unitarianism. (see Dismantling the Cross By Robert Louis Wilken June 4, 2004)

Franks and Anglo Saxons who entered the Western Roman Empire as pagans. The remaining tribes – the Vandals and the Ostrogoths – did not convert but having been militarily defeated by the armies of Emperor Justinian I, the remnants were dispersed to the fringes of the empire and melted into Christian history. The wars against Arianism, Vandalic War (533–534) dispersed the defeated Vandals. Following their final defeat at the Battle of Mons Lactarius in 553, the Ostrogoths went back north and resettled in south Austria.

Much of south-eastern Europe and central Europe, including many of the Goths and Vandals even Spain, parts of Italy and North Africa embraced Arianism which was finally suppressed in the 6th and 7th centuries. Visigothic Spain converted to Catholicism at the Third Council of Toledo in 589. Grimwald King of the Lombards (662–671), and his young son and successor Garibald (671), were the last Arian kings in Europe.

This was the good news until (after the red horse) when the Protestant Reformation in the sixteenth century facilitated Arianism to erupt all over again with John Assheton, Miguel Servetus, who was burned alive by the orders of Protestant John Calvin in 1553.<sup>239</sup> Then we have the anti-Trinitarian of the Polish Reformation separated from the Calvinist to form the Arian Polish Brethren. Then we had John Biddle who even denied the pre-existence of Christ. Then we had Anthony Ashley Cooper, 1st Earl of Shaftesbury and minister Robert Ferguson, and professed himself an Arian. And in the 18th century we had Samuel Clarke, Benjamin Hoadly, William Whiston and Sir Isaac Newton (yes Newton was a heretic) followed the "dominant trend" in Britain, particularly in Latitudinarianism was towards Arianism. Had it not been for Constantine, the whole of Christendom would have fallen to Arianism, just like the Muslims who converted much of eastern Christianity, and then the whole of Europe would have easily succumbed to Islam since they had Arianism in common.

## WHO WAS CONSTANTINE

It is time for the simpleton who reads prophecy by reiterating snippets of history to only recount 70 AD (when Titus destroyed the temple) and the return of Israel's exiles from Babylon, as if such few events are keys to unlock prophecy. Constantine the Great was truly the Cyrus of his time and is why both parallel where in Zechariah the white horse (Cyrus) finally brought forth liberty for Israel to rebuild its temple. Constantine, likewise (with a

---

<sup>239</sup> "I am persuaded that it is not without the special will of God that, apart from any verdict of the judges, the criminals have endured protracted torment at the hands of the executioner." - Calvin's letter to Farel on 24 July, Selected Works of John Calvin. Calvin had 57 people put to death. "In order to set up an effective system [in Geneva], Calvin used the state to inflict more severe penalties. Such penalties proved to be much too severe, fifty-eight people being executed and seventy-six exiled by 1546. Servetus (1511-53), who questioned the doctrine of the Trinity, was executed in 1553. Though we cannot justify these procedures, we can understand that people of those days believed that one must follow the religion of the state and that disobedience could well be punished by death. This belief was held by both Protestants and Roman Catholics. Some of Calvin's regulations also would today be considered an unwarranted interference in the private life of the individual (Church historian, Earle E. Cairns, 1981:311-312).

bow, war) conquered Rome and the temple (the church) triumphed over paganism. Both were symbolized with a White Horse in scripture, which dispels another myth that a white horse rider could be an antichrist. It is white because God likes the rider. He ruled with a rod of iron (a war-bow) crushing paganism and enforcing Christian moral law. After a vision of the sign of the cross before a decisive battle, the words 'In hoc signo vinces' or 'In this sign, conquer!<sup>240</sup>

Constantine issued the Edict of Milan in 313, First Council of Nicaea in 325 from which the Nicene Creed included belief in one holy catholic and apostolic Church. Emperor Theodosius then made Nicene Christianity the state church of the Roman Empire with the Edict of Thessalonica of 380. This history encompasses the conquering of the Gospel from the Levant (Asia Minor), Europe and North Africa during the early Roman Empire. This “white horse” era of warfare was about a thousand or so years as God held back Lucifer’s global influence and this ended when the first “Gog and Magog” (the Turks) invasion took the eastern part of Christendom and ruled that “glorious city” Constantinople in 1451 AD the first fulfillment of Apocalypse 20:8-9. Gog and Magog will perish by fire the second time when also Christ is depicted as a rider of another white horse:

I saw heaven standing open and there before me was a *white horse*, whose rider is called Faithful and True. With justice he judges and *wages war*. His eyes are like blazing fire, and on his head are many crowns. He has a name written on him that no one knows but he himself. He is dressed in a *robe dipped in blood*, and his name is *the Word of God*.” (Revelation 19:11-13)

#### KEEP IT SIMPLE

Just as in Cyrus, in all prophetic verses where a white horse is mentioned it is always symbolic of the ending of persecution (an era of peace), and is only established by warfare: “conquering and to [further] conquer” and like Christ “wages war”. This was exactly the case with Cyrus as well as Constantine and it shall be with Christ. In other words, the prophecy of this era says this: the pagans who had persecuted the church at Rome are now conquered and all enemies will be further conquered throughout until the red horse arises (“to kill one another”) which is a civil war. If one uses the simplest observation to interpret, it becomes obvious; this era, it is peace through war.

And when one examines this era of history, one finds it very similar to the history of the people of God’s struggle in the Old Testament. When Constantine and Licinius entered Rome, they took the entire party of Daia and executed them.<sup>241</sup> Amongst these was Peucetius, who was in charge of persecuting the Christians in Egypt. The entire family of Daia, like the sons of Ahab, were arrested and put to death. And let us not forget about Theotecnus<sup>242</sup> who erected the statue of Jupiter in Antioch and tried to force the Christians

---

<sup>240</sup> Haaren, John H.; Poland, A. B. (2006)

<sup>241</sup> See Philip Schaff German-American theologian and church historian CHAPTER XI.—*The Final Destruction of the Enemies of Religion 1-4*

<sup>242</sup> Ibid, see 5. Theotecnus

to worship it. He too was seized, alongside all of his companions, and they were all killed.<sup>243</sup> This mimics the story Zebah and Zalmunah, who forced the Hebrews to worship the idols of Baal and then Gideon slew them. Even Constantine's defeat of Maxentius at the Battle of the Milvian Bridge replayed the Biblical account in Exodus as the enemy drowned while God's people made it through. Constantine was the Moses of the Christians.

One of the oldest battles in Christendom's history was fought in the year 405, between Rome and the pagan Germans. It is a wonderful event of ancient Christendom, in which more than a hundred thousand German pagans, under the savage Gothic ruler Radagaisus, approached Christian Rome to sack it.<sup>244</sup> Not one Roman soldier lost their lives in the fray, and the entire army of pagans submitted to the Christian sword, while Radagaisus and his sons were put to death.<sup>245</sup> St. Paulinus of Nola, one of the great fathers of the Church, wrote a poem on the providential battle:

"The enemy and their unholy king alike are slaughtered, and the victory of the boy Augustus has restored peace; though of tender years, his courage in battle emerged triumphant through God's strength, and he has shattered human resource through Christ's victory over an impious tyrant."<sup>246</sup>

In 328 A.D., the emperor Constantine, led by moral obligation, sought to protect the Christians of Persia who were being cruelly persecuted by the Sassanid Persian king Shapur, who had priorly made an allegiance with Rome.<sup>247</sup> To sway him from his despotism, Constantine sent a letter to Shapur, professing to him his love for God, his disdain for paganism—no doubt learned by the Law of Moses—and his contempt for tyranny, undoubtedly inspired by God. Only a man instilled by the instruction of his Creator, could have written these words, in defiance to tyranny, to this Persian despot:

"By keeping the Divine faith, I am made a partaker of the light of truth—guided by the light of truth, I advance in the knowledge of the Divine faith. Hence it is that (as my actions themselves evince), I profess the most holy religion. And this worship I declare to be that which teaches me deeper acquaintance with the most holy God, aided by whose Divine power, beginning from the very borders of the ocean, I have aroused each nation of the world in succession to a well-grounded hope of security, so that those which, groaning in servitude to the most cruel tyrants, and yielding to the pressure of their daily sufferings, had well nigh been utterly destroyed, have been restored through my agency to a far happier state. This God I confess that I hold in unceasing honor and remembrance. This God I delight to contemplate with pure and guileless thoughts in the height of his glory. This God I invoke with bended

---

<sup>243</sup> Euseb. Eccles. Hist. 9.11

<sup>244</sup> Blockley, 121. Also see Gibbon, 263–267. David Potter. Ancient Rome: A New History.

<sup>245</sup> Augustine, City of God, 5.23

<sup>246</sup> Poem 21

<sup>247</sup> Theodoret. Eccles. Hist. 124; Eusebius, Life of Constantine, 4.8

knees, and recoil with horror from the blood of sacrifices, from their foul and detestable odors, and from every earth-born magic fire."<sup>248</sup>

Near the end of the letter, Constantine reminds Shapur of how he crushed former tyrants who oppressed the saints, such as Maxentius and Licinius, and that he trusted that he would protect the Christian population of his nation, writing: "I commend the Christians to your care, and leave them in your protection; treat them, I beseech you, with benevolence."<sup>249</sup> The message was simple and gentle, but yet firm: God had toppled the persecutors of the past, and you are not immune from the punishment if you tread upon their same path.<sup>250</sup>

#### THE PERSIANS TRY TO INVADE ROME

When Rome was under the Christian emperor Theodosius, the Persian king Gororanes (known as Bahram V), a hater of Christians, surrounded the city with the intent of conquering it for the cause of Ahura Mazda. The siege proved unsuccessful, but the Persians nevertheless kept their post. During this time, a Persian prince who was amongst the besiegers began to blaspheme God like Goliath did, and threatened to burn the church of Rome down. Eunomius, the bishop of Rome, was enflamed with such zealous fire that he, like David, ordered a stone to be catapulted toward the prince. It was released, and with accuracy landed on the blasphemer's head, striking him dead as David's stone killed Goliath.

<sup>251</sup>

The goal to replace Christendom with a world Zoroastrian empire was desired by Khosroes II, who hoped to take over the whole Christian Roman empire. He mustered a large force against the Romans and their general Germanos, and defeated them. At the battle of Arxamoun, Khosroes fought the Romans using elephants, crushed them, and then took many captives and put them to death.

In short time, Khosroes expanded Persian power, taking all of Mesopotamia and Syria. When the Romans attempted to defend the Syrian cities Apamea and Edessa, their entire army was wiped out, save only a few men. The Persians would soon enter Asia Minor where they took Galatia and Paphlagonia; they advanced all the way to Chalcedon, and even reached Constantinople, which they assaulted greatly, but did not conquer. The Ottomans (Gog and Magog) also wanted to conquer Constantinople; they failed in the first attempt, but succeeded in 1451. Constantinople is on the eye of Satan, he desires to take for in its midst is the Hagia Sophia, one of the most holiest sites in Christendom. They invaded the Cappadocian city of Caesarea in Asia Minor where they captured prisoners by the tens of thousands. The worshippers of Ahura Mazda went right into Damascus, captured the city, and began a full out massacre. When the emperor Heracleas sent messengers to Khosroes to offer a tribute for peace, the tyrant sent them back, not being interested in money but in

---

<sup>248</sup> Letter in Eusebius, Life of Constantine, 4.9

<sup>249</sup> Letter in Theodoret. Eccles. Hist. 125

<sup>250</sup> See Peter J. Liethart, Defending Constantine, ch. 11, p. 247

<sup>251</sup> Theodoret. Eccles. Hist. 5.38



totally conquering the Roman empire.<sup>252</sup> After the conquest over the Holy Land, the Persians marched into North Africa, vanquishing and taking into their dominion all of Egypt, Ethiopia, and Libya. These takeovers were for strictly religious purposes, since when Heracleas sent ambassadors to Khosroes for peace, the Persian oppressor stated: "I will have no mercy on you until you renounce him who was crucified and worship the sun."<sup>253</sup> The persistent bloodshed and pillaging from the Persians sufficed for Heracleas' anger; he had no other choice but to declare a Holy War on Persia. His rage toward the persecutions and continuous violence against Christians by the Persians is found in the speech he made before his army:

"Brothers and children, you see that God's enemies have overrun our land, laid waste our cities, burned our altars, and filled the tables of bloodless sacrifice with bloody murders. They take great pleasure in defiling our churches, which should not suffer."<sup>254</sup>

The Persians sent a force into Armenia, but once they found out that the Romans were in Persia, they withdrew the army to come and defend the homeland. After some fighting took place, Khosroes fled to the city Thebarmais where a lofty Zoroastrian temple stood. Heraclius pursued him, and the tyrant resumed his retreat, and when the Roman king arrived, he burned the pagan temple, <sup>255</sup> a great action against idolatrous oppression. Heraclius even showed mercy to the fifty thousands Persian prisoners which he took, letting them all go free, taking care of them, and permitting them to rest. They were stirred with such compassion that they, in tears, exclaimed Heraclius as "the savior of Persia, who would kill Khosroes, the universal destroyer." <sup>256</sup> Such an event shows the enormous difference between Christian justice and pagan subjection. The struggle continued, and it wasn't getting any easier, but Heraclius kept up the spirits of his men. "Brothers," he said, "do not be troubled by your enemies' numbers for, God willing, one will chase thousands. Let us sacrifice ourselves to God for the salvation of our brothers. Let us take the martyrs' crown so the future will applaud us and God will give us our reward." <sup>257</sup> This statement clearly shows how these ancient Christians viewed martyrdom, that the crown of glory can be obtained with by being killed in persecution, or dying in Holy War.

The Byzantines showed an impenetrable spirit when combating the heathen soldiers. Money was drained from the Persians, and so Khosroes forced the churches under his

---

<sup>252</sup> Chron. Theophan. pp. 1-4, 6, 9-11, trans. & ed. Harry Turtledove; Theophilus of Edessa's Chronicle, section 1, from MSyr, p. 68, trans. Robert G. Hoyland, Liverpool University Press, brackets mine

<sup>253</sup> Chron. Theophan. 301, pp. 11-12

<sup>254</sup> Chron. Theophan. 304, p. 14

<sup>255</sup> Chron. Theophan. 307-308, pp. 16-17

<sup>256</sup> Chron. Theophan. 308, p. 17

<sup>257</sup> Chron. Theophan. 311, p. 19

empire to give away all of their valuables and treasures. <sup>258</sup>When the Byzantines were in Persia fighting the pagans, their Khazar allies left them, leaving the Christian warriors by themselves. Though this must have been shocking at first, Heraclius spoke to his men of how God works not through numbers, but through those who truly believe; that "salvation does not lie in masses of men or arms. Rather He [God] sends down His aid to those who believe in His mercy." <sup>259</sup> It was a profound statement that shows the wonders which so few individuals can do against an army of slaves.

On a major battle in a flat valley, Heraclius illustrated his tenacity and vigor when he sprinted ahead of his army and slew a Persian officer. Another Persian came at him—the emperor killed him; and another confident enemy officer struck him on the lip with a spear, but Heraclius neutralized him as well. Trumpets roared from both side; the Christian forces made their charge upon the Persian soldiers. Almost the entire Persian army was annihilated, while fifty Romans lost their lives. The Romans pressed on and overwhelmed the Persians the next day, obtaining another victory. They advanced forward, searching for Khosroes. They discovered the mansions and statues of their enemy king, and to avenge the destruction of so many Christian cities and building by the Persians, Heraclius razed these to the ground. The emperor sent a letter to Khosroes, imploring again for peace:

"I am pursuing and chasing peace. For I do not willingly burn Persia; rather, you force me to do so. Let us now, therefore, throw down our arms and welcome peace. Let us quench this fire, before it consumes everything." <sup>260</sup>

Khosroes would eventually be found in a lofty idolatrous tower that he built. It was very paralleled to the Tower of Babel: it was dedicated to the sun, moon, and stars. In an inner room of the tower, Khosroes sat on a middle seat and called himself God; on his right stood the cross he stole from Jerusalem, which he called "the Son," and on his left he placed a cock, which he referred to as "the Holy Spirit." He mockingly, but at the same seriously, placed himself as part of his own trinity. <sup>261</sup> The intent of this tower was the same as the one in Shinar, and the Kaaba in Mecca: to be worshipped by all the earth, under astral religion. This monument of oppression needed to be destroyed. Heraclius entered the tower and beheaded Khosroes, thus ending the tyranny of Zoroastrianism, and crushing the dominion of the Persian. <sup>262</sup> Heraclius then retook the stolen cross, returned to Jerusalem, and placed it back in the Church of the Holy Sepulcher. <sup>263</sup>

---

<sup>258</sup> Chron. Theophan. 315, p. 21

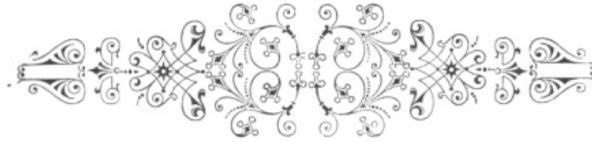
<sup>259</sup> Chron. Theophan. 317, p. 23

<sup>260</sup> Chron. Theophan. Annus Mundi 6118

<sup>261</sup> Jacobus de Voragine, The Golden Legend, 137; De Croce, Refutation of the Koran, ch. Xiii

<sup>262</sup> Ibid

<sup>263</sup> Jacobus de Voragine, The Golden Legend, 137; Chron. Theophan. Annus Mundi 6120



## UNLOCKING THE SECOND SEAL (THE BEGINNING DECLINE OF THE CHURCH)

The second seal, (rider of a red horse), is the complete reversal of the previous. Unlike the white horse (where its rider enforced peace), this one comes “to take peace from the earth that they should kill one another, and there was given to him a great sword”:

“And there went out another horse [that was] red: and [power] was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.” (Apocalypse 6:4)

“and the first chariot were red horses ...” (Zechariah 6:2a)

Wars were destined for the church as it was for ancient Israel with invasions, wars and then the Great Jewish revolts and the civil wars that broke out amongst the Jews during the Grecian and Roman empires. Such internal wars divided the Jewish kingdom into factions that eventually weakened God’s people.

Likewise for the church and this era came right after the white horse. From the fifth century to the fifteenth century, Western Christendom was able to keep its nations intact until a millennia when the decline began. The era of the rider of the Red Horse encompasses much of history where wars erupted in the east when Muslims invaded Christian Syria in the 7<sup>th</sup> century, all the way to the Ottoman Empire’s invasions lasting until the 19<sup>th</sup> century, but when John says “kill one another” he is alluding to internal wars, a span of history included the bloodiest European internal wars in the Thirty Years War where even professing Christians would “kill one another” without mercy. And while Islamic invasions converted much of the east to Islam’s Arian heresy there is no other era in history like this one where Christendom had to face a 781 years worth of wars between Muslim and Christian Byzantin. Then we had the Reconquista, 780 years of wars between the Muslim Umayyad conquest of Spain from 711-1492 and the fall of the Muslim Moors, the Nasrid Kingdom in Granada with an estimated death toll of 7 million.

Similarly in eastern Christendom, internal wars opened the gates for Islam’s invasions for over 474 years worth of wars between the Christian Byzantine versus the Muslim Seljuqs (1048-1308; 260 years, and the Byzantine-Ottoman 1265-1479; 214 years). No historian can account for the millions upon millions dead. Then we had 34 million casualties during the Mongol Empire versus several Eurasian states, not including the death from the Plague in Europe and western Asia, between 20-40 million deaths between 1206 and 1405 during the various campaigns of Genghis Khan, Kublai Khan, and Timur and 21 million others during the Islamic Empire and the Tang Dynasty China vs. Yan state (755-763). But regardless of the wars, Western Christendom pretty much kept its nations for a millennia able to regain what it lost. After the fifteenth century splits began with the Protestant reformation weakening Christendom and giving way to Muslim invasions that conquered much.

## CHRISTENDOM'S GREAT CIVIL WAR

In reality the Thirty Years War should have been called the First World War engulfing Europe between 1618 and 1648. Probably the most destructive conflict in Christian history resulted in millions upon millions fatalities not only from military engagements but also from violence, famine, and plague.

From the perspective of the Christian population at the time, it consumed huge populations; three decades of war turned central Europe into a wasteland. For example: during the 30-years war, Germany's population dropped from 18 million to 4 million;  $\frac{3}{4}$  of Germany's population perished.

In terms of proportional German casualties and destruction, it was surpassed only by 1945 resulting in the 19th-century Pan-Germanism and became a key justification for the 1871 creation of the German Empire. The Thirty Years' War produced the largest death toll of all time. It began when Protestant leaders threw two Catholic emissaries out of a Prague window sparking a war that lasted 30 years between Catholic and Protestant principedoms, drawing in supportive religious armies from Germany, Spain, England, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, France and Italy. Sweden's Protestant soldiers sang Martin Luther's "Ein 'Feste Burg" in battle.

The war altered the previous political order of European powers, which was made yet more complex by the spread of Calvinism throughout Germany.

The Calvinists worked with the Ottomans later on attempting to defeat the Catholic League at Lepanto, the greatest naval battle in history where the Cross defeated the Crescent and the Red Dragon was swallowed by the seas. "And if Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? Because you say that through Beelzebub I cast out devils" (Luke 11:15, 18), and "the prince of the Powers of this air" (Ephesians 2:2). At first sight it may seem strange that there should be any order or subordination amongst those rebellious spirits, and that those who rose against their Maker should obey one of their own fellows who had led them to destruction. And the analogy of similar movements among men might suggest that the rebellion would be likely to issue in anarchy and division.<sup>264</sup>

The 30 years war was so massive that it involved the House of Habsburg, also directly ruled a large portion of imperial territory: Austria, Bohemia, Hungary, Spain and its empire, Netherlands, southern Italy, the Philippines, and most of the Americas. The Rhine lands and those south to the Danube were largely Catholic, while Lutherans predominated in the north.

This was an era unparalleled in history where Christendom never really enjoyed any peace.

From the Middle Ages to the early modern period, wars occurred between Christendom and especially the Arian heretics, an anti-Trinity belief on par with the Muslim world. This period represented the struggle between the church on one side and the heretics and the Muslims on the other side which lasted the duration of 1260 years since the beast of Islam arose.

Then in the 18th-century rationalist Enlightenment and the French Revolution (the first attempt to topple the Christian establishment) was a transition to the post-Christian era.

---

<sup>264</sup> From the Catholic Encyclopedia

It was a continual attack to destroy and squash the church from the inception of Islam's invasions which sparked from 629 A.D to 633 A.D., (one year after Muhammad's death) when the Muslim locusts entered Jordan ordered to spare Nestorians and heretics but only massacre Catholic priests.<sup>265</sup> In 636 A.D under *Khalid bin Walid* they crushed the Byzantine army at the plains of Megiddo (Armageddon) at the battle of *Yarmuk*. They then entered Jerusalem occupying it in 638 A.D. Heraclius eventually lost Syria (640 A.D.), Egypt and Byzantine Mesopotamia to the Muslim Arab locusts and the wars against Christendom continued throughout all seven Muslim caliphates until 1260 lunar years past and the tide turned in 1871 A.D., and the Ottoman Great Depression began in 1873 all the way until Allenby's decisive victory at the same place where Islam entered: at Megiddo and in 1918 Allenby forced the Turks to relinquish control of Jerusalem to the British. Thereafter he was often referred to as *Allenby of Armageddon*.

And lest our critics point that these prophecies are literal 1260 days, we are using the 1260 years as a type (a day for a year) and not as the ultimate fulfillment. We do realize that the 3.5 years are literal at the ends of days. We contend that this prophecy has a dual nature of one day equals a year since Apocalypse 12 signifies a beast with seven heads and seven crowns, yet in Apocalypse 13 it signifies a different beast with seven heads and ten diadems as we shall explain in this the differences:

“And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads.” (Revelation 12:3)

“Then the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days.” (Revelation 12:6)

Where in Revelation 13 that beast is different:

“Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his [seven] heads a blasphemous name.” (Revelation 13:1)

“And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months.” (Revelation 13:5)<sup>266</sup>

---

<sup>265</sup> “You will come upon a people who live like hermits in monasteries, believing that they have given up all for God. Let them be and destroy not their monasteries. And you will meet other people who are partisans of Satan and worshippers of the Cross, who shave the centre of their heads so that you can see the scalp. Assail them with your swords until they submit to Islam or pay the Jizya. I entrust you to the care of Allah”—*Islamic Historical General Khalid Bin Waleed* by Akram, Agha Ibrahim

<sup>266</sup> We must view this in light of this verse: “And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows” that is three crown are taken away (Cush, Phut and Egypt, see Daniel 11) which this Assyrian (king of the north) conquers.

## LUTHER'S INTERPRETATIONS REGARDING THE ISLAMIC BEAST

It was Martin Luther's faulty eschatology and interpretation of prophecy that made the realities of his time. This reality trickled all the way down to our time, setting a standard on how Protestants viewed biblical prophecies. The end times, to Luther, was interpreted as having practical implications for a Christian's life and actions where eschatology provided the basis, not just for political issues, but for pastoral advice in his time which still exist today for much of western Protestants. For example, in Luther's day, the Ottoman threat arose with him responding to the threat from a prophetic paradigm that still repeats itself today:

“From the prophecy of Daniel 7, Luther concluded three determined realities that shaped his entire perspective on the Turks: (1) the Turks would never conquer European Christianity; (2) they [the Turks] would never be conquered by European Christianity. (3) they would always oppress Christianity militarily.”<sup>267</sup>



All three assumptions as it turned out were wrong. The Turks, according to Luther's view, which we still see today, resembled no serious threat, since Luther believed that the real serious threat would arise out of the Roman Empire led by the

papacy (as harlot). So he viewed Islam as a repellant to this beast.

So instead of viewing the Ottomans from the whole of scripture, he was confident that the Turks must somehow occupy “some prophecies” while he ignored the bulk of verses that spoke of this threat etched by John in the Book of Revelations. According to Luther “the Turk is also so great and powerful... [and] such a powerful thing has to be stated in Scripture.” Luther then went on a research spree and reserved Islam's prophetic role as “the Little Horn” while reserving the *Catholic Church* as “Harlot” and the *Holy Roman Empire* as “the beast”.

John stated that the “harlot rides the beast” how such “Catholic Harlot” rides this Muslim beast was unexplained by Luther, which reveals how such heritage crept into the Protestant world where fragmented views dominate their sphere. Although Islam was the main threat to Christendom from before Luther and during Luther and after Luther, yet to Luther, the more insignificant the Turk was made, the better it was for Luther's arguments and actions to fit neatly in his faulty fragmented paradigm. Luther's reaction to the Ottoman beast had terrible consequences. While Luther's main paradigm in his eschatological interpretations turned out false, Luther believed that the Turks were ‘a chastisement,’ ‘a scourge’ and a ‘rod in the hand of God’ to ‘bring Christians to repentance’. Luther, instead of encouraging preparedness, he instructed fatalism since in his view:

“the Turk –has good fortune in waging war against Christians and usually gains the upper hand and obtains the victory... [but] here in Daniel it is announced beforehand

---

<sup>267</sup> *Eschatology And The Turks* by Nicholas Proksch from Bethany Lutheran Theological Seminary

that Christians are punished here on earth on account of their sin and the innocent are made into martyrs.”

In other words, when it comes to Ottoman victory, to Luther it was “God wills it” and so not much should be done. How can an “innocent” deserves to be “punished” was an odd observation. In other words, in Luther’s view, the Catholic Church deserved the Turks who were according to Luther’s interpretation only a “little horn” which cannot expand beyond to Germany since God protected that nation.

Luther’s reason for pointing the Ottomans as this “little horn” was that in his view the Turks had conquered three Roman dominions: 1) Egypt, 2) Asia Minor and 3) Greece, which according to Luther’s reckoning, was a clear fulfillment of Daniel 7:24. How Luther separated “Greece” from “Asia Minor” (Greece after all is in Asia Minor) was another oddity. Luther simply jimmy-rigged his theory to fit a text as shall these do when Antichrist come.

Such sloppy treatment of the text is classic in our days, where people make grand claims by using fragmented and deductive approach. And since this little horn uproots only three (using Luther’s textual isolation) he believed that the Ottomans resembled no danger to Europe (especially Germany) since they can only knock out and uproot three horns from the Roman Empire and nothing more.



## THE MUSLIM BEAST

Today, the bulk of prophecy enthusiasts think that “beasts” are exclusively regarding “end-times”. What they miss is that “beasts” encompass threats to *the entire history of God’s people*. In Daniel, he included Israel’s time period prior to Christianity to the end as four beasts and John the Revelator was a repeat with emphasis on only two beasts: 1—a “seven headed beast” (Revelation 17:10) with “five have fallen” (past) these are pre-church which encompassed Israel and then he addresses two remainders after the 6th (Roman, during the church period of John’s day) and then the two “the other that is not yet” is regarding a threat to the church age after Rome’s conversion.

This 7th was what Luther faced and lived with, is also the 8th, which re-arises at the end of days. These (two consecutive beasts) is also confirmed in the book of Apocalypse by John, it was destined that the Church suffers “two beasts,” both separate in time and are not to arise at the same time. The error many fall under (which was Luther’s folly) is that they believed these “two beasts” arise at the “same time” ignoring that the last one is



accompanied with “a lamb with two horns”. It is possible that we have one horn; an Assyrian from the North (Asia Minor) and yet another horn “Pharaoh of Egypt” spread to nations that Egypt did not know is perhaps from Europe led by Germany that encompass the furthest parts of northern Europe. This is our estimation and is not concrete.

These would be the Protestant nations for as we shall examine later on this “host” of peoples go against the “sacrifice” (Eucharist). John warns of schismatic peoples set to serve Antichrist. These are not measured as being part of God’s Temple and are set outside the altar. The true Temple must be of the Altar and these have no perpetual sacrifice and are considered as the “court of the gentiles” (pagans) given to serve Antichrist 3.5 years. Luther was loaded with significant errors and contributed significantly in causing massive blood to be split throughout Christendom. John clearly pointed out to a duplicate beast of the seventh stems “out of the sea” and is taken to “the pit” and the *second* arises out of the “earth” (pit) and back into the pit. As to understand the *first*, we find:

“And I saw a beast [first beast] coming up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten diadems, and upon his heads names of blasphemy.”  
(Revelation 13:1)

This is the Islamic threat, which Luther supported so long it persecutes the Catholics. He missed it since he missed that beasts encompass a *span of history*. Even the ten horns, they do not sprout all up at the same time.

These are *consecutive* and *sequential*. This first beast with all its ten horns arising out of the sea (Mediterranean sea) then later on went to the pit in the 19th century to later on shall sprout out of the pit (the earth) as the second beast in our time:

“And I saw *another beast* [second beast] coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns, like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon.” (Revelation 13:11)

It is possible that by “spoke like a dragon” is the “red dragon” of Revelation 12 with the crescent moon under the woman’s feet.

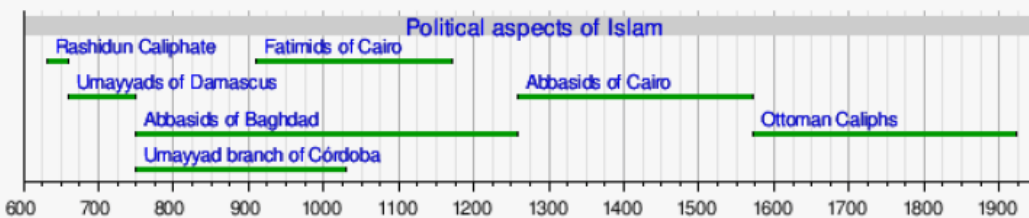




Please note, that historically, the seven heads fit Islam’s seven Caliphates.<sup>268</sup> These have been swallowed up by the pit and are now coming as the 8<sup>th</sup> beast with support from a two horned beast (2 Antichrists) one of which is the Antichrist.<sup>269</sup>

The seven heads (Caliphates) are counted from the first to the seventh. We count the horns as each was taken over by the next, while we also carefully count each appointed crown (or Caliph/horn) keeping in mind that each crown is transferred to the next Caliph. This construct also supports what we see in Daniel’s chapter two, the four kingdoms. History lumps them as *Four Main Caliphates* (Rashidun, Umayyad, Abbasid and Ottoman) yet they were also seven caliphates (Rashidun, Umayyad, Abbasid, Fatimid, Ayyubid, Almohad and Ottoman) and ten crowns which represent the seven caliphates that also arise in the end to join the second beast with two horns.

These are *seven* in *four* with three were plucked out of the root by the Ottomans (Fatimid, Ayyubid and Al-Mohad).



There are four main caliphates (Rashidun, Umayyad, Abasid and Ottoman) with the other three within this same timeframe (Fatimid, Ayyubid and Al-Mohad) adding to seven caliphates (heads).

Everything fits even the crowns as to what consumed a third of Christendom: the Rashidun which sparked the conquest of Christian Syria in 637 and later Armenia had two, (1st crown) *Abu Bakr Al-Siddiq* and (2nd crown) *Hasan ibn Ali*, Grandson of Muhammad Son of ‘Ali ibn Abi-Talib’ which branched into the Shiites.

This sprouted the two horns and is why it is a “divided kingdom”. Then the Umayyad Caliphate (second head, 661-750) was appointed Mu‘āwiyah ibn ‘Abī Ṣufyān (3rd crown) centered in Mecca and *Abd-ar-Rahman III* (4th crown) centered in Christian Spain and North Africa and reached to east China borders and southern France Africa Morocco.

<sup>268</sup> By the 10<sup>th</sup> century there were no less than seven caliphates centered in Baghdad Iraq (ancient Babylon)—See A Manual of General History: By John Jacob Anderson pg. 153

<sup>269</sup> "That he would be a man armed with Satanic powers is the opinion of Justin Martyr, A.D. 103 (Dial. 371, 20, 21, Thirlbii. 1722); of Ireneus, A.D. 140 (Op. 5,25, 437, Grabii. 1702); of Tertullian, A.D. 150 (De Res. Carn. c. 24; Apol. c. 32); of Origen, A.D. 184 (Op. 1, 667, Delarue, 1733); of his contemporary, Hippolytus (De Antichristo, 57, Fabricii, Hamburgi. 1716); of Cyprian, A.D. 250 (Ep. 58; op. 120, Oxon. 1682) of Victorinus, A.D. 270 (Bib. Patr. Magna, 3, 136, Col. Agrip. 1618); of Lactantius, A.D. 300 (Dyv. Inst. 7, 17); of Cyril of Jerusalem, A.D. 315 (Catech. 15, 4); of Jerome, A.D. 330 (Op. 4, pars 1, 209, Parisiis, 1693); of Chrysostom, A.D. 347 (Comm. in 2 Thessalonians); of Hilary of Poitiers, A.D. 350 (Comm. in Matthew); of Augustine, A.D. 354 (De Civit. Dei, 20, 19); of Ambrose, A.D. 380 (Comm. in Luc.). The authors of the Sibylline Oracles, A.D. 150, and of the Apostolical Constitutions, Celsus (see Orig. c. Cels. lib. 6), Ephraem Syrus, A.D. 370, Theodoret, A.D. 430

Then the Abbasid Caliphate (third head with two horns (750-945/1258/1517) founded by Abul `Abbas al-Saffah or the butcher (5th crown) centered in Baghdad and Al-Mustansir Billah (6th crown) centered in Cairo. Then the Fatimid Caliphate (fourth head 910-1171) founded by al-Mahdi Billah (7th crown) established Fatimid rule (Shiite) throughout much of North Africa, Hejaz, Palestine and the Levant. Then we had the Ayyubid Caliphate (fifth head 1171-1260) with the famed Sultan Saladin (8th crown). Then The Almohad Caliphate (sixth head, 1147-1269).

The Alomhads (9th crown) ruled major areas of the Maghreb and Muslim Spain. Then the Ottoman Caliphate (1517–1923 the seventh head) founded by Selim I (10th crown)<sup>270</sup> and by that he was the tenth and final horn.

The rule of thumb is that whoever persecuted the church throughout history must be a beast (the threat) mentioned in scripture and there were several beasts throughout history fitting one or more of the construct. Nothing in history so perfectly fit like these seven heads and ten crowns. Anyone who disagrees must answer: where else would anyone find a beast that persecuted the woman (the church) like these seven Islamic dynasties?

---

<sup>270</sup> Selim I (1512-20) renewed the expansion of Turkish frontiers. After conquering Syria and Palestine, he subdued Egypt in 1517 and put an end to the last representative of the ancient Saracenic caliphate. The fall of Egypt did stir Pope Leo X and the Fifth Lateran Council to issue a call for a new crusade. Emperor Maximilian pledged support, but the Lutheran revolt commencing later in the same year put a restraint upon any immediate large-scale Christian offensive.

Suleiman the Magnificent (1520-66), Selim's son and successor, saw the Ottoman power reach its zenith. He quickly became as great a threat to Christendom as Mohammed II. For Suleiman now moved into the Balkans and commenced the conquest of Hungary.

Mohammed Sokolli (1560-79). An expedition that had already been under preparation in Suleiman's day, the capture of Cyprus, was carried out successfully in 1570. The Mediterranean peril thus became the most serious in years at Lepanto. This emergency had been foreseen by Pope St. Pius V who had preached a new crusade. Preparations were too slow for the relief of Cyprus, but much credit nonetheless goes to King Philip II of Spain who shouldered the lion's share of the financing of the Christian flotilla. An allied fleet of 208 galleys was finally brought together under the titular command and inspiration of the king's brother, Don Juan, but the real technical direction lay with Admiral Marcantonio Colonna. With papal blessing this fleet set out to meet the Turkish galleys of Ali Pasha. At Lepanto, off Corfu, the Christians encountered Ali Pasha's 230 vessels on October 7, 1571. In a spirited encounter the crusaders sank eighty ships and captured 130. St. Pius, apparently miraculously informed of this triumph, ejaculated: "There was a man sent from God whose name was John." But the feast of the Holy Rosary, assigned to this day, commemorates the real patroness of victory, for nothing short of her intervention could have saved a divided Christendom which could or would do little to save itself.

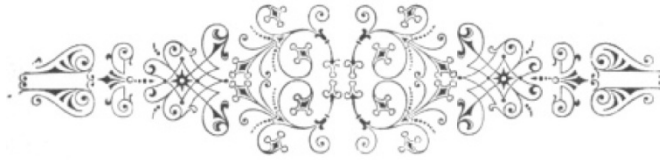
## The Four Major Muslim States/Caliphates

- After the death of Prophet Muhammed (632 A.D.), the Capital city of the Islamic State and the ruling Caliphs have changed over the years.
- The Rashidun caliphs 632-661 (Medina)
- The Umayyad caliphs 661-750 (Damascus)
- The Abbasids caliphs 750/762-1258 (Baghdad)
- Ottoman caliphs 1453-1924 (Istanbul)

The Ottoman Empire finally collapsed in the 20th century when General Allenby took Jerusalem after a battle at Armageddon, which erupted in the very *Valley of Megiddo* uprooting the Ottomans from the Holy Land in 1918.



Battle of Megiddo (1918)



## UNLOCKING THE THIRD SEAL (THE ERA OF FAMINES)

Once the tide turned for Christendom and the conquering of the Ottomans was underway, we find much evidence for the third seal around World War I, which was an era of unprecedented global starvation:

“When He opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, “Come and see.” So I looked, and behold, a black horse, and he who sat on it had a pair of scales in his hand.

“And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, a measure of wheat for a denarius, and three measures of barley for a denarius; and [see] thou hurt not the oil and the wine.”

“And I turned and lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold, four chariots coming out from between two mountains; and the mountains were brazen” (Zechariah 6:1)

“And the second chariot black horses ...” (Zechariah 6:2b)

“As for the chariot in which were the black horses, they went out to the land of the north ...” (Zechariah 6:6)

In the 19<sup>th</sup> century the era of John’s “black horse” and Zechariah’s “black horses went to the whole earth including the land of the north” which starvation hit the entire northern region of the entire earth from Russia, the U.S., Germany to Turkey exactly as Zechariah prophesied. Zechariah’s black horses is in the third seal. “the two mountains” is Christendom’s region where the split is. At the time these were “brazen” (bold) but in Zechariah 14<sup>th</sup> earthquake coming out of it are the punishments. The Mount of Olives “My Mountain” is Christ’s Kingdom which split from east (Orthodox) to west (Catholic) where some went north and others went south. (Read Zechariah 6 and Zechariah 14<sup>th</sup> carefully).

No matter where one asks the elderly generation they all speak of this era of great hardship and famine. Whether speaking to my middle eastern father, grand parents and great grand parents they all speak of this time and even in the United States my grand parents and other folks would express that life was harsh and difficult. In 1871 AD, Turkey was struck with one of history’s worst famines and then followed by one of the world’s greatest locust invasions three years later in 1874 AD, 1260 lunar years (1242 solar years) from when Islam did its first occupation of a Christian country invading Syria at 633 AD in the *Siege of Damascus*.

From the 1800s, and for a hundred or so years, this was indeed an era of famine that took more lives than any other famines in history: 1810, 1811, 1846, and 1849 four famines

in China with death toll estimated at 45 million and between 1850-1873, 20 million more died. 1876-1879, 15-19 million perished from famines in India, China, Brazil, Northern Africa (and other countries) and again famine in northern China killed 9–13 million people. 5.5 million died in the Great Famine of 1876–78 in India. 500,000 died in Brazil. British policies and drought were responsible for the deaths in India. The famine in China was a result of drought influenced by the El Niño-Southern Oscillation.

Then between 1914-1919, famines caused by the Allied blockade of Germany during World War I until Germany signed the Treaty of Versailles.

And from 1917–1919 the Persian famine took 1/4 of the population living in the north of Iran (8-11 million) and the Kazakh famine of 1919–1922 killed more.

Then a series of famines hit Turkestan at the time of the Bolshevik revolution which killed about a sixth of the population. The drought resulted in millions of deaths in the Soviet famine of 1932–1933, including the famine in Ukraine (5 – 8 million perished).

Then in the 1940s famine in Warsaw Ghetto in concentration camps caused by deliberate denial of food by the Nazis killing six million Jews and two-three million Polish.

We also have the Irish exodus to the U.S., sparked by the Great Famine was caused by a devastating potato disease. 33% of the Irish population relied on the potato for sustenance, and the onset of the disease in 1845 triggered mass starvations that lasted until 1853. The large Catholic population was suppressed by the British beast, and left unable to own or lease land, or hold a profession.

When the blight struck, British ships prevented other nations from delivering food aid. Ireland experienced a mass exodus, with upwards of 2 million people fleeing the country, many to the United States. At its conclusion in 1853, 1.5 million Irish were dead, and an additional 2 million had emigrated. In total, the population of Ireland shrunk by a resounding 25%.

And much like the Soviet Famine of 1932-1933, Communism caused 45 million to perish in the Great Chinese Famine.

And then the locusts hit the Ottomans again in 1915 blocking the sun in Jerusalem with massive locust invasions in the United States right after when it declared U.S. neutrality in World War I in 1914 refusing to fight the Muslim Ottomans.

During these times and before Communism the U.S. abandoned Russia, which was fighting Japan and the Muslim Ottomans. Instead, the U.S. cozied up with the Ottomans in the beginning to later declare war on the German Empire and its Muslim ally on April 6, 1917.

In 1871 A.D., God struck the Ottoman Empire with mass starvation and disease where the loaf of bread was for a denarius. The famine sprouted the Great Eastern Crisis.

Amazingly, history even records what the Bible foretold “a quart of wheat for a denarius” and “do not harm the oil and the wine”. In 1871 A.D., even the wheat was extremely rare where “food sold for ten times the normal value”:

“A drought in 1872 led to massive crop failures across the Empire. Locust swarms denuded Cyprus of crops. A harsh winter led to widespread starvation. Dead bodies were seen on the streets of Istanbul and packs of wolves were observed attacking people in the suburbs.”

“Two pounds [a quart] of wheat for a denarius” (Revelation 6:6) went on to 1915, even a greater famine where locusts invaded Turkey and the entire Levant region.

Locusts even invaded the Ottoman sympathizer at the time, the United States after John Adams to cozy up to the Ottomans [declared](#) in the Treaty of Tripoli stating that: “the Government of the United States of America is not, in any sense, founded on the Christian religion.”

#### ARTICLE 11.

As the government of the United States of America is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion,—as it has in itself no character of enmity against the laws, religion or tranquility of Musselmen,—and as the said States never have entered into any war or act of hostility against any Mehomitan nation, it is declared by the parties that no pretext arising from religious opinions shall ever produce an interruption of the harmony existing between the two countries.

The U.S. omitted this phrase later on. The widespread winged invasion of 1874, though, hit harder than a million tons of flying bricks. The hot and dry conditions of the spring and summer of 1874 had provided ideal breeding conditions for the Rocky Mountain locusts. “The grasses seemed to wither, and the cattle bunched up near the creek and the well, and no air seemed to stir the leaves on the trees,” Kansas pioneer Susan Parffitt wrote. “All nature seemed still.” And then they came.”

In places the mass of insects blocked out the sun for as long as six hours. When the locusts did descend, they covered every shrub, plant and tree, sometimes breaking limbs with their combined weight. They flattened and devoured corn stalks and reaped fields of grain. They consumed only the most succulent bits of the wheat crop, letting the rest rot on the ground.

A map produced by the state of Missouri shows that the 1874 infestation spread from the eastern slope of the Rockies into western Iowa, Minnesota and Missouri and from the Canadian Prairie provinces to central Texas, just north of Austin. Generally it moved from north to south. Hit particularly hard were Kansas, Nebraska, Dakota Territory, western Iowa, Minnesota, Missouri, Indian Territory, eastern Colorado Territory and the southeastern corner of Wyoming Territory.

The results were often magnified in remote areas, as settlers there had modest food reserves and few neighbors to help. Texas, Montana Territory and the Prairie provinces of Canada were affected but escaped the worst of the infestation. The largest locust swarm in 1874, according to an 1880 U.S. Entomological Commission report, “covered a swath equal to the combined areas of Connecticut, Delaware, Maine, Maryland, Massachusetts, New Hampshire,

New Jersey, New York, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island and Vermont.”

A swarm of locusts in the U.S. would be some 1,800 miles long and 110 miles wide. “By the turn of the 20th century, the Rocky Mountain locust was fast becoming extinct. The last reported sighting of a living specimen came in southern Canada in 1902. Why this particular species became extinct remains something of a mystery.”

It was indeed “a measure of wheat for a denarius.” In Jerusalem the flour was 7 Kirsh (Kurus) per kilo (a kilo makes two quarts). So it is 3.5 Kurus per quart. In 1915, a

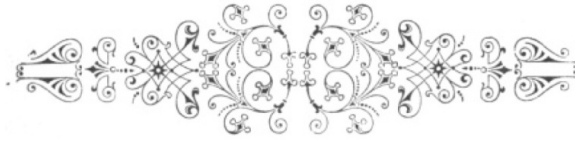
Kurus is a 2.4 silver coin. This would be 8.4 grams of silver per quart. The daily wage was 12.6 grams of silver for an unskilled worker per day (5.5 Kurus a day). <sup>271</sup>

Between 1915 and 1921 was probably one of the greatest persecutions in the history of the east and the Levant when the Young Turks government during the collapse of the Ottoman Empire persecuted Eastern Christian populations in Anatolia, Persia, Northern Mesopotamia and the Levant massacring 3.4 million (Kurdish, Arab and Circassian) and 1.5 million Armenian Christians, 750,000 Assyrian Christians and a million Greek Orthodox Christians and 250,000 Maronite Christians including Georgian Christians and Bulgarians who refused to accept the mark of Islam.

---

<sup>271</sup> Prices and Wages in the Ottoman Empire, 1469-1914 Hurrietdaily





## UNLOCKING THE FOURTH SEAL (COMMUNISM AND NAZISM)

And this is what stemmed from World War I and afterwards, the rise of Communism, Nazism and World War II:

“And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.” (Revelation 6:8)

The Fourth Seal corresponds to the Fatima prophecy (1917):<sup>272</sup>

“If my requests are heeded, Russia will be converted, and there *will be peace*; if not, she will spread her errors throughout the world, causing wars and persecutions of the Church. The good will be martyred; the Holy Father will have much to suffer; *various nations will be annihilated*.” Finally, however, a promise of God’s mercy: “In the end, my Immaculate Heart will triumph. The Holy Father will consecrate Russia to me, and she shall be converted, and a period of peace will be granted to the world.”

“War is imminent. The sins of men will be washed in their own blood. Those nations will suffer most in the war which tried to destroy the kingdom of God. Portugal will suffer some of the circumstances of war, but because of our country’s consecration to the Immaculate Heart of Mary, she will not suffer them all.”

“When you see a night illuminated by an unknown light, know that it is the great sign that God gives you that He is going to punish the world for its crimes by means of war, famine and persecution of the Church and the Holy Father.”<sup>273</sup>

On January 25, 1938, an unearthly phenomenon lit up the skies all over Europe and as far away as Bermuda. Thousands of Britons poured into the streets of cities and towns in wonderment and fear. Londoners thought half the city was on fire. In Scotland, peasants

---

<sup>272</sup> I was a doubting Thomas regarding Fatima (I was actually a Fatima denier even when I was Catholic) until the writing of this volume after analyzing the Apocalypse and Zechariah. The apparition happened at the end of WWI, and just weeks before the October Revolution in Russia (height of it in November 7, 1917). No one can explain how three children would know the date of and location, where St. Mary would perform the miracle of the sun witnessed by tens of thousands just weeks before the October Revolution in Russia. World War I from 1914 to 1918 predicted a new war (WWII) ‘starting soon’.

<sup>273</sup> See the Dublin Review by Nicholas Patrick Wiseman published 1948. Also see The Fatima Secret by Michael Hasemann, Pg. 2



of the lowlands were awestruck by what they saw and feared to be an ill omen. In Portugal, “villagers rushed in fright from their homes, fearing the end of the world” (AP dispatch). All over Switzerland, firehouses were emptied of their apparatus in response to many false alarms. In France, thousands of telephone calls asked “whether it was a fire, war or the end of the world.”<sup>274</sup>

All transatlantic radio communications were interrupted and not resumed until 11:30 p.m. Even in Canada, wire services were disrupted from Winnipeg to Montreal. The day after the great light, Hitler took control of the German army with the intention of perpetrating one act of war after another. Little more than a month later, he marched his troops into Austria to take over that hapless nation. When Lucia was asked about Our Lady’s prophecy that “if people did not stop offending God, another war, even worse, will begin in the reign of Pius XI” (who reigned until Feb. 10, 1939), she explained that World War II really began with the invasion of Austria, which led to the invasion of Poland on Sept. 1, 1939. Mary’s prophecy was fulfilled. Needless to say, man learned nothing from World War I, the bloodiest war in all history, and set himself on the path to an even bloodier one. With the same pride and arrogance that brought man to war, he sought in his own way to insure the peace. Instead of turning away from sin by penance, man became more self-indulgent than ever before. His lust and greed sent soaring the rate of crime, divorce, political corruption, dishonesty in business and, one year after Our Lady’s public warning, the first capitulation of a Christian church to contraception. As Our Lady predicted, a worse war was the result.<sup>275</sup>

Failing to initially heed the instruction, the whole earth was involved in some shape or form in this war but particularly the northern region of the globe: the U.S., Russia and Europe. Zechariah says that after these, peace (chariot of white horses) will come and it

---

<sup>274</sup> See World Apostolate of Fatima “What was it that stirred so many people in so many lands? One report described it as “two magnificent arcs rising in the east and west, from which radiated pulsating beams like search lights in dark red, greenish blue and purple...a shimmering curtain of fire.” Another said it was a “huge blood-red beam of light...emblazoned on the sky.” In Switzerland and Austria, it was seen as a “glow, bathing snow-clad mountains...a beautiful sight.” A “most brilliant display,” something “rarely seen in Southern or Western Europe: and of exceptional amplitude...such as has not been seen in Western Europe since 1709,” were typical comments in the press. Despite numerous cables to The New York Times from around the world, the paper relegated the news to page 25 of its Jan. 26, 1938 issue. The reason may very well be that it was not considered unearthly at all but just an unusual recurrence of the aurora borealis. An aurora or a warning? After much study, scientists came to agree that this display did not fit in the pattern of an aurora borealis. An aurora is preceded by considerable sunspot activity. In this instance, there was almost nothing of the sort, only a single sunspot noticed the weekend before. Unlike the aurora, clearest in the arctic regions, this display was seen most vividly over an incredible area, as far south as Spain, Portugal and Bermuda. Moreover, while most auroras reach a height of 186 miles, some of the rays of this phenomenon reached the fantastic height of 434 miles. In September of 1938, Dr. Carl Stoermer of the Institute of Theoretical Astrophysics in Oslo, Norway, published an article in a scientific journal indicating that the incident of January 25 was of unaccountable origin and mysterious in nature. He wrote that throughout the exhibition there was a noise “similar to the sound of burning grass and brush” in contrast to the silence of an aurora borealis.”

<sup>275</sup> World Apostolate of Fatima, *An unknown light in 1938 demands our attention – even today*, By Barb Ernster

did.<sup>276</sup> The Fatima prophecy after consecrating Russia seems to fit into Zechariah 6 “chariot of white horses” but prior, for failing to heed the instruction, World War II erupted and it was the war of empires, the deadliest military conflict in the history of mankind where nearly every nation on earth was involved and an estimated total of 70–85 million people perished. Besides the slaughter in combat, at least 20 million people died as a result of malnutrition and its associated diseases. One fourth of the earth was handed over to Nazism (national socialism) and Communism by innovators of confusion to kill millions and starve millions of Christians and Jews in the Ghettos, or in Siberia under Stalin, or even in Mexico during the Calles persecutions of the saints.

Throughout the history of the Soviet Union (1922–1991), there were periods where Soviet authorities brutally suppressed Christians. If we use biblical terminology, two Jewish false prophets named Karl Marx and Vladimir Lenin calling to convert the world to their utopian vision, birthed what became the Soviet Marxist-Leninist policy, an infection exported from Germany. Berlin's strategy was clear: Lenin and his Bolsheviks were meant to destabilize Russia thereby – in the middle of the First World War – easing the burden of fighting on the Eastern Front. The evil German Empire was relying on an old rule of diplomacy: The enemy of my enemy is my friend. And the plan worked. The Germans who chartered a train provided by Kaiser Wilhelm II with the aim of furthering the Russian Revolution sent Vladimir Ilyich Ulyanov (Lenin) and with German help, Lenin left his exile in Switzerland and, a week later, reached his destination: Petrograd, which would later be renamed to Leningrad then thankfully changed back to today's Saint Petersburg.

The idea originated with a man who took the communist nom de guerre "Parvus," or the little one: *Israel Lazarevich Gelfand*. He was another Russian Jew who at the end of 1914 had already been using his influence to offer the German ambassador in Constantinople an alliance of "Prussian bayonets and Russian proletarian fists." He claimed that the interests of Germany and the Russian revolutionaries were identical. After some initial skepticism, he was granted an audience in Berlin.

The Russian communist, with his journalistic background in Germany and business success in Constantinople, Turkey, wrote the script of a revolution for the Foreign Office. It was a roadmap for what actually happened just a few months later. Over 23 typed pages, Gelfand detailed how a foreign-backed coup could be successful. For him, it was a



---

<sup>276</sup> “The annihilation of nations,” I theorize while the fulfillment of Russia’s consecration is a type, World War II did not annihilate nations completely but Numbers 24 does. On June 13, 1929 at Tuy, Spain, Mother Mary appeared again to Sister Lucy told Lucy that “The moment has come for God to ask the Holy Father to make, in union with all the bishops of the world, the consecration of *Russia* to My Immaculate Heart. By this means, He promises to save *Russia*.”

question of money, sabotage, and toppling the government. One month later the German imperial treasury approved 2 million marks "to support revolutionary propaganda in Russia."<sup>277</sup>

The whole movement advocated the control, suppression, and ultimately, the elimination of Christianity and caused a massive rebellion in Russia, which became the Soviet Union to have the error of National Socialism in the head of the snake, Germany.

In 1921 it passed a resolution calling for wide-scale anti-Christian agitation which sparked the murder of the metropolitan of Kiev and executed twenty-eight bishops and 6,775 priests.

After the famine of 1922, which struck the evil empire, there was an outcry to spend the wealth of the church. The Jewish Lenin outlined that the entire property of the church could be used as a pretext to attack the church and kill Christian clergy.

As a result, the arm of the anti-clerical of the Soviet Union led by Yevgeny Tuchkov began aggressively arresting and executing bishops, priests, and devout worshipers, such as Metropolitan Veniamin in Petrograd in 1922 for refusing to accede to the demand to hand in church valuables (including sacred relics). Archbishop Andronik of Perm, who worked as a missionary in Japan was shot after being forced to dig his own grave. Bishop Germogen of Tobolsk, who voluntarily accompanied the czar into exile, was strapped to the paddle wheel of a steamboat and mangled by the rotating blades. In 1922, the Solovki Camp of Special Purpose, the first Russian concentration camp and a former Orthodox monastery, was established in the Solovki Islands in the White Sea. In the years 1917–1935, 130,000 Russian Orthodox priests were arrested; 95,000 were put to death, executed by firing squad. During the 1930s, many church members were killed or sent to labor camps. Between 1927 and 1940, the number of Orthodox churches in the Russian Republic fell from 29,584 to fewer than 500 by 1941 and of the nearly 1,200 Catholic churches that had existed in 1917, only two were still active.

The government then conducted a massive purge of Christian intellectuals, most of whom died in the camps or in prison and during the purges of 1937 and 1938, church documents record that 168,300 Russian Orthodox clergy were arrested. Of these, over 100,000 were shot. Many thousands of victims of persecution became recognized in a special canon of saints known as the "new martyrs and confessors of Russia."

After the German invasion of the USSR in 1941, Stalin revived the Russian Orthodox Church but only to raise morale for the war effort. Consequently, by 1957, there were almost 22,000 Orthodox churches in the USSR. However, in 1959 Nikita Khrushchev initiated a new anti-religious campaign, which led to the closure of almost 12,000 churches. By 1985 only 7,000 churches remained active.

Between 1939 and 1945, an estimated 3,000 members, 18% of the Polish clergy, were murdered for their suspected ties to the Polish Resistance.

By the end of the Khrushchev era, 50,000 clergy were executed. In 1995, the Russian state commissioner confirmed that 200,000 Russian Orthodox Priests, monks, and nuns were killed. In 1997 the remains of a Catholic Bishop and 30 priests were found at Sandormoch, 150 miles north of St. Petersburg. According to Russian schoolbooks, 20

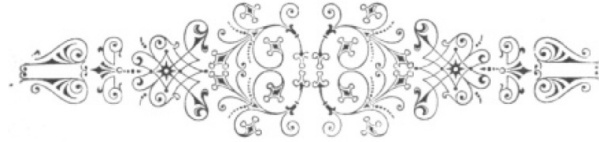
---

<sup>277</sup> *How Germany got the Russian Revolution off the ground dw.com*

million Soviet and East European citizens died in Communist Labor camps, while 15 million more were killed in mass executions.

During the Spanish Civil War of 1936–1939 individual clergymen and entire Christian communities were executed by leftists, communists and anarchists including 13 bishops, 4,172 priests and seminarians, 2,364 monks and friars and 283 nuns, for a total of 6,832 clerical victims. Then there was the Calles Law. At this time, some in the United States government, considering Calles' regime Bolshevik, started to refer to Mexico as "Soviet Mexico" Plutarco Calles with Jacobins, supported by Calles' central government, went beyond mere anti-clericalism and engaged in secular anti-religious campaigns to eradicate what they called "superstition" and "fanaticism", which included the desecration of religious objects as well as the persecution and murder of the clergy.

*Notes: see Second Twentieth Century Atlas - Death Tolls March 4, 2016. Alexander N. Yakovlev (2002). A Century of Violence in Soviet Russia. Yale University Press. p. 165.*



DANIEL 7 AND THE 4TH SEAL  
THE LION BEAR AND LEOPARD  
(ANOTHER OPTION TO CONSIDER)

LION BEAR AND LEOPARD

Prophecy is multidimensional and has types and at times is not cut and dry to apply only to a single threat. As it was for ancient Israel, the church, Israel's continuation is also included. Most interpreters fail to comprehend the mission of prophecy, to track the greatest threats to God's people. When prophecy says "Gog of the land of Magog" we ought to pay close attention, this is the Eurasian Steppe. It appeared first about 600 BC with the founding of Greek colonies along the north coast of the Black Sea. These cities traded Greek goods for Scythian grain. The Scythians were replaced as a ruling group by the Sarmatians, Goths, Avars, Petchenegs, Cumans and Khazars where at some point the language of the Scythians changed from Iranian to Kipchak Turkic. There was founded the Ottoman Empire at the end of the 13th century in northwestern Anatolia in the town of Söğüt (modern-day Bilecik Province) by the Turkoman tribal leader Osman I. After 1354, the Ottomans crossed into Europe and with the conquest of the Balkans, the Ottoman beylik was transformed into a transcontinental empire. The Ottomans ended the Byzantine Empire with the 1453 conquest of Constantinople by Mehmed the Conqueror.

While the Egyptian, Assyrian, Babylonian, Medo-Persian, Grecian, Roman were all registered threats, but what then of other threats from the Protestant rebellion, Communism and Nazism? There were many who pointed to the emperors of Rome or way later on pointed to Hitler and Stalin. Were these all wrong? Was not Russian Communism and Nazi Germany also a threat that took the lives of millions of Christians?

Indeed. The Lion, the Bear & the Leopard in Daniel 7:1-8 are Daniel's famous dream of the four beasts. Daniel sees four unusual beasts that are clearly symbolic of four kingdoms in past and future history interpreted as ancient Babylon (lion) Persia (bear) Leopard (Greece). Then the seven headed beast arises to gain dominion. But such an ancient application making this prophecy historic makes no sense, especially when the key to unlock Daniel 7 is this verse:

"As for the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away, yet *their lives were prolonged* for a *season* and a *time*." (Daniel 7:12)

"These great beasts which are *four* are four kings which *shall rise* out of the earth." (Daniel 7:3)

Firstly, this cannot be regarding ancient Babylon, Medo-Persia and Greece whose "dominions" are no more and Babylon has already risen when Daniel spoke his words and was about to be crushed by Persia while Daniel says: "shall arise" (future). They exist when the beast arises for a "season and a time".

## AS TO THE 11<sup>TH</sup> HORN

Here we have two different set of rulers. We shall start with the last (fourth) is a 10-horned beast:

“After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a *fourth beast*, dreadful and terrible, and *strong exceedingly*; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.” (Daniel 7:7)

But then we have an 11<sup>th</sup>:

“And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the *other* [11<sup>th</sup>] which came up, and before whom *three fell*; even of *that horn* that had eyes, and a mouth that spoke very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows.” (Daniel 7:20)

When prophecy deals with the beast it always mentions the beast as a 10-horned empire without the 11<sup>th</sup> horn. We also have this lamb-looking beast that supports this empire and has two horns:

“Then I saw another beast coming up *out of the earth*; and he had two horns *like a lamb* and he *spoke as a dragon*.” (Revelation 13:11)

So the lamb looking beast always has a false Christian face and always comes “out of the earth”. We also need to keep in mind that the pale horse and the fourth seal brought death from wars including from “beasts of the earth”:

“And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.” (Revelation 6:8)

Are we to think that a major threat came from wild animals “beasts of the earth”? If we apply such a literal sense, then death came literally from a “pale horse”. These “beasts” are perhaps what Daniel 7 (Leopard, Bear Lion) is all about.

But we shall propose here that Protestantism played a major role in biblical prophecies even being part of this beastly structure. Protestants take pride of the rapid spread of the Protestant Reformation from Wittenberg, Germany, throughout Europe and across the Channel to England for the most part by Martin Luther’s teaching with such influence around the world in concentric circles like a star dropped into the sea. Wittenberg and Geneva stood as epicenters for a worldwide movement. These, while they spent centuries supposedly unlocking the scripture, do not understand where they are in scripture. The Protestants completely missed the difference between the sacrifice presented by Cain (Protestant Communion of fruit) and Abel’s (Catholic Communion of blood).

While the arguments of *scripture alone* and *faith alone* all (like Communism) sound great on paper, Muhammad too called to worship God alone indivisible and that does not make it right. Muhammad poisoned a third of the sea of peoples, nations and tongues while Luther poisoned a third of the church.<sup>278</sup>

By the middle of the 16th century, Lutheranism had spread into the various principalities and kingdoms of northern Europe. The duchy of Württemberg, after the restoration of Duke Ulrich, adopted the so-called reform in 1534; its so-called reformer was Johannes Brenz and its great centre Tübingen. Brandenburg, and its capital Berlin, embraced reform in 1539, and in that same year ducal Saxony, until then vehemently Catholic, changed sides. Elisabeth of Braunschweig also converted in 1539, but only after much turbulence did her faith prevail in the land.

Protestantism is a third of Christendom.<sup>279</sup> The main Protestant regions are England and the Nordic countries. The latter are a geographical and cultural region in Northern Europe and the North Atlantic, where they are most commonly known as *Norden* (literally "the North"). We saved their evil contributions in Section VI titled "Luthifer". After you read it with the historic reliable references and if your mind is not cluttered with sectarian pride, you can conclude its bitter fruits.

In Revelation 12:4, Satan "drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth." This is also clear in Daniel 8:10: "And it waxed great, even to the host of heaven; and it cast down some of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them." "Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. And an host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered," (Daniel 8:9-12)

---

<sup>278</sup> Chapter 12, verse 4 of the Book of the Apocalypse "one third" also in chapter 8 to chapter 9 encompasses much and includes different types and times of fulfillments. Allegorically describe both spiritual destruction as well as the utter destruction from the wars that ensued from the thirty years wars to the Muslim Sarasin to Ottoman conquests "third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up." "great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood." "third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed." "there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters", commonly interpreted as a reference to the fall of consecrated souls—priests, nuns and religious—from their exalted states, the Pope warned: "The message of Fatima is a call to conversion, alerting humanity to have nothing to do with the 'dragon' whose tail swept down a third of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth' (Rv 12:4)."<sup>279</sup> "Apostolic Journey of His Holiness John Paul II to Fátima, May 12-13, 2000, Homily of His Holiness Pope John Paul II, Beatification of Francisco and Jacinta Marto, Shepherds of Fatima", at [www.vatican.va/holy\\_father/john\\_paul\\_ii/travels/documents/hf\\_jp-ii\\_hom\\_20000513\\_beatification-fatima\\_en.html](http://www.vatican.va/holy_father/john_paul_ii/travels/documents/hf_jp-ii_hom_20000513_beatification-fatima_en.html).

<sup>279</sup> Christendom is 2.5 billion, 800 million of which are Protestants. Literally 1/3. See "Christianity 2015: Religious Diversity and Personal Contact" (PDF).

While obviously this “little horn” stems from the Grecian Empire<sup>280</sup>, he has much to do with collaboration with the Protestant world as we shall reveal much later.

#### UNDERSTANDING DANIEL’S LION

The first beast was not a lion (Babylon) but “like a lion” that had the wings of an eagle, while the second beast was not a bear (Persia) but “like a bear” described as having “three ribs in the mouth of it.” The third beast was not a leopard (Greece) but “like a Leopard” with 4 heads, and the fourth beast was described as “...dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth...and it had ten horns.” Its aiders will arise from the same lamb-looking beast.

These 4 kingdoms of Daniel 7 has a type (simply a reiteration of the four kingdoms described earlier in Daniel chapter two). Daniel chapter two has the description of Nebuchadnezzar's dream of the great statue with a head of Gold (Babylon), arms of silver (Two Arms: Medo-Persia), thighs of brass (Greece), and legs of iron (Roman). The description of the legs is further described as including two feet with ten toes. There, Daniel specifically tells the king of Babylon that he, Nebuchadnezzar, is the head of gold, yet again, in Daniel 7 it says these shall arise (future).

Therefore, Daniel 7 the beasts are different kingdoms from different eras. In Daniel chapter two, the head of gold is described as superior to the kingdoms of silver, brass, and iron. There is an allegoric sense that the head of Gold (ancient Babylon) also represents “Mystery Babylon” since it is at the top of the finest metal which rules over the rest (silver, bronze and iron). The commentators connect the regal aspect of the Babylonian kingdom as the head of gold makes little sense. There is very little to identify the second beast (the bear looking) with the second “statue” empire of Daniel chapter 2 as Medo-Persia for this one rises on one side and gains three ribs.

The third kingdom of the statue dream (brass thighs) was Alexander’s Grecian empire compared to the leopard (noted for speed). In Daniel chapter eight Alexander is symbolized as a “rough goat” with a large horn later broken and replaced by four horns which the angel interpret the vision as Greece these are separate from the four “beast” kingdoms of chapter seven. However, the beasts of Daniel 7, the first great beast was not the “lion” but “like a lion,” and had eagle's wings: “I beheld until the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made to stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.” This beast does not describe the Babylonian empire of the 5th century BC, but possibly describes the British empire of the last two hundred years, which lost its dominion.

Throughout most of its history, England has employed the crowned lion as the official heraldry symbol on almost every coat of arms standing up on its two hind feet with its wings

---

<sup>280</sup> The Bible states in Daniel 8:9, “out of one of them (the 4 Grecian horns) came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land,” he must come from the Grecian Empire—the Eastern part of the Roman Empire and north of Israel. Since he is going south he must be coming from the north parts in relation to Israel, exactly as specified in Ezekiel 38, and Joel 3. It all connects. Even my argument that Gog is the Antichrist cannot be escaped. He comes from the eastern part of the Roman Empire, the Grecian side; so does the little horn out of the 4 Grecian horns. Like Antiochus the Syrian, Gog also connects to the Seleucid Dynasty. Seleucus became king of the eastern provinces—more or less modern Afghanistan, Iran, Iraq, Syria, and Lebanon, together with parts of Turkey, Armenia, Turk- menistan, Uzbekistan, and Tajikistan.



plucked when the United States defeated it. Great Britain continued as a major empire and finally fizzled. It was a persecutor of the Catholic Church.

Within England the Act of Supremacy 1534 declared the English crown to be "the only supreme head on earth of the Church in England" in place of the pope. Any act of allegiance to the latter was considered treasonous because the papacy claimed both spiritual and political power over its followers. Ireland was brought under direct English control starting in 1536 during the Tudor conquest of Ireland. The Scottish so-called Reformation in 1560 abolished Catholic ecclesiastical structures and like Antiochus Epiphanes rendered Catholic practice illegal in Scotland. Today, anti-Catholicism remains common in the United Kingdom, with particular relevance in Scotland and Northern Ireland. The slanderous Foxe's Book of Martyrs was displayed in many Anglican parish churches alongside the Holy Bible. And if Nero blamed the burning of Rome on the Christians, the Great Fire of London in 1666 was blamed on the Catholics. William Blackstone in his *Commentaries on the Laws of England* summarized it as such:

“As to papists, what has been said of the Protestant dissenters would hold equally strong for a general toleration of them; provided their separation was founded only upon difference of opinion in religion, and their principles did not also extend to a subversion of the civil government. If once they could be brought to renounce the supremacy of the pope, they might quietly enjoy their seven sacraments, their purgatory, and auricular confession; their worship of relics and images; nay even their transubstantiation. But while they acknowledge a foreign power, superior to the sovereignty of the kingdom, they cannot complain if the laws of that kingdom will not treat them upon the footing of good subjects.”<sup>281</sup>

The persecution somewhat abated only when Catholic activists in Ireland, led by Daniel O'Connell until the pre-millennial evangelical Lord Shaftesbury (1801-1885), a prominent philanthropist led the anti-Catholic movement strongly opposed the Oxford movement and the Maynooth Grant which funded the Catholic seminary in Ireland to train priests.<sup>282</sup>

Nothing matches the English propaganda (the printing press) newspapers that compare only to Nazi Germany on how Catholics were depicted in effigies even till I entered the United States. Just as we used to accuse Christianity when I was Muslim, that the Roman Catholic worships idols, any religion is better than a Papist. I could say I am a Maronite, Coptic or Assyrian Christian and one would pass the test until one says “Catholic,” for all this stemmed from the English. Every time I peruse the Protestant commentaries I find the label “papist”. When I decided to become Catholic, never did I receive a hail of insults more from the Evangelicals, especially when I became a critic of Luther. Never have I seen more hypocrisy from these who say they do not follow Luther yet vehemently defend Luther’s Sola Fide and Sola Scriptura. If I learned one thing from the scripture that compares to Protestants; it is the slander against Joseph, Daniel and Israel from the mouths of Hamans using the Scripture itself.

---

<sup>281</sup> Bl. Comm. IV, c.4 ss. iii.2, p. 54

<sup>282</sup> John Wolffe, "Cooper, Anthony Ashley-, seventh earl of Shaftesbury (1801–1885)

Such a culture came from English and German Protestantism. This is a massive subject for which we dedicated an entire section to show its negative effects on humanity (again, see last Section on Luther in this volume)

#### THE BEAR

Then came the Russian Bear "...a second beast, like to a bear. It was raised up on one of its sides, and it had three ribs in its mouth between its teeth. It was told, Arise, devour much flesh" "...raised up on one of its sides." The three ribs "between its teeth" are the three Trans-Caucasian states (Armenia, Georgia, and Azerbaijan) assimilated by the earlier Russian empire when constantly probed the Caucasus region for possible expansion towards the Black Sea and the Caspian Sea. Russia in a series of wars with, the Persian and Ottoman empires, both of which by that time were decaying from within Russia then gained all three from 1922 to 1991. Indeed, this bear ate much flesh. After the Russo-Turkish wars resulted in the gradual southward extension of Russia's frontier into Ottoman territory extending its European frontiers southward to the Black Sea, southwestward to the Prut River, and south of the Caucasus Mountains in Asia. The Russians marched right up to the gates of Istanbul and claimed that they wanted to make it Christian again, but an Ottoman alliance with Prussia forced Moscow to think twice about sacking the Ottoman capital and a peace treaty forcing Istanbul to recognize Russian sovereignty over Crimea and Ukraine was signed instead.

In any event, the corollary verse where the bear is told to "devour much flesh" was certainly fulfilled by the greatest single mass murderer in the history of planet Earth, Joseph Stalin. He brutally executed approximately 50 million people in the evil empire that was The Soviet Union. Did God simply remind of ancient Babylon, Persia and Greece and forgot to warn us of the rise of the Soviet Union?

#### THE LEOPARD (PANTHER)

The scripture describes it as "...like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast has also four heads; and dominion was given to it."

The leopard is a Panther<sup>283</sup> utilized broadly in Hitler's Third Reich, the primary tanks and the armored divisions of the Nazi's were known as Panzer divisions and the panther would probably be the best predatory animal image of the German militarists of both world wars known for speed and agility, so was the military machine of the Weimar Republic (World War I) as well as the Wehrmacht of World War II. According to the Encyclopedia Americana, "...lightning war was thought by the Prussian (German) general staff to 'be the only means to win...!'" Similarly, Hitler inaugurated what was called "Blitzkrieg" (lightning) warfare. Again, the historical record shows that "...German theory was based on mobile warfare...German artillery was therefore exceptionally mobile." The panther is probably the most mobile beast of prey in existence.

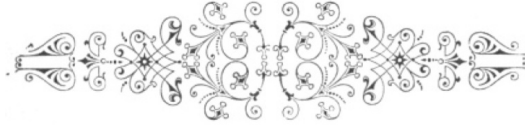
Also the Leopard in Daniel's vision was described as "having four wings like those of a fowl" as well as "four heads". By wings perhaps this is regarding its activity in air war and the "four heads," were the four major Germanic tribes: The Angles, Saxons, Alemans, and Franks. Before the turn of the century there were four prominent states -- Prussia, Bavaria, Saxony, and Wurttemberg. The first federal government of Germany "consisted of four free

---

<sup>283</sup> Encyclopedia Americana

cities loosely bound together..." and like the Grecian empire of Alexander The Great was replaced by four generals in what has come to be known as the Ptolemaic period, the third kingdom of Daniel's beast vision (Nazi Germany) was also replaced by four generals—the Quadripartite Agreement.

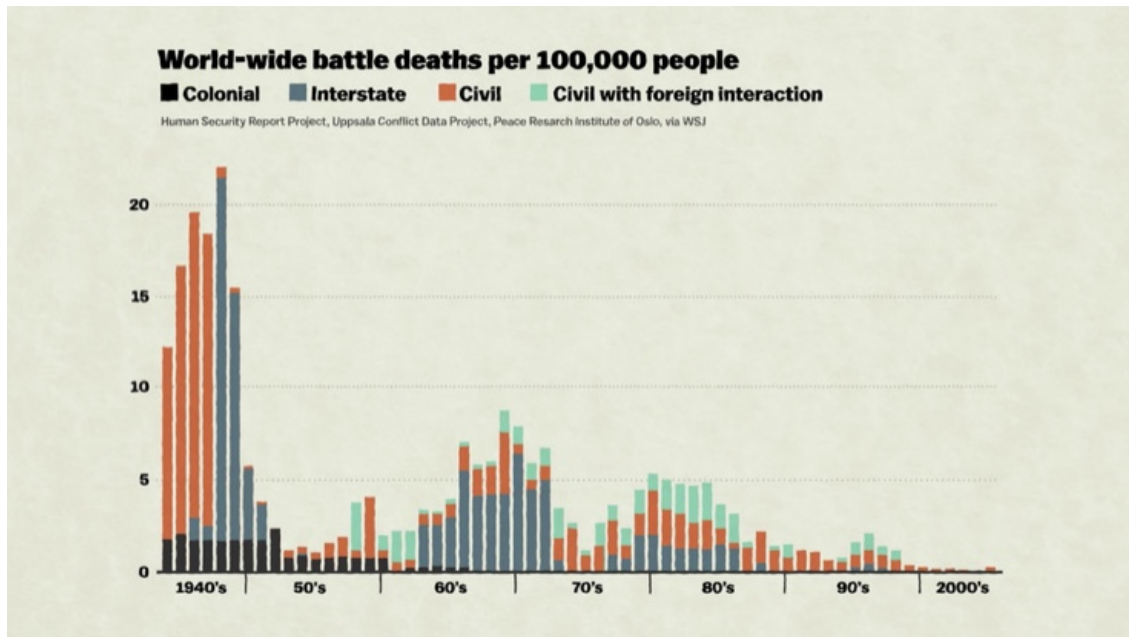
THE FOURTH BEAST is as revival of the Ottoman Empire explained in SECTION I.



## UNLOCKING THE FIFTH SEAL (SHORT REST)

This is where John goes beyond horses, but Zechariah doesn't, yet both compliment each other. In the Apocalypse, the first seals include four riders on four different colored horses. And since horses have always signified warfare, the other seals (5<sup>th</sup>, 6<sup>th</sup>, and 7<sup>th</sup>) have different characteristics yet Zechariah 6:6 continues with the "white horse" as a time of peace.

Ever notice that once we passed WWII that a sense of peace dominated the earth just as it was predicted at Fatima when Russia was consecrated? The last two decades mark the slowest rate of warfare and civil unrest in history.



And prophecy confirms. While an "earthquake" that splits the nations marks the sixth seal, the fifth seal is marked by a time of rest and even when all the martyrs complain from the last horsemen appealing to God to pour out His vengeance, God tells them to chill:

<sup>9</sup> And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: <sup>10</sup> And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? <sup>11</sup> And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little

season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren that should be killed as they [were], should be fulfilled.”<sup>284</sup>

So why would God tell us about this seal when it has no horses, no judgments, no swords and no famines? Nothing here involves earth except one issue: “until their fellow servants [on earth] also and their brethren that should be killed as they [were], should be fulfilled” and until then, the instruction is “rest yet for a little season” not to pain such grand suffering of Christians and are given a white robe (rest, peace). But this is crucial since:

1—It tells us that the last batch of martyrs comes after the fifth seal, which a “little season” is extended. This is a short time span as we have seen the three beasts (Protestant England, Communist Russia, and Nazi Germany) after they are wounded “their lives were prolonged for *a season* and a *time*” (Daniel 7:12):

“As for the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away, yet *their lives were prolonged* for a *season* and a *time*.” (Daniel 7:12)

Isn't this what the prophecy of Fatima was all about, that if Russia is consecrated to her Immaculate Heart (Christ) that the world would rest:

“The Holy Father will consecrate Russia to me, and she will be converted, and a *period of peace* will be granted to the world.”

2—It tells us that after WWII, the world was at temporary rest as the souls in heaven who suffered martyrdom inquire of God asking “how long?” This is a time of “rest yet for a little season ...” since there is one final batch of martyrs to follow during the sixth seal. The Fifth Seal gives us a marker.

The saints are at rest from watching the persecution their brethren endured through massacres from the second to the fourth seal; massive and catastrophic wars and famines all the way to WWI and WWII. God simply tells them that there is one more batch to go in the era of the Sixth Seal during the reign of Antichrist and is when it all ends in the seventh seal. This seal initiates a message that at some point in time the testing will continue in the coming season and it will not cease until a specific number of martyrs is completed in order to gain all the names preserved in the Book of Life and when the light of the Church begins to dim to almost complete darkness.

This is the danger zone when mankind slouches and claims “peace and safety” and that is when “sudden destruction comes”. Even Zechariah 6:6-8 confirms all this:

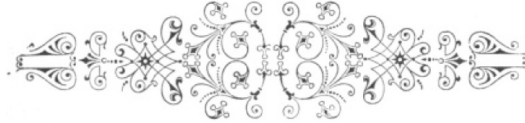
---

<sup>284</sup> “Finally, my Immaculate Heart will triumph. The Holy Father will consecrate Russia to me, she will convert and the world will be given some time of peace.”—Fatima. But the happy outcome of the Fatima prophecy has not yet occurred. “Finally, my Immaculate Heart will triumph.” But the whole context of the prophecy is the proclamation of a great Chastisement that will fall upon mankind and nations. Suffice it to remember the phrase in the second part of the Secret: “*Many nations will be annihilated.*”

“As for the chariot in which were the black horses [famine and war] they went to the *land of the north*; and *the white went out after them*; and the piebald [black and white] went out to the land of the south. And the ash-colored went out, and looked to encompass the earth; and he said, Go, and compass the earth. And they compassed the earth. And he cried out and spoke to me, saying, Behold, these go out to the land of the north. Then He cried out to me and spoke to me saying, “See, those who are going to the land of the north have *appeased My wrath in the land of the north.*”

If the ash-horse and the pale horse signify the same, this brings war and hunger to the entire region of the north, yet here, like the Fatima prophecy accurately predicted and the Fifth Seal (fall of Communism and Nazism) with “rest” on earth and in heaven, it reveals that immediately after Communism’s immense persecution, and after the fall of Communism in Russia, the remarkable parallel “appeased My wrath in the land of the north” (Russia) to Fatima.

After this, nations began to split to unravel just what was predicted in the Six Seal, though few comprehend it:



## UNLOCKING THE SIXTH SEAL (THE GREAT FALLING AWAY AND THE COMING GLOBAL REVOLT)

“And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; <sup>13</sup> And the stars of the heavens fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree cast her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.<sup>14</sup> And the heavens departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. (Revelation 6:12-14)

And it is here where we discover the allegoric earthquake of Zechariah 14:4, Ezekiel 38:19 and Isaiah 19:1 and Revelation 6:12-14 which is explained by John:

“And there were flashes of lightning and sounds and peals of thunder; and there was a great earthquake, such as there had not been since man came to be upon the earth, so great an earthquake was it, and so mighty. The great city was split into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. Babylon the great was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of His fierce wrath. And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. And huge hailstones, about one hundred pounds each, \*came down from heaven upon men; and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, because its plague \*was extremely severe.” (Revelation 16:18-21)

Metaphorically this represents what we began to see: shaking the heavens and the earth out of its axis and even blocking off the sun. This corresponds to the falling away as in Zechariah 14, Christ shakes the Mount of Olives where a continual split divides east from west and then “the mountains were not found” in Revelation 16 is that centralized Christianity receives a severe blow and is persecuted since “every island fled away,” the “island” is the separated Christians who fled and distanced themselves fleeing what is about to come:

“The LORD reigneth; let the earth rejoice; let the multitude of isles be glad *thereof*.”  
(Psalm 97:1)

How could they rejoice when the rest of this Psalm levels gloom:

“Clouds and darkness are round about him: righteousness and judgment are the habitation of his throne. A fire goeth before him, and burns up his enemies round about. His lightnings enlightened the world: the earth saw, and trembled. The hills melted like wax at the presence of the LORD, at the presence of the Lord of the whole earth. The heavens declare his righteousness, and all the people see his glory.” (Psalm 97:2-6)

The “isles” are glad because finally God judges the earth that persecuted the saints.

And we find it in Isaiah:

“The *city of confusion* is broken down: every house is shut up, that no man may come in. There is a crying for wine in the streets; all joy is darkened, the mirth of *the land is gone*. In *the city is left desolation*, and the gate is smitten with destruction. When thus it shall be in the midst of the land among the people, there shall be as the shaking of an olive tree, and as the gleaning grapes when the vintage is done. They shall lift up their voice, they shall sing for the majesty of the LORD, they shall cry aloud from the sea. Wherefore glorify ye the LORD in *the fires*, even the name of the LORD God of Israel in *the isles* of the *sea*.” (Isaiah 24:10-15)<sup>285</sup>

Christians strive in the “isles” distanced from the coming utter destruction the “fires” comes upon city life. In essence the “city of confusion” is a metaphor of the spirit of the tares and in a literal sense “in the city is left desolation”—utter destruction and abandonment.

The two (eastern and western splits) as in Zechariah moving one half southerly is in a spiritual sense the southern joins Christ’s mission since “Christ comes with whirlwinds of the south” (Zechariah 9:13) when Christianity eventually conquers north and Christ moves from “east to west”: “For just as the lightning comes from the east and flashes even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be.” (Matthew 24:27)

The sun (light of Christ) is already dimming alongside the mighty earthquake has already erupted and is splitting the very foundations of Christianity. Never before have we seen such mockery from a moral to a theological falling away where everything goes syncretistic and open homosexuality to blatant idolatry. The sun dimming is Christ’s light departing from the earth, for He (Christ) is the “Sun of justice”:

“But unto you who fear my name the Sun of justice shall arise” (Mal 4:2).

Who is this “Sun of justice”? Is this the literal sun?

“For the LORD God is a sun and shield; The LORD will give grace and glory; no good thing will He withhold from those who walk uprightly.” (Psalm 84:11)

God here is “a sun” and “shield”. How is God a sun and shield? He is metaphorically a sun because He gives light, and He is metaphorically a shield because His light is His truth, which shields us from deception. So without the sunlight of God, deception and a falling away permeates the earth. And this is exactly what we are already beginning to witness. Prophecy even gives us both, the allegory with its interpretation:

“For thus says the LORD of hosts: ‘Once more (it is a little while) I will shake heaven and earth, the sea and dry land; ‘and I will shake all nations, and they shall come to the Desire of All Nations, and I will fill this temple with glory,’ says the LORD of hosts.” (Haggai 2:6-7)

---

<sup>285</sup> Also see Isaiah 42:4, 42:10, 51:5, 60:9



Here we have this earthquake “splitting,” “shaking” and “overthrowing the nations”: “I will shake the nations,” not the earth by literal earthquakes! Here is another example where he explains what it means by shaking the earth:

“I will shake heaven and earth. I will overthrow the throne of kingdoms; I will destroy the strength of the Gentile kingdoms. I will overthrow the chariots and those who ride in them” (Haggai 2:21-22)

This was predicted at Fatima (nations will be annihilated). There is also the “distress of nations” “by reason of confusion” due to the “roaring of the sea” which are rebellions:

“And upon the earth distress of nations, by reason of the confusion of the roaring of the sea and of the waves.” (Luke 21:25)

This infects and is nothing to be trusted since it spreads confusion from the author of confusion. John in Revelation declared the “seas” that rebel are the harlot nations:

“The waters which thou saw, where the harlot sit, are peoples and nations and tongues. (Revelation 17:15)

So we can imagine now what will the world be like once this light dims? In fact, you do not have to imagine, just look around and see how much darkness this earth is already in. The sun is already dimming. So we have a “shaking” and a dimming of the sun. The sun dimming is Christ’s light and as His light dims, His anger increase, which (as scripture describes) eventually comes with wrath. The Heaven also is slowly departing away from earth. This is always God’s reaction to a falling away:

“For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who now holds it back will continue to do so till he is taken out of the way.” (2 Thessalonians 2:7)

Once the Holy Spirit departs the entire earth will be consumed in rebellion. Again, this is not a situation of natural catastrophes but spiritual hunger as we see today extending “from sea to sea”:

“Behold, days are coming,” declares the Lord GOD, when I will send a famine on the land, *not a famine for bread* or a *thirst for water*, but rather for *hearing the words of the LORD*. People will stagger from *sea to sea* and from the *north even to the east*; they will go to and fro to seek the word of the LORD, but *they will not find it.*” (Amos 8:11-12)

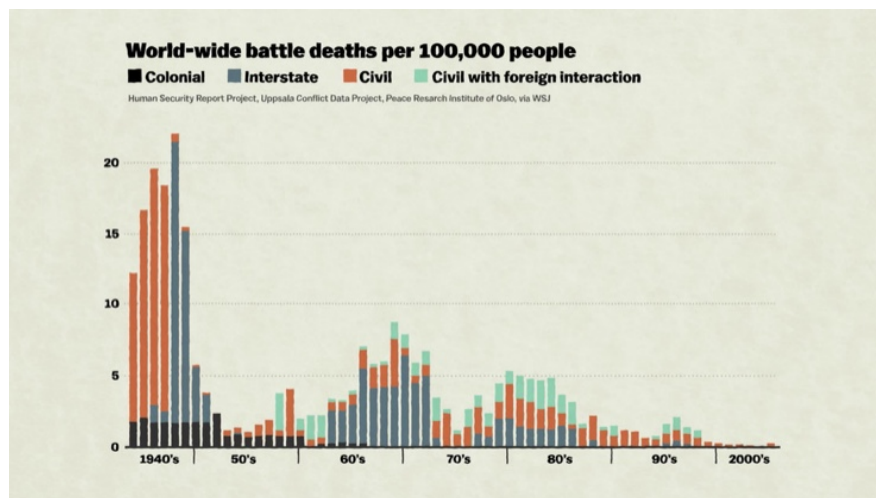
Therefore, the prophecies are clearly regarding the Holy Spirit’s gradual departure from the earth. Revelation 7 is just prior from when the 7<sup>th</sup> seal is broken, so it is part of the sixth seal:

“After these things I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, on the sea, or on any tree.” (Revelation 7:1)

“The four winds” here is God’s breath. He is holding His Holy Spirit from the earth. For example: “Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live.” (Ezekiel 37:9) Here the Holy Spirit brings back the dead to life.

“And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, “Receive the Holy Spirit.” (John 20:22)

So it is in Revelation 7, the Holy Spirit ceases His blessings and the light of Christianity diminishes greatly. Whoever cares about wealth and earthly things at the beginning of the sixth seal, their financial portfolio is still intact since we have an era of false peace while the nations stockpile more destructive weapons than ever before.



Notice the chart of wars above: the last two decades is an era of peace. So in reality, what seem cataclysmic is said in allegory that though they have eyes they do not see. Most ignore, there are no cataclysmic events at the beginning of the sixth seal, for it is the era of magnificent deception that will succeed in duping even the very elect if it can.

So how well prepared is the novice Christian of today? Many will fall while thinking they have light in their lamp. The world would seem normal to a people slowly being simmered in the pot.

#### MARRYING AND GIVEN IN MARRIAGE

The beginning of the unraveling of the 6<sup>th</sup> seal appears peaceful but is spiritually destructive. Ever wonder why Christ says that before His wrath comes, will be when people are still marrying and are given in marriage? The world is still splurging and spending via credit card and it is all hunky-dory. Had it been cataclysmic, who after all, would be marrying or have a baby shower during an asteroidal shower?

Ever wonder why Lot’s daughters were about to get married in Sodom just before the fire and brimstone struck? The daughters were rescued while their husbands to be were scorched.

Similarly is the sixth seal, the eagles will gather where the Body of Christ is at: the Eucharist.

Every verse and every word in prophecy is there for a reason and a good Locksmith gives all his soul and might in finding the right key. When the wrath hits, people are at ease and just when they say: "peace and safety, sudden destruction comes." (1 Thessalonians 5:3) The wise prepares before the destruction.

And to prove our point, notice that during this time, no harm is sent upon "the earth, and the sea, or the trees":

"... Do not harm the earth, the sea, or the trees till we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads."(Revelation 7:3)

Therefore, the sun becoming black is Christ's light blotted from the earth because faith diminished and "the heavens departed [upwards away from earth] as a scroll" is the era we are witnessing, the great falling away, which comes first, just before the man of sin is revealed.

We must not ignore the allegory, yet later on we shall have nuclear catastrophes, asteroid and locusts that blot out the sun; but first we should not miss that the main purpose of these prophecies require we use the other sense: God here is speaking in allegory.

So the summary of these prophecies tells us that there will be signs in the sun in the time of Antichrist; that is, there will be signs in Christ, and the precise sign is given by Saint Matthew saying: "The sun will not give its light." Christ withholds His light. He is the "Sun". But it is not as if there exists no light at the end of this darkened tunnel:

"And they that are learned shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that instruct many to justice, as stars for all eternity." Daniel (12:3).

Christ promised: "the gates of hell shall not prevail against it [the church]". In these times, knowledge is crucial, for "My people are destroyed for the lack of knowledge." (Hosea 4:6) The absence of knowledge is the beginning of confusion.

God Himself defines this shaking right in the context of the prophecies; "shake the nations" "overthrow the throne of kingdoms." This is a time where we need to be watchful of armchair revolutionaries "roaring of the sea" will shake the norm and cause revolt by "confusion" and deception and is exactly what we see.

Today, choose your favorite politician, activist, talk-radio, be they conservative or liberal, and most likely he or she are deceiving (if they can), even the elect. No matter what symbols they carry, be it crusading paraphernalia or jargon about puritanical throwbacks, or their solution for the migrant crisis, do not be deceived, they are simply setting a stage for Homosexuality, Eugenics and the spirit of Antichrist. Allow us to explain:

#### THE SIXTH SEAL'S NORTH-SOUTH TECTONIC SHIFTS

In the case of the sixth seal, God gives us ample references that are specifically different and are unique from all historic earthquakes since the world has become more complex. This should allow us to explain more the details. For example, Zechariah 14 speaks of the splitting of the Mount of Olives:

“And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south. And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the LORD my God shall come, and all the saints with thee.”

This is the measuring of the Temple, the test to see who resides in the Altar and who resides in the outer court to be given over to the gentiles (the Antichrist, see Revelation 11:1-2). By splitting His Mount of Olives, He is testing the church, beginning in the east.

Christ will sift Christendom dividing it “from east to west where east will join a southern league (which eventually refines) and the western part will join a northern league (Antichrist), while the remnant steadfast Christians will join no side; he runs in the deep crevice of the valley towards Azal, which is south. Azal was south of the Mount of Olives.

So the epicenter and the shockwave begins in the eastern church: the Middle East, the Balkans, the former Soviet countries, Africa, Eastern Europe, Asia Minor (Turkey), the Malabar coast of South India ...

Just take India alone; Prime Minister Narendra Modi has won a landslide victory, keeping Modi in power. With nationalistic populism in India, one needs to take a glimpse into the rising persecution of the 65 million Christians in India from 1.3 billion frenzy Hindu nationalists. In 2018, more than 12,000 Christians were attacked and the number of churches attacked increased substantially from 34 last year to 98 this year.

But what do we find regarding this from the likes of ‘conservative’ armchair revolutionary Steve Bannon? He described to an audience in the Vatican that Prime Minister Narendra Modi's victory as part of a positive "global revolt":

"I think you're going to see it in Latin America, I think you're going to see it in Asia, I think you've already seen it in India, ... Modi's great victory was very much based on these Reaganesque principles, so I think this is a global revolt, and we are very fortunate and proud to be the news site that is reporting that throughout the world."

Choose your favorite, whether Nigel Farrag or Boris Johnson or Bannon and without a doubt, they will lead you to an anti-Christ spirit. In the Middle East (besides Egypt) it is now virtually empty of Christians who fled to Europe, which will soon turn into pagan Egypt where even there, they will be persecuted. Prophecy reveals, that God will eventually rescue them from another “Egypt”. It will be a repeat similar of the story of Moses rescuing God’s people by parting the Red Sea where the faithful run into the crevice.

Azal is significant here. During this time, Christ allows the spirit of Antichrist to “divide the land for gain.” So it is “divide and conquer.” Dividing weakens the nations and is why Isaiah in chapter 14 says:

“How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations!” (Isaiah 14:12)

This split is so well explained in prophecy. From the north comes destruction. Even the one Antichrist rules the north:

“I [the Assyrian] will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the sides of the north” (Isaiah 14:13)

And if there remains any doubt, that this one is an Antichrist, in verse 16 it clarifies that this “Lucifer” is now a “man”:

“Is this the man who made the earth tremble, Who shook kingdoms.” (Isaiah 14:16)

Lucifer (fulfilling prophecy) splits the nations and even God accuses him: “you have divided up my land” (Joel 3:2) and “weakened the nations” (Isaiah 14:12).

Notice in Zechariah 14, Christ does not come when the earthquake hits but afterwards “and the LORD my God shall come” after they flee: “Ye shall flee to the valley” and then He comes with “all the saints,” that is the saints “with thee” is the joining of the saints from heaven with the persecuted saints on earth. This is the rescue mission to bring the faithful out of the pagan world. Again, we are to be in the “very great valley” away from the splits of the mountains (powers and factions). How many even search the prophets who confirm this:

“How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him who brings good news...” (Isaiah 52:7)

The faithful yearn for His coming. His feet touching the mountain are to carry out His purpose, to eventually sift and test His church through the fire of persecution by the Antichrist. The northern split will produce an Antichrist. While Jeremiah’s prophetic oracles during King Josiah and his successors (c.628–586 B.C.) was regarding Israel’s split between north (Israel) and south (Judah) it mimics the split within Christendom at the Sixth Seal (remember history repeats).

His message indicts his contemporaries for religious apostasy. And while we have Ezekiel prophesying of a “Gog of the land of Magog” “from the north quarters” it is similar of Jeremiah’s prophecy regarding a northern threat: “Out of the north calamity shall break forth” (see Jeremiah 1:13-16). And we find this theme elsewhere in Jeremiah:

“Thus saith the LORD, Behold, a people cometh from the north country, and a great nation shall be raised from the sides of the earth. They shall lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel, and have no mercy; their voice roar like the sea; and they ride upon horses, set in array as men for war against thee, O daughter of Zion.” (Jeremiah 6:22-23)

It will eventually drown in the Mediterranean Sea and in the saltiest lake on earth, near Jericho, the Dead Sea to save remnant Israel:

“I will drive the northern horde far from you, pushing it into a parched and barren land; its eastern ranks will drown in the Dead Sea and its western ranks in the Mediterranean Sea. And its stench will go up; its smell will rise.”

Antichrist's "angry countenance" comes from the north:

"The north wind brings forth rain, And a backbiting tongue an angry countenance."  
(Proverbs 25:23)

The north being the enemy becomes clear once we read Zechariah where Christ will come "with the whirlwinds of the south" (Zechariah 9:13) and where in Joel God says that He will remove "the northern army" (Joel 2:20). So if Christ comes from the south for battle, where is He heading? North.

But to the meek and humble, we find other references to an earthquake in Revelation 8:5 and Revelation 11:19 when "the temple of God was opened in heaven, and the ark of His covenant was seen in His temple" and Revelation 16:17-19. The Ark helps the Christians to escape into that valley towards Azal where they are fed in the wilderness.

#### EAST WEST—NORTH SOUTH SHIFTS—ALREADY IN PROGRESS

In order that the world has civil unrest where "they will kill one another," captain chaos must unleash demographic earthquakes to consume the earth where states, nations and even united countries will split between northern and southern boundaries. The prophecies speak of this earthquake shifting "mountains" (empires splitting and dividing north from south) and even shaking "islands" (think of Britain splitting between Scotland in the north and England in the south).

How many even consider what has already split right after the fourth seal! The Soviet Union dissolved in December 1991, resulting in eleven new countries splitting: Armenia, Azerbaijan, Belarus, Georgia, Kazakhstan, Kyrgyzstan, Moldova Tajikistan, Turkmenistan, Ukraine and Uzbekistan while in the Baltic states we have Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania split in September 1991.

Albania and Yugoslavia also split. By 1992, Yugoslavia had split into five successor states, namely Bosnia and Herzegovina, Croatia, Macedonia, Slovenia and the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia, which was later renamed Serbia and Montenegro in 2003 and eventually split in 2006 into two states, Serbia and Montenegro. Serbia was then further split with the breakaway of the partially recognized state of Kosovo in 2008.

Czechoslovakia dissolved splitting into the Czech Republic and Slovakia in 1992.

The earthquake is shaking everything. Simultaneously, we will see the formation of the northern league. God warns continually of "the army of the north" "northern army" and "Gog and Magog" and with the split from Russia by the Muslim Southern Russian states to becoming the northern neo-Ottoman states arising from the "north quarters".

And where will Syria, Iraq and Libya go after the Arab Spring? And where will northern Iraq (Karkuk, where the oil reserves are) go after the West created the mess there? In Arabia we have Saudi Arabia (north) versus Yemen (south).

Then we have the Israeli state (north) versus the Palestinian state (south). The Middle East is already set to unravel.

The fulfillment is already in motion, now in the West, when we already see England splitting from the EU giving Germany the lead to control the northern league.

Even within Great Britain there is a left-leaning North and the right-leaning South. Edinburgh (north) is the second largest financial centre in the UK after the City of

London ranks ahead of Qatar, Oslo, Glasgow, Dublin, Abu Dhabi, Brussels, Milan, Madrid and Moscow in the Global Financial Centres Index.

In Italy a struggle stems from the populist, anti-immigrant Lega-Nord (north league) opposing subsidies to the less prosperous south under the slogan “Roma ladrona” (Rome Big Thief).

In Spain, another struggle is stemming from Catalonia (north). In Spain we also have the rise of Vox (Spanish ultra nationalism).

Then we have the most major; Europe’s North-South divides over Eurozone issues and east west over the migration crisis.

These days we have parties advocating the creation of new, small states in Spain, Belgium, Italy, Scotland and elsewhere in Europe. Belgium has the Dutch-speaking north wanting to split from the poorer south of the country.

It is easy then to conclude why Apocalypse’s sixth seal continues into: 1—chapter 7: the salvation of only a small remnant in Israel (in the end), and 2—chapter 8: that “a star” Antichrist persuades his acolytes to destroy a third of mankind, 3—chapter 9, further dimming of the sun where the masses appoint the Antichrist.

He then conquers Egypt (persecuting the Copts), and then moves into Libya, Sudan and Ethiopia. Only a remnant Christians remain awaiting aid from the Ark of God revealed from heaven (Revelation 11-12)

The dimming of the sun is in many prophecies. For example, we get a clue from Isaiah 13 (the destruction of Arabia) is likely to also commence during the sixth seal since it has the sun dimming:

“For behold, the incurable day of the Lord comes, a day of wrath and anger, to make the whole world desolate and to destroy the sinners from it. For the stars of heaven and Orion and all the ornament of heaven will not give light, and it will be dark when the sun rises, and the moon will not give its light. And I will command evils for the whole world, and for the impious, their own sins;” (Isaiah 13:9-11)

This dimming of the sun in Isaiah 13 includes Isaiah 21 and Isaiah 34 which in context, is the destruction coming upon Arabia. Even the mention of “Arabia” throughout Isaiah’s prophecies must consider the allegory of Galatians 4 which sums up all spiritual warfare between two entities: Heavenly Jerusalem and Arabia which puts all who are in bondage under one city. If this is the case, then we are speaking of a global Arabia just as it is a global Sodom and a global Egypt.

But we must also not ignore this (mother of harlots), must be the most ancient of them all. Arabia and Egypt are the oldest. In addition, the mention of Arabia (Islam’s spiritual headquarters) might include Revelation 8 and 9 as the invasion from the Muslim league (by then a third of mankind) coming through the Euphrates. The east gets destroyed first. What are left becomes obvious: they are the syncretistic, the neopagans, and the sexually immoral (homosexuals) that permeate mostly in the north and the west.

#### SIXTH SEAL AND THE WRATH

After the earthquake comes at some point in time the wrath is poured out after when Antichrist sits in the temple declaring he is God and is the time when all remaining who did



not flee must flee urgently. The second part of the sixth seal begins with the wrath upon the cursed:

“<sup>15</sup> And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains;<sup>16</sup> and said to the mountains and rocks, fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sit on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: <sup>17</sup> For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?” (Revelation 6:15-16)

One thinks that such outcry: “hide us from the face of him ... from the wrath of the Lamb ...” that they would simply repent? No:

“But the rest of mankind, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk. And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts.” (Revelation 9:20-21)

“And *men were scorched with great heat*, and they *blasphemed the name of God who has power over these plagues*; and they did not repent and give Him glory. Then the fifth angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the beast, and his kingdom became full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues because of the pain. They blasphemed the God of heaven because of *their pains and their sores*,<sup>286</sup> and did not repent of their deeds.” (Revelation 16:9-11)

“And great hail, like a talent, came down from heaven upon men: and men blasphemed God for the plague of the hail: because it was exceeding great.” (Revelation 16:21)

As of this writing over 2½ million perished as result of the initial plague (Covid-19) and there is no repentance but simply denial that God ordained it. Today’s generation argues that force is never an option and that “love conquers all”. The previous generation that had to face the likes of Nazis would answer with “sure, but love is also to subdue the enemies of humanity.” At times neither love or stick or even the scorching oven works. God tells homosexual Israel: “Why should you be stricken again? You will revolt more and more” (Isaiah 1:5) which means that it is time for annihilations. There are times when God resorts to pouring out His wrath and the earth is still stubborn. How many of Israel ended up flocking to God after the Holocaust? Even after God sent them back to their homeland, how

---

<sup>286</sup> This is likely from a nuclear catastrophe “After several days to two weeks, new symptoms would emerge: diarrhea, hair loss, fever, seizures, and bleeding in the mouth and under the skin, which sometimes creates purple blotches on the body. In the most severe cases, people would become emaciated, delirious, and incapacitated. Most people with radiation sickness will die for one of two reasons: because they no longer have enough immune cells to fight off microbial infections, or because their digestive system is too damaged to function properly.” Nymag.com



many did repent? Even holocaust survivors are ardent Gnostics. The most prevalent argument I heard from Jews is that if God existed or even cared, why did He let the Holocaust happen?

To this I counter, if Jews cared so much about preventing a Holocaust why (unlike the German 1 out of 10) did 3 out of 10 Jews join the Wehrmacht? The same was with Fascism in Italy; Jews flocked to join. Today the Jew points fingers at the Polish and Pope Pius XII while he forgets to look at the mirror: he is the first to embrace the very ideologies that cooked his grandparents and sacrificed them in the ovens of Molech (Leviticus 18:21). If what we said so far is anti-Semitic, Isaiah 9 is then also anti-Semitic. The prophecy of Isaiah 9, like all other prophecies will never make sense unless we differentiate between “Israel” and the “Israel of God”:

“But there will be no *more* gloom for her who was in anguish. In earlier times He treated the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali with contempt, but later on He will make *it* glorious, by the way of the sea, on the other side of the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles. <sup>2</sup> The people who walk in darkness will see a great light; those who live in a dark land, the light will shine on them. <sup>3</sup> You will multiply the nation, you will increase their joy; they will rejoice in Your presence as with the joy of harvest, as *people* rejoice when they divide the spoils. <sup>4</sup> For You will break the yoke of their burden and the staff on their shoulders, the rod of their oppressor, as at the battle of Midian. <sup>5</sup> For every boot of the marching warrior in the roar of *battle*, and cloak rolled in blood, will be for burning, fuel for the fire. <sup>6</sup> For a Child will be born to us, a Son will be given to us; and the government will rest on His shoulders; and His name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. <sup>7</sup> There will be no end to the increase of *His* government or of peace on the throne of David and over his kingdom, to establish it and to uphold it with justice and righteousness from then on and forevermore. The zeal of the Lord of armies will accomplish this.”

Here it is obvious Christ comes from “Galilee of the Gentiles” (Nazareth) and “no more gloom” for the Israel of God and the church will grow “multiply the nation.” Which nation? The Israel of God—not the Hebrews—grew by the way of the gentiles. At the end of the age, Christ will “break the yoke of their burden,” “the rod of their oppressor as at the battle of Midian,” can only refer to the way of Gideon that after the allegoric earthquake on Mount Olives, He fights for the Battle of spiritual Jerusalem as in Judges 8:22 prophesied in Habakkuk: “God came from Teman, the Holy One from Mount Paran. His glory covered the heavens and his praise filled the earth. His splendor was like the sunrise; rays flashed from his hand, where his power was hidden” (Habakkuk 3:3-4). But if one continues the prophecy with earthly Israel in mind it makes no sense since it is the reverse of the first part:

“<sup>8</sup> The Lord sends a message *against Jacob*, and it *falls on Israel*. <sup>9</sup> And all the people know it, *That is, Ephraim* and the *inhabitants of Samaria*, asserting in pride and in arrogance of heart: <sup>10</sup> “The bricks have fallen down, but we will rebuild with *smooth stones*; The sycamores have been cut down, but we will replace them with *cedars*.”

Israel re-established in 1948 and in Jerusalem in 1967, after the Holocaust questioned that if God cared how did He allow the Holocaust to happen? So once they returned in 1948 they trusted in their own strength, that after the desolation of Israel said “the bricks have fallen down, but we will rebuild with smooth stones” that besides its allegoric sense it has a literal sense. Israel’s construction of cities with masonry smooth cut stone construction is the mode of building and the cedar family of trees today flourish throughout the land like never before.<sup>287</sup>



(above) Ruin remains of the villages of Bayyarat Hannun (left) and Yibna (right) / Excerpts of the book *Les Absents* (2016) by Bruno Fert.

“<sup>11</sup> Therefore the Lord raises superior adversaries against them from Rezin<sup>288</sup> and provokes their enemies, <sup>12</sup> The *Arameans* from the east and the *Philistines* from the west; and they *devour Israel* with *gaping jaws*.”

While the dragon spews the flood after the woman (Revelation 12) she (the Israel of God) escapes to be fed in the wilderness while Hebrew Israel is gulped from Assyria on the east (two hundred million man army) and the mixed multitude of the Philistines (European seafarers) from the West in a pincer invasion. This is no historic event since God says that His wrath is not done yet:

“In spite of all this, His anger does not turn away, And His hand is *still stretched out*.  
<sup>13</sup> Yet the people *do not turn back to Him* who struck them, nor *do they seek the Lord of armies*.<sup>14</sup>”

The same consequences for Hebrew Israel we find in Revelation for all rebels:

---

<sup>287</sup> “When a boy was born – they would plant a cedar, A girl – they would plant a pine, And when they would get married they would cut down [the trees] and make from them a marriage canopy.–Babylonian Talmud, Tractate Gittin 57a.

“Jerusalem pine (known as *Pinus halepensis* or Aleppo pine), a trademark of the Israeli landscape, the effects of climate change have become evident. Growing pine tree mortality in recent years has been attributed to an increase in droughts. In a study conducted at the Faculty of Agriculture of the Hebrew University”–Zavit

<sup>288</sup> The correct pronunciation is Rassin, Arabic for strong.

“But the rest of mankind, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk. And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts.” (Revelation 9:20-21)

What “sexual immorality?” Are the homosexuals realizing and confessing their sin? No. If fire and brimstone does not convince this world of its errors, do we think that inclusivity in the church will? This is the stupidity of today’s church leaders.

“So the Lord cuts off head and tail from Israel, both palm branch and bulrush in a single day.<sup>15</sup>”

And when was this fulfilled? When was Israel ever doomed in a single day as the Israel of God was made in one day at the day of Christ’s Crucifixion?

“But these two things will come on you suddenly in one day: loss of children and widowhood. They will come on you in full measure in spite of your many sorceries, in spite of the great power of your spells. You are wearied with your many counsels; Let now the astrologers, those who prophesy by the stars, those who predict by the new moons, stand up and save you from what will come upon you. Behold, they have become like stubble, fire burns them; they cannot deliver themselves from the power of the flame; there will be no coal to warm by nor a fire to sit before!” (Isaiah 47:13-14)

Over and over we find prophecies where God is upset at the Kabbalah. An instant lookup of the Kabbalah reveals this is the subject of this prophecy:

“To bless the New Moon at the proper time is like greeting the Divine Presence.” – Talmud, Sanhedrin 42a The New Moon, or Rosh Chodesh, which translates from Hebrew as “head of the month,” is the first day of the lunar month. The kabbalistic calendar is a lunisolar calendar, meaning that months are based on lunar months, and years are based on solar years. Each month corresponds to one of the 12 signs of the zodiac, and as such, each month affects us in different ways with unique gifts available to us. For example, in the month of Aquarius we can connect to the energy abundance. During the month of Sagittarius, we can connect to the energy of miracles.<sup>289</sup>

And God even tells us its Israel’s religious institution:

“The head is the elder and esteemed man, and the prophet who teaches falsehood is the tail.<sup>16</sup> For those who guide this people are leading them astray; and those who are guided by them are confused.<sup>17</sup> Therefore the Lord does not rejoice over their

---

<sup>289</sup> Kabbalah Centre, NOVEMBER 8, 2018

young men, nor does He have compassion on their orphans or their widows; for every one of them is godless and an evildoer, and every mouth is speaking foolishness.”

What religious Jew denounces the Talmud and the Kabbalah? God’s wrath continues:

“In spite of all this, His anger does not turn away, and His hand is still stretched out. <sup>18</sup> For wickedness burns like a fire; it consumes briars and thorns; it also sets the thickets of the forest aflame and they roll upward in a column of smoke. <sup>19</sup> By the wrath of the Lord of armies the land is burned, and the people are like fuel for the fire; no one spares his brother. <sup>20</sup> They devour what is on the right hand but are still hungry, and they eat what is on the left hand, but they are not satisfied; each of them eats the flesh of his own arm. <sup>21</sup> Manasseh devours Ephraim, and Ephraim Manasseh, and together they are against Judah. In spite of all this, His anger does not turn away and His hand is still stretched out.”

The civil strife is prophesied in Isaiah 3:5 and 8 “For Jerusalem is ruined, and Judah is fallen ...” and verse 9 “The expression of their faces bears witness against them, and they display their sin like Sodom; they do not even conceal it. Woe to them! For they have brought evil on themselves.”

“It [the type of fire] sets the thickets of the forest aflame and they roll upward in a column of smoke” is most likely a nuclear attack.

Israel will first go through wrath (Isaiah 9)<sup>290</sup> and then redemption (Isaiah 10) when the Assyrian (Antichrist) is destroyed:

“And it shall come to pass in that day that the remnant of Israel, and such as have escaped of the house of Jacob, will never again depend on him who defeated them, but will depend on the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. The remnant will return, the remnant of Jacob, to the Mighty God. For though your people, O Israel, be as the sand of the sea, a remnant of them will return; the destruction decreed shall overflow with righteousness.”

#### HARLOT DESTROYED

So the sixth seal is likely to be our era. These events will include: 1—The continuing falling away and the diminishing the light of God 2—the splitting of nations and continents (symbolized by an earthquake) 3—God’s wrath is poured out on Arabia in a Persian vs. Arab conflict (which we already see brewing) 4—Mass exodus of foreigners out of mystery Babylon 5—Antichrist is unleashed to enforce his mark on mankind.

#### 144,000 OF THE TRIBES OF ISRAEL

These would be from Israel allegorically broken down to the twelve tribes. At this point the wrath has not been poured out yet. Between the 6<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup> seal, comes chapter 7 speaks of the 144,000 from the tribes of Israel (the Jews) join the Israel of God and are converted:

---

<sup>290</sup> Obviously this final punishment of Israel is not historic “in one day”

“Do not harm the earth, the sea, or the trees till we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads. And I heard the number of those who were sealed. One hundred and forty-four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel were sealed.”

Then comes the last SEVENTH SEAL (the pouring of the seven vials). This is when it is about to be completed. This is the “it is finished” moment and the saints prayers for God’s vengeance are finally answered and they will finally rest and prepare to descend with Christ to amass judgment at Armageddon where the nations are all gathered:

“<sup>1</sup> And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour. <sup>2</sup> And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets. <sup>3</sup> And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer [it] with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. <sup>4</sup> And the smoke of the incense, [which came] with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel's hand. <sup>5</sup> And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast [it] into the earth: and there were voices, and thundering, and lightning, and an earthquake. <sup>6</sup> And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.” (Revelation 16:1)

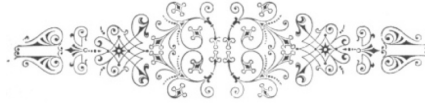
“<sup>1</sup> And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.”

This is the cleansing process. No one can describe it. Await a lightening, to come out of the EAST: “For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.” (Matthew 24:27)

SECTION V

UNLOCKING

THE APOCALYPSE



THE APOCALYPSE  
IS MULTI DIMENSIONAL WITH  
FULL CYCLES

Christianity's victory is not by human might. It starts the size of a mustard seed and triumphs to fill the earth. Its dwindling must happen to triumph again and against all odds, or else it is no miracle. The Church had to be brought down to a situation where a David defeats a Goliath. This is the core message of prophecy that what is brought up (Satan's kingdom) must be brought low and that what was brought low will rise again. This is given to us in an iconic depiction of a woman stomping on the image of the dragon—the crescent moon of Revelation 12. Protestant Iconoclasts will never understand the imagery, like to file most of prophecy into *history* or *future*. This is why, besides Israel's rebirth, they show nothing of any significance when it comes to fulfilled prophecy and even Israel's return they do not comprehend prophetically. Prophecy to them is going to rain all at once with fire and brimstone while they are raptured in heaven having supper with the lamb. To them Apocalypse 8-12 are all future, yet in these prophecies we are given another cycle of history of their great departure and their falling away:

“Then the angel took the censer and filled it with the fire of the altar, and threw it to the earth; and there followed peals of thunder and sounds and flashes of lightning and *an earthquake*. And the seven angels who had the ***seven trumpets*** prepared themselves to sound them. ***The first*** sounded, and there came *hail and fire, mixed with blood*, and *they were thrown to the earth*; and a *third of the earth was burned up*, and a *third* of the trees were burned up, and all the *green grass* was burned up. The ***second angel*** sounded, and something like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown *into the sea*; and a *third of the sea became blood*, and a *third of the creatures* which were in the sea and had life, *died*; and a *third* of the ships were destroyed. The ***third angel*** sounded, and a great star fell from heaven, burning like a torch, and it fell on a *third of the rivers* and on the springs of waters. The name of the star is called Wormwood; and a *third of the waters* became wormwood, and *many men died from the waters*, because they *were made bitter*. The ***fourth angel*** sounded, and a *third of the sun* and a *third of the moon* and a *third of the stars were struck*, so that *a third of them would be darkened* and the day would not shine for a *third* of it, and the night in the same way. Then I looked, and I heard an eagle flying in midheaven, saying with a loud voice, “***Woe, woe, woe*** to those who dwell on the earth, because of the remaining blasts of the trumpet of the three angels who are about to sound!” (Revelation 8)

Like the seven seals, this also covers the span of history which connects to Revelation 11-12, with snippets depicting the gradual decline. The two sets of prophecies are

inseparable and represent a summary of the full cycle from when a falling away begins to the woes at the end of the complete falling away:

*“Then God’s temple in heaven was opened, and within his temple was seen the ark of his covenant. And there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder, an earthquake and a severe hailstorm. A great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head. She was pregnant and cried out in pain as she was about to give birth. Then another sign appeared in heaven: an enormous red dragon with seven heads and ten horns and seven crowns on its heads. Its tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth. The dragon stood in front of the woman who was about to give birth, so that it might devour her child the moment he was born. She gave birth to a son, a male child, who “will rule all the nations with an iron scepter.” And her child was snatched up to God and to his throne.” (Revelation 11:19- Revelation 12:5)*

This beast “red dragon with seven heads” is usually described allegorically as a collection of the same previous empires revived and includes all threats in times past and times revived. The beast of Revelation 13:1, while it had seven heads, it had “ten crowns,” not “seven crowns,” as in Revelation 12. It is possible that this one is speaking of the three horns plucked from the root and is why we have three crowns less in this one. Protestants assumed that this beast is strictly a *future event* that strictly appears in *the ends times*. But how and when did such a seven-headed “dragon” “stand in front of the woman [St. Mary] who was about to give birth that it might devour *her child* the moment he [Christ] was born?” “She gave birth to a son” is unquestionably Christ in the manger. But Christ was born in the first century in Bethlehem pursued to be devoured “the moment He was born” by Herod making Herod, the king of Judeah a type as one of the seven crowns in this parable. The parable even continues: “The woman fled into the wilderness to a place prepared for her by God, where she might be taken care of for 1,260 days.” But St. Mary hid in Egypt. Yet this gives parallels in an entire cycle from beginning to end since this “1,260 days” is future when the two witnesses preach in Jerusalem: “And I will appoint my two witnesses, and they will prophesy for 1,260 days, clothed in sackcloth.”

Will the two succeed? The tares will laugh at them, mock and then kill them and at this point they only take a small remnant since:

*“It will be for a time, times and half a time [1,260 days]. When the power of the holy people has been finally broken, all these things will be completed.” (Daniel 12:7)*

And of this beast we are also told:

*“And an host was given him against the perpetual sacrifice, by reason of transgression [rebellion], and it [the host] cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered.” (Daniel 8:12)*



So we have the tares “practiced and prospered” while the “holy people” were brought low. “When the power of the holy people has been finally broken” then “all these things will be completed” is the defeat of the holy people where only in the wilderness can one find Communion since these go against “the perpetual sacrifice”. This is the Communion of the Apostolic Succession churches since the true church believes Christ’s sacrifice is perpetual (continual).<sup>291</sup> Without arguing Protestant theological misconceptions, these prophecies shatter many of their faulty interpretations since the prophecy expands the entire cycle and the duration of time of the history of the church from Christ’s birth to the end, and with Daniel, from Antiochus to Antichrist since Christ alluded to Daniel’s Abomination of Desolation. This reveals how Christ viewed prophecy.

Now to the keys of these prophecies to unlock: 1—We established that the red dragon beast is the Ottoman with its crescent image, obviously the woman stomps on a crescent moon 2—There is a mountain (empire) that strikes the sea, is the red dragon consuming a 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of Christendom 3—we have a star (Lucifer) . He is cast out which is also expressed in Revelation 20:3 “after the thousand years” from when he was bound bringing out “Gog and Magog”. This is this same red dragon. We estimate this happened after the first seal subdued pagan Rome in the fourth century and ten centuries later (one thousand years) Lucifer and Gog-Magog were released under the Ottoman Empire 4—it has a tail that sweeps 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of everything. Eventually during the three woes the complete darkness prevails with the first woe striking the ones who do not have the mark of God which lasts five months.<sup>292</sup> Two more “woes” will follow to strike (as discussed) Jerusalem and her Sodom daughters in Ezekiel 16 5—God responds to this star thrown out of heaven with His “ark,” a “woman” appearing from heaven.

Here we have the accuser cast out of heaven with a third of the fallen angels forming an “enormous *red dragon with seven heads and ten horns and seven crowns on its heads* [whose] *tail swept a third of the stars* out of the sky and *flung them to the earth.*”

In a way the prophecy is set up in iconographic images with four angels announcing the decline of Christendom and the falling away from when satan is loosened, depicted in four icons, the first has 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of Christendom taken away by the “mountain” (empire of this dragon), then another 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of Christendom is poisoned by the tail of this dragon. We only know of the Protestant rebellion that had such an effect. This is a timespan from when a 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of the well and the springs of water become bitter, that is 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of the kingdom becomes darkened with tares while 2/3<sup>rds</sup> of the wheat remain drinking fresh water, 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of the green grass (the simple Christian) become tares while 2/3<sup>rd</sup> (wheat) still drink out of the fountain of truth, 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of the ships (outreach) is diminished, the sun (Christ) His light no longer shines on a 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of Christendom (tares) while 2/3<sup>rds</sup> are

---

<sup>291</sup> Here is a typical simplistic naive Protestant argument about Catholic Communion: “Transubstantiation at communion: They [Catholics] believe that the wafer and wine administered by the priest turns into the actual body and blood of Jesus. They *therefore continuously re-enact the crucifixion* of Christ. Christ has been *crucified once for all* for the sins of all mankind. Communion in a biblical sense is only a *commemoration* of the event at Calvary and an ordinance that reminds us to confess our sins before taking the elements.”

<sup>292</sup> See Revelation 9:5, 9:10

still in the light of the true church, and neither the moon (the church) reflects the truth to 1/3<sup>rd</sup> who are of the tares whose souls are blocked from seeing the light as result of this spiritual poison while the other 2/3<sup>ds</sup> (wheat) can access spiritually the fountain of truth.

Who poisoned the well? Of course, the prophecy tells us that Lucifer sends his star. Did not the scripture warn of a master deceiver who can deceive the very elect if he can?

“For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.” (Matthew 24:24)

How good are these in deception? Christ warned “if possible, even the elect”. Here we have these icons depicting an entire cycle of the accuser finally cast out of heaven with a third of the fallen angels forming an “enormous *red dragon with seven heads and ten horns and seven crowns on its heads* [whose] *tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth.*”

Both the red dragon and its tail come *together* seen as the beast of Lucifer. This is crucial since Luther’s destructive work was alongside this empire—the Ottomans whom his seed united with on theological points. The Arians failed to destroy the belief in the Trinity. The only way was to accept it. However, Protestantism held to Islam’s iconoclasm which also rejected the connect with the saints in heaven. After Luther, Protestants vehemently denounced the Catholic Eucharist.

Eventually at the close of the age, Ezekiel 32 gives another important clue:

“And the *riverbeds will be full of you*. When I put out your light, I will cover the heavens, and make its stars dark; I will cover the sun with a cloud, And the moon shall not give her light. All the bright lights of the heavens I will make dark over you, And bring darkness upon your land, Says the Lord GOD. I will also trouble the hearts of many peoples, when I bring your destruction among the nations, into *the countries which you have not known.*”

So this darkening gradually dims the entire earth when God “cover the sun with a cloud” which is a world without the light of Christ. This is dismal.

From Islam to Protestantism to Catholicism, my journey of being a doubting Thomas, has not been an easy one, for no matter how Protestants sliced and diced the text of scripture, nothing fits perfectly. The Catholic history has been correct, though many Catholics are unaware. I was even an anti-Fatima until this work proceeded to only see how the Fatima prophecies fit so perfectly within the seals, Zechariah’s horses and the threats to this Antichrist from the north of him though I doubt that the Catholic Church is even aware of all this.

The warning is clear, that similarly to what happened with Protestantism, in the future, its seed produces the other beast (lamb with two horns) is the mystery of Protestantism have a Julian the Apostate’s desire to erect a temple in Jerusalem. It is this two-horned beast that supports the “first beast” (Ottoman) and it enforces the mark even including the desecration of the Eucharist. It is the one that does the magic and amaze the world. It is the one that makes all give allegiance to the ten horned Ottoman beast:

“And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon [he spake like the dragon of the Ottomans] and he exercise all the power of the first beast before him [that was wounded] and cause the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he [this second beast] does great wonders, so that he make fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceive them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he [the lamb looking beast] had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he cause all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads” (Revelation 13:11-16)

It is this one (the lamb looking beast with two horns) that does most of the mischief and looking like a lamb must resemble belief in the lamb of God. We cannot escape a German-Ottoman alliance where the first (more powerful) uplifts the second and gives it its power since this Ottoman beast does not gain power on it own. This “partner” Daniel 8:24 makes clear as giving power to this seven headed beast: “And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people.”

We are to look for a lamb looking beast (claiming Christian) to repeat the support of the Ottomans as did the Calvinist<sup>293</sup> and the Germans.



The unity between Protestant states with the Ottomans against the Catholic states extended from Calvinists even after the Italo-Turkish War and Balkan Wars, weakened the Ottomans, Germany came to their aid. Talat Pasha, the Minister of Interior, wrote in his memoirs: “Turkey needed to join one of the country groups so that it could organize its domestic administration, strengthen and maintain its commerce and industry, expand its railroads, in short, to survive and to preserve its existence.”<sup>294</sup> Despite when

---

<sup>293</sup> Turco-Calvinism refers to the alliance or rapprochement between the followers of the Protestant Reformation and the Ottoman Empire during the 16th century. Protestantism and Islam entered into contact during the early-16th century when the Ottoman Empire, expanding in the Balkans, first encountered Calvinist Protestants in present-day Hungary and Transylvania. As both parties opposed the Austrian Holy Roman Emperor and his Roman Catholic allies, numerous exchanges occurred, exploring religious similarities and the possibility of trade and military alliances.

<sup>294</sup> Alan Woods, *The First World War: A Marxist Analysis of the Great Slaughter* chapter. 8.

this beast was about to receive its deadly wound, Germany allied with the Ottoman Empire. The birthplace of Protestantism, Germany, maintained great relationships with Turkey even during World War II in the German–Turkish Treaty of Friendship. If anything, it was the so-called Reformation that changed the face of Europe in many ways; one was breaking the taboo about allying with a Muslim power against other Christians. The European so-called Reformation disrupted Christian discourse in a number of areas. Islam was part of this disruption as the Reformation made it acceptable for Christian powers, rulers and thinkers to align with Muslim powers.<sup>295</sup>

From Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Jerry Vines, R. Albert Mohler, Jr. and Franklin Graham, Protestant missionaries when convenient, seem to borrow Catholic sentiments when they had to deal with Islam portraying Islam in an unfavorable light, representing it as "the epitome of anti-Christian darkness and political tyranny", forgetting all about their fathers, the early Protestants and Turks established a sense of partnerships against the Catholics, despite theological differences on Christology, considering each other to be closer to one another than to Catholicism.<sup>296</sup> Diplomatic relations were established with the Ottoman Empire during the reign of Elizabeth, with the chartering of the Levant Company and the dispatch of the first English ambassador to the Porte, William Harborne, in 1578. Numerous envoys were dispatched in both directions and epistolary exchanges occurred between Elizabeth and Sultan Murad III. In one correspondence, Murad entertained the notion that Islam and Protestantism had "much more in common than either did with Roman Catholicism, as both rejected the worship of idols", and argued for an alliance between England and the Ottoman Empire. To the dismay of Catholic Europe, England exported tin and lead (for cannon-casting) and ammunition to the Ottoman Empire aiding them to destroy the Catholics, and Elizabeth seriously discussed joint military operations with Murad III during the outbreak of war with Spain in 1585, as Francis Walsingham was lobbying for a direct Ottoman military involvement against the common Spanish enemy.<sup>297</sup>

"When the power of the holy people has been finally broken" then "all these things will be completed" is the defeat of the church is exactly what the Protestant rebellion combined with the Ottoman threat, that weakened the Catholic Church and in the times ahead, when the tares consume almost everything where only in the wilderness can one find true Communion.

This shatters many faulty interpretations making this prophecy to expand the entire cycle and the length of time of the full duration of the history of the church even including the Protestant schism, this rebellion which took with it 1/3 of Christendom to cooperate with the first coming of this Ottoman beast. The Protestant world is exactly one third and if in doubt what the seeds of Luther gave birth (see our "Section IX: Luthifer"). For centuries these slandered the church and the church ignored their slanders. Do Protestants who continually hurl un-repentant slanders even against the Holy Eucharist not expect that the other side is entitled to a response? Even the scriptures speak of these who abandoned the

---

<sup>295</sup> Islam and the European Reformation by Usman Butt

<sup>296</sup> See Islam in Europe by Jack Goody

<sup>297</sup> Karen Ordahl Kupperman

covenant will aid Antichrist. As we shall see in the Abomination of Desolation section how it must be the seed of the Protestant rebellion, which gave us the enlightenment from which sprouted the worst of evils from eugenics to evolution.

The tares will increase in number and the wheat is choked and diminishes to but a remnant, until the entire sun is blocked (complete falling away). But the prophecy still continues:

“Then war broke out in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But he was not strong enough, and they lost their place in heaven. The great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, who leads the whole world astray.” (Revelation 12:7-9)

“Then” after this war in heaven the devil is hurled down:

“He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him. Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say: “Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Messiah. For the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been hurled down. They triumphed over him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony they did not love their lives so much as to shrink from death. Therefore rejoice, you heavens and you who dwell in them! But woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury, because he knows that his time is short.” When the dragon saw that he had been hurled to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. The woman was given the two wings of a great eagle, so that she might fly to the place prepared for her in the wilderness, where she would be taken care of for a time, times and half a time, out of the serpent’s reach. Then from his mouth the serpent spewed water like a river, to overtake the woman and sweep her away with the torrent. But the earth helped the woman by opening its mouth and swallowing the river that the dragon had spewed out of his mouth. Then the dragon was enraged at the woman and went off to wage war against the rest of her offspring—those who keep God’s commands and hold fast their testimony about Jesus.” (Revelation 12:10-17)

Here John is referring to this “dragon” as the same figure that all prophets spoke of by use of different nicknames to show his kingdom’s geographic attributes or his character. “For the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been hurled down” by use of 1/3 of the rebels accuses the church continually is exactly what history recorded of the spiritual war between Protestantism and Catholicism and even condemns their holy continual sacrifice to destroy it where the woman finally flees to be fed (the Communion) in the wilderness. This unleashing after millennia from when the triumph of the church by Constantine the Great and the establishment in Constantinople brought in the slander predominately from Great Britain and Germany cooperated with the Ottomans against the Catholic League while both heavily persecuted the saints.

Ezekiel 38:17 confirm that God through his prophets spoke about Gog in former days by all the prophets. The verses that are the main foundations to understand the process are in

Revelation chapter 2, Jesus is speaking to seven historical churches (“seven lamp stands”) that were all situated in Asia Minor (“sides of the north” “Gog and Magog”):

“To the angel of the church in Pergamum write: These are the words of him who has the sharp, double-edged sword. I know where you live—where Satan has his throne” (Revelation 2:12-13).

Pergamum, in Cappadocia Turkey is the seat of Satan. In other words, the earthly seat of Lucifer as an “Assyrian” is in Pergamum and Isaiah 14 clearly gives us a needed key, which Temple Antichrist wants to sit in: “I [the Assyrian] will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the sides of the north” (Isaiah 14:13) in Hagia Sophia or Mt. Athos until Gog comes to the holy city (which is the church in the wilderness) and is thwarted:

“When *the thousand years are completed*, Satan will be released from his prison, and will come out to deceive the nations which are at the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together for the war; the number of them is like the sand of the seashore. And they came up on the broad plain of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city, and fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are* also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.” (Revelation 20:7-10)

“The camp of the saints” usually a “camp” is in the outdoors and “the beloved city” is likely Mount Athos or Hagia Sophia or even both or even in the wilderness. The attack on the camp of the saints and the “beloved city” is even expressed in the Psalms:

“Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised in the city of our God, in His holy mountain. The joy of the whole earth, is Mount Zion on the sides of the north, the city of the great King. God, in her palaces, has made Himself known as a stronghold. For, lo, the kings assembled themselves, they passed by together. They saw it, then they were amazed; they were terrified, they fled in alarm. Panic seized them there, anguish, as of a woman in childbirth. With the east wind You break the ships of Tarshish. As we have heard, so have we seen in the city of the LORD of hosts, in the city of our God; God will establish her forever. Selah. We have thought on Your loving kindness, O God, in the midst of Your temple.” (Psalm 48:2-9)

“The sides of the north” is not Jerusalem and “the east wind” is the eastern Orthodox stemming from Orthodox Russia and the slavic nations. This seems to correspond with the destruction of Gog:

“And they [Gog and Magog] went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.” (Revelation 20:9)

Now we know “the ships of Tarshish” are the ships coming from Asia Minor as Numbers 24 speaks of these ships “ships from Kition” (Greece, Asia Minor) while in Numbers 24, they



conquer Assyria and vanquish “Eber,” they lose against God’s people since “Israel does valiantly”.

The Church Fathers were divided on the millennium where the chiliasts maintained a millennium after the Second Coming and others like Augustine maintained in the City of God<sup>298</sup>, "Now the thousand years may be understood in two ways, so far as it occurs to me: either these things happen in the sixth thousand of years or sixth millennium (the latter part of which is now passing)..." This passage makes reference to Augustine's view of universal history in which six ages of human history are to be followed by a "chilastic" seventh age. During this seventh age, the saints and the just men of God will enjoy their sabbath on earth. In essence, Augustine viewed the age in which he lived as the millennium itself in which the "...kingdom of God (was) already manifest in the Church...the age between Pentecost and the return of Christ was the very millennium itself, marked by the ever increasing influence of the church in overturning evil..." and "...he (John ) used the thousand years as an equivalent for the *whole duration of this world*, employing the number of perfection to mark the fullness of time."<sup>299</sup>

Since scripture does not provide a starting point for the one thousand years, in one sense, one could view that Magog was formed when after a thousand years from the start of Christianity to when the Seljuk Alp Arslan, the son of Chaghri Beg, expanded significantly upon Tughril's holdings by adding Armenia and Georgia in 1064 and invading the Byzantine Empire in 1068, from which he annexed almost all of Anatolia.<sup>300</sup> Arslan's decisive victory at the Battle of Manzikert in 1071 effectively neutralized the Byzantine resistance to the Turkish invasion of Anatolia. Another way to view this is when after a thousand years (ten centuries) from when Christendom gained victory over pagan Rome in the fourth century lands us to the 14th century when the power of Lucifer was unleashed to deceive the earth during which the beast of Gog and Magog formed and later came against at Constantinople (1453) grew and prospered with the Protestant rebellion. And now this same Gog and Magog (neo-Ottoman) is rising again to surround the remnant camp of the saints and “the earth devours the flood” a comparable miracle when God split the Red Sea for Moses.

I believe it has a dual application that the restoration after Christ (the Rock) continues forever described allegorically in a long span—1000 years. Christ finally causes the defeat of the Assyrian by demolishing the beast’s feet (Daniel 2) by the “east wind” (massive conversion from God’s Spirit coming from Russia’s east as we shall explain later from scripture) restoring what was abolished and desecrated. This conversion comes after mass persecution and defeat when Christ blots out the Assyrian which Orthodox Russia has been the greatest enemy of the Ottomans. Russia will err at the beginning but is refined in the end. There is a reason why St. Mary worked to rescue Russia out of Communism at Fatima for preparation when nations will be annihilated.

God dedicated much to explain this whole theme from Ezekiel 28 to Ezekiel 38, encompass this beast with the names of its army of nations cast into hell (Revelation 19:20-21). The fall of the “little horn” as angel and his pride and declaration to be God:

---

<sup>298</sup> Book XX, Chapter 7

<sup>299</sup> City of God, XX,7

<sup>300</sup> Court and Cosmos: The Great Age of the Seljuqs By Sheila R. Canby, Deniz Beyazit, Martina Rugiadi

“Because thou hast set thine heart as the heart of God.” (Ezekiel 28:6) is what Paul described Antichrist: “*the son of perdition; Who opposes and exalted himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped.*” (2 Thessalonians 2:1) He “denies the Father and the Son” “does not honor the desire of women” is a perfect description for an anti-Trinitarian Muslim Ottoman as we have seen Erdogan reject the women’s complaints.

God’s Temple is a corporate entity; He resides in a small creature as a man who can also be defiled by taking the mark of the beast. And He also resides throughout the whole of heavens and the earth and He has centers in nations and if need be in catacombs and in the wilderness where we will be fed and God can reside there too. God can reside in the bread of the presence (Exod. 25:30, Lev. 24: 5-7, Matt. 26:26-28) and even in an Ark, a box and even in a human Ark as in the belly of St. Mary. He can reside in any of these even including a physical temple. This temple will also be rescued:

“And in that day a great trumpet will sound. *Those who were perishing in Assyria* and those who were *exiled in Egypt* will come and worship the LORD on the holy mountain in Jerusalem.” (Isaiah 27:13)

Is this the Hebrew exile? There are virtually no Jews in Egypt. And if so who was Peter writing to:

“Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To God’s elect, *exiles scattered* throughout the provinces of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia” (1 Peter 1:1)

And who are these “exiles” Peter was writing to? Are they not these:

“In that day the Lord will reach out his hand a second time to reclaim the surviving remnant of *his people* from *Assyria*, from *Lower Egypt*, from *Upper Egypt*, from *Cush*, from *Elam*, from *Babylonia*, from *Hamath* and from the *islands* of the *Mediterranean*. He will raise a banner for the nations and *gather the exiles of Israel*; he will assemble the scattered people of Judah from the four quarters of the earth.” (Isaiah 11:11-12)

Are these only “Judah” and the lost “12 tribes of Israel?” Or is this redeemed Judah and redeemed Gentiles? Did God lie when He said:

“Fallen is Virgin Israel, *never to rise again*, deserted in her own land, with no one to lift her up.” (Amos 5:2)<sup>301</sup>

Hebrew-Israel is “fallen” *never to rise again.*” Did the Bible lie? When did this destruction happen for Israel “never to rise again?”

Yet “the exiles of Israel” are mainly gentiles who seek the root of Jesse:

---

<sup>301</sup> Many latch on the survived: “Your city that marches out a thousand strong will have only a hundred left” (v. 3) as a token



“In that day the root of Jesse, who stand for an ensign of the people, *him* the *Gentiles shall beseech*, and his sepulchre shall be glorious.” (Isaiah 11:10)

If Jerusalem is to have a monopoly of being the sole throne of God on earth what do we do with this:

“I will set *My throne* in *Elam*, [Iran] And will destroy from there the king and the princes,’ says the LORD.” (Jeremiah 49:38)

And what about this:

“In that day there will be an altar to the LORD in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar to the LORD at its border.” (Isaiah 19:19)<sup>302</sup>

While the temples in Iran (“Elam”) and “Egypt,” are established at the end, Psalm 48’s temple seems to have “God in her palaces” (multiple centers) has a major controversy where “with the east wind You break the ships of Tarshish.” This turmoil can never be after God settles all matters as in Egypt and Elam. This is an issue that is settled prior to the conversion of Elam and Egypt. But this God’s “holy mountain” “palaces” already exists on “the sides of the north”<sup>303</sup> This “sides of the north” covers not just Asia Minor but the entire lands of Magog as well as the Russian expanse towards the east with the Orthodox Church in Russia. And “God will establish her forever”. Why insist this to strictly be Jerusalem’s temple, which can never be said of it as “on the sides of the north?” If we tie in the man of sin who according to 2 Thessalonians 2:4 “sits in the Temple of God,” Isaiah 14 tells us where:

“I [the Assyrian] will also sit on the *mount of the congregation* on the *sides of the north*” (Isaiah 14:13)

A double confirmation from Psalm 48 and Isaiah 14 gives us much needed detail especially when Ezekiel 38 also tells us the enemy “Gog” comes from the same “sides of the north”; “the remote parts of the north” (Ezekiel 38:6, 15) “remotest parts of the north” (Ezekiel 39:2) and this evil one comes from “The north wind brings forth rain, and a backbiting tongue, an *angry countenance*” (Proverbs 25:23) is the same as: “And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance and understanding dark sentences shall stand up.” (Daniel 8:23) And the “east wind” breaks him.

Even “Zion,” is it strictly in Jerusalem? If so, when was Jerusalem “on the sides of the north”? And what about “Mount Zion”:

“But you have come to *Mount Zion* and to the *city of the living God*, the *heavenly Jerusalem*, to an *innumerable company of angels*, to the *general assembly and*

---

<sup>302</sup> When prophecy uses “land” it is no longer an allegory.

<sup>303</sup> The argument becomes stronger when we find “north quarters” and “the sides of the north” in Ezekiel 38.

*church of the firstborn* who are *registered in heaven*, to *God the Judge of all*, to the spirits of *just men made perfect*, to *Jesus the Mediator* of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel.”

Is this in Israel and earthly Jerusalem? Impossible. Also, the tare must object since Christ here is mentioned last. On the contrary, scriptures give the hierarchy from the least to the greatest and we come to all. Zion is *not* a spot, yet it *can be* since it is also a *corporate entity*. In a technical sense as a Computer Programmer by profession, this is not a personal computer (where each can think and decide all on itself) but a mainframe with a host of terminals that connect to it and obeys it. This Assyrian already controls Hagia Sophia in Constantinople:

“Therefore it shall come to pass, when the Lord has performed *all His work on Mount Zion and on Jerusalem*, that He will say, “I will punish the fruit of the arrogant heart of *the king of Assyria*, and the glory of his haughty looks.” (Isaiah 10:12)

How many so-called Bible prophecy books have you read that any of their interpretations regarding the future have been fulfilled? We shall show many fulfillments. This “Gog” (The Assyrian) the “chief prince of Meshech and Tubal” with his hordes come from “the sides of the north” where this temple sits (see Ezekiel 38:6; 38:15; 39:2), his nation is already eying Hagia Sophia converting it to being their temple, a temple that magnifies the image of their beast that was once wounded as the “sick man of Europe”<sup>304</sup> and the woman stomps on such image.

Christ, after defeating Gog will re-establish His Temple after Antichrist desecrates it since:

---

<sup>304</sup> Tsar Nicholas I coined the phrase ‘Sick Man of Europe’ a sign that the once great power of the Ottoman Empire was dying. The Turks had dominated the Eastern Mediterranean for half a millennium, controlling vast swathes of Central Europe, Arab lands as far down as Egypt and had at one stage been knocking on the doors of Vienna and Venice. By the 20th century all that remained in Ottoman hands then when it was wounded what remained was Turkey, Syria, Mesopotamia, Palestine and parts of the Arabian Peninsula. Russia regarded itself as the protector of the Christian orthodox Balkan peoples, and its utopian long-term aim was to capture Constantinople, the former capital of the Byzantine Empire. In geopolitical terms, control of the Bosphorus and Dardanelles straits was of enormous strategic importance for Russia, as it offered it a passage to the Mediterranean. Russia wanted to establish its influence not only in the Norwegian Sea but also in the south of Europe. But the diverging interests of the European powers came to a head in 1853 with the outbreak of the Crimean War. An anti-Russian alliance was formed by the major western European powers to stem the rise of Russia. It was very much in Great Britain’s interests to preserve the Ottoman Empire, a weak and easily controlled regional power that posed no threat to its colonial aspirations – primarily communication with India through the Suez Canal, which opened in 1869.

“On the *high mountain of Israel* I will *plant it* [God’s church]<sup>305</sup> that it may bring forth boughs and bear fruit and become a stately cedar. And birds of every kind will nest under it; they will nest in the shade of its branches.” (Ezekiel 17:23)

“On the high mountain of Israel” is not literal but allegoric Mount Zion from heaven. Temples and thrones are crucial in prophecy. Satan wounds Christ’s heal and by this Christ gains the victory and establishes His seven churches, which originally were in Asia Minor. The church is defeated, but then Christ defeats Lucifer again (the Assyrian), bruises his head and regains what once was His. Antichrist’s head (the crescent) will finally be at the heel of the woman, St. Mary (Revelation 12). This is the process of *reversing* what Antichrist did and what *was high will be brought low*.

It is a simple rule. The problem with many *literalists* is that they are *literalists*. If they see an “Assyrian” then it must be an Assyrian from Iraq regardless that God could be using an allegoric nickname as for Cyrus had both titles “Persian” and “king of Babylon”. Or perhaps this man simply rules what was once the Assyrian Empire. And if they see a “Pharaoh of Egypt” the subject of that prophecy then must be an Egyptian, and if they see a “King of Babylon” he then must be an Iraqi. Such interpreters generate multiple individuals and a conundrum ensues hunting these figures. Yet when it comes to Gog, they make him Russian. If Gog is from Russia how then can they answer this Jesus-style question that God Himself makes:

“This is what the Sovereign Lord says: ‘Are you [Gog] not the one I spoke of in former days by my servants *the prophets of Israel*? At that time *they* prophesied for years that I would *bring you against them*.’” Ezekiel 38:17

It clearly says that the prophets of Israel—all of them—spoke of Gog and we ask: name all the prophets and quote to us their verses where they mention Russia as an Antichrist?

“Gog” the “chief prince of Meshech and Tubal” then must be “the Assyrian” possible “Pharaoh of Egypt” and “King of Tyre”. Even if one considers the Assyrian Empire it included much and are exactly where the neo-Ottomanists are focused. In 806 BC, the Assyrian Empire invaded and controlled the Levant where Pergamum is and subjugated the Arameans, Phoenicians, Philistines, Israel, the Neo-Hittites, Edomites, Mesopotamia, Syria, the Persians, Medes and Manneans penetrating all the way as far as the Caspian Sea. They definitely ruled the bulk landmass of Magog’s territory and alliances. Yet this dragon (Satan) had an allegoric tail and with it, it swept 1/3<sup>rd</sup> of the church (which fell from grace) and this 1/3<sup>rd</sup> cooperated with the seven-headed beast and prospered as result of the Catholic alliance being busy fighting Islamdom and from henceforth arose Protestantism. Without the Ottomans Protestantism would have never arose. We shall explain even more about this 1/3<sup>rd</sup> shortly and how it is this element that participate in the Abomination of Desolation.

---

<sup>305</sup> Even Barnes Notes concedes: “In the mountain of the height of Israel - The parallel passage Ezekiel 20:40 points to the mountain on which the temple stood. But it is not here the actual Mount Moriah so much as the kingdom of which that mountain was the representative, the seat of the throne of the anointed Son of God (Psalm 2:6; compare Psalm 40:2).”

Scripture tells us that this Gog (the Assyrian) comes from the land of Magog. He is chief prince of Meshech and Tubal, which are definitely in the region of Anatolia. If we examine some of the greatest Biblical references, like the *Macmillan Bible Atlas*, *Oxford Bible Atlas*, and *The Moody Atlas of Bible Lands*, they all locate Magog, Meshech, Tubal, Gomer and Beth Togarmah of Ezekiel 38 in Asia Minor (Turkey and her neo-Ottoman allies) precisely where the ancient Assyrian Empire lays. Yet some American interpreters mainly due to the conflict with the rise of Communism and the cold war made “Gog and Magog” to being Russia. But this is fallacious. Firstly, in Ezekiel 38 we clearly find this entire alliance: “Persia” (Iran, Afghanistan) “Lydia” (Turkey) “Cush” (Sudan, Somalia) “Put” (north Africa) “Arabia” (see Ezekiel 38, Ezekiel 30:5).<sup>306</sup>

This, in our view is the beast with seven heads which every literal name of a nation mentioned in end-times context fits. There is not a single biblical reference where this man sits in a temple in Jerusalem. We shall visit what most believe is the rebuilding of Jerusalem’s temple in Revelation 11 later on.

The verses that are the main foundations to understand the process are in Revelation chapter 2, Jesus is speaking to seven historical churches (“seven lamp stands”) that were all situated in Asia Minor “sides of the north”:

“To the angel of the church in Pergamum write: These are the words of him who has the sharp, double-edged sword. I know where you live—where Satan has his throne” (Revelation 2:12-13).

Pergamum, in Turkey is the seat of Satan. In other words, the earthly seat of Lucifer as an “Assyrian” is in Pergamum and Isaiah 14 clearly gives us a needed key, which Temple Antichrist wants to sit in: “I [the Assyrian] will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the sides of the north.” (Isaiah 14:13) This is the restoration after Christ (the Rock) causes the defeat of the Assyrian by demolishing the beast at its feet (Daniel 2) by the “east wind” (massive conversion from God’s Spirit coming from the east) restoring what was abolished and desecrated. This conversion comes after Christ blots out the Assyrian. Therefore, interpreters should never ignore “Mount Zion on the sides of the north” or (as commentaries already do) massage the verse to somewhat fit Jerusalem. This is the Protestant blunder and is why this prophecy confounded scholars since the Jerusalem Temple is not situated in such extremity “on the sides of the north”.

Scriptures are on our side of this argument and after we fully examine Revelation 11 (inductively from the scripture itself) they have nothing. These claim that scripture is their only authority. But who gives these interpreters such an authority to ignore the scriptures when it tells us in multiple verses where “sides of the north” is located? Notice also another key “With the east wind You break the ships of Tarshish” (Psalm 48:7) Tarshish

---

<sup>306</sup> We shall not belabor the Hebrew use of “Rosh” which only means chief. No historian agrees with such etymology.

(Tarsus)<sup>307</sup> was a city in ancient Cilicia located in the modern-day province of Mersin, Turkey.

This is a crucial key, since the Church began in Asia Minor (North) and the beast will end when Christ defeats Satan's throne in Asia Minor as described in Zechariah 9:13:

“He [the Messiah] will *proclaim peace to the nations*. His rule will *extend* from *sea to sea* and from the River to the *ends of the earth*. As for you, because of the blood of my covenant with you, I will free your prisoners from the waterless pit. Return to your fortress, O *prisoners of hope*; even now I announce that I will *restore twice* as much to you. I will *bend Judah* as I bend my bow and fill it with *Ephraim*. I will rouse your sons, O Zion, against your sons, *O Greece* [Yavan, Ionia], and make you like a warrior's sword. Then Jehovah will *appear over them*; His arrow will flash like lightning. The Sovereign Jehovah will sound *the trumpet*; He will march in the *storms of the South*, and Jehovah Almighty will shield them. They will destroy and overcome with clingstones... Jehovah their God will save them on that day as the flock of His people. They will sparkle in His land like jewels in a crown. How attractive and beautiful they will be!” (Zechariah 9)

“I will restore twice as much to you” is the process of restoration and re-gaining what was lost mainly in Orthodox territory. Christ will march “with the storms of the South” which means He is heading to battle towards the “North” where He says He will—to Greece, “Ionia, Yavan”—is unquestionably today in Turkey and to the Christian Orthodox regions of the

---

<sup>307</sup> See <https://www.ancient.eu/Tarsus/> Flavius Josephus. However, we must differentiate literal “Tarshish” (Tarsus) from the allegoric use. “Ships of Tarshish” or “Merchants of Tarshish” is usually used for traders with Tarshish just as “daughter of Babylon” is not necessarily Babylon itself. For example: “For the king's ships [king Solomon's ships] went to Tarshish with the servants of Hiram: every three years once came the ships of Tarshish bringing gold, and silver, ivory, and apes, and peacocks.” (2 Chronicle 9:21). So “Ships of Tarshish” are not necessarily regarding Tarshish itself since Solomon's ships here are also given the title “Ships of Tarshish” and Solomon is no Tarshishian. Isaiah 23, the prophecy regarding ancient Tyre “Pass ye over to Tarshish; howl, ye inhabitants of the isle.” (Isaiah 23:6) “Is this your joyous city, whose antiquity is of ancient days, whose feet carried her afar off to sojourn?” (Isaiah 23:7) “And he said, Thou shalt no more rejoice, O thou oppressed virgin, daughter of Zidon: arise, pass over to Chittim; there also shalt thou have no rest.” (Isaiah 23:12) “Behold the land of the Chaldeans; this people was not, till the Assyrian founded it for them that dwell in the wilderness: they set up the towers thereof, they raised up the palaces thereof; and he brought it to ruin.” (Isaiah 23:13) William F. Albright and Frank Moor suggested Tarshish is Sardinia (Italy) regarding discovery of the Nora Stone. But if we allow scripture to define these, in Isaiah 60:9: “For the coastlands shall hope for me, the ships of Tarshish first, to bring your children [Israel] from afar” compare with “But they [Israel] shall fly down upon the shoulder of the Philistines toward the west; Together they shall plunder the people of the East; They shall lay their hand on Edom and Moab; And the people of Ammon shall obey them.” (Isaiah 11:14) Obviously it was the “West” that aided to bring the Jews back to the land of Israel and both afflicted Edom (Jordan, Arabs). So the “Ships of Tarshish” depending on the context can denote seafarers of the Mediterranean coasts who are at times also called “Philistines” and can also be attributed to Chittim (Europe). Therefore, it is an error to attribute “Ships of Chittim” or “Ships of Tarshish” with Tarshish (Tarsus) itself. Isaiah 66:19 clearly describe Tarshish when it is standalone: “and I will set a sign among them. And from them I will send survivors to the nations, to Tarshish, Pul, and Lud, who draw the bow, to Tubal and Javan, to the coastlands far away that have not heard my fame or seen my glory. And they shall declare my glory among the nations.” It is well known that Tarshish is here “Pul, Lud who draw the bow” “Tubal” and “Javan” (Ionia, Turkey)

Christian Greek remnants and Isaiah 14 clearly gives us a needed key which Temple where Antichrist sits.

#### AND WE ALREADY SEE IT COMING

Putting an end to the 1,000-year reign of the Christian Byzantine Empire<sup>308</sup> Muhammad the II sat on Hagia Sophia and today Erdoğan of Turkey already re-converted it including other Christian temples to become Muslim, centers for Ottoman conquests desiring to enter this Temple of God. And with the Sufi *Al-Fana* such a Gog—or a future one—sits in it and declares himself as god. We have a possible scenario. Perhaps there will also be a focus by this Gog towards *Agion Oros* literally means “Holy Mountain” which today is *Mount Athos*, one of the last few remnants that keep the faith as the Copts of Egypt whom God also refers to His remnant there in Isaiah 19. Prior chapters, we notice Christ’s coming:

“He subdues peoples under us and nations *under our feet*.” (Psalm 47:3)

The “woman” in Revelation 12, stomps the moon under her feet is symbolic of the triumph against the crescent and the red dragon (the Assyrian). 2 Thessalonians 2 describes the desecrating of God’s temple:

“for [that day shall not come], except there come a *falling away first*, and that *man of sin be revealed*, the *son of perdition*; who oppose and exalts himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped; so that he as God *sits in the temple of God*, showing himself that he is God.” (II Thessalonians 2:4)

Many would pause here since such scenario is far-fetched; a Muslim “son of perdition” who enters Hagia Sophia is the fulfillment of Daniel and 2 Thessalonians 2 sitting in the Temple of God? And how can a single temple building reside “on the sides of the north”?

There are two issues here: 1—the extremities of the north have a temple in Constantinople. Is it possible Antichrist desecrates it by not only “sitting in the Temple of God” but by proclaiming himself as if he is God? 2—We must also consider him “stopping the sacrifice and grain offering” also *throughout the sides of the north*. This comes from the Protestant rebellion, as we shall examine. We have two issues to consider, not one, and in 2 Thessalonians 2 and Daniel neither prophecies speak of the Temple being in Jerusalem while Isaiah 14 pin-points “the mount of the congregation” within this massive expanse. This “*mount of the congregation*” is a single spot, a temple that exists in the landmass of Magog (the sides of the north) where Gog rules since he is “of the land of Magog”.

This declaration in Isaiah 14 is not regarding Lucifer in his angelic state, but a man of sin “is this the man that made the earth tremble” (Isaiah 14:17) and is said to rule from Pergamum “the seat of Satan” (Revelation 2:12-13).

Therefore, this “mount of the congregation” is in Asia Minor, especially since it was in Asia Minor that the Seven Churches and the Seven Lamp stands were; and Lucifer came against them; and it is in Asia Minor where it will also be *re-established* in the Orthodox world where Gog dwells and is definitely from “the land of Magog”.

---

<sup>308</sup> See <https://www.history.com> the “Ottoman-empire”



This is no small issue to ignore. Others jimmy-rig Psalm 48 to make this “mount of the congregation” as the temple in Jerusalem where interpreters make little sense of the verses since they fail to tie it to other prophecies.

Now let us take a look and see who “sits in the Temple of God” and where this temple is. There is not a single reference that this man sits in a temple in Jerusalem. All such interpretation deduces this without a single reference to a verse. When it comes to Gog, most review only popular prophecies (Ezekiel 38) as a standalone prophecy solely invading Israel. These fail to inductively link to other prophecies since they (as Israel did with Numbers 24) fail to comprehend them. This Gog does not only invade Israel. In his own nation and during his other massive invasions he spews a flood after the woman. This is the Church and Israel which will be the process of redeeming the remnant from the Jews who believe.

To find the keys to unlock allegory by use of symbolism is simple: “seas” “rivers” “waters” (pertain to peoples and different ethnicities). At times the use of “sea” alludes to being buried under the sea “long dead”. It uses “birds” (false teachers, false guides and demonic spirits,) “mountains” (empires, kingdoms,) “seed” (depending on the context would mean sons and daughters of either Christ, Mary or Satan’s “seed” the damned). It uses “sun” (Christ) “moon” (depending on the context has two meanings, one is the reflection of Christ, the Church and the other when the moon turns into blood pertain to persecution of the church or when the moon is under the woman’s feet is the false religion (the cities of the *harlot* woman) stomped by the virtuous woman (see Revelation 12). It uses “wind” (the Holy Spirit) ...

Once such symbolism is understood, reading the Bible becomes fascinating. But if these are not understood, the Bible becomes a snare.

The “wrath” is poured out on allegoric entities prophecy calls “Sodom and Egypt”. While the label “Sodom” pertains to the rise of homosexuality, “Egypt” pertains to the rise of paganism (departure from Christianity) and the turning back the clock to a pre-Christian lifestyle.

So Jerusalem, the mother of this “great city” just prior to Christ coming, when the two witnesses are murdered in it, and as their bodies lay dumped in the street without proper burial, they warn of two sins; *homosexuality* and *syncretism*. God did not leave us with little detail.

In addition, notice that Revelation 11-12 gives an entire cycle, the Ark is revealed from heaven, which can only be the woman (St. Mary) and the typology (just like the others) also gives *an entire cycle* starts by Messiah’s birth, persecution and the persecution of only her spiritual offspring “with the rest of *her offspring*, who *keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ*.” As much as this would be rejected and hated by your typical Calvinists, these are the offspring of Christ and the Woman (the Ark) who in Psalm 132 also goes up to heaven:

“Arise, Lord Jehovah, to your rest, you and the ark of your might!”.

There are always two fulfillments, one is short-term and the other is long-term. A good locksmith knows which is which. So who does this Ark represent, which God resides in? Is this a box? The Psalm even tells us clearly where to find it:

“Behold, we heard [about] it in Ephrata and we found it in the fields.” (v.6)

This resonates what the Shepherds were told by the angels regarding the birth of Christ in Ephrata (Bethlehem, see Micah 5).

To the Jews, God is supposed to dwell in an Ark in Jerusalem, not lowly Bethlehem. To the Protestants, the Ark was Christ until Psalm 132:8 shocks with this: “Arise, Lord Jehovah, to your rest, you and the ark of your might!” So how could Christ rise up to heaven with the Ark (if the Ark was also Christ)? Christ has risen and His Ark rising is the human Ark He resided in. This is His Mother’s Assumption. Then we have this shocking verse:

“The Lord hath sworn truth to David, and he will not make it void: of the fruit of thy womb I will set upon thy throne.” (Psalm 132:11)

And how does David (a male) have a female womb “fruit of thy womb”? Whether Hebrew, Aramaic or Arabic the word for womb is “Beten”, yet the translators were so confounded by this word “womb” being in this context (which should always be for a female) so they simply translated it as “body” in several translations. Yet the Septuagint got it right:

The Lord swore to Daudid the truth, and he will never annul it: “Of your belly’s fruit I will set on your throne. (Septuagint translation)

In the Septuagint it’s the Greek word (“koilia”) “womb” as in Luke 1:42 and in the Hebrew it’s “Beten” (womb) and “Beten” can only mean womb. The Septuagint even pronounced David’s name correctly “Daudid” for there is no letter “V” in Hebrew. But David had no womb. Mary, his descendant did. Mary was of the tribe of Judah and the lineage of David (Psalm 132:11, Luke 1:32). She was connected by marriage with Elisabeth, who was of the lineage of Aaron (Luke 1:36). Jesus is not only the fruit of Mary’s womb; he is the fruit of David’s seed and the fulfillment of Psalm 132 as well. Therefore, the allegory of Psalm 132 is speaking of Christ coming through the seed of the woman (the Ark) through David and then He ascends and His Mother Sion (chaste, virgin), the Ark that housed Him is assumed to heaven. The Ark was God’s dwelling:

“Because Lord Jehovah is pleased in Sion and he chose it a dwelling place.” (Psalm 132:13)

#### IN CLOSING

Once we get to the “Abomination of Desolation” which this one takes away the “altar” and “the sacrifice” and goes “against the prince of the covenant” to “take a host” from him these prophecies will all light up like fireworks. We shall explain this in much detail, but how can we if you might still not understand how to unlock Middle Eastern parables? Notice, at the Sixth seal, the earthquake blocks everything (complete falling away):

“I looked when He broke the sixth seal, and there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth made of hair, and the whole moon became like blood” (Revelation 6:12)



So many do not understand Jesus when He already instructed to unlock parables. In prophecy we read about the sun not giving its light and we think that God is about to turn off the sun. There is no need to listen to baby-milk drinkers in academic garb, the sun dimming is Christ's light departing from the earth, this time the whole of Christendom is dark. He (Christ) is the "Sun of justice":

"But unto you who fear my name the Sun of justice shall arise" (Mal 4:2).

Who is this "Sun of justice"? Is this the literal sun? Remember, here it spells it "Sun" with a "u" in the middle. It does not spell it "Son" with an "o" in the middle. Here is one more:

"For the LORD God is a sun and shield; The LORD will give grace and glory; no good thing will He withhold from those who walk uprightly." (Psalm 84:11)

God here is allegorically "a sun" and "shield". How is God a sun and shield? He is metaphorically a sun because He gives light and He is metaphorically a shield because His light is His truth, which shields us from deception.

So without the sunlight of God, deception and a falling away permeates the earth and turns the world backwards towards Sodom and deep into Egypt's paganism. This is why many fail to link Ezekiel 16's "Sodom" with the "harlot of Babylon" which we already see the signs. Prophecy even gives both, the allegory with its interpretation:

"For thus says the LORD of hosts: 'Once more (it is a little while) I will shake heaven and earth, the sea and dry land; 'and I will shake all nations, and they shall come to the Desire of All Nations, and I will fill this temple with glory,' says the LORD of hosts." (Haggai 2:6-7)

Here we have this earthquake "splitting," "shaking all nations" and "overthrowing the nations": "I will shake the nations," not only the earth by literal earthquakes! Sure we will have earthquakes but we need to decipher which is literal and which is allegory. Here is another example where he explains what it means by shaking the earth:

"I will shake heaven and earth. I will overthrow the throne of kingdoms; I will destroy the strength of the Gentile kingdoms. I will overthrow the chariots and those who ride in them" (Haggai 2:21-22)

"And upon the earth distress of nations, by reason of the confusion of the roaring of the sea and of the waves." (Luke 21:25)

The "roaring of the sea" here is not a literal sea and obviously this is the protestations and rebellions of the world as an earthquake causing "distress of nations" "by reason of confusion" and the masses of peoples ("sea") roaring into rebellion. Do you see the word "confusion"? This infects, as John in Revelation declared the "seas" which are the harlot nations:

“The waters which thou saw, where the harlot sit, are peoples and nations and tongues. (Revelation 17:15)

This city is the city of many people, many nations and many tongues that due to the confusion erupts into a global revolt “roaring of the sea”. The city of God is also universal, from many nations:

“After this I looked, and behold, a great multitude that no one could number, from every nation, from all tribes and peoples and languages” (Revelation 7:9)

So depending on the context, some are literal and others are obviously allegoric and some, the literal application is already interpreted in the text.

So we can imagine now what will the world be like once this light dims upon the rest of the 2/3<sup>rd</sup>? In fact, you do not have to imagine, just look around and see how much darkness this earth is already in. The sun is already dimming and it shall continue to dim till there is no longer light except for the ones who love Him: a small remnant.

So we have a “shaking” and a dimming of the sun. The sun dimming is Christ’s light and as His light dims, His anger increase, which (as scripture describes) eventually comes with wrath. The Heaven also is slowly departing away from earth. Now that you are able to chew, try to eat:

“After these things I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, on the sea, or on any tree.” (Revelation 7:1)

“The four winds” here is God’s breath. He is holding His Holy Spirit from the earth. For example: “Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live.” (Ezekiel 37:9)

“And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, “Receive the Holy Spirit.” (John 20:22)

To stop the wind is always God’s reaction (to pull back) for a falling away:

“For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who now holds it back will continue to do so till he is taken out of the way.” (2 Thessalonians 2:7)

Therefore, the prophecies are clearly regarding the Holy Spirit’s slow departure from the earth. Revelation 7 is just prior from when the 7<sup>th</sup> seal is broken, so it is part of the sixth seal. Here the Holy Spirit brings back the dead to life, which John confirms in the Apocalypse. So it is in Revelation 7, the Holy Spirit ceases His blessings and the light of Christianity diminishes greatly. Whoever cares about wealth and earthly things at the beginning of the sixth seal, their financial portfolio is still intact since we have an era of false peace while the nations stockpile more destructive weapons than ever before becoming ready to turn their plowshare into swords.

So chapter 6 (up to the sixth seal) is the time period of the complete “falling away” (all the stars fell, warned about in 2 Thessalonians 2 just prior to Antichrist and chapter 8 is

prior to the sixth seal and even the fifth (which is a time of short rest before all hell breaks loose). It obviously encompasses from between the second and fifth seal. Chapter 7 begin to explain how the rest (2/3) are darkened:

“After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds of the earth, so that no wind would blow on the earth or on the sea or on any tree.” (Revelation 7:1)

The same cycle of chapter 6 is in chapter 8 giving a time to the tribulation summarized in chapter 7 regarding the conversion of a small remnant of Jewish people.

Then comes the second destroyer to take away the rest of the Church in chapter 9:

“Then the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star from heaven which had fallen to the earth; and the key of the bottomless pit was given to him. He opened the bottomless pit, and smoke went up out of the pit, like the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke of the pit. Then out of the smoke came locusts upon the earth, and power was given them, as the scorpions of the earth have power. They were told not to hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but only the men who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads. And they were not permitted to kill anyone, but to torment for five months; and their torment was like the torment of a scorpion when it stings a man. The appearance of the locusts was like horses prepared for battle; and on their heads appeared to be crowns like gold, and their faces were like the faces of men. They had hair like the hair of women, and their teeth were like the teeth of lions. They had breastplates like breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was like the sound of chariots, of many horses rushing to battle. They have tails like scorpions, and stings; and in their tails is their power to hurt men for five months. They have as king over them, the angel of the abyss; his name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in the Greek he has the name Apollyon. The first woe is past; behold, two woes are still coming after these things. Then the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which is before God one saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, “Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates. And the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year, were released, so that they would kill a third of mankind. The number of the armies of the horsemen was two hundred million; I heard the number of them. And this is how I saw in the vision the horses and those who sat on them: the riders had breastplates the color of fire and of hyacinth and of brimstone; and the heads of the horses are like the heads of lions; and out of their mouths proceed fire and smoke and brimstone. A third of mankind was killed by these three plagues, by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which proceeded out of their mouths. For the power of the horses is in their mouths and in their tails; for their tails are like serpents and have heads, and with them they do harm. The rest of mankind, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, so as not to worship demons, and the idols of gold and of silver and of brass and of stone and of wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk; and they did not repent of their murders nor of their sorceries nor of their immorality nor of their thefts.” (Revelation 9)

So the release of Satan after being bound for an allegoric thousand years sparks the gradual downfall of Christendom. It starts with a red, black and pale horses that bring eras of civil war “kill one another” and world conflagration, death and massive starvation as result of this star (Lucifer) who is cast down, unleashed to poison the waters (church), initially taking one third (as the dragon’s tail confirms). Lucifer causes a major schism of rebellion, then the remnant church is tested in Revelation 11 where the major schism that does not observe the altar and sacrifice is cast out by God. This, of course, by the time we cross reference Daniel does not bode well for the protestant reformation and our interpretation must be dismissed by them as ‘nonsense’. Then we have the Two Witnesses. They arise alongside this harlot and a beast is formed, then Gog and Magog (back to Asia Minor), the beast is finally conquered and then to chapter 22, the sea of glass in the Holy Heavenly Jerusalem descending from heaven and order is finally restored back as it was in the first churches. John even adds a copyright at the end warning not to add or subtract from this book. The entire book is in sequential order that we can finally ‘chart’ prophecy as westerner like it. If we would chart prophecy from an allegoric sense it will look nothing like the charts found in the Protestant obsolete commentaries.

Comprehending where we are in the timetable of history and prophecy requires much effort. One cannot just simply quote a verse or two to give such results. John gave a mechanism; “seven seals” in Revelation 6, which begins after a persecution of the primitive church and ends with the coming of Christ.

Therefore, this duration (just as in Daniel) must be the whole history of the church on earth enduring the test of Job from beginning to end. Each seal describes a snippet or a summary on what to expect as the banner that marks its era in history extending all the way to “the wrath”.

The first seals include four riders on four different colored horses. And since horses have always signified warfare, the other seals (5<sup>th</sup>, 6<sup>th</sup>, and 7<sup>th</sup>) have a different characteristic. It is also crucial not to focus on the count; a single rider and a single horse does not necessarily have to represent the life of a single individual with a single event, but a span in history which that horse brings in that era.

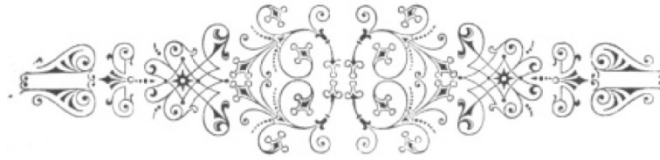
Also, one cannot assume the point in time when the first seal begins. We must pay close attention to the text that tells us when and what occasion the sparking event for the first seal to unravel. And from henceforth, we begin to monitor the events until we have viable evidence to observe the second seal ... so on and so forth.

Protestants are the tares that jump to the end-times portraying the first seal (with a white horse) as the Antichrist. The interpretations then become ‘tradition’ and anyone who opposes them, his true interpretation is then rejected because it is not customary to their favorite biblical expositors. The Protestant is without any evidence of how they derived to such a starting point or to such absurd conclusion. So they instantly begin to interpret that the first seal begins at the end of days when there are no indications in scripture for such method. In addition, the seven seals are not the seven bowls/vials of wrath, which are disclosed after the seventh seal is broken. How they jump to the end-times is simply unfounded and the reason is simply to avoid explaining the temple, the sacrifice and the abomination of desolation committed by Protestantism’s hatred for the Eucharist. Volumes of sensationalism and fiction are sold without any evidence to any fulfillments.

SECTION VI

UNLOCKING

THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION



THE ROAD TO AN ABOMINATION OF DESOLATIONS  
(VATICAN II AND PACHAMAMA)

“those who eat the flesh of pigs and other disgusting creatures, like mice” (Isaiah 66:17)

What “pigs” and what “mice”? No interpreter was able to interpret this unpopular prophecy. But this type of sacrifice has already been fulfilled. Let us explain. God is really tired of the Vatican and this world:

“Hear the word of the LORD, you rulers of Sodom; Give ear to the instruction of our God, you people of Gomorrah” (Isaiah 1:10)

It even comes to a point where God has enough with His people:

“I hate your new moon festivals and your appointed feasts, they have become a burden to Me; I am weary of bearing them. “So when you spread out your hands in prayer, I will hide My eyes from you; yes, even though you multiply prayers, I will not listen. Your hands are covered with blood.” (Isaiah 1:14)

To these God listens not. Their prayers, He is sick of, even including their church services. Why? He tells them:

“You will be ashamed of your idol worship in groves of sacred oaks. You will blush because you worshipped in gardens dedicated to idols.” (Isaiah 1:29)

What “idol worship in groves of sacred oaks”? This whole complaint of Isaiah 1 is explained in Isaiah 66:

“Thus says the Lord: Heaven is my throne, and the earth my footstool: what is this house that you will build to me? And what is this place of my rest? My hand made all these things, and all these things were made, says the Lord. But to whom shall I have respect, but to him that is poor and little, and of a contrite spirit, and that tremble at my words? But whoever sacrifices a bull is like one who kills a person, and whoever offers a lamb is like one who breaks a dog’s neck; whoever makes a grain offering is like one who presents pig’s blood, and whoever burns memorial incense is like one who worships an idol. They have chosen their own ways, and they delight in their abominations.” (Isaiah 66:1-4)

Is God here strictly addressing Israel’s sacrificial system? What “abominations” and why would the “grain offering” be seen as “pig’s blood”? This dual prophecy Isaiah explains:

“As for those who consecrate and *ritually purify themselves* so they can follow *their leader* and *worship in the garden*, *those who eat the flesh of pigs and other disgusting creatures, like mice* - they *will all be destroyed* together,” says the LORD. And I, because of what they have planned and done, am *about to come* and *gather the people of all nations* and *languages*, and they will come and *see my glory*. I will set a sign among them, and I will *send some* of those *who escaped*”<sup>309</sup> (Isaiah 66:17-18)

Is this speaking of dietary law? No. It is speaking of sacrifice since there is a ritual purification that is impure. Ancient Israel did not commit this. And who are these whom God says He “will send some of those who escaped”? Escaped what and escaped where? And pay close attention to what Christ meant by Matthew 25:26 regarding the “lazy servant” explained in Isaiah 65-66:

“You *did evil in my sight* and *chose what displeases me*.<sup>13</sup> Therefore this is what the Sovereign LORD says: “*My servants* will *eat*, but *you* will go *hungry*; my *servants* will *drink*, but you will go *thirsty*; my servants will *rejoice*, but you will be put to *shame*.<sup>14</sup> My servants will *sing* out of the joy of their hearts, but you will *cry* out from anguish of heart and wail in brokenness of spirit. <sup>15</sup> You will *leave your name for my chosen ones* to use in *their curses*; the Sovereign LORD will *put you to death*, but to *his servants* he will give *another name*.<sup>16</sup> Whoever invokes a blessing in the land will do so by the one true God; whoever takes an oath in the land will swear by the one true God. For the past troubles will be forgotten and hidden from my eyes. <sup>17</sup> “See, I will create *new heavens* and a *new earth*. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind. <sup>18</sup> But be glad and rejoice forever in what I will create, for *I will create Jerusalem* to be a delight and its people a joy. <sup>19</sup> I will *rejoice over Jerusalem* and take delight in my people; the sound of weeping and of crying will be heard in it no more.” (Isaiah 65: 12-19)

“Am about to come and gather the people of all nations” to “create Jerusalem”. But isn’t Jerusalem already here? This is the New Jerusalem. “I am about to come” is ultimately His Second Coming, where prior, the church has fallen to such a state where God even see the “grain offering” in such setting as an offering of “pig’s blood”.

---

<sup>309</sup> see Strong’s definition H6403 “escaped by flight” also in Arabic “falat” which means fled.

This is being fulfilled as we have seen when masses of Catholics consecrate themselves and “follow their leader” (the Pope)<sup>310</sup> to celebrate and honor Pachamama<sup>311</sup> at the Vatican gardens “ritually purify themselves so they can follow their leader and worship in the garden”.

But what does this have to do with sacrificing “pigs” and “the mouse”?

As to the consummation of “flesh of pigs” is in contrast to the beginning of the prophecy, a type, which God rejected animal sacrifices and considers them unclean. But in essence He also sees Christians who practice a syncretistic sacrifice of Communion mixed with idols as also unclean regardless that it is a grain offering Communion on an altar. It is no longer Christ’s blood but the blood of pigs.

All this becomes obvious once we examine the “disgusting creatures like mice”.

When was this sin committed in ancient Israel? What interpreter solved this “mice” riddle? From Jerome to now, no one knew what this is about because it was not yet fulfilled. Yet today it is.

God sees a defilement of the Eucharist in the same sense as consuming what is sacrificed to Pachamama, the guinea pigs which are a type of mice. In the fallen away South America so many Catholics now offer guinea pigs (a type of rat) to Pachamama as a form of repentance of their misdeeds. Keep in mind that in South America this is not simply food consumption but has been going on for several decades practiced as a sacrificial offering and now brought into Vatican gardens.<sup>312</sup> God was not addressing someone for simply eating a mouse out of hunger, but for using it as a sacrificial offering to God, a throwback to when that region was pagan.

---

<sup>310</sup> This ‘one in the midst,’ is probably a leader of the ceremonies as in Ezekiel 8:11 and in the mystic meals, they ate food regarded by the Law as unclean.

<sup>311</sup> “mama” stands for “mother”. This “mother” is believed to be mother of all “Janak pacha” (the realm above) “kay pacha” (the planet earth) “uru pacha” (the underworld) “pachakuti” (turning of an epoch) Therefore, Pachamama is the mother of not only this earth, but of the entire universe and progressive epochs of time. (Untoja and Mamani, 1-125; Lucca, 109, 119; Lara, 102, 117, 171, 271)

In defense of Pope Francis, Pedro Gabriel admits: “Now, I don’t want to sugarcoat this. Pachamama was indeed a pagan goddess, and not necessarily pleasant. She was not evil, since after all, the earth seems to indeed sustain humanity with her “maternal” gifts. But she was also not inherently good, because sometimes she would not sufficiently distribute her bounty: crops might fail, and famine ensue as a result. Also, she might cause earthquakes and other natural disasters. Pachamama was considered good, but also fickle. She demanded sacrifice to be appeased and, therefore, to give away her fruits. Most of the sources I consulted mention the sacrifice of animals, namely llama fetuses, but I do not exclude the possibility of human sacrifice, namely of children (though many of the sources I have seen explicitly linking human sacrifice to Pachamama are not scholarly, but biased anti-papal sources posting articles on this topic in the wake of the Vatican Gardens controversy).” (see: Who is Pachamama anyway? BY PEDRO GABRIEL · PUBLISHED DECEMBER 2, 2019 · UPDATED JULY 5, 2020”

<sup>312</sup> As one observer relates: “shaman Basilio Samata. He showed us how to make an ofrenda, or thank-you offering to Pachamama (mother earth). Sr. Basilio is a practicing Catholic as well as a Quechua spiritual leader. He gave each of us a blessing, wishing us health, wealth and happiness.” <https://www.goshen.edu/peru/2014/07/08/guinea-pigs-shamans/>





(A despicable depiction of the Last Supper by Marcos Zapata painted the Andean *cuy* (guinea pig) as the main entrée for Jesus and his disciples. The bald, splayed carcass greets visitors and parishioners inside Cuzco's main cathedral.)

Pachamama is a goddess revered by the indigenous peoples of the Andes known as the “earth mother” which, priests (while claiming to be Catholic) sacrifice offerings of guinea pigs (a type of rat, mouse) while practicing syncretism associating the Virgin Mary with that of the Pachamama. Here is the opening paragraph of the Pachamama page of Wikipedia:

“Pachamama is a goddess revered by the indigenous people of the Andes. She is also known as the earth/time mother.[1] In Inca mythology, Pachamama is a fertility goddess who presides over planting and harvesting, embodies the mountains, and causes earthquakes. She is also an ever-present and independent deity who has her own self-sufficient and creative power to sustain life on this earth.[1] Her shrines are hallowed rocks, or the boles of legendary trees, and her artists envision her as an adult female bearing harvests of potatoes and coca leaves.[2] The four cosmological Quechua principles – Water, Earth, Sun, and Moon[2] – claim Pachamama as their prime origin. *Priests sacrifice llamas, cuy (guinea pigs)*, and elaborate, miniature, burned garments to her.[3] Pachamama is the mother of Inti the sun god and Mama Killa the moon goddess. Pachamama is said to also be the wife of Inti, her son.”

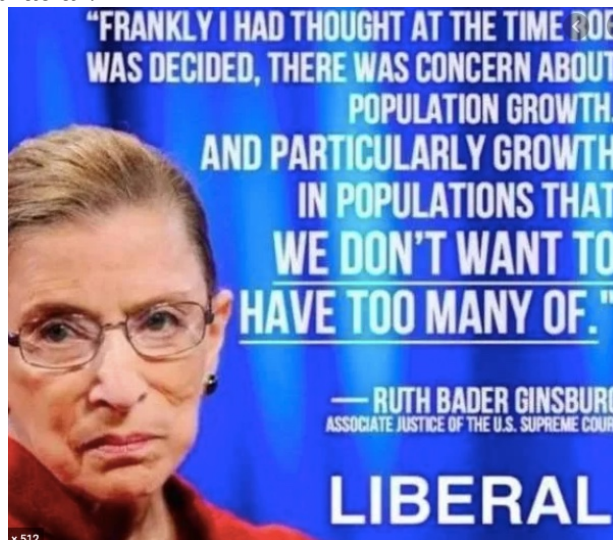
One can find much more about the pagan rituals to this idol, the sacrificial offerings to this “Mother Earth”, and the New Age interpretations of her worship with very little effort. The Vatican even had the audacity to mint a coin for her.



The Vatican's Mint issued on October 13<sup>th</sup>, 2020 a ten-euro silver coin depicting "Mother Earth."

As we read scripture we are mystified over the many examples Israel took a pagan route. Why would a people who witnessed God's blessing be lured into paganism?

But such fall in ancient history should not astonish us if we today can see how such deception becomes a fashion. It starts by introducing what the masses consider popular. It all comes together since 1—with paganism comes sexual freedom (the flesh) and 2—as we see in our time when the modern world borrows from indigenous beliefs. Problems arise when people take too much from nature symbolized in Pachamama as "Mother Earth" the giver of abundant gardens. This tickles the ears of the environmentalists for these advocate global warming and the outcries over the depletion of the earth's natural resources of whom the pagan of today considers the earth as their mother. So the thought is that the more we harm mother earth the more that she will harm us. Today the idea of Mother Earth resonates with the global and intellectual elites who espouse "Population Control," "Eugenics," and "Euthanasia".



Today the world is brainwashed to consider sacrificing the unborn children as noble since overpopulation harms the earth. And so this is why the wise watches the trends. If an advocate of Charles Darwin or an Al Gore pops into the scene, the mission is not *scientific* but *demonic*. When God punishes they hate Him and when their mother earth punishes they sacrifice man and rats.

While this prophecy has in it a dual nature for past fulfillments, it is reserved for the end since in its specifics, it addresses the fallen church for practicing syncretism and God promising to end this by stating: “I will create Jerusalem”. How can God be strictly speaking of ancient Jerusalem, which He already created? While God here is also saying that He is done with animal sacrifices at the Temple in Jerusalem, He is sending a similar message to the church:

“Wherefore I also will choose their *mockeries*, and will bring upon them the things they feared: because I called, and there was none that would answer; I have spoken, and they heard not; and they have done evil in my eyes, and have *chosen the things that displease me*.” (Isaiah 66:5)

What “mockeries?” God here is not speaking of old temple sacrifices. He is pointing to an abomination of desolation, which the rest of the prophecy reveals. But first He identifies a schism between sheep and goat:

“Hear the word of the Lord, you that *tremble at his word*: Your brethren that *hate you*, and *cast you out for my name's sake*, have said: Let the Lord be glorified, and we shall see in *your joy*: but they shall be confounded.” (Isaiah 66:5)

Here God reveals a division; 1—the lost, crowds that rejoice in this “mockery” by saying “let the Lord be glorified and we shall see in your joy”. In other words, the true sons of God are known to being upset and anguished at what they see<sup>313</sup> while the sons of perdition, still claim to love God point the finger at the true sons of God as lacking love and joy.

“And I will *send some* of those *who escaped*.” Escaped where and why? Those are the ones who have fled the persecution. This is not only fulfilled in the First Coming but just before the Second Coming:

“I will send some of those *who escaped* to the nations—to Tarshish, to the Libyans and Lydians (famous as archers), to Tubal and Greece, and to the distant islands that have not heard of my fame or seen my glory. They will proclaim my glory among the nations. And they shall bring all your brethren out of all nations for a gift to the Lord, upon horses, and in chariots, and in litters, and on mules, and in coaches, to *my holy mountain Jerusalem*, says the Lord, as if the children of Israel should bring an *offering in a clean vessel* into the house of the Lord. And I will take of *them to be priests*, and Levites, says the Lord. For as the *new heavens*, and *the new earth*, which I will make to stand before me, says the Lord: so shall your seed stand, and your name. And there shall be month after month, and sabbath after sabbath: and all flesh shall come to adore before *my face*, says the Lord. And they shall *go out, and see the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me*:

---

<sup>313</sup> This is also described in Ezekiel 8-9 “And the LORD said to him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that are done in the midst of it.” (Ezekiel 9:4) These are the ones who were upset at the abomination had the mark of *taw* (T) in Hebrew which is the crucifix and the rest who were joyful at the pagan spectacle were slain for the worship of Tammuz (Ezekiel 8:14)

their worm shall not die, and their *fire* shall not be quenched: and they shall be a loathsome sight to all flesh.” (Isaiah 66:17-24)

This is the destruction by “fire” which “shall not be quenched”. This can never be ancient Israel. There is much to chew on here. Let us explain. God initially explains the condition of His vineyard:

“<sup>8</sup> This is what the LORD says: “As when juice is still found in a cluster of grapes and people say, ‘Don’t destroy it, there is still a blessing in it,’ so will I do in behalf of my servants; I will not destroy them all. <sup>9</sup> *I will bring forth descendants from Jacob, and from Judah those who will possess my mountains; my chosen people* will inherit them, and there will my *servants live*. <sup>10</sup> *Sharon* will become a *pasture for flocks*, and the *Valley of Achor* a resting place for *herds*, for *my people* who seek *me*.” (Isaiah 65:8-10)

This multi-faceted prophecy does not simply speak of the return of the Jewish people to dwell in Israel “my chosen people” notice “there will my servants live”:

*“Sharon* will become a *pasture for flocks*, and the *Valley of Achor* a resting place for *herds*, for *my people* who seek *me*.”

“Who seek me” is clear; “Sharon” and the “Valley of Achor” will only be preserved for the ones who “escaped” to later do an outreach to the nations that were not Christian, to Turkey and North Africa (“Libya”) and to distant lands. God in the beginning of the prophecy gives us a clue:

“I revealed myself to those who *did not ask for me*; I was *found* by those who *did not seek me*.” (Isaiah 65:1)

The key to differentiate between the two groups is “my people who seek me”. Christ revealed Himself to the Jewish people but they chose Him not, yet those who did not seek or ask for Christ, yet these found him.

Did not God say that we must seek Him with all of our heart, mind, soul and strength? Indeed. That rule still stands even after we find Him. We must seek continually with all of our might. Here it is explaining that God will convert others after the fall of the church “I will set a sign among them, and I will send some of those *who escaped* <sup>314</sup> to the nations—to Tarshish, to the Libyans and Lydians (famous as archers), to Tubal and Greece, and to the distant islands that have not heard of my fame or seen my glory.”

The ones who escape from the city will outreach the Muslim, Hindu and other nations where Christianity has always been dim. He replaces the bad flock with new ones.

He will first send his “flock” (the remnant that remained faithful) his “people” “who seek me” an escape to “Sharon” and “the Valley of Achor”. These places are in the wilderness of Israel; at the clefts and valleys and there these will survive while the rest are destroyed:

---

<sup>314</sup> see Strong’s definition H6403 “escaped by flight” also in Arabic “falat” which means fled.

“<sup>11</sup> But as for you who forsake the LORD and forget *my holy mountain*, who spread a *table for Fortune* and fill bowls of mixed wine for *Destiny*, <sup>12</sup> I will *destine you for the sword*, and *all of you* will fall in the *slaughter*; for I called but you did not answer, I spoke but you did not listen.”

What part of “all of you” does the fallen church not understand? How can such a plan be accomplished to weed out the good from the bad and from the really ugly? It is because the destruction is the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah where the wise are told to flee and they will flee while the doubters remain behind. Sodom and Egypt is a serious offense. The Goddess Destiny<sup>315</sup> is Isis and her son Zeus. Such are the incest relations of pagan deities. Pachamama is said to also be the wife of Inti, her son. Apocalypse 2:12 prophesied about Pergamum in Turkey being “the seat of Satan” where the seven churches got established defeated paganism (the throne of Zeus) to only have this satanic comeback defeating Christendom.

#### THE REFINEMENT BEFORE HE COMES

Christ’s first coming was observed prior by only a few. Most were caught by surprise, denial or disbelief. It will be similar for the Second Coming. But why be blind as to how things will be before He comes again? John the Baptist spoke of making straight the road and of the wilderness. His ministry in the wilderness (to prepare) mimics the future. God gave us ample detail as to how things will be before He judges the prudent from the lazy servant.

God’s servants are divided into three, a bad and a lazy and a good servant. Here, the good servants “who seek me” flee to “Sharon” and to “the Valley of Achor” is today an empty expanse of grazing lands with valleys, cliffs and canyons, a hint to leave the city. We find the same in Obadiah 9:

“Then those of the Negev will possess the mountain of Esau, and those of the Shephelah the Philistine plain; also, possess the territory of Ephraim and the territory of Samaria, And Benjamin will possess Gilead. And the exiles of this host of the sons of Israel, who are among the Canaanites as far as Zarephath, and the exiles of Jerusalem who are in Sepharad will possess the cities of the Negev.” (Obadiah 1:19-20)

---

<sup>315</sup> Fortuna (Latin: *Fortūna*, equivalent to the Greek goddess Tyche, Cebele, Nemesis, Isis, Demeter, Astarte) is the goddess of fortune and the personification of luck in Roman religion who, largely thanks to the Late Antique author Boethius, remained popular through the Middle Ages until at least the Renaissance. The blindfolded depiction of her is still an important figure in many aspects of today’s Italian culture. Saint Augustine took a stand against her continuing presence, in the *City of God*. Archaeologists working in London discovered a first-century A.D. Roman jug bearing the inscription “*Londini ad fanum Isidis*—London, next door to the Temple of Isis.” The Egyptian goddess spread so far from North Africa ... to all corners of the known world.” “By the second century A.D., the Roman writer Apuleius would glorify her as the “mother of stars, the parent of seasons, and the mistress of all the world.” Yet while she meant many things to many cultures across the Roman world, her roots lie in a very specific place and time: the Nile Delta at the dawn of ancient Egyptian history.” (see National Geographic March 19, 2020) was often shown with a solar disk and cow horns. In other words, the worship of the calf is returning. Roman adaptations of Isis appear in several frescoes preserved under volcanic ash in Pompeii.

“The exiles of Jerusalem who are in Sephard” (Spain) will “possess the cities of the Negev”. This is another empty expanse “the Shephelah...and the hill country of Israel” (Josh 11:16) where the remnant of the church is taken to survive. This is an end-times event regarding what prophecy nicknames “Mount of Esau”:

“For the *day of the LORD* draws near on *all the nations*. As you have done, it will be done to you. Your dealings will return on your own head. Because just as you drank on My holy mountain, all the nations will drink continually. They will drink and swallow and become as if they had never existed” (Obadiah 1:15)

Through and through we find the mind of God concerning an exile and a hiding place for all who escape:

“But on Mount Zion there will be *those who escape*, and it *will be holy*. And the *house of Jacob* will *possess their possessions* then *the house of Jacob* will *be a fire* and the *house of Joseph* a *flame*; but the *house of Esau* will be as *stubble*. And they will *set them on fire* and consume them, so that there will be no survivor of the house of Esau,” For the LORD has spoken.” (Obadiah 1:17-18)

So is this “*possess their possessions*” means that the “house of Jacob” will robe the ones who came out of “Mount Zion?” Is this what it means by “possess their possessions”? No. This is a spiritual possession. The house of Jacob will possess the Messiah while all who participated in the abomination will perish. Scripture is a snare to the thief and the racist. The unification of Jew and Gentile is symbolized with “Jacob” and “Joseph” will return and destroy the mount of Esau. Isaiah chapter one and Romans chapter one are foundations to unlock the type of “falling away” which must “come first” (2 Thessalonians 2) where: Jerusalem (and by extension Christendom) become “Sodom and Egypt” (support homosexuality and paganism). It is here where we begin to understand why Christ shuns the “lazy servant” (for his paganism) dividing sheep from “goat” (Matthew 25) as “workers of iniquity”.

But is this “Pachamama” event the abomination of desolation? Hardly:

“and *till the end* of the war *desolations* are *determined then he shall confirm a covenant* with many for *one week*; but in the *middle of the week he shall bring an end to sacrifice* and offering and on the *wing of abominations* shall be *one who makes desolate*, even *until the consummation*, which is determined, is *poured out on the desolate*.” (Daniel 9:25-27)

Not all follow Pachamama and we are not in the wilderness yet. There will be many desolations “desolations [plural] are determined” but there is only *one* that counts as the countdown from a seven years from its midst where this one becomes the desolation where all must follow but the remnants shall flee. We find a similar theme in Ezekiel 20:

“Lord, I will reign over you with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm and with outpoured wrath. <sup>34</sup> I will bring you from the nations and gather you from the countries where you have been scattered—with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm and with



outpoured wrath. <sup>35</sup> I will *bring you into the wilderness of the nations* and there, face to face, I will *execute judgment* upon you. <sup>36</sup> As I judged your ancestors in the wilderness of the land of Egypt, so I will judge you, declares the Sovereign Lord. <sup>37</sup> I will take note of you as you pass under my rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant. <sup>38</sup> I will purge you of those who revolt and rebel against Me. Although I will bring them out of the land where they are living, yet they will not enter the land of Israel. Then you will know that I am the Lord.”

Yet here it does not state that He will plant them directly in Israel as we saw in 1948. On the contrary, Ezekiel 20 explains the sins of Israel out of Egypt, into the Sinai and then declares that this will occur again “I will bring you into the wilderness of *the nations* and their, *face to face*, I will execute judgment upon you.” This is not the literal Sinai but a repetition since it adds “*As I judged* your ancestors in the wilderness of the land of Egypt” and “bring you into the bond of the covenant” (New Covenant) and then “purge you from those who revolt and rebel against Me”. This “as I judged” is not the same event, but “as” in a similar parallel, which occurs while the Hebrews (be they in Israel or abroad) “I will bring them out of the land where they are living, yet they will not enter the land of Israel.

It is only then that the ultimate return to a holy land (New Jerusalem from heaven) is accomplished:

“when I *bring you out from the nations* and *gather you from the countries* where you have been scattered, and I will be proved holy through you in the sight of the nations. <sup>42</sup> Then you will know that I am the Lord, *when I bring you into the land of Israel*, the land I had sworn with uplifted hand *to give to your ancestors*. <sup>43</sup> There you will remember your conduct and all the actions by which you have defiled yourselves, and you will loathe yourselves for all the evil you have done. <sup>44</sup> You will know that I am the Lord, when I deal with you for my name’s sake and not according to your evil ways and your corrupt practices, you people of Israel, declares the Sovereign Lord.”

“To give to your ancestors” are the holy saints of old.

#### UNDERSTANDING REVELATION 12

There is more to Isaiah 65 and Isaiah 66 (the consumption of the mouse) than meets the eye. First of all, notice the promise is to whom: “for my people who seek me”. In fact, this prophecy is not simply regarding the establishment of a state, rather, after it is established God sets the whereabouts where the remnant flee and God sifts Israel. In the prophecy Israel is described as a “cluster of grapes” where God rescues some to live in the wilderness of “Sharon” and “the Valley of Achor”. It definitely applies to the ends of days:

“A voice of the people from the city, a voice from the temple, the voice of the Lord that *render recompense to his enemies*. Before *she was in labor*, *she brought forth*; before her time came to be delivered, she *brought forth a man-child*. Who hath ever heard such a thing? And who hath seen the like to this? Shall the earth bring forth in one day? Or shall a nation be brought forth at once, because *Sion hath been in labor*, and hath *brought forth her children*? Shall not I that *make others to bring forth*

*children, myself bring forth*, says the Lord? Shall I that give generation to others, *be barren*, says the Lord thy God? Rejoice with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all you that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all you that mourn for her.” (Isaiah 66:6-10)

We cannot isolate this prophecy from the light of the New Testament:

“Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars. Then being with child, she *cried out in labor* and in pain *to give birth*.” (Revelation 12:1-2)

"Before she was in labor" is both symbolic and literal; symbolic in the sense to the two advents; the first persecution after His first coming and the second persecution prior to His second coming then “brought forth” the coming of Christ birthed the church and the conversion of the Gentiles, then the Second Coming gave birth to the New Jerusalem.

The literal application is when “Sion” (literally means the chaste)<sup>316</sup> gave birth to Christ.

But again, this has a long-term fulfillment since this is in Revelation 12 and Micah 5 explains the comforting of the faithful in their tribulation and then judgment:

“That you may suck, and be filled with the breasts of her consolations: that you may milk out, and flow with delights, from the abundance of her glory. For thus says the Lord: Behold I will bring upon her as it were a river of peace, and as an overflowing torrent the glory of the Gentiles, which you shall suck; you shall be carried at the breasts, and upon the knees they shall caress you. As one whom the mother caress so will I comfort you, and you shall be comforted in Jerusalem. You shall see and your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb, and the hand of the Lord shall be known to his servants, and he shall be *angry with his enemies*. For behold *the Lord will come with fire*, and *his chariots are like a whirlwind*, to render *his wrath in indignation*, and his rebuke with *flames of fire*. For the Lord shall *judge by fire*, and by his sword unto all flesh, and *the slain of the Lord shall be many*.” (Isaiah 66:11-16)

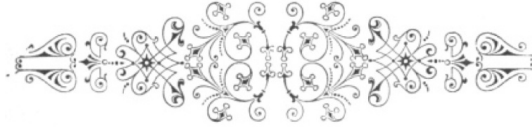
While a type of fulfillment occurred after the first coming, the context here is clearly for the end of days “new heaven and new earth” (v. 22) is “the glory of the Gentiles” (v. 19) where the ones who fled survive to only go to Turkey “Tubal” “Lydians” “Tarshish” and north Africa “Libya” (today Muslims) and to “distant lands” (think China and India) then convert them to make some as “Levites” (priests): “I will set a sign among them, and I will send some of those who survive to the nations—to *Tarshish*, to the *Libyans* and *Lydians* (famous as archers), to *Tubal* and *Greece*, and to the *distant islands* that have not heard of my fame or seen my glory. They will proclaim my glory among the nations. And they will bring all your people, from all the nations, to my holy mountain in Jerusalem as an offering to the LORD—on horses, in chariots and wagons, and on mules and camels,” says the LORD. “They will bring them, as the Israelites bring their grain offerings, to the temple of the LORD in ceremonially clean vessels. And I will select some of them also to be priests and Levites,”

---

<sup>316</sup> See explanation of the meaning “Sion” in the chapter titled “On The Virgin Birth” in Section VIII in this volume.



says the LORD. “As the *new heavens* and the *new earth* that I make will endure before me,” declares the LORD, “so will your name and descendants endure. From one New Moon to another and from one Sabbath to another, all mankind will come and bow down before me,” says the LORD. “And they will go out and look on the dead bodies of those who rebelled against me; the worms that eat them will not die, the fire that burns them will not be quenched, and they will be loathsome to all mankind.” (Isaiah 66:19-24) “Rejoice with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all you who love her; Rejoice for joy with her, all you who mourn for her” (Isaiah 66:10) “For thus says the LORD: “Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, And the *glory of the Gentiles* like a flowing stream. Then you shall feed; on her sides shall you be carried, and be dandled on her knees.” (Isaiah 66:12)



## “THE PRINCE WHO IS TO COME”

Regarding The Second Coming, Christ in Matthew 24:15 and Mark 13:14 instructs: “so when you see the abomination of desolation spoken of by the prophet Daniel standing in the Holy Place...” He was urging the church to pay close attention to Daniel 9:24-27; 11:31; 12:11 which we shall cover in the following chapters. Here we shall handle Daniel 9:24-27:

*“Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem until Messiah the Prince, there shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublesome times and after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself.”*

We shall not delve into the calculation of the sixty-nine weeks, which pertains to the coming of Christ and His Crucifixion.<sup>317</sup> It is the rest of this prophecy on the “abomination of desolation” which is our goal here:

*“and the people of the prince who is to come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, and till the end of the war desolations are determined then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; but in the middle of the week he shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering and on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, even until the consummation, which is determined, is poured out on the desolate.” (Daniel 9:25-27)*

To understand the ultimate fulfillment, there is only one way to read this passage in context, “*the people (ancestors) of the Prince (an Antichrist) who is to come (during the Tribulation)*”, will sack Jerusalem and the Temple. This one confirms a covenant with many for one week (7 years) and after 3.5 years he ends the Eucharistic “sacrifice”. In other words, the people who destroy the temple in 70 A.D., are the ancestors of the prince (who will bring this seven-year covenant, which he breaks) are the ones whose people *destroy the temple in Jerusalem* in 70 AD. Like the “harlot” “The people of the prince” (the beast) are obviously nations, multitudes, tribes and different tongues and is why it says “people of the prince”.

When it comes to its ultimate fulfillment, the Jesus-style question is: who is this “prince” where it says: “he [the prince] shall confirm a covenant with many for one week?” No

---

<sup>317</sup> The time span is broken into three parts from the edict of Artaxerxes to rebuild Jerusalem after the Babylonian captivity. The first are 7 weeks (49 years) to rebuild the city. Then Messiah was to come in the middle of the 69<sup>th</sup> week, 62 (434 years brings us to 30 AD Christ’s public ministry) then in the middle of the week (3.5 years later) Christ is put to death).

linguist or grammaritarian can escape this “he” as pertaining to “the prince who is to come [who] shall destroy the city and the sanctuary”. It is impossible to come up with any other answer. If one says: “Titus is the prince” Titus did not make such covenant and break it.

There is a reason why the text says: “the people of the prince” and not the kingdom of the prince. God wants us to find out the ethnic makeup of these people, for they will be “the people” of this beast with ten horns (several nationalities). Similarly John says of the harlot that she represents “peoples, tribes, nations and tongues” to reveal the ethnic diversity and the plurality of this harlot “city” which are many cities. Also, there is a reason why the text says: “who is to come” as in “yet to come” way after the destruction of the temple. It speaks of the distant future. These people will destroy the temple, shortly, and the same peoples, with aid of transgressors, will come again to perform an abomination of desolation. They are of the same ethnic makeup of whom Antichrist will rule.

But if one peruses Protestant commentaries these assume that “the prince” in verse 27 is “Titus” because Titus the Roman general was the one who destroyed the Temple in 70AD. But if this “prince who is to come” is Titus, verse 27 says “*then he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week*” which Titus did not do. This “he” then pertains to an Antichrist “prince” who engages in a seven-year covenant, which, Titus did not do and neither did Titus commit an abomination of desolation “on a wing of the temple”. Therefore, the “he” must pertain to the prince who establishes this seven-year peace treaty.

Who were the people who destroyed the Jewish Temple in 70 AD? Were they Italian? And who is this “prince” and who are “the people of this prince who is to come”? As we shall see, these were not Italian, but the same makeup of same peoples of Antiochus Epiphanes and his Seleucid Empire that spanned Anatolia and the Levant and parts of Turkmenistan, were the same conscripts used by the Romans; Syrian, Arab, North African Balkan and Turkic; the same peoples of Gog and Magog. Therefore the prince of Daniel 9 is “Gog” “chief *prince* of Meshech and Tubal” (see Ezekiel 38) and his people are “Magog” with their allies as specified in Ezekiel 38. Again, no matter how one slices and dices the prophecies we are stuck with “Gog of the land of Magog.” As we shall see, these masses of peoples are the ones who destroyed the temple and these reflect *every nation* mentioned in end times context in the entire prophetic declarations regarding the nations that invade Jerusalem and Christendom in the end.

The prophecy is saying this: after Messiah is cut off, the people of “Gog, the prince of Meshech and Tubal,” shall destroy the city and the sanctuary in 70AD.

Actually this is precisely the case here. This “he” is a major key since if one is to unlock the peoples of this “prince” we can unlock the composite of his empire and we shall also find the same peoples mentioned in all these other prophecies.

Once again, there is no way to escape this. So the correct way to view the portion of this prophecy is: that the *prince* is an Antichrist who has not yet come. And the people who destroyed the temple in 70 AD are of the multitudes of this Antichrist: “and *the people of the prince who is to come* [the people of the Antichrist] are these who destroy the city and the sanctuary [in 70 AD].” The end of it shall be with a flood [of peoples], and *till the end* of the war *desolations* are determined then *he shall confirm a covenant* with many for *one week*; but in the *middle of the week he [this Antichrist] shall bring an end to sacrifice* and offering and on the wing of abominations shall be *one who makes desolate*, even until the consummation, which is determined, is poured out on the desolate.” (Daniel 9:25-27)

## WHO THEN ARE THE PEOPLE OF THE PRINCE?

To answer this we need to “remember the things of old.” Josephus never hints once at an Italian unit in Judaea. What prophecy enthusiasts and biblical commentaries rarely know is that roughly equal in number to the legionary soldiers across the Empire were auxiliaries like legionaries, served the government of Rome, but were divided into two distinct military types: *cohors* (σπειρα) and *ala* (ειλη)—infantry and cavalry, respectively—with a few mixed units termed *cohors equitata* as well. The most noteworthy aspect about auxiliary soldiers is that they were almost exclusively non-citizens who were awarded Roman citizenship after completing military service. Auxiliary soldiers were significantly less Romanized than legionaries: auxiliary soldiers in the Roman East spoke the lingua franca of Greek along with local languages, typically with little competence in Latin.<sup>318</sup> The periphery of the Roman Empire was peppered with kingdoms allied with Rome that maintained their own militaries (e.g., Nabataea [Arabs], Antipas’ Galilee, Agrippa I’s Judaea). These armies differed in their hierarchies, pay scale, functions, and recruitment strategies. Rome occasionally asked kings to contribute soldiers to military campaigns as a show of loyalty, a request that was almost always granted. Because kings could not offer their veterans Roman citizenship, the matter was irrelevant. With little invested in Romanness, royal soldiers spoke the local lingua franca and rarely had knowledge of Latin or other aspects of Roman culture.<sup>319</sup>

Lawrence Keppie a Roman historian shows that after AD 68, “the legions... consisted almost exclusively of provincials...” non-Italian peoples from the provinces around the empire.<sup>320</sup>

Therefore, most Protestant commentaries skip where the prophecy says it is “the people of the prince” (not his empire) they then erroneously conclude since Titus was Roman then Rome is the beast. These, like the ancient Hebrew were missile set honed in on Rome.

But there is more to this picture than is immediately apparent. If we look deeper, we quickly find that while the people who made up the Roman legions that destroyed Jerusalem were mostly Eastern, they were not western Europeans. In fact, they were primarily from the Middle East—Arabs, Syrians, Balkan and Turks. It is crucial to note that Titus led *the Eastern Legions of the Roman Empire*, not the Western. After Vespasian emerged as the head of the Eastern Legions to challenge Vitellius, Julius Alexander, the Prefect of Egypt, then proclaimed Vespasian to be Emperor. He and Titus became consuls in 70 A.D.

When Archelaus’ principality of Judaea was annexed to the Roman province of Syria, the army of Archelaus (and Herod the Great before him) was converted into Roman auxilia. Josephus provides us ample information about the military during the Herodian and pre

---

<sup>318</sup> see *Military Forces in Judaea 6–130 ce: The status quaestion is and Relevance for New Testament Studies* P.p 93-94

<sup>319</sup> Ibid, quoting Rocca 2008: 133-96; Shatzman 1991: 129-316

<sup>320</sup> See Lawrence J. F. Keppie, *Legions and Veterans: Roman Army Papers 1971-2000*, (Franz Steiner Verlag, 2000), p. 116. Also see, Santosuosso Phang says, “Recruitment underwent major shifts from Italy in the early first century A.D. to the frontier provinces in the latter first and second centuries.” He points out that the vast majority of the soldiers that attacked Jerusalem were provincials. Sara Elise Phang, *Roman Military Service, ideologies of discipline in the late Republic and early Principate*, (Cambridge University Press, 2008), pp. 19, 44, 57-58.

War periods.<sup>321</sup> For the duration of the pre-War period, the same six units were located in Judaea, all of which were recruited from within the province: five cohortes and a single ala. Josephus indicates that these soldiers were primarily recruited from Sebaste and Caesarea Maritima— hence the units' toponym. The demographic makeup of these units reflected these cities: Josephus indicates that they were primarily comprised of 'Syrians' (i.e., Gentile Palestinians of the Syrian ethnos). Locally these were Cohors I Sebastenorum (6–73, 132–193 ce); Cohortes II–V Sebastenorum, Ala Sebastenorum (6–73 ce).<sup>322</sup> In 70 AD, Titus, the Roman General who led the armies that attacked Jerusalem and destroyed the temple had four specific legions: Legion XV Apollinaris, Legion V Macedonica, Legion XII Fulminata, and Legion X Fretensis. For some reason, possibly due to the fact that the capital of the Roman Empire was in Rome—and thus in Europe—many seem to forget that the Roman Empire also included a vast portion of Asia Minor, the Balkan and the Middle East. Because most of the Roman soldiers were recruited from the provinces where their garrisons were located, the legions that were stationed in the Middle East were also primarily Thracian, Syrian, Balkan, Turkic and Arabs. "Similar to the rest of the eastern frontier provinces Arabia was introduced to the Roman world with Pompey's success in the east in 63 B.C., and was even planned to be attacked by Pompey in the next year but other events were given priority. The Nabataean kingdom [Arabs] was Rome's biggest competitor in the future province of Arabia. Yet in time it was assimilated into the Roman Empire after years of cooperation as a client state. During that period the Nabataean kingdom several times threatened Roman interests in the region by waging war with Roman allies, and several times assisted Rome and its allies by sending soldiers in time of need. We also need to remember that the Nabataean kingdom was a natural enemy of the Jewish kingdom of Herod the Great and his successors"<sup>323</sup> "The new province of Arabia included the lands of Sinai, the Negev, the Hisma, Edom, Moab, the southern portion of the Decapolis and the Hauran. The cities of Decapolis were formerly a part of the Syrian province, but were transferred to Arabia after the annexation. Bostra remained as the capital of the province, because of its location between the rich and populous Hauran and the urbanized Decapolis in the south."<sup>324</sup>

Titus began his siege a few days before Passover, on 14 April, surrounding the city with three legions (V Macedonica, XII Fulminata, XV Apollinaris) on the western side and a fourth (X Fretensis) on the Mount of Olives, to the east.<sup>325</sup>

---

<sup>321</sup> Schürer 1973: 363–65; see, e.g., Josephus, A.J. 15.296, 20.122, 20.176, J.W. 1.403, 2.52, 2.58, 2.74, 2.236, 3.66

<sup>322</sup> *Aelia Capitolina – Roman Jerusalem and the military camp of the X Legion "Fretensis"*. PG. 132 referencing Gichon, Applebaum (1967), p. 95., P.p 95

<sup>323</sup> *Aelia Capitolina – Roman Jerusalem and the military camp of the X Legion "Fretensis"*. PG. 127

<sup>324</sup> Ibid, pg. 128

<sup>325</sup> Sheppard, Si (20 October 2013). *The Jewish Revolt AD 66-74*. Bloomsbury Publishing. p. 42

V Macedonica was from the Balkan provinces of Macedonia, Moesia and Dacia.<sup>326</sup> Today ancient Macedonia would be any or all from Albania, Bosnia and Herzegovina, Croatia, Kosovo, Montenegro, North Macedonia, Serbia and Slovenia. Moesia would be today the Balkans; the geographic area of southeastern Europe Bulgaria. The Adriatic Sea in the northwest, the Ionian Sea in the southwest, the Aegean Sea in the south, the Turkish Straits in the east, and the Black Sea in the northeast border the Balkan Peninsula. The term *Balkan Peninsula* was a synonym for Rumelia in the 19th century, the provinces of the Ottoman Empire in Southeast Europe.

Legion XV Apollinaris was formed during the early years of the Roman Empire in Illiricum on the eastern coast of the Adriatic sea is today composed of the various Balkan states; a region which was then, as well as now, a hotbed of political and ethnic strife.

Josephus recounts how the armies were collected: “But as to Titus, he sailed over from Achaia to Alexandria, and that sooner than the winter season did usually permit; so he took with him those forces he was sent for, and marching with great expedition, he came suddenly to Ptolemais, and there finding his father, together with the two legions, *the fifth* and the *tenth*, which were the most eminent legions of all, he joined them to that *fifteenth* legion which was with his father; eighteen cohorts followed these legions; there came also five cohorts from Cesarea (*Cappadocia Turkey*), with one troop of horsemen, and five other troops of horsemen from *Syria*. Now these ten cohorts had severally a thousand footmen, but the other thirteen cohorts had no more than six hundred footmen apiece, with a hundred and twenty horsemen. There were also a considerable number of auxiliaries got together, which came from the kings Antiochus, and Agrippa, and Sohemus, each of them contributing one thousand footmen that were archers, and a thousand horsemen. Malchus also, the king of *Arabia*, sent a thousand horsemen, besides five thousand footmen, the greatest part of which were archers; so that the whole army, including the auxiliaries sent by the kings, as well horsemen as footmen, when all were united together, amounted to sixty thousand, besides the servants, who, as they followed in vast numbers, so because they had been trained up in war with the rest, ought not to be distinguished from the fighting men; for as they were in their masters’ service in times of peace, so did they undergo the like dangers with them in times of war, insomuch that they were inferior to none, either in skill or in strength, only they were subject to their masters.”<sup>327</sup>

“The eastern frontier to see the concept of the “Limes Arabicus” and its function and role. After this simple comparison of both frontiers we can now look in a more detailed view on the eastern frontier and the Roman army located there. Each province of the Roman east will be showcased with its history and stationing Roman forces. Provinces of *Cappadocia*, *Syria*, *Judea*, *Mesopotamia* and *Arabia*.”<sup>328</sup>

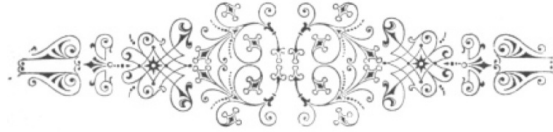
---

<sup>326</sup> The Fifth was probably still in the East when the First Jewish–Roman War in Iudaea Province began in 66. Nero gave the V *Macedonica*, the X *Fretensis* and the XV *Apollinaris* to Titus Flavius Vespasianus to counter the revolt. In 67, in Galilee

<sup>327</sup> Flavius Josephus The Complete Works of Josephus, The Wars Of The Jews Or The History Of The Destruction Of Jerusalem Book III, Chapter 4, Paragraph 2

<sup>328</sup> *Aelia Capitolina – Roman Jerusalem and the military camp of the X Legion “Fretensis”*.  
PG. 16

But how then are these (who today seem like Muslim hordes) are involved in the abomination of desolation? It is here where solving this mystery begins. Scriptures tells us whom Antichrist uses to stop the sacrifice.



## WHAT ANTICHRIST WANTS TO ABOLISH THE PROTESTANT MIGHT JUST APPROVE

Please do not get me wrong; there are many fine Evangelical Christians who are unaware of the full truth. These are not whom we are addressing in this chapter. God did not forget about the die-hard anti-Catholic Protestants in prophecy. Unfortunately many Protestant theologians do not focus to when Christ Himself in Matthew 24 instructed to pay close attention to Daniel regarding the “abomination of desolation” and in Daniel 8:11-12 God gives these some serious nuggets to consider:

“Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host, and by him the perpetual [‘continual’] sacrifice was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. And an host was given him against the perpetual sacrifice, by reason of transgression [rebellion], and it [the host] cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered [it grew to challenge the prince of the host].” (Daniel 8:12)

Who is the “prince of the host?” Protestants are divided where many insist it is Christ while others who realize the trap in such an interpretation admit by attributing this prophecy as a type of fulfillment when Antiochus Epiphanes “magnified himself even to the prince of the host” who was the high-priest Onias III “and by him the perpetual [‘continual’] sacrifice was taken away and the place of his sanctuary was cast down” when Hellenist Jews allied with Antiochus “and an host was given him,” that is a host (multitude) of Jewish people (traitors to the covenant) <sup>329</sup> allied with Antiochus “against the perpetual sacrifice, by reason of transgression [rebellion] and it [the host, this multitude] cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered” it grew to challenge the prince of the host Onias III.

This is straightforward, but was a type of fulfillment, not the ultimate fulfillment Christ mentioned in Matthew 24:15 instructing we pay close attention to Daniel’s prophecies regarding the “abomination of desolation” as a sign just prior to His Second Coming. This is no small matter. Did the Protestant interpreters really pay close attention to this one? No. Here is why; firstly, they apply “prince of the host” to Christ to cover up the obvious; how can their church fulfill this prophecy when they have no temple or sacrifice and is why they apply it to fulfilled prophecy or to a future Jewish temple. But even if we take the “prince of the covenant” as “Christ” such a proposal makes Antichrist as defeating Christ since:

---

<sup>329</sup> In 173, the Tobiads caused Onias III to be deposed from the priesthood. Their choice for that position was Jason. Jason bribed Antiochus IV for his favor in this endeavor. Jason was pro-Greek and tried to Hellenize the Jewish people. Jason built a gymnasium in Jerusalem. He also sent money to have sacrifices made to Hercules at the Greek Olympic games. In 171 BC, Jason was overthrown by Menelaus, who paid even more to receive the position of high priest. Menelaus even went as far as to take vessels from the Temple of God and give them to Syrian nobles in return for their support. Onias III exposed this betrayal, but was compelled to go into hiding. He was subsequently killed. This was the prince of the Covenant who was killed as discussed in Daniel 11:22.



“The overflowing forces will be *flooded away before him* and *shattered*, and *also the prince of the covenant*.” (Daniel 11:22)

There is no way out. Onias III was simply a type of fulfillment<sup>330</sup> when Antiochus Epiphanes desecrated the Temple and stopped the sacrifices.

But is Antiochus (as an Antichrist) and Onias III (as a high priest) the ultimate fulfillment? This Jesus-style question makes it impossible to file this prophecy to the annals of fulfilled prophecy, since, again, Christ Himself in Matthew 24:15 shatters such historical approach referred to Daniel’s prophecy regarding the Abomination of Desolation, which the entire outcome directly links to His Second Coming.

Now that all Protestant interpreters are cornered by Christ Himself, we have here an end of days setting which switches all the accusations leveled against the Catholic Church (being harlot or Antichrist) to only fit the accusers: the Protestant so-called Reformation since they have to answer: who then is “the prince of the host”? Daniel tells us he has a “sanctuary” which is cast down. God calls it a “sanctuary” *because it is*. And it is *holy* regardless of millions of Protestant naysayers and their protestations. What makes matters worse is that this “prince of the host” (like Onias III) is an overseer over “the perpetual sacrifice” which apostolic succession Christians consider it to be the Holy Eucharist. The only “prince of the host” (prince of the multitudes) who has the ultimate authority over such “sacrifice” and “sanctuary” (just as in the high-priest of the ancient Temple Onias III) is a Pope. It is either this or else the interpreter faces another lethal Jesus-style question: who is your “prince of the host” and where is your “sanctuary” and “perpetual sacrifice”?

If the Protestant answers “Christ” and then a counter question would be: how does Antichrist “*pollute the sanctuary of strength*” (Daniel 11:31)? How could the Christ Himself be defiled? Blasphemy! This is why Protestant interpretations clearly get into what God considers blasphemy. Without use of sophistry and utter useless complaints about their typical rejection of the “Mother of God” and “Transubstantiation” it is impossible to refute these questions. Let us examine that prophecy again for there is even more to consider:

“Yea, he [Antichrist] magnified himself even to *the prince of the host*, and by him *the perpetual* [‘continual’ sacrifice] was *taken away*, and the *place of his sanctuary* was cast down. And *an host was given him* against the *perpetual sacrifice*, by reason of *transgression* [rebellion], and it [the host] *cast down the truth to the ground*; and it *practiced, and prospered* [it grew to challenge the prince of the host].” (Daniel 8:12)

---

<sup>330</sup> In a type of fulfillment, it is a common interpretation to view the despicable person (Daniel 11: 21) as Antiochus IV destroyed the prince of the covenant, the High Priest of Israel Onias III who sought refuge in Daphne, near Antioch, but was assassinated there in 171 BC. Also see Benson Commentary and Matthew Pool while Barnes notes refer to “Grotius, Ephraem the Syrian, and others, understand this of Onias the high priest, as the chief officer of the holy people” to only conclude the opposite because “Grotius” a German professor from the 19<sup>th</sup> century says otherwise.

This Antichrist magnifies himself to be in a position of equal authority (think of a Martin Luther or a John Calvin) and “the place of his sanctuary” (as in the Vatican) was cast down. “And it” (the host of peoples taken away from the prince of the host) “cast down the truth to the ground; and it [this schismatic host of people] practiced and prospered <sup>331</sup> and grew to challenge the prince of the host” (a pope).

If these prophecies do not define Protestantism’s growth and war with Rome I do not know what else does. Only Protestantism prospered and grew to such height to be the main challenger to the papacy and attempted to destroy it uniting with the Muslim Ottomans, the very peoples whose ancestors destroyed the temple in 70AD as well as during Antiochus’ days. This, their seed shall repeat.

And there is much more to prove our case from every reference John and Daniel provides. For example:

*“And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and [they] shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that makes desolate.” (Daniel 11:31)*

Everything about the abomination of desolation can be deduced from the unpopular parts of these prophecies. Linking these two prophecies we ask: who are these “arms” that “shall stand on his part” (take this Antichrist side) and “host” of peoples who split from the “prince of the host” and who has been casting down the “altar” and the “daily sacrifice” of the Eucharist which is practiced “daily,” not bi-weekly, not monthly and not yearly, and not “it doesn’t matter,” as some hireling sees fit? Who is this one that Antichrist magnifies himself above? It is “the prince of the host” who from him this other “host” of people split from aids this Antichrist “against the perpetual sacrifice”.

This “perpetual sacrifice” is then holy and significant. These peoples (host) do this “by reason of transgression” (rebellion) and it is this “host” that “cast down the truth to the ground”. What truth? It is the truth about the “sacrifice” the subject of this prophecy. These “prospered” and split from the Prince of the Host and grew exponentially “it practiced, and prospered” while the ones who observe the “Daily Sacrifice” diminish (did not prosper), yet the one that prospered is “cast out” while the one that did not, its metal was “measured”:

*“And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and it was said to me: arise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar and them that adore therein. But the court, which is without the temple, cast out, and measure it not: because it is given unto the nations [the Harlot and Antichrist], and the holy city they shall trample under foot two and forty months” (Revelation 11:1-2)*

From the entire New Testament, this is the only prophecy Protestants have to argue about an establishment of a Jewish temple. Yet here it is speaking of Christ’s universal temple. He did not establish a physical temple but a universal one. How are we so sure of what we stated

---

<sup>331</sup> “Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?” (Luke 18:8) so if faith diminishes before Christ comes, the growth is fictitious.

here, that His temple (church universal) is measured (tested) and not built as a physical temple?

Simple! Pay close attention to what the prophecy says “*measure the temple* of God, and *the altar* and *them that adore therein.*” How does one measure “them that adore therein?” These are human beings not buildings. Are we supposed to take a tape measure and measure the worshippers height and width determining who is fat and who needs to workout to fit a determined floor plan? Or is this God Who will measure only the metal of the ones who worship within an altar observing a “Daily Sacrifice” to see if they are righteous and just?

You must choose, but choose wisely!

And what “temple” is being measured here? “Know ye not that you are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?” (1 Corinthians 3:16) “The kingdom of Heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force.” (Matthew 11:12)

Now pay closer attention. By linking John’s prophecy with Daniel’s “host” and “arms”: “*arms shall stand on his part*” that is on his side of “the court that is without” since that one is “given to the nations” “and they [the arms, host, nations that are in the outer court] shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and it is these (not the beast) who do the most abominable act “*they* shall place the abomination that make desolate” (Daniel 11:31) and is why they are *unmeasured* (not tested, not persecuted, “cast out”) for it clearly says: “*measure the temple* of God, and *the altar* and *them that adore therein.* But the court, *which is without* the temple, ***cast out***, and ***measure it not***” for they are “*cast out*” “because they are given unto the nations and the holy city they [the ones, the nations, that are cast out] shall trample under foot two and forty months [1,260 days]”.

The more we read further into these prophecies, the more it becomes firm of whom this is addressing: the Protestant diehards who for centuries attacked Catholic doctrine. Who after all adores an “Altar” and believes that Communion is done on an Altar of a perpetual sacrifice? Who adores the Eucharist? And whom is the devil persecuting here? Is he not persecuting Apostolic Succession Christians who adore the altar and sacrifice? Did Ottomans and the whole of Islam persecute Evangelicals or did they persecute Orthodox, Copts, Armenians, Assyrians and Catholics? Show us your history so that we may believe. Tell us of the biblical prophecies and when and how they were fulfilled in you? And who collaborated with the Ottomans against the Catholics and Orthodox besides the Protestants? We shall get to that in depth shortly.

But such an instruction to “measure the Temple” only uplifts the ones who believe in an *altar* and a *sacrifice* which none other than apostolic succession Christians “adore therein.”

And to end all arguments here is a Jesus-style question: is this prophecy addressing a rebuilt Jewish temple who adore a sacrificial altar?<sup>332</sup> Answer with “yes,” a Jesus-style counter will be: such an answer ***casts out every Christian*** since these will be in the outer court for in this case only the Jews do animal sacrifices. God so clearly says: the “court that is without” known in ancient Israel as the court of the gentiles (foreigners) is “cast out” (rejected). This “yes” answer creates a conundrum for Protestantism’s entire theological foundation, for such absurd interpretation of a Jewish Temple, not only dismiss Christianity altogether, this faulty interpretation clearly replaces the Church with Hebrew-Israel since

---

<sup>332</sup> as in Ezekiel’s Temple

with such faulty interpretation we ask: who is it that is in the “inner court?” Are they “Jew” or are they “the Israel of God?”

Answer wisely.

Even worse, this adds another major sin, the outer court will stand with Antichrist who tramples the “Holy City”:

“But the court, which is without the temple, **cast out**, and measure it not: because it is given unto the nations [of Harlot and Antichrist], and the holy city they shall trample under foot two and forty months” (Revelation 11:1-2)

Is it not Antichrist and his hordes who trample the city for 42 months? This mention of the “holy city” is significant since:

“When they [the two witnesses] finish their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit will make war against them, overcome them, and kill them. And their dead bodies will lie in the street of the great city which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.” (Revelation 11:7-8)

This can never be a Jewish temple since these do not yet believe in a crucified Lord especially since a major difference is established between “the great city” (“Mystery Babylon”) in Revelation 11:8 and the “holy city” in Revelation 11:1-2. The “great city” (where the two witnesses are martyred) and “holy city” (where the ones who adore the altar are trampled) being *both* in *the same chapter* cannot be reflecting the same entity since “the great city” is always rendered as “harlot” and the “holy city” is always rendered as “holy”. In Genesis 10 “the great city” is “Babel” and “Babylon” (Genesis 10:12, Jonah 1:2, 3:4, 4:11) or Mystery Babylon (Revelation 11:8, 16:19, 17:18, 18:10, 18:16-21). Therefore, the “holy city” is the City of God, a universal city in opposition to the “great city” (the harlot as explained in previous chapters). To God such a temple in “the great city” being Mystery Babylon (and it is) and with Jerusalem “where also our Lord was crucified” including Paul in Galatians 4 already made it unholy calling it “Hagar” and “bondage” and John called it “Sodom” leaves no room for wiggle. This “holy city” is the church universal (throughout the world) where Antichrist and Harlot have global dominion and these “the beast that ascend out of the bottomless pit” shall persecute, but persecute only the ones who “adore the altar” and is why you can witness throughout history persecution has been fulfilled upon Apostolic Succession Churches. Protestants rarely address the 10-40 window in their missions (the Muslim world) and predominately send their missionaries to Apostolic Succession nations to convert them to Protestantism.

God obviously makes this “altar of sacrifice” as a holy observance for the “holy city,” yet such practice (if intended to be animal blood for the Jews) negates the entire New Testament. And to apply the prophecy to Antiochus would fail to explain the time duration of 1260 days where the Two Witnesses preach in Jerusalem including the “woman” fleeing in the wilderness for the same duration of time in Apocalypse 12 includes a military invasion “trampled under foot” the good “Holy City,” by the acolytes of Antichrist for the same period of 1,260 days. So we know for certain that when the court (that is outside the “altar”) it is given to the troops allied with this Antichrist, while the sodomite-pagan “Sodom and Egypt” “the Great City” (harlot) like Salmoe has the beast kill the very Two Witnesses because the

beast carries her (Revelation 17:3, 17:7) and she is drunk with the blood of saints and of the prophets (Revelation 18:24):

“Then the third angel poured out his bowl into the rivers and the springs of waters; and they became blood. And I heard the angel of the *waters* saying, “Righteous are You, who are and who were, O Holy One, because You judged these things; for *they poured out the blood of saints and prophets*, and You have given them blood to drink. They deserve it.” (Revelation 16:4-6)

The “waters” is where the woman sits and the “third angel” punishes them first “for [the waters of multitudes, nations and tongues] “they poured out the blood of saints and prophets”. The beast is punished last at the seventh bowl (Revelation 16:12-17).

This fits perfectly with the theme that the beast burns the harlot, for God makes it so to accomplish all what He planned.

The whole theme of Daniel’s prophecies regarding the Abomination of Desolation can never be a historic event since Joel prophesied that on “the day of the Lord” (the same ends of days Daniel calls “even to the consummation, and *to the end*” that Communion would be abolished, which Joel laments:

“The *grain offering* and the *drink offering*. Have been *cut off* from the house of the Lord; The *priests mourn*, who *minister to the Lord* ... Alas for the day! For the day of the Lord is at hand; It shall come as destruction from the Almighty.” (Joel 1:9)

“Gird yourselves and lament, you priests; Wail, you who minister before the *altar*; Come, lie all night in sackcloth, You who minister to my God; For the *grain offering* and the *drink offering* are *withheld* from the house of your God.” (Joel 1:13)

“Alas for that day! *For the day of the LORD is near*; it will come like *destruction from the Almighty*” (Joel 1:15)

“Wail who minister before the altar?” And we ask: which altar? Besides the “altar” that John and Daniel mentioned which Jesus alluded to in Matthew 24 one can find no other altar and there is no animal sacrifice here. Even Daniel 12 confirms the same duration:

“And from the time that the *daily sacrifice* is taken away, and the *abomination of desolation* is set up, there shall be *one thousand two hundred and ninety days*.” (Daniel 12:11)

It cannot get any clearer than this. This is not about a rebuilt temple in Jerusalem or is Antiochus’ desecration the final one. Prophecy was ahead of the times and already predicted such split within Christendom itself where one side (the one outside the altar) is “cast out” since it rejects the sacrifice and will follow the Harlot-Antichrist and the other side are (within the altar who “adore the altar” and observe a “daily sacrifice” have their metal measured (tested) to see who to keep and who to cast out.

The ones who do not adore an “altar” and do not practice a sacrificial system are outside the altar because they obviously do not obey “adore the altar” and they reject the “daily

sacrifice” for they are rebels. Daniel tells us their “transgression”: “and arms shall stand on his part,” these are the ones who schism will stand with Antichrist “on his part” these “pollute the sanctuary of strength,” the altar of Communion and “shall take away the daily sacrifice” that is, remove the Communion from being a sacrificial system and instead “place the abomination that make desolate” that is, this new Communion that makes null and void (desolate) the perpetual sacrifice.<sup>333</sup>

These are what Revelation 11 calls the “court which is without the temple” who are “given unto the nations” (the Antichrist) since it is Antichrist who treads on the “holy city” for 1,260 days “and the *holy city* they [the rebels] shall trample under foot two and forty months [1,260 days]”.

And there is even more. John in fact is simply reflecting on Isaiah’s prophecy. Revelation 11:1-2 is already interpreted in an another unpopular prophecy, Isaiah 28:

“Behold, I am the one who has laid as a [temple] foundation in Zion, a stone, a tested stone [Christ] a precious cornerstone, of a sure foundation: Whoever believes will not be in haste.’ And I will make justice the line, and righteousness the plumb line; and hail will sweep away the refuge of lies, and waters will overwhelm the shelter.” (Isaiah 28:16-17)<sup>334</sup>

Christ is the Temple foundation, the corner stone. This measuring yardstick being “justice” as “the line” and “righteousness” as “the plumb line” to see a cleansing process of the Church “sweep away the refuge of lies”.

Any measuring tape here? Also notice “waters will overwhelm the shelter” is the same as in Daniel regarding the Temple “the end will come like a flood. War will continue until the end, and desolations have been decreed” (Daniel 9:26). This is also similar to the flood from the dragon (Revelation 12) and now we know this is the host of Protestant nations united with the Muslim hordes of Magog “and the place of his [the Pope’s] sanctuary was cast down” which is the flood from the host against the “shelter” (Temple). Yet the “woman” in Revelation 12, the flood will not overtake for “the earth swallows the flood” such an attempt will fail against the remnant since they will ultimately flee:

“Then the woman fled into the wilderness where she had a place prepared by God, so that there she would be nourished [fed] for one thousand two hundred and sixty days.” (Revelation 12:6)

“Nourished with what?” This is already interpreted in an unpopular prophecy:

“So the daughter of Zion is left as a booth in a vineyard, as a hut in a garden of cucumbers, as a besieged city. Unless the LORD of hosts had left to us a very small remnant, we would have become like Sodom, we would have been made like

---

<sup>333</sup> Abandoning the organic way of Communion prescribed by “ecclesiastical traditions” is a revealed truth that are necessary for our salvation reinforces belief in the Real Presence of Our Lord in the Holy Eucharist handed down through the centuries.

<sup>334</sup> Also see Amos 7:7-8

*Gomorrah. Hear the word of the LORD, you rulers of Sodom; Give ear to the law of our God, You people of Gomorrah” (Isaiah 1:8-10)*

This sanctuary in the wilderness will be the “covert,” the “sanctuary,” and “the shelter” where the sacred Communion is still practiced. Why this new shelter? Daniel 9:26 the use of the plural “*desolations* have been decreed” is *several desolations* throughout the world since this encompasses more than just one time and one location. Isaiah also confirms this cleansing process in Isaiah 59 concluding healing in the West:

*“According to their deeds, so will he repay, wrath to his adversaries, repayment to his enemies; to the coastlands he will render repayment. So they shall fear the name of the Lord from the west, and his glory from the rising of the sun ...”(Isaiah 59:18-19)*

In the west including the coastlands punishments are destined and in the east is “glory” which will rise as far as “the rising sun” from China to Russia, which its borders passes Japan. As we shall later on examine further prophecies, Russia (unlike what Protestants claim) fares better than the West.



What all these verses have in common is that these “nations” “trample” “the holy city” “under foot” “two and forty months” (1,260 days). The key to unlock is in this word “they” in Revelation 11:2. Who are “they?” They are “the court, which is without the temple” “cast out” “given to the nations” and “they” are this combined enemy who “trample under foot” the

“Holy City” for 1,260 days. It is impossible to conclude any other proposition since this also links to *the same duration as in Daniel 7:25* where the 1,260 days relate to Antichrist:

“And he [Antichrist] shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High; and he shall think to change the times and the law; and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and half a time. [1,260 days]”

Here too, the duration of 1,260 matches the rest. These with Antichrist persecute “the saints of the most high” (the “Holy City”) for the same duration as Daniel confirms.

In the Universal City there will always be the remnant. This is the biggest mistake people do when reviewing the church. They are not only in Rome amongst priests who resist, but also in every nation on earth. It is this Temple in Revelation 11 that is “the holy city” is “measured” that is sifted, persecuted, and trampled upon by Antichrist and his acolyte host who reject to “adore the altar” are the “great city” are “unmeasured” since it is part of this harlot-Antichrist enterprise and these aid his cause as the “arms that stand in his part”. These “cast the truth to the ground” pollute the “Holy City” and “the Sanctuary” and “they [the arms, the host of peoples]” are taken away by deception from the “prince of the host” (schism) these are the ones who “take away the daily sacrifice” and “place [instead of it] the abomination that causes desolation” and by that make null and void the Holy Communion since without Transubstantiation there is no perpetual sacrifice.

Should we write books on the host of Protestants who already infiltrated the Vatican?

BISHOP'S MESSAGES

CATHOLIC-PROTESTANT  
COMMUNION PACT TRASHES  
APOSTOLIC SUCCESSION:  
EUCHARIST AND LORD'S  
SUPPER ARE NOT IDENTICAL,  
WARNS VATICAN CARDINAL

© JANUARY 31, 2020 ▲ ROMEO HONTIVEROS

CATHOLIC-PROTESTANT COMMU-  
NION PACT TRASHES APOSTOLIC  
SUCCESSION: Eucharist and Lord's Sup-  
per are not identical, warns Vatican  
cardinal



(You are already seeing the efforts and this prophecy at play)

So it is not the Antichrist himself who does this. His job is to be welcomed into this orgy of orgies with his harlot and declare himself supreme:

“She lusted after the Assyrians, governors and officials, the ones near, magnificently dressed, horsemen riding on horses, all of them desirable young men.” (Ezekiel 23:12) “The Babylonians came to her to the bed of love and defiled her with their harlotry. And when she had been defiled by them, she became disgusted with them. She uncovered her harlotries and uncovered her nakedness; then I became disgusted”



*with her*, as I had become *disgusted with her sister*. “Yet she *multiplied her harlotries*, remembering the days of her youth, when she played the harlot in the land of Egypt. She lusted after their paramours, whose flesh is like the flesh of donkeys and whose issue is like the issue of horses.” (Ezekiel 23:17-20)

It is futile (no matter how scholarly or by use of sophistry or historic manipulation) to try to outsmart God. Keep in mind, only Apostolic Succession Christians practice a “Daily Sacrifice” an observance that is practiced “daily” (Hebrew: “Tameed” continual, perpetual):

“And he will make a firm covenant with the many for *one week*, but in the *middle of the week* he will put a *stop to sacrifice and grain offering*; and [1290 days later] on the wing of abominations will come one who makes desolate, even until a complete destruction, one that is decreed, is poured out on the one who makes desolate.” (Daniel 9:27)

“And from the time of the *removal* of the *perpetual sacrifice*, when the abomination of desolation shall be set up, [there shall be] a thousand two hundred and ninety days. How blessed is he who keeps waiting and attains to the 1,335 days!” (Daniel 12:11, Septuagint)

The “thousand two hundred and ninety days” is linked to the same 1,260 days where when the “court that is left out” (the Protestant rebellion) which is given to the same nations who trample the “Holy City” including “Holy Communion”. This happens a month prior [1,290-1,260 = 30 days] after the seven-year unholy covenant (alliance) is made with Protestant nations (Daniel 9:26). So 75 days [1,335 – 1,260 = 75] after this seven-year unholy covenant is when the victory over Antichrist begins.

#### BUT PROTESTANTS ARE BELIEVERS

This Antichrist uses the opposition as in days of old; from the war of Israel vs. Antiochus to the Catholic League vs. the Ottoman Empire there has always been the court of the traitors who defile the sacrifice and this is the test of Cain vs. Abel; do we offer fruit as a sacrifice or do we offer Christ’s Body and Blood in the form of a bloodless “grain offering”?

In everything there is a split, which is exactly the whole struggle between Protestant and Apostolic Succession. Did these not “abandon the covenant” including “the sacrifice” and “pollute the sanctuary of strength” by claiming that the Eucharist has no life and that the blood is simply fruit? Is not the *fruit* the sacrifice of Cain and the *blood* was the sacrifice of Abel? And we find such split throughout. Lot (did not look backwards) Lot’s wife (looked backwards); Hebrews who rejected Christ (the hordes of Bar Kozba) and Hebrews who accepted Christ (the Hebrews who followed the Nazarene); 10 virgins; 5 filled their lamps in anticipation and 5 did not, a horde who will reject the Two Witnesses and a remnant who will not.

The common denominator between all these splits is that *all* where ‘believers’!

Therefore, it is not enough to claim that you are a “believer” for what counts is also “obedience” without which the covenant with Christ is null and void.

Such examples can never be speaking of Muslims and Islam. First of all, Islam while they reject Communion, they are not as adamant about opposing the Eucharist as the

Protestants. You find very little mention by Muslims of Transubstantiation. This is a sad reality, which can easily be deduced by asking a Jesus-style question: provide the historic proof of what Muslims wrote opposing the Eucharist versus centuries and volumes and oodles of commentaries (every commentary) on anti-Transubstantiation writing by Protestants?

I am not here attempting to dilute Islam's role, indeed, Muhammad was history's greatest heresiarch and Islam is a religion of Antichrist and it would not mind prohibiting the practice of Christianity altogether so long you pay *Jezziah*, but when it comes to specifically the Eucharist, no enemy of Transubstantiation *par excellence* in their activism has matched the Protestants. John Calvin's demon speaks within him with absolute twist of John's Revelations attributes the harlot with the cup to the Mass:

“What remains but for the blind to see, the deaf to hear, children even to perceive this abomination of the mass, which, held forth in a golden cup, has so intoxicated all the kings and nations of the earth, from the highest to the lowest; so struck them with stupor and giddiness, that, duller than the lower animals, they have placed the vessel of their salvation in this fatal vortex. Certainly Satan never employed a more powerful engine to assail and storm the kingdom of Christ. This is the Helen for whom the enemies of the truth in the present day fight with so much rage, fury, and atrocity; and truly the Helen with whom they commit spiritual whoredom, the most execrable of all.”<sup>335</sup>

Continuing Calvin's protestation one can easily see “A double minded man is unstable in all his ways” (James 1:8) completely reverses what he initially stated now honors the mass:

“I am not here laying my little finger on those gross abuses by which they might pretend that the purity of their sacred mass is profaned; on the base traffic which they ply; the sordid gain which they make; the rapacity with which they satiate their avarice. I only indicate, and that in few and simple terms, how very sacred the sanctity of the mass is, how well it has for several ages deserved to be admired and held in veneration! It were a greater work to illustrate these great mysteries as they deserve, and I am unwilling to meddle with their obscene impurities, which are daily before the eyes and faces of all, that it may be understood that the mass, taken in the most choice form in which it can be exhibited, without any appendages, teems from head to foot with all kinds of impiety, blasphemy, idolatry, and sacrilege.”

Luther's demon was no different:

“Where is it written, that the mass is a sacrifice, or where has Christ taught that one should offer consecrated bread and wine to God? Do you not hear? Christ has sacrificed himself once [Heb. 7:27; 9:25–26]; henceforth he will not be sacrificed by anyone else. He wishes us to remember his sacrifice. Why are you then so bold as to make a sacrifice

---

<sup>335</sup> John Calvin: (Institutes of the Christian Religion no. 18)

out of this remembrance? Is it possible that you are so foolish as to act upon your own devices, without any scriptural authority?”<sup>336</sup>

And by “scriptural authority” it is Luther’s authority by his private interpretation became the authority without even comprehending the mind of eastern prophets “remembrance” as explained in pervious chapters means much more than the western standalone word to “remember” is not simply the opposite of “forget”. The masses trust in these deceivers use of German and English and have no clue of the Aramaic and Hebrew and is why God ordained fathers, saints and bishops as shepherds which Luther acted as if he was all:

“I have consoled those whose consciences are weak and *have instructed them* so that they may know and recognize that there is no sacrifice in the New Testament other than the sacrifice of the cross [Heb. 10:10] and the sacrifice of praise [Heb. 13:15] which are mentioned in the Scriptures; so that no one any longer has cause to doubt that the mass is not a sacrifice.”<sup>337</sup>

Even Luther’s complete misconception of the “sacrifice of praise” as if German and Aramaic (a sister language of Arabic) are equivalent languages we shall visit shortly how the “sacrifice of praise” unlocks the most difficult of prophecies which scholars still rummage to understand and the devil uses to claim that the Bible contradicts. Protestants take pride that their movement as the ones who translated the scriptures yet failed to reflect from the scriptures itself Luther’s error repeated throughout these generations that in the Holy Mass Christ is re-sacrificed again and again. His error can be shunned simply:

“It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation. All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb *slain from the foundation of the world.*”

The arguments of Antichrist are the arguments of Luther answered here in a Jesus-style question; how was the Lamb (Christ) been slain before the foundation (creation) of the world in *passive perfect tense*? In the Greek perfect tense implies a completed action with continuing result to the present. He remained slain ever since to the present and is why His sacrifice can be made present at any time before and after His crucifixion and for this He inaugurated the New Covenant in the Last Supper (Matthew 26:28; Mark 14:24; Luke 22:20) yet He was not yet crucified since He was slain before the foundation of the world and remained perpetually slain. No apostolic succession believes that Christ is re-sacrificed. In fact, Luther’s minuscule theology minimized the richness of scripture. Elsewhere Luther wrote that the sacrifice of the Mass is blasphemous, ungodly, abominable, work of the devil and that ministerial priesthood is man-made. It is not unusual for the devil to quote the scriptures (Matthew 4:6, Luke 4:9-11) and neither is it unusual that masses follow the dung of society in the form or armchair revolutionaries from Marx, Lenin, Jean-Paul Marat,

---

<sup>336</sup> Luther: The Misuse of the Mass Luther’s works, Vol. 36, page 146-147

<sup>337</sup> Luther: The Misuse of the Mass Luther’s works, Vol. 36, page 162

Tocqueville, John Wycliffe,<sup>338</sup> to Hitler, this world has no shortage of Satan's seed consuming Lucifer's excrement while believing they have faith profane the holy of holies. Such are the "harlot of Babylon". 2 Thessalonians 2 is better comprehended by understanding 1 John 2:18-19 regarding the great departure exposes that the acolytes of Antichrist stem from Christendom itself:

"Children, it is *the last hour!* As you have heard *that antichrist is coming*, so now many antichrists have come. From this we know that it is *the last hour*. *They went out from us*, but *they did not belong to us*; for if they had belonged to us, they *would have remained with us*. But by *going out* they *made it plain that none of them belongs to us*." (1 John 2:18-19)

Indeed, every verse in scripture is prophetic. The demons of Luther and Calvin are returning once more. This reveals a major divide that in the last hour, "they went out from us, but they did not belong to us" makes it clear this is a massive departure, splitting away is from the original ancient church "for if they had belonged to us, they would have remained with us". And all this is in the context of Antichrist.

Even Christ Himself, when He judges in Matthew 25 reveals this fact that we are not only dealing here with pagans "Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles?'" (Matthew 7:22). Are these un-claimants of Christianity? Yet He damns them because they were lawless and in Matthew 25 he considers many claiming Christians as persecutors of the true Church during the reign of Antichrist and is why He tells them of their persecutions: "just as you did it to the least of these My brethren you did it unto Me".

These, with Muslim, Protestant and Catholic claiming accomplices and neopagans deeply rooted in the system will change the sacrifice and defile the sanctuary of strength—not only military strength, but also chiefly the spiritual stronghold of the covenant-people. This is what happened during when Antiochus, Apollonius "polluted" it with altars to idols and sacrifices of swine's flesh, after having "taken away the daily sacrifice".

Novices speak of the Roman attack on Jerusalem in AD 70, under Titus as fulfillment, but nowhere is there any historical evidence that Titus did what Antiochus did. But they

---

<sup>338</sup> Wycliffe is praised today by Protestants as a "martyr" spiraled into bizarre theology akin to New Age paganism claimed that "every person is God", "every creature is God. Every being is everywhere, since every being is God" "God must obey the Devil" and "it is against sacred scripture for ecclesiastics to have possessions" to utter rebellion against the laws of the land: "God does not approve that anyone be judged or condemned by civil law" influencing mobs and in 1381 the mobs influenced by Wycliffe led by Wat Tyler marched to London where they seized Simon of Sudbury, archbishop of Canterbury, dragged him out of his chapel and beheaded him. King Richard II with two hundred guards confronted Tyler who spat at the king's feet, and in accordance with Wycliffe's teachings, demanded that the state confiscate all church lands resisting arrest, then one of the king's men slew him and ended the revolt. In 1382, Nicholas Hereford, a disciple of Wycliffe and a partner in the Wyclif Bible, preached a sermon in 1382 at St. Fridewide's Church in Oxford declaring that Simon of Sudbury was "justly slain" by the mob. He believed this because Simon dared to question 'the infallible Wycliffe,' as we are told by the historian, Anthony A. Wood. The History and Antiquities of the University of Oxford, b. 1, Dom. 1382

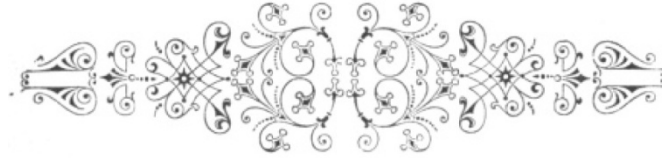
choose Titus instead of Antiochus to point at Rome. But there was no desecration of the altar inside the Holy of Holies by Rome or was there any abolition of a sacrificial system by Rome. In fact it was the Romans who aided Israel to finally defeat and thwart Antiochus who ordered his general, Apollonius into Jerusalem on what he claimed was a peaceful mission (peace treaty) and when he was inside the city, they attacked the Jews on a Sabbath, when the Jews were reluctant to break the Sabbath covenant.

Isn't this similar to what the Antichrist will do? From when the communion "continual sacrifice" or "perpetual sacrifice" is banned and to the abomination of desolation is 1290 days? The wise will prepare to run to the mountains once this prohibition begins since this Nero might unleash a global nuclear catastrophe. Nero wanted the destruction of the old city of Rome by burning it. He, like Antichrist demanded worship.

Salome dancing for Herod is the enticement and seduction by the Harlot to spiritually destroy the saints. Understanding what Christ meant by "remember Lot's wife" is the church which at its falling turns backwards towards the sins of Sodom. It is exactly what we see today. So it is the spirit of Salome that must concern us (the harlot) more than that of Herod (the beast).

It would be nice to lay it all out and explain prophecy on a giant diagram in sequential order. Westerners love structure. But this is impossible without proper lengthy study and is why I frown when I read most commentaries that are intended for fast-food consumers.

The mention of allegoric Egypt throughout prophecy debunks so many claims one learns from Protestant commentaries and poorly structured arguments that do not properly unravel allegories while failing to tie-in other related prophecies by understanding these key nicknames like "Sodom and Egypt".



## GOD MEASURES MECCA NOT A JEWISH TEMPLE

In the Bible, God will not measure a Jewish Temple. He, however, will measure Mecca in Arabia.

Lest anyone still insist and persist without a shred of evidence from scripture that “measure” is a yardstick or measuring tape:

“He stood, and measured the earth: he beheld, and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills did bow: his ways are everlasting.” (Habakkuk 3:6)

“He measures the earth”. God’s “measuring” yardstick is to build, rebuild or downright destroy and purge. God gives the meaning that is to test the earth in the balances to see its spiritual weight (Daniel 5:27). He measures the entire earth and surprisingly He converts the Muslims by measuring Arabia’s spiritual domain (one major part of this Mystery Babylon):

“I saw the tents of Cushan in affliction; The curtains of the land of Midian trembled.” (Habakkuk 3:7)

So after the measuring, “the tents of Cushan” (temples in Sudan, Somalia, and Pakistan) and “the curtains of the land of Midian” are Arabia’s temples (Mecca and Medina) are being purged. Is God by this measuring, is He rebuilding Mecca after Iran and Turkey destroys it? Or is the earth being brought back to order by removing such “tents” to restore what Islam has demolished? A “tent” is always allegorically a temple. The curtains of Midian in Arabia trembled; Mecca’s covering cloth is no more. In other words, Arabia is weighed in the measures (Babylon’s test has come) and it will fail it (see Daniel 5:27, Isaiah 21 and Psalms 83:9).

Simply history repeats.

Again, “Measure” in a worldview means to use a measuring tape, but in scripture it is to test through fire. This “measure” is not about taking a ‘tape measure’ and following a blueprint, especially when no blueprint is given. We have ample allegoric verses to explain such measuring from prophecies with dual nature:

“The LORD determined to tear down the wall around Daughter Zion. He stretched out a measuring line and did not withhold his hand from destroying. He made ramparts and walls lament; together they wasted away.” (Lamentation 2:8)

Is this “measuring line” a measuring tape to build or the opposite to destroy?

“The Lord has *rejected His altar*, He has *abandoned His sanctuary*; He has delivered into the hand of the enemy the walls of her palaces. They have made a noise in the house of the LORD as in the day of an appointed feast.” (Lamentation 2:7)

And in 2 Kings:

“And I will stretch over Jerusalem the *measuring line* of Samaria, and the *plumb line* of the house of Ahab, and I will wipe Jerusalem as one wipes a dish, wiping it and turning it upside down.” (2 Kings 21:13)

Is this “measuring line” and “plumb line” a measuring tape or judgment to “wipe Jerusalem [cleaning it from its filth] as one wipes a dish”? How about the popular Daniel prophecy:

“Tekel, you have been *weighed* in the balances and found wanting; Peres, your kingdom is divided and given to the Medes and Persians.” (Daniel 5:27-28)

To *weigh* and to *measure* is to sift and test and see who is and who is not worthy. This ‘measuring’ in Revelation 11:1-2 is the church being tested for keeping this “sacrifice” pure undefiled by the acolytes of Antichrist. Ezekiel 8 and Ezekiel 42 is regarding two issues: how such allegoric temple is breached and how it shall be rebuilt. He even reveals the breach:

“And he brought me to the entrance of the court, and when I looked, behold, there was a *hole in the wall*.” (Ezekiel 8:7)

Is this a literal or a spiritual “hole”? This whole theme is regarding this falling away we all witness which God restores as the days of old in righteousness:

“In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and *close up the breaches* thereof; and I will *raise up his ruins*, and I will *build it as in the days of old*” (Amos 9:11)

“He stood, and *measured the earth*: he beheld, and *drove asunder the nations*; and the everlasting *mountains were scattered*, the *perpetual hills did bow*: his ways are everlasting.” (Habakkuk 3:6)

**THERE IS A DIFFERENCE BEFORE AND AFTER CHRIST**

Concerning the rebuilding of God’s future temple He says:

“Therefore thus says the LORD, “I will return to Jerusalem with compassion; My house will be built in it,” declares the LORD of hosts, “and a measuring line will be stretched over Jerusalem.”” (Zechariah 1:16)

Under the old, this is definitely the rebuilding of the Temple but continuing the prophecy has nothing to do with stones:

“Then I lifted up my eyes and looked, and behold, there was a man with a measuring line in his hand.” (Zechariah 2:1)

Here this “measuring line” involves measuring (judging) Babylon:

“Ho, Zion! Escape, you who are living with the daughter of Babylon.” (v. 7)

And we ask: if this “Zion” is current Jerusalem, how is “Zion” “living with the daughter of Babylon”? This would definitely make Jerusalem as Babylon. And if this “Zion” is history’s captivity in Babylon, here it is speaking of many nations:

“For thus says the LORD of hosts, “After glory He has sent me against the nations which plunder you, for he who touches you, touches the apple of His eye.” (v. 8)

“Sing for joy and be glad, O daughter of Zion; for behold *I am coming* and *I will dwell in your midst*,” declares the LORD.” (v. 10)

“*Many nations will join themselves to the LORD in that day and will become My people. Then I will dwell in your midst, and you will know that the LORD of hosts has sent Me to you.*” (v. 11)

“In that day” is in one single day. The prophecy of Zechariah 1:16, God was speaking of that distant day when the righteous BRANCH should appear and rebuild God's Temple which is the church (Zechariah 3:8)<sup>339</sup> Who ultimately proclaimed its destruction and the ultimate temple was Christ’s Church. This is the “temple,” the entire structure of Christendom which Christ established “Here is the man whose name is the Branch, and he will branch out from his place and build the temple of the LORD.”

“and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day.” (Zechariah 3:9b)

So the temple in Revelation 11 is the measuring of the Church by their participation in the proper covenant of sacrifice on an Altar: “measure [test] the temple of God, and the altar and them that adore therein.” Throughout the entire Old Testament and the New, whenever there is an altar, there must also be a sacrifice.

Finally, Malachi should end all arguments when he describes this “Daily Sacrifice” as such:

“For from the rising of the sun even to its setting, My name will be great among the nations [gentiles], and in every place incense is going to be offered to My name, and

---

<sup>339</sup> See Protestant interpreter Coffman’s Commentary on the Bible



a grain offering that is pure; for My name will be great among the nations [foreigners, gentiles],” says the Lord of hosts. (Malachi 1:11).”<sup>340</sup>

Keep in mind a crucial issue here, that this observance glorifies God’s name amongst the *gentiles*. Is this a Jewish temple? Impossible.

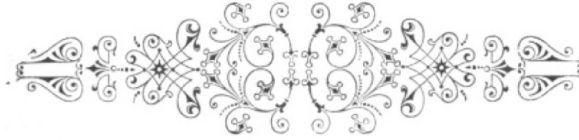
To all who oppose, here is a loaded Jesus style question: how could “From the rising of the sun to its setting” (which is regarding a “daily sacrifice”) and the “grain offering” (which is exactly what Daniel had predicted which Christ Himself in Matthew 24:15 and Mark 13:14 warned about which Malachi constituted to open the doors for the “gentiles”) be for a future Jewish temple or for a historic abomination by Antiochus Epiphanies?

Now take this question and apply it to the myriad of interpretations by Protestant theologians on these verses and similar verses will reveal a myriad of contradictions that can be filled in books. For if one chooses a Jewish Temple, this would make Malachi a liar for this was the light for the gentiles. It is by no accident that many clever interpreters rejected such theory of Jewish Temple and applied the fulfillment to Antiochus Epiphanes. But these too fail since it is clear that Antiochus stopped the animal sacrifices, here Daniel and all the prophets (including Christ Himself) make clear this is regarding only the “grain” and “wine” offering. The question is a Jesus-style checkmate no matter how many try to slice and dice the prophecies regarding the sacrifice.

As we are discovering from unpopular portions of these prophecies, certain Protestant nations that prospered over Catholics will unite with the Muslim hordes. In fact materially Protestant nations prospered much more than Catholic ones. Is this perhaps evidence that Protestantism is the answer? Hardly. As we examined in these chapters how prophecy foretold all this and how the beast interacts with what seems to be Protestants and Apostolic Succession Christians who abandoned the Eucharistic sacrifice including neopagans. There are many prophecies that are filed into the realm of history by Protestants. Even obvious verses are always continually challenged.

---

<sup>340</sup> New Testament of a Eucharistic application of Malachi is Paul’s use of Malachi’s table of the Lord in 1 Corinthians 10:21 echoes Malachi’s disputation with the Levitical priests in his use of “table of the Lord”. Hezekiah in 2 Chronicles 29:3-11 before the reign of King Hezekiah, the Levitical priesthood had “forsaken” God “shut the doors of the vestibule and put out the lamps, and have not offered incense or made burnt offerings in the holy place to the God of Israel.” In both instances (Malachi 1:7, 12), the “table of the Lord” being defiled by the impure sacrifices creates a dichotomy between a future pure sacrifice to be offered among “the nations” (1:11) “But every Lord’s day gather yourselves together, and break bread, and give thanksgiving after having confessed your transgressions, that your sacrifice may be pure. [...] For this is that which was spoken by the Lord: In every place and time offer to me a pure sacrifice.” Didache 14 “For no longer were these things to be done which belonged to Jerusalem which is beneath; neither there alone was the feast to be celebrated, but wherever God willed it to be. Now He willed it to be in every place, so that ‘in every place incense and a sacrifice might be offered to Him Malachi 1:11” Athanasius, Letter 4:4 “Justin: Accordingly, God, anticipating all the sacrifices which we offer through this name, and which Jesus the Christ enjoined us to offer, i.e., in the Eucharist of the bread and the cup, and which are presented by Christians in all places throughout the world, bears witness that they are well-pleasing to Him. But He utterly rejects those presented by you and by those priests of yours, saying, ‘And I will not accept your sacrifices at your hands; for from the rising of the sun to its setting my name is glorified among the Gentiles (He says); but you profane it.’ Malachi 1:10-12” (*Dialogue with Trypho Chapter 117. Malachi’s prophecy concerning the sacrifices of the Christians. It cannot be taken as referring to the prayers of Jews of the dispersion*)



## THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION WHY THE EUCHARIST IS KEY

Now we understand how Daniel 9:27 is fulfilled “And he [an Antichrist] will make a firm covenant with the many for one week, but in the middle of the week he will put a stop to *sacrifice* and *grain offering*; and on the wing of abominations will come one [another Antichrist] who makes desolate, even until a complete destruction, one that is decreed, is poured out on the one who makes desolate.” Why we said “another?” Lest we forget, there are two beasts; one with *ten horns* and another beast with *two horns*:

“And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth [the church] and he had *two horns* [*two Antichrists*] like a lamb [*claims to be Christian*], and *he spoke as a dragon*. And he exercises *all the power of the first beast before him*, and cause the earth and them which dwell therein *to worship the first beast*, whose deadly wound was healed. And he [the second beast with two horns, *two leaders, two Antichrists*] doeth great wonders, so that he make fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, and *deceive them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles* which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he cause all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.” (Revelation 13:11-18)

Ever notice this two-horned beast that looks like a lamb are always separate from the ten horns yet they cooperate together? Also, ever noticed a “little horn” in Daniel 7 and another “little horn” in Daniel 8 are separate from the ten horns in the seven-headed beast? These two are symbolic of Pharaoh’s magicians who deceive by false miracles and sorcery to supersede the two witnesses (Enoch and Elijah, who like Moses and Aaron make true miracles) these two come out of allegoric Egypt (the harlot):

“And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, thus with violence shall that great city *Babylon be thrown down*, and shall be found no more at all. (Revelation 18:21)

“And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for *thy merchants*

were *the great men of the earth*; for *by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.*”  
(Revelation 18:23)

What sorceries? See Revelation 13:11-18 above. Which miracles will Protestants trust in? Did they trust the miracles of Fatima and Zeitun? So who was “the arm” and “the host” who ended the sanctuary and the perpetual sacrifice in Constantinople’s Hagia Sophia? And who later on aided the Ottomans to gain their goal and the goal of the Muslim world? This is how it was fulfilled. Can anyone question how it gets fulfilled again?

So what is the bone of contention between Protestant and the Apostolic Succession Christians? It is the covenant Christ made with Peter, a single verse Protestants argue about regarding Peter who holds the keys. But such an error is detrimental. Misinterpreting one verse in Numbers 24 nearly annihilated the Hebrews and it is still misinterpreted. These will be used by Antichrist:

“For ships of Kittim will come against him; therefore he will be disheartened and will return and become enraged at the holy covenant and take action; so he will come back and *show regard for those who forsake the holy covenant.*”

Historically, when the Ottomans warred with the Catholic League, they showed much regard to the Calvinist who aided them tremendously and even sent them aid to build their canons. Would such history not repeat? So if Rome comes against him and for that he is angered at Rome (a people whom in his mind have ‘the covenant’) he then seek the help of the ones who “forsake the holy covenant” (the “perpetual sacrifice”), the same people who aided the Ottomans will do the same. While E.U politicians condemn certain human rights abuses with Turkey, reality is the opposite. Today’s politician forsakes any “Holy Covenant”. How can the Protestant not heed that Antichrist deceives the elect if he can? The green grass is no match to the master of deceivers. Pay close attention to the instructions of Hebrews 10:25-31:

“Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as *the manner of some* is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, *as ye see the day approaching.*”

It is called the Mass.<sup>341</sup> He says, don't neglect to meet together for the Mass. Why? He tells us next:

“For if we *sin wilfully* after *that* we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth *no more sacrifice for sins*” (v.26)

If anyone sins deliberately by rejecting the Savior after knowing the truth of forgiveness, this sin is not covered by Christ’s death; there is no way to get rid of it. Then he says that neglecting to meet together for the Mass is the same thing as rejecting Christ’s sacrifice. It amounts to a deliberate sin against Christ. This is why missing the Mass is considered a mortal sin in the Catholic Church.

---

<sup>341</sup> Thanks to De Maria from Catholic365

“There will be nothing to look forward to but the terrible punishment of God’s awful anger, which will consume all his enemies.”

Those who miss the Mass are considered God's enemies and can be certain that they will be punished for their ingratitude.

“A man who refused to obey the laws given by Moses was killed without mercy if there were two or three witnesses to his sin. Think how much more terrible the punishment will be for those who have trampled underfoot the Son of God and treated his cleansing blood as though it were *common* and *unhallowed*..” (Hebrews 10:28-29).

There's the answer! Why is the Eucharist so important? Because it is the Body and Blood of Christ which hung on the Cross for the forgiveness of our sins shed for our salvation and is why it is considered to be an insult to the cleansing blood of Christ. Notice how Paul compares the Old Testament gathering to the New. Saying that the New Testament gathering truly offers the Body and Blood of our Lord. Thus, to miss the Mass is no trivial thing:

“So if anyone eats this bread and drinks from this cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner, he is guilty of sin against the body and the blood of the Lord. That is why a man should examine himself carefully before eating the bread and drinking from the cup. For if he eats the bread and drinks from the cup unworthily, not thinking about the body of Christ and what it means, he is eating and drinking God’s judgment upon himself; for he is trifling with the death of Christ. That is why many of you are weak and sick, and some have even died. (1 Corinthians 11:27-30)

*Back to Hebrews 10:29:*

“...and insulted and outraged the Holy Spirit who brings God’s mercy to his people.”

It is such a wicked sin that St. Paul virtually equates it with the blasphemy of the Holy Spirit:

“I solemnly declare that any sin of man can be forgiven, even blasphemy against me; but *blasphemy against the Holy Spirit* can *never* be forgiven. It is an eternal sin. For we know him who said, “Justice belongs to me; I will repay them”; who also said, “The Lord himself will handle these cases.” It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.”—Mark 3:28-31

And this is why God gave the tares up to aid the church’s enemies. Protestantism and Islam entered into contact and this Cain heavily partnered against his brother Abel during the 16th century when Calvinist Protestants in present day Hungary and Transylvania coincided with the expansion of the Ottoman Empire in the Balkans. At

the same time the Protestant Rebellion<sup>342</sup> was taking place in numerous areas of northern and central Europe, in harsh opposition to Papal authority and the Holy Roman Empire led by Emperor Charles V. This situation led the Protestants to consider various forms of cooperation and rapprochement (religious, commercial, military) with the Muslim world, in opposition to their common Habsburg enemy. During the development of the so-called Reformation, Protestantism and Islam were considered closer to each other than they were to Catholicism: "Islam was seen as closer to Protestantism in banning images from places of worship, in not treating marriage as a sacrament and in rejecting monastic orders".<sup>343</sup> Martin Luther also took note of the similarities between Islam and Protestantism in the rejection of idols, although he noted Islam was much more drastic in its complete rejection of images. In *On War against the Turk*, Luther is actually less critical of the Turks than he is of the Pope, whom he calls an anti-Christ, or the Jews, whom he describes as "the Devil incarnate"<sup>344</sup> Military cooperation between the Ottoman Empire and European powers started in earnest with the Franco-Ottoman alliance of 1535."the consolidation, expansion and legitimization of Lutheranism in Germany by 1555 should be attributed to Ottoman imperialism more than to any other single factor"<sup>345</sup>

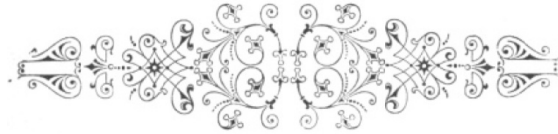
---

<sup>342</sup> By 1521 Luther was excommunicated and his writings were banned and his writings culminated in the Diet of Worms. Philip Melanchthon 1497–1560 had been appointed as Luther's confidant. In 1529 another Diet of Speyer revoked the Edict of Toleration. The Roman Catholic Latin mass was to be allowed everywhere, and all groups denying the presence of Christ in the Eucharist were forbidden. This provoked more rebellion from fourteen cities and five territories and with Melanchthon's help drew up a treaty of mutual support becoming known as Protestants. When Zurich wanted to join the protest, the city was refused because Zwingli's theology was not in line with Luther's further dividing—Wittenberg or Zurich. So another Diet was convened at Augsburg, where Melanchthon drafted and presented the Wittenberg statement—Confessio Augustana, the Augsburg Confession which led the German Reformation after Luther's death until losing the confidence of many Protestants by making concessions to Rome.

<sup>343</sup> Goody, Jack (2004). *Islam in Europe*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press. P.p 42.

<sup>344</sup> Goffman, Daniel (2002). *The Ottoman Empire and Early Modern Europe* P.p 109

<sup>345</sup> Goody, Jack (2004). *Islam in Europe*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press. P.p 45.



## IT IS A *DAILY* SACRIFICE

It was a year later, in 1994 that I began warning that God proscribed in the scripture a rise of Turkey and its neo-Ottoman dream. Two decades later the Levant region began to witness this rise. I have written and sold books far and wide that discuss this subject in prophecy. Many received our message while others clung to us to only betray and condemn especially after I discovered I had overlooked one of God's instructions that when Antichrist comes, he stops the "daily sacrifice". This is not a "weekly" "bi-weekly," "monthly" or "yearly" sacrifice. It is a "*daily sacrifice*".

"They devoted themselves to the apostles' teaching and the fellowship, to the *breaking of bread* and the prayers. . . . And *day by day*, attending the temple together and *breaking bread* in their homes, they received their food with glad and generous hearts." (Acts 2:42,46)

This "daily sacrifice" was here observed in the New Testament and since this is a "daily sacrifice" you might insist is a red heifer since:

1—Daniel was speaking about a rebuilt Jewish temple with animal sacrifices or 2—this desecration of such sacrifice is regarding the times from when Antiochus Epiphanies desecrated the Jewish temple and stopped the sacrifices.

But if we take the second weaker argument this verse ends it:

"And he shall confirm the covenant with many, in one week: and in the half of the week the *victim* and the *sacrifice* shall fall: and there shall be in the temple the *abomination of desolation*: and the desolation shall continue even to the *consummation*, and *to the end*." (Daniel 9:27)

This event cannot be a historic one (as the act carried out by Antiochus Epiphanies) since "the desolation shall continue even to the consummation [of time] and to the end [the end of the age]". As to the first argument, it is destroyed by Christ Himself:

"So when you see the abomination of desolation spoken of by the prophet Daniel [Dan. 9:27; 11:31; 12:11.] standing in the Holy Place,<sup>346</sup> let the reader take notice

---

<sup>346</sup> While he stands on the "holy place" likely in front of the altar, yet he declares himself God sitting in the temple: "Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God." (2 Thessalonians 2:4)

and ponder and consider and heed [this]—Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains” (Matthew 24:15)

Here it does not say ‘temple’ but “holy place”.

“From the time that the *daily sacrifice* is abolished and the abomination of desolation is set up, there will be 1,290 days.” (Daniel 12:11)

And we ask a Jesus-style question; Christ called this altar “the Holy Place”. Are ritual animal sacrifices on an altar that Christ called “The Holy Place” make such an altar holy or unholy?

What if the Pope slit the throat of a red heifer on the Altar of St. Peter, wouldn’t the very people who interpret with such nonsense cry out loudly “Antichrist,” yet only if the Jews do this, it is holy? And why is it that to God, this countdown of 1,290 days from between when the continual sacrifice is banned to when Antichrist sits in the temple be so crucial?

Would it not be more logical that a war, a crisis, banning scriptures, destruction of churches, martyrdoms, blasphemies, moral depravity, Antichrist calling for fire to come down from the sky ... be a more worthy spark for a countdown than an obsolete ritual? Just how significant is this sacrifice to God?

Why then are all these volumes of faulty interpretations done to undermine the Eucharistic sacrifice unless deception is at work? Would not such a sacrifice of killing animals on an altar constitute an abominable act? Even more worrisome, the ones groomed with such an interpretation (making the Eucharist unessential) are unhinged as they pass by these unpopular prophecies, they further ignore that the interpretive rule that is set by God in the book of Hebrews; that prior to Christ’s coming, we must take a literal approach to a literal Jewish temple with everything in it, but after Christ we take a typological approach to everything in the Jewish temple with everything in it to be applied regarding something greater. By such poor Hermeneutics, it is here where I discovered a schism and deceptive Protestant interpretation to veer from the concept Christ set up “to build my church” (One Universal Church) and the enemy comes to reverse this. The same rule applies regarding Ezekiel’s Temple.<sup>347</sup>

The Hebrew “Tameed” by itself conveys the concept of “never stopping,” “ceaseless” or “perpetual” exactly as Catholics and Orthodox define the Communion as a “perpetual sacrifice” and not just a memorial for remembrance.

---

<sup>347</sup> Ezekiel’s temple was conditional “Son of man, describe the temple to the house of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their iniquities; and let them measure the pattern. And *if they are ashamed of all that they have done, make known to them the design of the temple*” (Ezek. 43:10–11). Notice the “if”? In other words, if all Israel repents than show them the design of the temple, if not all repent, then this will not be. God foreknew that this temple will never be. In other words, God was telling Israel, if you all repent, this is what I shall provide for you. However, God through this prophecy revealed in allegory the restoration of the church.

תָּמִיד m.—(1) subst. *perpetuity, continuance* (so called from proceeding, going on, root מוּד, compare עָר from the root עָרָה, רוּר and תָּרִיחַ from רוּר). In genit. put after other substantives it is used as an adjective (compare קָנִישׁ No. 1), as אֲנָשֵׁי תָּמִיד “men of continuance,” i. e. hired for continuous work, Eze. 39:14; עוֹלֵת הַתָּמִיד a continual burnt-offering, i. e. daily, both morning and evening, Nu. 28:6, 10, 15, 23, 24. לֶחֶם הַתָּמִיד the continual bread, i. q. לֶחֶם פָּנִים Nu. 4:7.  
 (2) for עוֹלֵת הַתָּמִיד Dan. 8:11, 12, 13; 11:31.  
 (3) adv. *continually*, Ps. 16:8; 25:15; 34:2.

“Whoever feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. For my flesh is true food, and my blood is true drink. Whoever feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood abides in me, and I in him.” (John 6:35,55–56)  
 (nothing here is allegoric)

So to ensure we have harmony, we must wisely choose which interpretation is correct. If we choose an animal sacrifice, then we have undone everything Christ has done, for only He is the ultimate sacrifice. And so if we make such sacrifice to pertain to the unbelieving Jew (in the context of these verses that God continually accepts such sacrifice) this would make the Jew correct and Christ wrong. God forbid. So to ensure that this is regarding the end times, Joel confirms the abolition of communion just prior to Christ’s second coming: “the day of the Lord is at hand”. This happens 3.5 years, just prior to defeating the Muslim hordes, having been converted will participate in this very sacrifice. In essence, all Revelation 11:1-2 is saying ‘no Altar’ ‘no measuring’ ‘no testing’ ‘no persecution’ ‘cast out’ with ‘no salvation’ for these are given to aid Antichrist-Harlot system.

#### LET US AGAIN REVISIT THIS “ALTAR”

What we see today is a mass exodus from the Eucharist. Catholics instead of participating in the Mass are doing another ‘mass’: a mass conversion to Protestantism. In fact, this today constitutes one third of Christendom. Protestantism constitutes 800 million among approximately 2.4 billion claiming Christians. Trim fat from meat it ends up the same: this would be 33%, a third, mostly in the U.S. and Northern Europe. And the scripture confirms:

“And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth”  
 (Revelation 12:4).

And this is exactly what Revelation 11’s “measuring” “the court that is without the altar” was about; the “stars of heaven cast to the ground” here are who were considered brethren departing from their approach to heavenly Mount Zion. Remember “But you have come to [approach] Mount Zion, to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem.”

And how does one reach out to heaven? Here it is again:



“You have come to thousands upon thousands of angels in joyful assembly, to the church of the firstborn, whose names are written in heaven. You have come to God, the Judge of all, to the spirits of the righteous made perfect, to Jesus the mediator of a new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that speaks a better word than the blood of Abel.”

These reject the entire theme on how to approach both *altar* and *heaven* disconnecting them from heaven. They completely reject coming to Zion’s saints, angels, Mother Mary and even the “church of the firstborn” ancient saints and the primitive church whom they abandoned with it the supplications to saints and angels and by that they also sever “Christ, the mediator.” They fell from the connect to heavenly Zion.

These are not as wise as a serpent and lack in comprehending real history. They will tow the line of Antichrist. The “arms” and “host” who are with Antichrist are human forces.

“Antiochus’ hosts confederate with the apostate Israelites; these latter attain the climax of guilt, when they not only, as before, “forsake the covenant” (Dan 11:30), but “do wickedly against” it (Dan 11:32), turning complete heathens. Here Antiochus’ actions are described in language which reach beyond him the type to Antichrist the antitype” [JEROME]”

But this will be fulfilled again in the church even including the same peoples who destroyed the temple during Titus are “the people of the Prince who is to come” including the ones not measured (tested) who are outside the Altar of Sacrifice (Eucharist). The outer court while they are not part of the kingdom of Antichrist yet they are allied with him: “And arms shall stand on his part [to his side], and they shall defile the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the continual sacrifice.” This is described in much allegory from Ezekiel 29 to Ezekiel 32 and in an allegoric sense “Egypt and over all her hordes” (Ezekiel 32:16) represents the spiritual factor of peoples, nations, languages infected with paganism and sodomy (harlot) and he leads the beast. This one we are not given borders or specific peoples symbolized as “Pharaoh of Egypt” and “Cedar in Lebanon”:

“Indeed *Assyria* was a *cedar in Lebanon*, with fine branches that shaded the forest, And of high stature; and its top was among the thick boughs.” (Ezekiel 31:3)

While “Assyria” is symbolic of the “beast” (neo-Ottoman) the key to unlock this riddle is in verse 21:

“The *strong among the mighty*, with *them that helped him*, shall speak to him out of the midst of Sheol: they are gone down, they lie still, the uncircumcised, slain by the sword.” (Ezekiel 32:21)

“The strong among the mighty” who “helped him” leaves no room for any wiggle—this Antichrist is aided by the mightiest powers of Mystery Babylon. These rode him and directed him and sat upon him and made him what he is. The Assyrian (beast) was given the power

by NATO (his partners primarily Europe and the United States) who aided him are a mightier entity, which these too are thrown into the pit.

And the peoples of this beast we find out that these also represent the same peoples that from whom came the ones who destroyed the Temple “people of the prince”:

“For the day is near, even *the day of the LORD is near*; it will be a day of clouds, a *time of doom for the nations*. A sword will come upon *Egypt*, and anguish will be in *Ethiopia*; when the slain fall in Egypt, They take away her wealth, and her foundations are torn down. *Ethiopia, Put, Lud*, all *Arabia, Libya* and the *people of the land that is in league* will fall with them by the sword.” (Ezekiel 30:3-5)

This is a literal sense; “Egypt” “Ethiopia” (Somalia, Sudan), Put (North Africa) Lud (Turkey), “Arabia”, “Libya” and all the “people of the land that is in league with Assyria. We all witness the turmoil in these regions with Turkey (U.S. current puppet) at the helm. This seems that Assyria (the neo-Ottoman Empire) controls Egypt, North Africa, Sudan and Somalia (which we are already beginning to see). This “Assyrian” or “king of Babylon” strikes at “Egypt” (Daniel 11) is both literal and allegoric Egypt:

“He and his people with him, the *most ruthless of the nations*, will be brought in to destroy the land; And they will *draw their swords against Egypt* and fill the land with the slain.” (Ezekiel 32:11)

Therefore, the alliance of the allegoric “king of Babylon” or “the Assyrian” has with him “the most ruthless of the nations” mostly Central Asia, Magog (southern states split from the U.S.S.R) and Eastern Europe:

“Behold a people comes from *the north*...They lay hold of bow and spear, they are *cruel, and have no mercy*. The sound of them is like the roaring of the sea; they ride upon horses, arrayed as a man for battle against you, *O daughter of Babylon*.” (Jeremiah 50:42)

The people of the Caucasus have generated ruthless warriors from Attila the Hun to the Ottomans. It strikes “Mystery Babylon”:

“Come down and sit in the dust, O *virgin daughter of Babylon*; sit on the ground without a throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans! For you shall no longer be called tender and delicate. Take the millstones and grind meal. *Remove your veil, strip off the skirt, uncover the leg*,<sup>348</sup> cross the rivers. Your *nakedness will be uncovered*, your shame also will be exposed; I will take vengeance and will not spare a man.” (Isaiah 47:1-3)

---

<sup>348</sup> Also see Hosea 2:3 regarding Jerusalem “Or I will strip her naked And expose her as on the day when she was born. I will also make her like a wilderness, Make her like desert land and slay her with thirst.” The remnant who flee Jerusalem, God will have these contemplate about His mercy while in temporary exile in the wilderness “the valley of Achor”: “And the valley of Achor as a door of hope. And she will sing there as in the days of her youth, as in the day when she *came up from the land of Egypt*.” (Hosea 2:15)

Making her “naked” (Apocalypse 17:16) is synonymous to “remove your veil, strip off the skirt, uncover the leg” symbolic of utterly sweeping the Harlot cities (nuclear)<sup>349</sup> this is the neo-Ottomans snookering the harlot:

“The *ten horns* you saw, and the beast, will *hate the prostitute*. They will *make her desolate* and *naked*, devour her flesh, and *burn her up with fire*.” (Revelation 17:16)

How this happens becomes obvious when we see the beast of Turkey and its allies strike Israel, Saudi Arabia and the United States (as in Pearl Harbor) in a single day:

“But these two things will come on you *suddenly in one day*: loss of children and widowhood. They will come on you in *full measure* in spite of your many sorceries, *in spite of the great power of your spells*.” (Isaiah 47:9)

“In spite of the great power of your spells” is symbolic of its great influence it holds religiously and otherwise its destruction comes in a single day.<sup>350</sup> Prior to this destruction, God gives us His naming standard in allegory calling this “Assyria” as a “cedar in Lebanon”. Indeed, this Assyrian is not from Lebanon or even Assyria in Iraq. The whole of Ezekiel 31 mimics Isaiah 14:

“The *cedars* in the garden of God could not hide it; the fir trees were not like its boughs, and the chestnut trees were not like its branches; no tree in the garden of God was like it in beauty.” (Ezekiel 31:8)

“Therefore I will deliver it into the hand of the *mighty one of the nations*, and he shall surely deal with it; I have driven it out for its wickedness. ‘And *aliens, the most terrible of the nations*, have *cut it down* and left it; its branches have fallen

---

<sup>349</sup> “NATO-affiliated report released in April confirmed what was an open secret in security circles: US nuclear weapons are stored at bases in Kleine Brogel in Belgium, Buechel in Germany, Aviano and Ghedi-Torre in Italy, Volkel in the Netherlands and Incirlik in Turkey. In NATO, only France and the UK have a nuclear arsenal of their own. But according to scenarios, in case of conflict, Belgian, Italian or German planes can dock US bombs. But not all military jets are equipped to dock US bombs. Belgium recently opted to buy the US F-35 precisely because among the four competing aeroplanes, only F-35 is able to operate the nuclear strike mission carrying the American B-61 nuclear free-fall bomb. According to a number of US government sources, Erdogan has privately warned the US against removing the nuclear devices from Incirlik, and threatened to develop his own weapons if the US bombs are removed.” (Euractive.com, December 11, 2019)

<sup>350</sup> George Friedman a U.S. geopolitical expert foresees a Third World War between the United States, the “Polish Bloc”, the UK, India, and China (Allies) on one side, and Turkey and Japan (new Axis) on the other, with Germany and France entering the war in its late stages on the side of Turkey and Japan. According to the book, the war will probably be started by a coordinated Turkish-Japanese sneak attack against the United States and its allies in a sneak attack that will take place at a time in which the US will be taken completely off guard which will cripple the military capabilities of the United States and its allies to force U.S. accept the Turkish-Japanese's alliance's status as a fellow superpower Eurasia.

on the mountains and in all the valleys; its boughs lie broken by all the rivers of the land; and *all the peoples of the earth have gone from under its shadow and left it.*" (Ezekiel 31:11-12)

As to this mighty nation that will cut the Assyrian down and to the shock of American interpreters will be Russia (as we shall explain from prophecy throughout this volume). No interpreters should ignore "aliens, the most terrible of the nations, have cut it down". This is key. "Terrible of the nations" is terrible in battle, as one of the most powerful nations militarily will finally uproot this beast.

But God is gracious and informed what nations constitute this "Assyrian" who are finally destroyed along with his allies:

*"Cush and Put, Lydia and all Arabia, Libya and the people of the covenant land will fall by the sword along with Egypt."* (Ezekiel 30:5)

"Put" or "Phut" is a reference to North Africa and includes Cush, the regions west of Egypt Sudan and Somalia where we already see a fulfillment initiating in these regions with Turkey's influences. "Lydia" was without question a central western region of Turkey. This includes several other nations of the land of the covenant or the alliance with the Assyrian. They will all be destroyed along with the Assyrian. These nations are in "league" or in "covenant" and allied with the Assyrian. This alliance of nations include:

*"Assyria is there and all her company: his graves are about him: all of them slain, fallen by the sword: Whose graves are set in the sides of the Pit, and her company is round about her grave; all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which caused terror in the land of the living."* (Ezekiel 32:22-23)

*"There is Elam and all her multitude round about her grave, all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which are gone down uncircumcised into the nether parts of the earth, which caused their terror in the land of the living; yet have they borne their shame with them that go down to the pit."* (Ezekiel 32:24)

"Elam" encompasses the region of modern day Iran and perhaps Afghanistan. The hope of the U.S. for Turkey to hold Iran will be futile and in fact will have the reverse effect when these two will unite.<sup>351</sup> Again we see that they also will, "go down to the pit" along with the Assyrian. The Turkic Nations include nations such as Azerbaijan, Kazakhstan,

---

<sup>351</sup> "It is impossible to understand how the hatred develops for Arabia to be destroyed by her spiritual offspring unless she is hated by them. This means a unity between Shiites and non-Wahhabi Sunnis against Arabia including wanting Mecca out of Al-Saud's control. This is what Iran this week called on all Muslims to do; to abandon Saudi Arabia. This complete abandonment will not happen unless it is coupled by Turkey's abandonment of Arabia as well. While all Muslims honor Mecca, this Turkish abandonment is not far-fetched, as we shall examine ...The most common misconception by westerners is this Sunni-Shiite divide. Fact is, there is a certain Shiite-Sunni alliance and not a divide. It is from Ali, Shiism's icon, that stems the progenitor of nearly all Sunni Sufi orders. This is huge. This will encompass Turkey and several central Asian nations leaving Wahhabi Saudi Arabia out. It is truly a Wahhabi-Excommunicated divide and not a Shiite-Sunni divide." (Shoebat.com, September 10, 2016)

Kyrgyzstan, Tajikistan, Uzbekistan and Turkmenistan (the most ruthless):

“There is Meshech, Tubal, and all her multitude: her graves are round about him: all of them uncircumcised, slain by the sword, though they caused their terror in the land of the living. And they shall not lie with the mighty that are fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to hell with their weapons of war: and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones, though they were the terror of the mighty in the land of the living.” (Ezekiel 32:26-27)

Meshech<sup>352</sup> was located near what was known as Phrygia, in central and western Asia Minor (Turkey), while Tubal was located in Eastern Asia Minor (Turkey). So with Meshech and Tubal, we are dealing with portions of modern Turkey.

And today we already are beginning to see Azerbaijan (led by Turkey) is persecuting Christian Armenia (to the complete silence of the U.S.) with only Russia attempting to aid it while the U.S. is advancing the persecution via Turkey to Syria's Christians.

Notice closely, “they” (“Meshech”) “shall not lay with the mighty” clearly indicates that the mightier nations that aided Turkey which are the harlot are different:

“The strong among the mighty shall speak to him out of the midst of hell with them that help him: they are gone down, they lie uncircumcised, slain by the sword.” (Ezekiel 32:21)

“*The strong among the mighty*” the mightiest nation is the United States, are considered uncircumcised in the heart (non-Christian). If our conclusion here is correct, the United States is a goat nation.

Now we have also the Arab nations:

“There is Edom, her kings, and all her princes, which with their might are laid by them that were slain by the sword: they shall lie with the uncircumcised, and with them that go down to the pit” (Ezekiel 32:29)

In the strict sense, Edom is comprised of the southern parts of Jordan but here the text states “her kings” (plural) and princes (plural). This encompasses several rulers from Arabia.

---

<sup>352</sup> “Meshech and Tubal” are in Ezekiel 38. While some translate this verse as, “the prince of Rosh Meshech and Tubal” in Ezekiel 38:2 Meshech and Tubal are not linked with a place called Rosh in any of its other occurrences in the Bible. (See Gen. 10:2; 1 Chron. 1:5; Isa. 66:19;8 Ezekiel 27:13; 32:26) For example: Meshech and Tubal are mentioned in Ezekiel 27:13 as trading partners with ancient Tyre. Tyre was in what is today Lebanon. Did Russia trade with Lebanon? If we examine some of the greatest Biblical references, like the *Macmillan Bible Atlas*, *Oxford Bible Atlas*, and *The Moody Atlas of Bible Lands*, they all locate Magog, Meshech, Tubal, Gomer and Beth Togarmah in Asia Minor, and not Russia. No serious historian is willing to claim that Moscow traded with Lebanon thousands of years ago.

“There be *the princes of the north, all of them*, and all the Sidonians, which are gone down with the slain; with their terror they are ashamed of their might; and they lie uncircumcised with them that be slain by the sword, and bear their shame with them that go down to the pit.” (Ezekiel 32:30)

Sidon refers to Lebanon. It is the second most racist nation on earth regardless that they claim to be Maronite and apostolic succession church. Much of the Maronite are ultra-nationalists and fascistic and many are syncretistic who do not mind celebrating Islam's Ashura, a yearly Muslim communion of porridge. This included as one of the “princes of the North” so when it says “all of them” as an emphatic declaration to add every northern leader around that same vicinity. This casting of these nations into the “pit” can be seen in the Apocalypse:

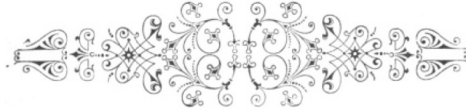
“And the *beast* was taken, and with him *the false prophet* that wrought miracles before him, with which he *deceived them* that *had received the mark of the beast*, and them that worshiped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. The *rest of them* were killed *with the sword* that *came out of the mouth of the rider on the horse*, and all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh.” (Revelation 19:20, 21)

The whole theme of Ezekiel from 28-38 encompass the beast with the names of its army of nations cast into hell (Revelation 19:20-21). The fall of the “little horn” as angel and his pride and declaration to be God: “Because thou hast set thine heart as the heart of God.” (Ezekiel 28:6) is what Paul described Antichrist: “*the son of perdition; Who opposes and exalted himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped.*” (2 Thessalonians 2:1) He “denies the Father and the Son” is more fitting of a Muslim. As God provides a mix of nicknames for Antichrist, in the prophecy of Isaiah, the Antichrist was called *the Assyrian*, but here in Ezekiel, he is called *the King of Tyre* (King of Lebanon).

SECTION VII

EXODUS

THE COMING ESCAPE TO THE WILDERNESS TO PRESERVE THE  
COMMUNION AND THE CONVERSION OF MUSLIMS TO PARTAKE IN IT



## GET READY FOR THE COMING E X O D U S

Once we study prophecy we shall discover that indeed, God brought back Israel to the Promised Land but such return is always conditional. Likewise the church, when it falls, in a sense, it too is also taken into captivity. Israel had to be enslaved and persecuted cleansed and then redeemed. In its Exodus Israel took with them Gentile Egyptians to dwell in the Sinai and get sifted. As we shall carefully examine the rest of prophecy, likewise in the Church; after a global and massive persecution, which results in the church too to be in an allegoric Diaspora (out of Babylon) where it too goes into a hiding place and then a Second Exodus ensues and then from a remnant of both Jew and Gentile these enter the promised land (the New Jerusalem). Such was the case in the times of Moses and such will be the case in the near future. Moses brought in Egyptians with him and it will be the same case here where foreigners join the church.

All prophecy fits this mold and sequence of events. After gleaning much of these prophecies, this becomes crystal clear that the church is also an *Israel* with its *mountains* (as nations) with a Jerusalem (its temple) and with its perpetual sacrifice (the Eucharist).

No power, even the gates of hell can stop this process. This even includes the perpetual sacrifice.

We must challenge obvious failures by asking numerous Jesus-style questions we present throughout, that besides Israel's miraculous rebirth out of the ashes of Auschwitz where do these find the Church in scripture as the *Israel of God*? It is everywhere and even in the New Testament proclaimed as *the twelve tribes* of Israel even viewing the Christians (be they Jew or Gentile) as *exiles*:

“James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the *twelve tribes* which are *scattered abroad*, greeting.” (James 1:1)

The tribes that are “scattered” also need an Exodus and a return to home. And in 1 Peter 1:

“Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To God's elect, *exiles scattered* throughout the provinces of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia”

So if scripture solely spoke of the Hebrews as exiles, why would the New Testament refer to the church as “exiles” and even calls gentile Christians the “scattered” “twelve tribes” of Israel? This should reflect as we read the Old Testament. For example, Isaiah 56 says:

“The Sovereign LORD declares— *he who gathers the exiles of Israel*: “I will gather still *others to them* besides those already gathered.” (v. 8)



Even the racialism and ultra-nationalism that Israel committed in the court of the gentiles, even the bad priesthood, will be severely dealt with. So crucial is this that Christ's condemnation upon Israel (cracking the whip) was for breaking this rule referred to in these verses:

“And as he taught them, he said, “Is it not written: ‘My house will be called a *house of prayer for all nations*? But you have made it ‘a den of robbers. The chief priests and the teachers of the law heard this and began looking for a way to *kill him*, for they feared him, because the whole crowd was amazed at his teaching.” (Mark 11:17)

God's plan is to unite all races as one flock:

“And *foreigners* who bind themselves to the LORD to minister to him, to love the name of the LORD, and to be his servants, all who keep the Sabbath without desecrating it and who hold fast to my covenant—these I will *bring to my holy mountain* and give them joy in my house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and sacrifices will be accepted on my altar; for my house will be called a *house of prayer for all nations* (v.6-7)

“Is it not written” that the scriptures offends racialists and causes anger even amongst the elitists in religious circles who cling to tribal affiliation more than they cling to the laws of God? This phenomenon was not only in ancient Israel, today in Lebanon and in Serbia and Croatia are priests who cling to ultra-nationalist views and this sin is also dealt with.

Even John the Baptist and every word he uttered are prophetic, that if God can make the stones the sons of Abraham (Luke 3:8, Matthew 3:9) He can also make the Gentiles the sons of Abraham. The Church is not a *replacement* of Israel but its *continuation*. Therefore, the remnant Church is also viewed by God as the *exiled twelve tribes* of Israel in Diaspora—holy pilgrims, in an unholy land—destined to the Promised Land just as ancient Israel with one caveat: this return is not simply to an earthly object, but a Kingdom of God and a new Jerusalem coming down from heaven unlike anyone has ever imagined:

“Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart of man The things which God has prepared for those who love Him.” (1 Corinthians 2:9)

So if we read “twelve tribes” or an exodus, it is not strictly referring to the Jews. The Church is obviously scattered, “through the mountains” (nations) and in a dual sense for Judah:

“My sheep wandered through all the *mountains*, and on every high hill; yes, *My flock* was scattered *over the whole face of the earth*, and *no one* was seeking or *searching for them*.” (Ezekiel 34:6)

“Mountains” are nations where God's people “My flock” are “scattered over the whole earth”. These are the redeemed and to be redeemed Jew and Gentile going through the sifter and tried with the fire of hardship and persecution to becoming “one flock” (“My flock”).

Even when we read “mountains of Israel” in one sense is a prophecy regarding Israel, but in an allegoric sense is regarding the nations of the church since Christ gathers “all nations,” these are the “mountains of Israel”:

“O *mountains* of Israel, *hear* the word of the Lord GOD! Thus *says* the Lord GOD *to the mountains*, to the *hills*, to the *ravines*, and to the *valleys*: “Indeed I, even I, will *bring a sword against you*, and I will destroy your high places.” (Ezekiel 6:3)

If we strictly apply the literal sense, “mountains” do not have ears “O mountains of Israel, *hear* the word of the Lord GOD,” However, *nations* do have ears.

#### HOUSE CLEANING

It starts with addressing the failure of the lazy shepherds:

“... the *shepherds fed themselves* and *did not feed My flock*” (Ezekiel 34:8)

“And as for you, O *My flock*, thus says the Lord GOD: “Behold, I shall *judge between sheep and sheep*, between *rams and goats*.” (Ezekiel 34:17)

Obviously these are the fallen priests, cardinals and bishops who are the bad shepherds we see all around us, always dressed up clean on the outside but inside stink till high heaven. Your complaints are heard and God already knows that one of the departments in His corporation (the priesthood) needs to finally be terminated and their replacement (believe it or not) will come from Muslim converts and out of Africa. The Copts of Egypt are highly valued as well. God has had enough of Shem and Japheth and now it is Ham’s turn.

“your *altars* shall be *desolate*, your *incense altars* shall be broken, and I will cast down your slain men before your *idols*.” (Ezekiel 6:4)



All the churches with “altars” and “incense” become desolate (empty) and you will be slain for turning syncretistic pagan. And there is more:

“In *all your dwelling places* the *cities shall be laid waste*, and the *high places* shall be desolate, so that your *altars* may be laid *waste* and made *desolate*” (Ezekiel 6:6)

The falling away Paul warned about in 2 Thessalonians 2 is sprinkled all throughout prophecy and it has grievous consequences; cities will be in ruin, desolate, empty, and all high rises become empty and the churches as empty ruins.

“And as Isaiah said before: “Unless the LORD of Sabaoth had left us a seed, We would have become like *Sodom*, And we would have been made like *Gomorrah*.” (Romans 9:29)

But Paul was quoting the prophet Isaiah:

“So the *daughter of Zion* is *left as a booth* in a *vineyard*, As a *hut* in a *garden of cucumbers*, As a *besieged city*. Unless the LORD of hosts had left to us a *very small remnant*, we would have *become like Sodom*, we would have been *made like Gomorrah*. Hear the word of the LORD, You rulers of Sodom; Give ear to the law of our God, You people of Gomorrah” (Isaiah 1:8-10)

“Had been like Sodom”? Is this not crucial? But God always provides a refuge: in the simple allegory in a *cucumber field with a lodge*. Besides one other single reference in the Old Testament, “a hut in a garden of cucumbers,” all Palestinians know where the best cucumber field is, Bethlehem’s Shepherds Fields, my birthplace, where the King was proclaimed and where everyone in the region prefers these specific cucumbers. A cucumber field (called Miqthah) had a small lodge, a tent hut. This symbolizes the moving tabernacle in the Sinai. So Isaiah 1:8-9, God provides a solution, “a refuge,” “a lodge” “a tent” “a temple”. Why? Revelation 12, “the woman” flee which is already interpreted for us in Micah 4:

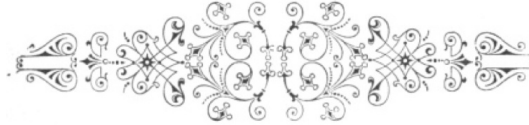
“In that day, says the LORD, I will assemble the lame and gather those who have been driven away, and those whom I have afflicted and the lame I will make the remnant; and those who were cast off, a strong nation; and the LORD will reign over them in Mount Sion from this time forth and for evermore.” (Micah 4:6-7)

The sheep is “driven away” they wander. Like Jacob, Christ is given the rejected sheep “the lame” (the rejects of society) “who have been driven away” and with these, He will become a strong nation where Christ reigns over them “in” (not on) Mount Sion, that is, in the New Jerusalem for evermore.

And how do we know that He picks all the rejects, refugees, cast out foreigners, and afflicted who fled Mystery Babylon’s cities? He tells us:

“And you, O tower of the flock [Tower of Edar], hill of the daughter of Sion, to you shall it come, the former dominion shall come, the kingdom of the daughter of Jerusalem ... Writhe and groan, O daughter of Sion, like a woman in travail; for now you shall go forth from the city and  dwell in the open country; you shall **go to Babylon**. There you **shall be rescued**, there the LORD will redeem you from the hand of your enemies.” (Micah 4:8,10)

“Go forth from the city and dwell in the open country” leaves no room for question that Revelation 12 is about an exile *out of the city* (which are collectively called “Babylon”) into the *country*. Now we understand one meaning of this “woman in travail”.



## WHY CHRISTIANS MUST LEAVE THE CITIES

Notice that your life have not suffered your great grand parents or your grand parents lives. The last decades has been relatively peaceful and we are running on fumes. Soon you will be re-reading this volume. The Fifth seal is a time of rest and we are entering the Sixth seal, the era of massive falling away and national, demographic and moral tectonic shifting. It is like the investment strategy that when the market reaches a peak and the world is excited it is the time to pull out regardless that you might lose some since you cannot time the market, and when the market hits a disaster point, go in, for it only can go up. Learn from nature. Lion and alligator await the first dumb zebra that runs to the water hole and the last zebra enjoys the drink alongside the lion for he is full of Zebra.

Likewise, when the world feels at peace (our era after WWII), is the time you prepare for war and when the world prepares for war expect a coming peace (New Jerusalem). I could be wrong, but if my estimations serve me correctly, prior to 2038 we shall all move out of city life. The instruction to leave city life is straightforward and clear in multiple prophecies. We always think that we know what upsets God, but looking at these prophecies, there are certain issues that we rarely consider one of which is city life. One is to think of cities like the gold rush days where once bustling and then when the gold runs out becomes a ghost town permanently. It starts with inner city revolts, plagues, famine and then a sudden destruction “in one single day” and in fact in a “single hour” major cities globally are destroyed and we estimate by nuclear destruction. It will be like birth pangs; plagues, lack of water resources and civil unrest. The turmoil will be so bad that: “neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them. In the day of the LORD's wrath; but the whole land shall be devoured by the fire of His jealousy, for He will make speedy riddance of all those who dwell in the land.” In these days you can drop a gold bar and no one will bother to pick it up since it is not food.

### FIRST FLEE

“And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “*Come out of her*, my people, lest you *share in her sins*, and *lest you receive of her plagues*.” (Revelation 18:4)

This is a New Testament instruction and therefore no slick interpreter can file this one to a historic fulfillment as they do in the Old Testament. Obedient Christians will move out of cities and escape to the allegoric “Azal” (seclusion).

### THEN TESTING

This is the allegoric “Sinai” which brings the refinement. Israel faces the same:

“I will bring the one-third *through the fire*, Will *refine* them as silver is refined, and test them as *gold* is tested. They will call on My name, and I will answer them. I will say, ‘This is My people’; and each one will say, ‘The LORD is my God.’”

As to the Gentiles this testing by the fire of persecution will be only for the Apostolic Succession churches:

“And there was given me a *reed* like unto a *rod*: and it was said to me: arise, and *measure the temple* of God, and *the altar* and *them that adore therein*. But *the court, which is without* the temple, *cast out*, and *measure it not*: because it is *given unto the nations* [the Harlot and Antichrist], and the *holy city* they shall trample under foot two and forty months” (Revelation 11:1-2)

Only the ones who “adore the altar” are tested (will suffer the pains of refinement) while the Protestants are not (will not suffer refinement).

“Then justice will dwell in the *wilderness*, and righteousness remain in the *fruitful field*. The *work of righteousness* will be *peace*, and the effect of righteousness, quietness and assurance forever. My people will dwell in a *peaceful habitation*, in *secure dwellings*, and in *quiet resting places*, though hail comes down on the forest, and *the city* is brought *low* in *humiliation*. Blessed are you who sow beside all waters, who send out freely the feet of the ox and the donkey.” (Isaiah 32:16-20)

The prophecy in one sense is regarding the city of the devil which is brought low while the city of God being lifted up is the victory of the primitive church. But pay close attention to the literal sense as in the Apocalypse to “flee” Babylon, they “dwell in peaceful habitation,” one must leave the city since “hail comes down on the forest, and the city is brought low in humiliation” is given to us in a clear literal sense: “The whole city *shall flee* for the noise of the horsemen and bowmen; they shall *go into thickets*, and *climb up upon the rocks*: *every city shall be forsaken*, and *not a man dwell therein*” (Jeremiah 4:29) also confirmed in Isaiah:

“They *will come*, and *all of them* will rest in the *desolate valleys* and in the *clefts of the rocks*, and on all thorns and in all pastures.” Isaiah 7:18-19)

The Antichrist chases after the woman with a flood but the earth consumes the flood and the church escapes the seven headed beast described as the seven streams of an allegoric Egypt:

“And the Lord shall make *desolate the sea of Egypt*; and he shall lay his hand on the river with a strong wind, and he shall smite the seven channels, so *that men shall pass through over dry-shod*” (Isaiah 11:15).

## THE SINAI PERIOD

This becomes the “covert” which the Tower of the Flock which St. Mary will visit during the 3.5 years to rescue the church:

“And you, O tower of the flock [Tower of Edar], hill of the daughter of Sion, to you shall it come, the former dominion shall come, the kingdom of the daughter of Jerusalem. Writhe and groan, O daughter of Sion, like a woman in travail; for now you shall go forth from the city and dwell in the open country; you shall go to Babylon. There you shall be rescued, there the LORD will redeem you from the hand of your enemies.”

This rescue mission is obvious from the entire prophecy of Isaiah 11 and Numbers 10:

“*That you may be remembered before the LORD your God, and you shall be saved from your enemies*” (Numbers 10:9)

## THEN DECAY

“Furthermore, I withheld the rain from you while there were still three months until harvest. Then I would send rain on one city, but on another city I would not send rain; one part would be rained on, while the part not rained on would dry up. So the people of two or three cities would stagger to another city to drink water, but would not be satisfied; yet you have not returned to Me,” declares the Lord.”

“I struck you with scorching wind and mildew”

“See, the Lord rides on a swift cloud and is coming to Egypt. The idols of Egypt tremble before him, and the hearts of the Egyptians melt with fear. “I will stir up Egyptian against Egyptian—brother will fight against brother, neighbor against neighbor, city against city, kingdom against kingdom.” (Isaiah 19:2)

"And the people shall rush one upon another. And every man against his neighbor: the child shall make a tumult against the ancient and the base against the honorable" (Isaiah 3:5).

“On the land my people will come up thorns and briers yes, on all the happy homes in the joyous city; because the palaces will be forsaken, the bustling city will be deserted. The forts and towers will become lairs forever, a joy of wild donkeys, a pasture of flocks”— (Isaiah 32:13-14)

What part of “forever” do you not understand? Therefore, this cannot be regarding ancient Israel after the Roman Diaspora. Chronicle explains:

“For a long time Israel has been *without the true God*, without a teaching priest, and without law; but when *in their trouble* they *turned to the LORD God of Israel*, and *sought Him*, He *was found by them*. And *in those times there was no peace* to the one who *went out*, nor *to the one who came in*, but great turmoil was on *all the*

*inhabitants of the lands. So nation was destroyed by nation, and city by city, for God troubled them with every adversity.” (2 Chronicle 15: 3-6)*<sup>353</sup>

What part of this turmoil is not clear to you? This tells you that the trouble is not only in Israel but “all the inhabitants of the lands” (plural lands) “nation destroyed by [another] nation and city [destroyed by other] city”. This will be hell. While many will be looking for some hope, it does not get any better:

## SUDDEN DESTRUCTION

“In *the city is left desolation*, and the gate is smitten with destruction. When thus it shall be in the midst of the land among the people, there shall be as the *shaking of an olive tree*, and as the gleaning grapes when the vintage is done. They shall lift up their voice, they shall sing for the majesty of the LORD, they shall cry aloud from the sea. Wherefore glorify ye the LORD in *the fires*, even the name of the LORD God of Israel in *the isles* of the *sea*.” (Isaiah 24:10-15)<sup>354</sup>

The few wise are left. And when all the “shaking” is done few are left who in the end “lift up their voice” and “sing for the majesty of the Lord” glorifying God “in the fires” as they witness the destruction living in the “isles” of seclusion within the “sea” of the nations.

“On the land my people will come up thorns and briers”

“And another angel followed, saying, “*Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.*” (Apocalypse 14:8)

“And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, thus with violence shall that great city *Babylon be thrown down*, and shall be found no more at all. (Revelation 18:21)

“Behold, the LORD makes the earth empty and makes it waste, distorts its surface and scatters abroad its inhabitants. And it shall be: as with the people, so with the priest; As with the servant, so with his master; as with the maid, so with her mistress; as with the buyer, so with the seller; as with the lender, so with the borrower; as with the creditor, so with the debtor.”

“He scorns the tumult of the city”. (Job 39:7)

---

<sup>353</sup> 2 Chronicle דְּבַר־יְהוָה הַיָּמִים *Dibrê Hayyāmîm* 'The Matters [of] the Days' is a Hebrew prose work constituting part of Jewish and Christian scripture. It contains a genealogy starting from Adam, and a narrative of the history of ancient Judah and Israel until the proclamation of King Cyrus the Great (c. 540 BC).

<sup>354</sup> Also see Isaiah 42:4, 42:10, 51:5, 60:9



We made this clear, the turmoil begins between beast and harlot. The Assyrian will launch a sudden attack on major cities:

“The ten horns you saw, and the beast, will hate the prostitute. They will make her desolate and naked, devour her flesh, and burn her up with fire.” (Revelation 17:16)

And in Numbers 24 this is clear:

“And one from Jacob shall exercise dominion and destroy the survivors of cities!” (Numbers 24:19)

So how do we reconcile between these two verses where one says Messiah does it and another says the beast does it? If one continues the prophecy in Revelation 17 they will find:

“For God has put it into their hearts to fulfill His purpose, to be of one mind, and to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled.” (Revelation 17:17)

What the beast does is “God’s purpose” giving the harlot to the kingdom of the beast as in an alliance went bad. If you are a citizen of Babylon, there is no need to type your comments on blogs saying that we need to take up arms or join the military “to defend our way of life” since this one fulfills God’s purpose and your way of life is simply defending a Sodom style of living. This is the time to inform people to convert. The Assyrian carries out God’s mission and it is God Who punishes them in the end:

“Is this the man who made the earth tremble, who shook kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness and overthrew its cities, who did not allow his prisoners to go home?” (Isaiah 14:16-17)

“For You have made a city a ruin, a fortified city a ruin, a palace of foreigners to be a city no more; it will never be rebuilt ... and He will destroy on this mountain the surface of the covering cast over all people, and the veil that is spread over all nations ...and it will be said in that day: “Behold, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us. This is the LORD; we have waited for Him; we will be glad and rejoice in His salvation.” (Isaiah 25:2, 7, 9)

All confusions, manmade systems, corruptions, deceptions and lawlessness is now exposed and God convinces everyone of the truth after He rescues the remnant of humanity from their own destructive acts.

It happens in a single day. As we learned from Numbers 24, “the ships of Chition” from Asia Minor is when the Turks bring their ships to coastlands and launch a Pearl Harbor style attack. The harlot is given a message:



“But these two things will come on you *suddenly in one day*: Loss of children and widowhood. They will come on you in *full measure* in spite of your many sorceries, *in spite of the great power of your spells*.” (Isaiah 47:9)

Despite its world influence in its “spells” is the corruptive act this conglomerate has influence to change the moral values of the world, God says He shall destroy it. There are many prophecies to confirm all this:

“In *that day* his strong cities will be as a forsaken bough and an uppermost branch, which they left because of the children of Israel; and there will be desolation.” (Isaiah 17:9)

“For her *sins have reached unto heaven*, and God hath *remembered* her iniquities.” (Revelation 18:5)

“*the cities of the nations fell. Babylon the great was remembered in the sight of God*, to give her the cup of the wine of His fierce wrath.” (Revelation 16:19)

“As when God overthrew *Sodom and Gomorrah* and their *neighbor cities*, says the LORD, so *no man shall dwell there*, and no son of man shall sojourn in her.” (Jeremiah 50:40)

“Just as *Sodom and Gomorrah* and the surrounding *cities*, which likewise indulged in *sexual immorality* and *pursued unnatural desire*, serve as an example by undergoing a *punishment of eternal fire*.” (Jude 1:7)

“They seize their bow and javelin; they are cruel and have no mercy. Their voice roars like the sea; and they ride on horses, marshalled like a man for the battle against you, *O daughter of Babylon*.” (Jeremiah 50:43)

“At the shout, “Babylon has been seized!” *the earth is shaken*, and an outcry is heard among the nations.” (Jeremiah 50:46)

“I beheld, and, lo, the *fruitful place* was a *wilderness*, and *all the cities thereof were broken down* at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger.” (Jeremiah 4:26)

“The whole city *shall flee* for the noise of the horsemen and bowmen; they shall *go into thickets*, and *climb up upon the rocks: every city shall be forsaken*, and *not a man dwell therein*.” (Jeremiah 4:29)

“I will also *cut off the cities of your land* and *tear down all your fortifications*.” (Micah 5:11)

“A lion has gone up from his thicket, and *a destroyer of nations* has set out; He *has gone out from his place to make your land a waste. Your cities will be ruins* without inhabitant.” (Jeremiah 4:7)

“Damascus will cease from being a city, and it will be a ruinous heap ... The fortress also will cease from Ephraim, the kingdom from Damascus, and the remnant of Syria; they will be as the glory of the children of Israel,” Says the LORD of hosts. “In that day it shall come to pass that the glory of Jacob will wane, and the fatness of his flesh grow lean.” (Isaiah 17:4)

“Yes, on all the happy homes in the joyous city; because the palaces will be forsaken, the bustling city will be deserted. The forts and towers will become lairs forever, a joy of wild donkeys, a pasture of flocks” — (Isaiah 32:13-14)

Do you need a professional interpreter to tell you the meaning of all the underlined? Do you need some slick interpreter to tell you what “the bustling city” means and that “the forts and towers” are high-rises and that your brand new house “happy homes” with the new metal roof and nice green lawn is about to be scorched? Do you need an instruction manual to tell you to leave the spray weed killer and the grass mower in the garage and to leave the nice umbrella atop your round porch table and chairs, the collection of unused junk stored in your garage including the nice 72 inch plasma TV (including the remote control) is to be left behind? Or do we need to tell you that you are better off with a mule than an SUV since you will not find a gas station in sight? Make that two mules, one for the wife and kids and another of some food supplies, a tent and hunting gear. Your lifestyle is about to change:

“And the daughter of Zion shall be left as a covert in a vineyard, and as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers, and as a city that is laid waste. Except the Lord of hosts had left us seed, we had been as Sodom, and we should have been like to Gomorrha.” (Isaiah 1:8-9)

The Earth supporting Sodom is about to be annihilated. Mary “the daughter of Zion (the virtuous, virgin) is that “covert” “lodge” “tent” (the Ark) and she as mother is sent as helper.

“There shall be a crying for wine in the streets: all mirth is forsaken: the joy of the earth is gone away. Desolation is left in the city and calamity shall oppress the gates. For it shall be thus in the midst of the earth in the midst of the people as if a few olives that remain should be shaken out of the olive tree: or grapes when the vintage is ended. Fear and the pit and the snare are upon thee o thou inhabitant of the earth (Is. 24: 1ff).

What you shall see in the coming years is more of the Ezekiel 32 prophecy the growth of Babylon resembled in this allegoric Egypt as the resurrection of the carcass of an extinguished Egyptian cult revived (Isaiah 1, Isaiah 3 and Ezekiel 16 and Ezekiel 23) to become “Harlot” and a “Sodom and Egypt” after being buried in the sea long ago. It is now brought out of the sea (this pagan empire resurrects). Then its stench will be re-consumed by many nations (rivers), which when the sun (the light of Christ) diminish by this dark covering cloud that is the Holy Spirit diminish His influence represented by the wind and then comes the “wrath”:

“For the great day of his *wrath* is come; and who shall be able to stand? And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the *four winds* of the earth, that *the wind should not blow on the earth*, nor on *the sea*, nor on *any tree*.” (Revelation 7:1)

In sum, the system from beast and harlot now lives after Christianity gave these a mortal wound. It will spread, to the nations that were not known to ancient Egypt, which God also destroys due to man’s hard heart, brought back the fortunes of Egypt, Sodom, Assyria and Babylon ... and these will *mingle together forming this Mystery: Babylon the Great, the Mother of all Harlots, the abominations of the earth*. This beast has seven heads representing *all seven past empires from Egypt to Ottoman*. God gives the world what it wished.

Now that allegory is clearer, even the hints of Jesus now becomes simple and obvious; Lot is symbolic of the remnant church that refused to turn its head towards Sodom, while Lot’s wife is symbolic of the fallen church that did turn its head (returned towards Sodom) so when the fallen-church hesitates and turns her head around and goes backward completely towards these ancient deceptions and when they are steeped participating in this syncretistic ritual this “wrath” all prophets warned about pours out and therefore monitoring Communion service is crucial since prophecy is regarding matters that are very specific. Communion is a commandment “do this” is an instruction to follow and it is a “Daily Sacrifice”.

Now that we simply follow the “wrath” which has not been witnessed since the times of Noah (the first “wrath” was with a flood) and now we must prepare to escape it for the saints are not appointed to wrath (1 Thessalonians 9:5) which is by “fire”.

Christ Himself in Matthew instructs that at the moment you see the Abomination of Desolation this would be no time to consider packing anything. One must leave everything behind. There is no time to load wheat and legumes in your Mylar bags with oxygen absorbers to last or load your survival food buckets in your pickup truck and run to a gas station to fill up extra tanks for the long haul while driving up towards the mountains. Such preparation is long over due and you simply have hours before the fire is unleashed to destroy all metropolitan city-life. So few pay attention how much God hates city life:

“He scorns the tumult of the city”. (Job 39:7)

Nimrod, instead of following God’s commandment to multiply and spread throughout the earth had a desire “let us build a city” and “a tower”. All ancient stories in the Bible are of things to come. Likewise, God finally pours out His wrath against all cities, which is why this harlot is called a “city” (Revelation 17:18) which receives the “wrath” and the “plagues”:

“Then I saw another great and marvelous sign in heaven: seven angels with the *seven final plagues*, with which the *wrath* of God is *completed*” (Revelation 15:1)

There are many “plagues” to come. Corona Virus that affected mainly city life is but a very small taste of what is to come, the destruction of all mega cities with all the high-rises is clear:

“That day will be a day of *wrath*, a day of trouble and distress, a day of destruction and desolation, a day of darkness and gloom, a day of clouds and blackness, a day of horn blast and *battle cry against the fortified cities*, and against the *high corner towers*. I will bring such *distress on mankind* that they will *walk like the blind*, because they have *sinned against the LORD*. Their *blood will be poured out like dust* and *their flesh like dung*. Neither their *silver* nor their *gold* will *be able to deliver them* on the Day of the LORD’s *wrath*. The *whole earth* will be consumed by *the fire of His jealousy*.” For indeed, He will make a *sudden end of all who dwell on the earth*.” (Zephaniah 1:15-18)

This is the end of cities and high rises: “sudden end of all who dwell on the earth.” The shock will be so severe that you will see people wander in disbelief as if they are mindless living dead. In the meanwhile, it would be wise to forget gold investments and live the simple life in more conservative rural areas. This “wrath” consumes all who do not have the mark of God on their foreheads. This “wrath” in Zephaniah 1 is unlike any wrath in history since Noah, in which God describes the punishment and the punished:

“I will completely *sweep away everything from the face of the earth*,” declares the LORD. “I will sweep away man and beast; I will sweep away the birds of the air, and the fish of the sea, *and the idols* with their *wicked worshipers*. I will *cut off mankind from the face of the earth*,” declares the LORD. “I will stretch out My hand *against Judah* and *against all who dwell in Jerusalem*. I will *cut off from this place every remnant of Baal*, the names of the idolatrous and *pagan priests*—those who bow on the rooftops to *worship the host of heaven*, those who bow down and *swear by the LORD* but *also swear by Milcom*, and those who turn back from following the LORD, neither seeking the LORD nor inquiring of Him.” (Zephaniah 1:2-6)

This is key. Such a curse is not only in Jerusalem but the entire earth “I will completely *sweep away everything from the face of the earth*.” Unless there are two Jerusalems as Paul said; how could God utterly punish earthy Jerusalem while He establishes Jerusalem in other prophecies? This becomes crystal clear that the world of Christendom still claims to love Christ “swear by the Lord but also swear by Milcom” is clearly addressing *syncretism* “having a form of godliness” while ignoring God’s power, proclamations and commandments bending the knee for Mother Earth, union between men and pagan ideology.

“Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth will move out of her place, in *the wrath* of the LORD of hosts And in the day of His fierce anger.” (Isaiah 13:13)

“And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, The beauty of the Chaldeans’ pride, Will be as when God overthrew *Sodom and Gomorrah*.” (Isaiah 13:19)

God sees this mystery conglomerate as pagan “Chaldeans” stargazers “pride” and its story and its ending answers the “how” and the “why”. “As when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah” the “why” (becoming Sodom) is given by Isaiah 1 and 3 and Ezekiel 16 and

John's Revelations 11:8 "Sodom and Egypt" and by Christ in Luke 17:32 "remember Lot's wife" for this is when this wrath is poured out and whoever is caught in it is of the damned. And as to the "who" receives this wrath is clearly confirmed in the New Testament:

"who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things [homosexuality] are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them." (Romans 1:32)

Again, this "wrath" is not only poured out on homosexuals, but all who approve the practice of homosexuality. This is no time to be sensitive and inclusive. We always hear the words of hypocrites, that God "loves the homosexuals". Yet when we counter such hypocrites with a Jesus-style question: "does your homosexual loving God also love homophobes?" these cringe and do not know what to answer. If homophobia was such a sin on par with homosexuality, and God loves all sinners, why then does He not love also the homophobes? Why is this "love" commandment only includes the debased and hates the righteous homophobes?

Did Christ tell the prostitute that He loves prostitution? Such "wrath" is poured out on such hypocrites as well. This is explained in the "why" God pours such wrath:

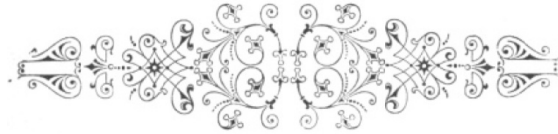
"For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who by their unrighteousness suppress the truth. <sup>19</sup> For what can be known about God is plain to them, because God has shown it to them."

The unrighteousness is the cause of both homosexuality and also those who approve of such practice. Simply follow the wrath. Romans 1, is not simply an instruction on morality, but a warning of this "wrath" on fallen Christendom beginning at Rome itself whom God has shown the truth. This leaves the Vatican with no excuse. Rome, what was ordained to be the city of saints now suppress the truth delving into all sorts of wickedness "exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images resembling mortal man and birds and animals and creeping things." Things like Pachamama comes to mind. "For this reason God gave them up to dishonorable passions. For their women exchanged natural relations for those that are contrary to nature; <sup>27</sup> and the men likewise gave up natural relations with women and were consumed with passion for one another, men committing shameless acts with men" think the multitudes of homosexual priests which Christ summed up the scenario, that prior to His coming, simply hinted all this using three words: "remember Lot's wife" for she turned her head towards Sodom.

Who amongst the Catholic priests of today is voiceful speaking out against this homosexual agenda? They are but a few. This "remember Lot's wife" is given to unlock it all, for it is why Christ says "remember" warning never to forget this crucial instruction but to also take action. This crucial key pertains the Mystery city of rebellion, the Babylon the Great, the Mother of all Harlots.

It is a "mother" because it stems from the ancient: Sodom, Sumer, Assyria, Tyre, Egypt and Arabia. And it has "daughters" being other mega cities born of Jerusalem (Christendom and all what consumed it from Islam to paganism).

It is really that simple and it needs no interpreter.



## IT RAINS ON ALL WHO ARE UNCIRCUMCISED IN THE HEART

“Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will punish all them which are circumcised with the uncircumcised; Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwelt in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart.” (Jeremiah 9:25-26)

“Judah” is in this prophecy. It also includes Edom. While Judah are circumcised in the flesh God says they are “uncircumcised” regardless of the physical circumcision, yet even many who claim to be circumcised at heart also get punished. But the point here is to be a Jew is to be circumcised in the heart, and to be of Israel, is to be of the Israel of God, and to be of Zion, is to be of Heavenly Zion. So God here is punishing not only the Muslim world, but also Judah (the Jews) and the nations that are “in the uttermost corners” of the earth. “The uttermost corners” is the earth’s extremities, uttermost east (think Japan) and uttermost West (think Europe) and uttermost north (think the U.S.) and uttermost south (think south America all the way down to Chile). This is a major punishment that never happened before in history.

### UTTER DESTRUCTION

The destruction is so massive and beyond comprehension. In Isaiah 24-25 God explains:

“Behold, the LORD makes the earth empty and makes it waste, distorts its surface and scatters abroad its inhabitants. And it shall be: as with the people, so with the priest; as with the servant, so with his master; as with the maid, so with her mistress; as with the buyer, so with the seller; as with the lender, so with the borrower; as with the creditor, so with the debtor.”

Here we have a complete collapse of all the systems of mankind, yet we know that not everyone on earth is completely dead since it says “scatter them abroad” is to the wilderness. How can they scatter abroad if they are dead? This is “the city brought low”. Inhabitants are scattered abroad and where no bank or investment portfolio will help “as with the creditor” (bank) “so with the debtor”. God ends city life. Keep in mind that John declared that the beast (kingdom of Antichrist) will accomplish this as he destroys the harlot, which means that it is likely that Antichrist will act as Nero did when he burned Rome but at a much larger scale when mankind enters a complete nuclear catastrophe of a point of no return. Isaiah 14:20 hints it: “You will not be joined with them in burial, because you have destroyed your land and slain your people.” They are destroyed and the surface of the earth is distorted as from possible nuclear destruction. This is also alluded to in Isaiah 14, the prophecy of the end of Antichrist including Mystery Babylon:



“For I will rise up against them, says the Lord of hosts, and cut off from Babylon its name and remnant, and offspring and posterity, says the Lord...I will sweep it with the broom of destruction” (Isaiah 14:15).

“Prepare slaughter for his children because of the iniquity of their fathers, lest they rise up and possess the land, and fill the face of the world with cities.” (Isaiah 14:17)

“To fill the face of the world with cities” is obvious, God is concerned about mankind continuing the expansion of cities while “the broom of destruction” is as when we watch footage of a nuclear explosion, a display of the fury and the power of the ominous cloud that sweeps up everything horizontally in its path: “And I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth; blood and fire and pillars of smoke” (Joel 2:30) as in mushroom clouds from a nuclear explosion.<sup>355</sup> I conjecture here that perhaps is why Christ tells the Christians in Jerusalem to flee to the mountains since the best defense for a nuclear strike are hills. A nuclear bomb sends a sudden flash of bright, white light could cause blindness if you stare at from between 10-50 miles or so of ground zero. Third-degree burns can occur if you’re within 10 miles or so. Ever wonder why the plans for President, Cabinet and Supreme Court to hide in Virginia’s Mt. Weather or why North American Aerospace Defense Command (NORAD) is in Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado? Mountains and hills act as the best obstacles against shockwaves. A mountain in the way drastically dampens the radiation. When Hiroshima was hit, the destruction radius was only 4.4 square miles while its sister Nagasaki landed in a valley, truncating the radius by the mountains. Fearing God is the best defense as Father Hubert Schiffer (1915 - March 27, 1982) and eight German Jesuits who survived the nuclear blast being only eight blocks away from ground zero and without any radiation effects. Nuclear PTEN deficiency causes microcephaly in newly born children and is perhaps why Christ warns “woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days” (Matthew 24:19). The 7:10 Rule of Thumb states that for every 7-fold increase in time after detonation, there is a 10-fold decrease in effect. So the first to the seventh hour after detonation, loses 90% of its effect and after 2 days it loses 99% of its effect. However, it is not a nuclear war that is more fearful than the judgment that pours out of heaven:

---

<sup>355</sup> “Imagine that a nuclear missile is bearing down on San Francisco. It’s been fired from a missile silo near Pyongyang — or perhaps a North Korean submarine somewhere in the middle of the Pacific. If launched from Korea, the warhead would take about 30 minutes to reach California. The missile would soar high into the atmosphere and arc briefly through the low orbit zone, at which point the rocket propulsion system would detach from the warhead payload. The warhead would then plunge from the earth’s upper atmosphere to the streets of San Francisco within a few breathless moments, reaching a terminal velocity of five or six miles per second. San Francisco’s primary protection against a nuclear bomb is the Ground-Based Midcourse Defense (GMD) system, which, in theory, would fire interceptor missiles from central Alaska and Vandenberg Air Force Base to destroy the warhead in midair before it could reach American soil. However, the Union of Concerned Scientists and a bevy of missile-defense specialists have argued that the system is ill equipped for the technical realities of staving off an attack because it has repeatedly failed missile-intercept tests.” “Everything would be on fire; transportation infrastructure would collapse; and radioactive nuclear fallout would sow death across California for hundreds of miles in every direction.”

“The land shall be entirely emptied and utterly plundered, For the LORD has spoken this word. The earth mourns and fades away, The world languishes and fades away; The haughty people of the earth languish. The earth is also defiled under its inhabitants, because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant. Therefore the curse has devoured the earth, and those who dwell in it are desolate. Therefore the inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men are left ... (Isaiah 24)

And why is the earth judged? “Because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance.” What laws? What ordinance? To change natural law is a major offense and when God says “few are left” He means what He says “few are left” just as it was in the days of Noah.

#### CHRIST STRIKES BACK (FROM EAST TO WEST)

Today many assume that because they live in the West, that they are immune from civil unrest like that of the Arab Spring in Egypt, Syria and Libya. They are not. We shall see civil unrest in the West unparalleled from what we have seen from ISIS. Prophetic punishments and even Christ’s refinement, starts in the East and then travels towards the West:

“God, the Lord God speaks; He summons the earth from east to west.” (Psalm 50:1)

“For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.” (Matthew 24:27)

While one could argue that this is simply a direction Christ makes from east to west, Christ’s Glory comes from the east where He causes the West to “fear”:

“They will fear the name of the Lord in the west, and His glory in the east; for He will come like a rushing stream driven by the wind of the Lord.” (Isaiah 59:19)

Just like when Christianity first began, cleansing starts in the east then travels west. This is why “His glory” is “in the east” and the “fear” of His “name” then travels to the West.

So as neopaganism and Sodom engulfs the earth twice (especially in the West), so Christianity will spread twice just as it spread the first time with Syria first, then to Asia Minor, then to North Africa (Libya) and then to the West, but this time with lightening speed during the earth’s tribulation. Today we see the mess beginning in the east and so the shockwave of the earthquake will spread towards the west and then, after the last seal, Christ will rescue but a remnant out of the earth.

This is why it is impossible to pinpoint a specific city. Jerusalem has become a harlot, yes, but is the harlot city strictly Jerusalem? For example:

“On the land my people will come up thorns and briers”

“Yes, on all the happy homes in the joyous city; because the palaces will be forsaken, the bustling city will be deserted. The forts and towers will become lairs forever, a joy of wild donkeys, a pasture of flocks” — (Isaiah 32:13-14)



Here it says that judgment is poured on “the land of my people” and that their “towers” (possibly high-rises or principalities) “become lairs forever”. The word “forever” deserves a pause. If what was meant by this is Israel when the Romans destroyed it, how is it destroyed forever? It is here today. Therefore, every city that supports this debauchery will be destroyed. Forever means forever. This is the end of this world. Having said this, is Jerusalem a place to hide? Better yet, is Jerusalem immune, especially after it kills the two witnesses:

“And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.” (Revelation 11:8)

One cannot evade Jerusalem since the scriptures are very clear:

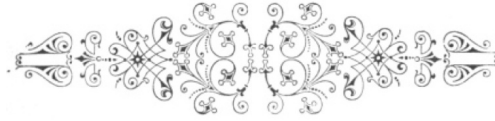
“And in her [the harlot city] was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.” (Revelation 18:24)

Jesus clearly said: “Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets,” so we cannot escape a judgment on Jerusalem since:

For you, brethren, are become followers of the churches of God which are in Judea, in Christ Jesus: for you also have suffered the same things from your own countrymen, even as they have from the Jews: who both killed the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and have persecuted us, and please not God, and are adversaries to all men; prohibiting us to speak to the Gentiles, that they may be saved, to fill up their sins always: for the wrath of God is come upon them to the end. (1 Thessalonians 2:14-16)

The Jews, not only did they kill Christ and the prophets, but will be “adversaries to all men” and “the wrath of God is come upon them to the end.” Such wrath is “to the end” and them being “adversaries” to Christ and Christianity is “to the end” with the exception of the redeemed and what is left in the cities must then be completely be destroyed.

So do we hide in Jerusalem? I think not. History repeats.



## THE ESCAPE OF THE GOOD PRIESTS

THE COMMUNION WILL AND MUST CONTINUE EVEN TO THE END. This act of sacrilege sparks the wrath “destruction from the Almighty” which Daniel warns “will be poured on the desolator” were now there is simply few hours God grants to escape the utter destruction were Christ in Matthew 24 warns the people in Judea not to even take their luggage but simply run to the hills since Jerusalem and even the whole of Judea will be utterly destroyed. But such destruction is not centered on only Israel and neither is this escape in haste is for everyone as Isaiah 52 explains:

“At first my people went down to Egypt to live; lately, Assyria has oppressed them.”  
(v. 4)

“Depart, depart, go out from there! Touch no unclean thing! Come out from it and be pure, you who carry the articles of the Lord’s house. <sup>12</sup> But you will not leave in haste or go in flight; for the Lord will go before you, the God of Israel will be your rear guard.” (v. 11-12)

“You will not leave in haste or go in flight; for the Lord will go before you” is clear that God will send a sign to the good priesthood globally. These will not leave “in haste” as happened in ancient Egypt but are forewarned to give direction to their flock.

So it is likely that Matthew 24 speaks to new Jewish converts in Judea (the conversion of the Jews) instructing these to leave in haste while the seasoned “will not leave in haste or go in flight” these prepared ahead of time as God sends the signs “the Lord will go before you” to be “your rear guard” halting any pursuit of the fleeing sheep as the dragon’s flood is swallowed by the earth.

In those days, where the fallen church is out of touch, nuns and priests, even children will prophecy and guide the flock:

“And it shall come to pass afterward That I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh; your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions. And also on My menservants and on My maidservants I will pour out My Spirit in those days (Joel 2:28-29)

And now we begin to understand Isaiah 26 “Open the gates, that the righteous nation which keeps the truth may enter in.” (Isaiah 26:2)

The purpose of the gathering of the saints is this battle, and it is clearly the same as in Psalm 50:4:

“Gather My saints together to Me, Those who have made a covenant with Me by sacrifice” (Psalm 50:4).

These are the ones who took Communion on the Altar of Perpetual Sacrifice. Protestants argue that the sacrifice is Christ. Of course He is the ultimate Sacrifice, but what then of Abraham? Did He not do a sacrifice as his part of the “covenant?” A covenant “by sacrifice” is the part the saints do. There is no other way to interpret this since “those who” are the saints and the “covenant” by sacrifice, they make, is their part. The Protestant interpreter plays on words and changes the grammar, but there are other examples of this as we shall see later on that leaves no room for ‘wiggle’.

#### WHAT TO DO? JOIN NO ONE

This would not be a time to join any army that fights with weapons:

“If anyone *is destined* for captivity, to captivity he goes; if anyone *kills with the sword*, with the *sword he must be killed*. Here is the perseverance and the faith of the saints.” (Revelation 13:10)

“The perseverance and the faith of the saints” is not in becoming a combatant in any military. We join no side of the conflict. When Christ came He was hated because He refused to join either party be it Roman or Hebrew nationalism. This did not appeal to most and was the main reason the Hebrews chose Barabbas over Christ and were slaughtered

To join the military today makes little sense. No one was invading the US in the Gulf War or the Syrian unrest. The US was simply invading others. A Christian should view the U.S. as Christ viewed the Roman Empire: conversion ground. We are at a spiritual war with the US and our commander and chief declared this war ever since He departed the earth. We obey our rulers and if they forced us to enlist, then enlist but do not complain about your wages and do not massacre civilians and do not be trigger happy. Yet today, people are eager to join sides. But if a side must be chosen, one must answer a serious question: had you been standing on the streets of Jerusalem every time God judged that city throughout history, would you join to fight on the side of the invading Babylonians, invading Assyrians, invading Greeks or invading Romans? Or will you join Israel’s defense forces carrying a six pointed star and fight for Jerusalem when such enemies surrounded it was ordained by God?

Answer: the wise joined none of these and ran to Pella across the Jordan since God caused two earthly vessels to crush each other. Our kingdom is of heaven, not earth.

When God punished Israel, He also broke the punishers. In Isaiah 47 He judged Israel through Babylon, but He also judged Babylon, the very axe and the hammer He used to crush Israel. The Maccabees fought and killed both syncretistic Hellenist Jews and the Greeks who invaded. But the Maccabees were not syncretistic, eugenists or was it a sodomite supporting nation as we have today. And while God allowed the pagan Romans to encompass Jerusalem on all sides, even destroying His stone-temple, He later on destroyed the persistent pagans and converted Rome to Christianity by using a small remnant of converted Jews and Gentiles.

As it was during Christ’s day; chasing after popular and majority opinion is probably the deadliest poison people quickly swallow for these twist the text to match their political aspirations. The world is facing hundreds of divides because the devil is divisive. Does one join a Tea Party and remain silent on homosexual Tea Party members? Christendom has become so diverse that there is nothing worthy of joining except to find that one

homophobic priest to receive Communion. Sure, they say that the priest's sins do not matter, but if you knew the priest is of Sodom who is handling the Bread of Life must you consume and remain silent?

In these awful times, there will not be any party worthy of joining. The instruction is clear:

"Come out of her, my people, so that you will not participate in her sins and receive of her plagues" (Revelation 18:4)

But come out of where? Who is this "her"? Is this a city we must leave? Or is this an entity, a membership we must resign from? Or is it both. This should not be difficult to answer. This is when you can recognize the falling away. This is when you do not participate in syncretism and in supporting Sodom.

There is a time to fight. There is a time to proclaim the truth (now). Then there is a time to run before God unleashes wrath on the world reverted to Sodom. There will soon come a time to flee every major city and head towards the mountains where we are fed out of Mount Zion as God fed the children the Manna from heaven.

#### AVOID ALL EARTHLY WARS AND CIVIL STRIFE

Isaiah's opening summary speaks of God's ultimate goal: His City:

"For out of Zion shall go forth the law, And the word of the LORD from Jerusalem."

"He shall judge between the nations, And rebuke many people; They shall beat their swords into plowshares, And their spears into pruning hooks; Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, Neither shall they learn war anymore."

"Nation shall not lift up sword against nation". This means that the judge, Christ, will come "out of Zion" (from heaven) and what He sees are nationalistic wars on earth. He comes to finally end such wars were nations are fighting against each other.

And this is exactly what was predicted by Christ in Matthew 24 that before He comes there is a prelude to the great persecution and the Abomination of Desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet where He instructs us to head to the mountains:

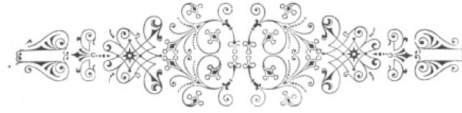
"For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. "All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then they will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name's sake. And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another. Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold. But he who endures to the end shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come. Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the

prophet, standing in the holy place (whoever reads, let him understand), then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.”

Did He say to “join the gay friendly military” or “head to the mountains?” And this is exactly what the first Christians did before Jerusalem was surrounded. This is not an overnight event, but a gradual decay in law and morality were people become completely callous, lawless and oblivious to instruction. The hatred of the police is the beginning of this “lawlessness will abound” and we already see “many will be offended, will betray one another” they become easily offended and if in doubt just watch the news or try reading comment sections to see how people have become fickle, backbiters and slanderers of the first order. The youth of today are easily offended. One cannot even reason with followers of the Black Lives Matter or the LGBTQIRSTUVWXYZ. There is really no sense in debating any issues with these. As 2 Timothy 3:5 warned that they will be evil, covetousness, malicious, full of envy, murders, full of strife, deceitful and malicious. They are gossipers, slanderers, haters of God, insolent, haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, disobedient to parents, foolish, faithless, heartless, ruthless. It does not say to engage these but “from these” we must “stay away.” Romans 1 describes them as:

“Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.”

Today you see these all around. They are without natural affection, untrustworthy since they would snap at anything and they renege on their agreements since they are untrustworthy and lack understanding. Reasoning with these is pointless. They are void of natural affection and are implacable since no one can reason with them and their minds are not easily swayed and their heart is seared. They have no mercy for the righteous and love the unrighteous and while they understand the judgment of God they have pleasure in doing evil since they are “inventors of evil”. These come up with all sorts of ideas on how to change societal norms and are rebellious to authority and support the lawless and hate the ones who keep and protect the law. One must have foresight that this attack on the police will only escalate to a point that city life becomes unbearable.



## REFINEMENT

The way Romans 1 and 2 Timothy 3 describe how people are becoming, it shall become pointless to warn most people you know, that when the time comes you will repeat Lot's story. You shall even warn friends and close relatives who will ignore you and perish in the city. Besides mother-Babylon (Egypt), the daughters comprise global Babylon. From the beginning of Genesis God clearly instructed "to be fruitful and multiply" (the sacrament of marriage) "and fill the earth"<sup>356</sup> (not concentrate in a city).

This refinement in the wilderness after massive destruction due to the plagues and war shall cause an abandonment of city life. This global event has its own set of prophecies that resembles the exodus out of Egypt. The prophecies of the Old Testament are hardly exclusive of Hebrew-Israel. These prophecies deeply involve the Israel of God and have dual application. For example: Isaiah 45 regarding Cyrus, typical commentaries conclude this prophecy was fulfilled with Cyrus the Persian allowing the Hebrews to rebuild their Temple. Yet when one carefully and allegorically reads the prophecy, there are verses regarding the "end" and obviously describe a different Cyrus:

"I have raised him up [Cyrus] to justice, and I will direct all his ways: he shall **build my city**, and **let go my captives**, not for ransom, nor for presents, says the Lord the God of hosts. Thus says the Lord: The **labor of Egypt**, and the **merchandise of Ethiopia**, and of **Sabians**, men of stature shall **come over to you**, and **shall be yours**: they shall walk after you, they shall **go bound with manacles**: and they **shall worship you**, and **shall make supplication to you saying: only in you is God**, and **there is no God besides you**. **Verily thou art a hidden God, the God of Israel the savior.**" (Isaiah 45:13-15)

If this prophecy is exclusively about Cyrus; when was "Cyrus" getting Israel out of the slavery of Egypt ("labor of Egypt") and when was Cyrus worshipped as "the hidden God, the God of Israel the savior"? There is more to prophecy than meets the eye, which we shall explain shortly in detail in the most amazing of prophetic discoveries.

But the key is to closely monitor the shift from *immediate* to *long term*. All prophets show this type of example; a short-term application for Hebrew-Israel and another long term closure for Israel's *continuation* in the church at the end of the age.

Micah 5 for example, is a prophecy that does not only focus on the birth of Christ in Bethlehem, but stretches further into time that when God abandons Hebrew Israel "gives them up" until He defeats the Assyrian (during the era of the Israel of God) who tramples Israel and Christendom. The persecution of this common enemy (the Assyrian) will cause a unification of Gentile Christian with Jewish converts until God sends Orthodox Russia to rescue all (just as happened during the Nazi Holocaust).

Saint Elder Paisios of Mount Athos predicted how Russia rescues Greece and Hagia Sophia where all will do the sign of the cross and be saved. Paisios (like the prophecies at Fatima) did not refer to any verses from the scripture, yet his prophecy is dead on with

---

<sup>356</sup> Gen 1:22, 28, 9:1

Scripture. The redemption of the remnant of Greeks, converted Jews, converted Hindus, converted African Muslims and even the Christians of China (biblical “Sinnim”) comes in. Even in the New Testament, Apocalypse stretches from the seat of Satan (Pergamum) where Satan is defeated when Christ established the Seven Lamp Stands (the Seven Churches of Asia Minor), then moves to Constantine the Great (rider of the white horse), then to the inner civil wars as Lucifer is loosened (red, black, pale horses) and once we tie the minor prophets, the rise and fall of the Ottomans, the two World wars and then re-rise of the Ottomans and their final fall at the Holy City of Constantinople—back to victory at Pergamum where Christ fights “with whirlwind of the south” (Zechariah 9:13) heading to “Ionia” (Greece) to when Mystery Babylon falls and then the New Jerusalem is revealed. None of this can be seen by the patristic fathers because they recognize this sealing of Isaiah, Daniel and John’s Apocalypse was for the time of the end.

There are short-term literal prophecies that pertain to events we view as history, but many of these, also, in an allegoric sense, have a long-term dual application where the prophecy is set for the end while a type of fulfillment is found in history. The first key to understand is this: *Prophecy is multidimensional.*

## THE REFINEMENT PROCESS

We find the refinement in the wilderness in multiple prophecies. For example, when we read Isaiah 7’s popular verse:

“the Lord Himself will give you a sign: behold, the virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and shall call His name Immanuel.” (Isaiah 7:14)

But what about:

“Curds and honey He shall eat, that *He may know to refuse the evil and choose the good*” (v. 15)

The verse might seem insignificant (as to the ends of days) until we run into the “Assyrian”:

“The LORD will bring the king of Assyria upon you ...” (Isaiah 7:17)

And what happens next? Pay attention:

“And it shall come to pass in that day that the LORD will *whistle for the fly* that is in the farthest part of the *rivers of Egypt*, And for *the bee* that is in *the land of Assyria.*” (v. 18)

As we shall see later on more prophecies about who comes out of this literal, yet allegoric “rivers of Egypt” and “the land of Assyria,” when the Shepherd (Christ) whistles and the sheep hears His voice. Usually a shepherd whistles and the sheep can identify the shepherd’s tune to gather His sheep prior to this wolf’s invasion. This exodus is confirmed in greater detail in Isaiah 11. So from Assyria (literal and allegoric) and from Egypt (literal and allegoric), Christ summons His remnant for this massive Exodus:

*“They will come, and all of them will rest in the desolate valleys and in the clefts of the rocks, and on all thorns and in all pastures.”* Isaiah 7:18-19)

Once we unlock Isaiah 11, one can see why it baffled scholars since the prophecy is dedicated to an Exodus that is primarily for remnants coming out of Gentile nations; out of this literal and greater (allegoric) ‘Egypt’ and literal and greater (allegoric) ‘Assyria’.

In the grand scale, it is an exodus out of Babylon the Great (the Harlot) to the wilderness where these shall be visited by the Mother of God. This escape resembles when St. Joseph and St. Mary fled to Egypt prior to Herod persecuting the children of Bethlehem and here, his followers hide for a while in “desolate valleys” and on hilltops and in caves since:

*“In that day the lush vineyards, now worth 1,000 pieces of silver, will become patches of briars and thorns.”* (Isaiah 7:23)

From a spiritual sense, the church turns to “briars and thorns” but this also has a literal sense, in that God curses the earth and farmland to become “briars and thorns” where the remnant depart:

*“With arrows and bows men will come there, because all the land will become briars and thorns.”* (Isaiah 7:24)

This is the massive global starvation where men will migrate to the clefts and the valleys with their weapons since the cities and even farm fields become “briars and thorns” yet they are fed in the wilderness:

*“And it shall come to pass in that day, that a man shall nourish a young cow, and two sheep. And for the abundance of milk he shall eat butter: for butter and honey shall every one eat that shall be left in the midst of the land.”* (Isaiah 7:21-22)

This has a dual meaning, one of which is the same “Curds and honey He [Messiah] shall eat, that He may know to refuse the evil and choose the good” (v. 15). That is, to be like-Christ, a process of refinement for the ones who “shall be left [remnants] in the midst of the land” after much destruction takes place. Likewise will it be for the one who will flee “He may know to refuse the evil and choose the good.”

Now we begin to understand what God meant by “the land of milk and honey” is not an abundance of food, but that for God, in a literal sense, will definitely provide, but allegorically “milk and honey” is to preserve them to do good and abstain from evil. In other words, these become Christ-like “refuse evil and choose good” while remaining “in the midst of the land” as homesteaders “in the clefts of the rock” and “the valleys,” not in the cities or even the farmlands but as a Church in the wilderness. Now we can better understand:

*“The woman fled into the wilderness to a place prepared for her by God, where she is nourished for 1,260 days.”* (Revelation 12:6)

Continuing to chapter 8 of Isaiah we find the master of the tares “the Assyrian” (v.4):



“He [the Assyrian] will pass through Judah, He will overflow and pass over, He will reach up to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings will fill the breadth of Your land, O Immanuel.” (Isaiah 8:8)

This “Assyrian” (son of Lucifer) is not simply the ancient Sennacherib for this one will conquer “the breadth of Your land, O Immanuel”. Is this strictly Judea? Not exactly since:

<sup>6</sup> “Inasmuch as these people have rejected the gently flowing waters of Shiloah and rejoice in Rezin and the son of Remaliah; <sup>7</sup> Now therefore, behold, the Lord is about to bring on them the strong and abundant waters of the Euphrates River,<sup>357</sup> *that is*, the king of Assyria and all his glory; and it will rise over all its channels and go over all its banks. <sup>8</sup> Then it will sweep on into Judah, it will overflow and pass through, it will reach as far as the neck; and the spread of its wings will fill the expanse of your land, Immanuel. <sup>9</sup> “Be broken, you peoples, and be shattered; and listen, all remote places of the earth. Get ready, yet be shattered; Get ready, yet be shattered. <sup>10</sup> Devise a plan, but it will fail; state a proposal, but it will not stand, for God is with us.”

“Be shattered; and listen, all remote places of the earth” includes more than just Israel that rejects the “gently flowing waters of Shiloah”<sup>358</sup> (Christ) and rejoiced in Rezin<sup>359</sup> (their own strength). There is more to this prophecy where God allows the Assyrian who comes with a two hundred million-man army to enter from the Euphrates “strong and abundant waters of the Euphrates River.”<sup>360</sup> This “river” are peoples, multitudes, nations and tongues. It is a massive event since we need to ask: how is Judah’s people twice “shattered” including “all remote places of the earth”?

This “water” (flood) corresponds to the armies of Gog and the two-hundred million man army spoken of by John crossing the Euphrates (Revelation 16:12, 9:14-16). The drying up of the Euphrates is the opening for the way of the “kings of the east” (Revelation 16:12). Many consider this to be China, yet here it says “kings” (plural) are leaders of multiple nations and if one considers east of the Euphrates, we have Iraq, Iran, Afghanistan, Pakistan, India and Indonesia. The latter alone is the largest Muslim population in the world constituting half billion. These today can easily muster such an army of 200 million.

---

<sup>357</sup> Not to be confused with a literal river but an allegoric one “spewed out of the mouth of the dragon” to go after the woman, in a sense is Israel but fails to consume her seed that “keep the commandments of Jesus Christ” (Revelation 12:17)

<sup>358</sup> Shiloah or Shiloh or as we say in our village Shilhhu which means the rightful owner regarding the scepter of Judah: “The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be.” (Genesis 49:10)

<sup>359</sup> Correctly pronounced “Rassin,” Arabic/Hebrew, which means strength. So in essence, Christendom and Israel rely on their military strength and God allows the Assyrian to overcome them by military surprise.

<sup>360</sup> Not to be confused with a literal river but an allegoric one “spewed out of the mouth of the dragon” to go after the woman, in a sense is Israel but fails to consume her seed that “keep the commandments of Jesus Christ” (Revelation 12:17)

But this (200 million man army) is only a fraction of this whole equation since this army is “to slay *the third part of men.*” One third of humanity is 2.5 billion people who perish! Such army is extracted “of the whole world”:

“And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great *river Euphrates*; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the *kings of the east* might be prepared. And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs *come out of the mouth of the dragon*, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, *which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world*, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.”

“And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, loose the four angels which are bound in the great *river Euphrates*. And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay *the third part of men*. And the number of the army of the horsemen *were* two hundred thousand thousand [200 million]: and I heard the number of them. And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses *were* as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone. By these three was the *third part of men killed*, by the *fire*, and by the *smoke*, and by the *brimstone*, which issued out of their mouths.”

It is clear from the prophecy, this army is gathered from the whole earth and is also a judgment on both beast and harlot “And the great city was divided into three parts and the *cities of the nations fell.*” (Revelation 16:19)

This massive war “to slay the third part of men” (Revelation 9: 15) is not simply any war—or is strictly a war involving only Israel—but the most massive war since the inception of humanity that if one considers today’s population this would be 2.5 billion casualties.

The message God was giving is that despite all such turmoil, no matter what the evil one attempts, the church will still stand since the earth swallows the flood spewed from the dragon’s mouth:

“And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and *swallowed up the flood* which the dragon *cast out of his mouth.*” (Revelation 12:16)

This whole process (exodus due to war) becomes clear once all the verses are inductively connected to the rest of scripture, it will all come together. For example, this Assyrian (who is also called Pharaoh of Egypt) is well etched in Zechariah 25 unleashes fury on the harlot:

“Thus the LORD, the God of Israel, said to me: “Take from my hand this cup of the wine of wrath, and make *all the nations* to *whom I send you* drink it. .. *Jerusalem and the cities of Judah*, its kings and officials, to *make them a desolation and a waste* ... *the kings of the coastland across the sea [Europe];* ... *all the kings of the north, far and near* ... and *all the kingdoms of the world that*

*are on the face of the earth* ... For behold, I begin to work disaster *at the city that is called by my name*, and shall you go unpunished? You shall not go unpunished, for I am summoning *a sword against all the inhabitants of the earth*, declares the LORD of hosts.’” (Jeremiah 25:15-38)

As for Israel, prophecy informs: “devise a plan, but it will fail; state a proposal, but it will not stand,” and as for His children it is “for God is with us” since: “*the earth* helped the woman by opening its mouth and *swallowing* the *river that the dragon* had spewed out of his mouth” (Revelation 12:16). It all corresponds to Numbers 24, the Hebrews are struck while the Israel of God is victorious.

Although this prophecy was delivered in the fourth year of Jehoiakim, and its first fulfillment began to be accomplished immediately, but as a type, since the historic fulfillment never covered this much “all the kingdoms of the world that are on the face of the earth”; and it was exactly seventy years from this time to the proclamation of Cyrus for the return of the Jews. “And this whole land shall be a desolation, and an astonishment; and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon *seventy years*.” (Jeremiah 25:11-12) However, what is not paid attention to is the long term application which is hinted in Jeremiah 25:13:

“So I will bring on that land all My words which I have pronounced against it, *all that is written in this book*, which Jeremiah has prophesied concerning *all the nations*.”

It is here that few pay close attention to, as to how these prophecies *extend to the ends of days*. It is similar to what Christ said about Jerusalem “because these are *days of vengeance*, so that *all things which are written will be fulfilled*” (Luke 21:22) and also here God says “For behold, I begin to work disaster *at the city that is called by my name*, and shall you go unpunished? You shall not go unpunished.”

But the battle of Jeremiah 25 is massive “a sword against all the inhabitants of the earth” “from nation to nation” “from the farthest parts of the earth”:

<sup>16</sup> “Bind up the testimony, seal the Law among my disciples. <sup>17</sup> And I will wait for the Lord who is *hiding His face from the house of Jacob*; I will wait eagerly for Him. <sup>18</sup> Behold, I and *the children whom the Lord has given me* are for *signs and wonders in Israel* from the *Lord of armies*, who *dwells on Mount Zion*. <sup>19</sup> When they say to you, “Consult the mediums and the spiritists who whisper and mutter,” should a people not consult their God? *Should they consult* the dead in behalf of the living? <sup>20</sup> To the Law and to the testimony! If they do not speak in accordance with this word, it is because they have no dawn. <sup>21</sup> They will pass through the land dejected and *hungry*, and it will turn out that when they are *hungry*, they will become *enraged and curse their king and their God* as they *face upward*. <sup>22</sup> Then they will look to the earth, and behold, *distress and darkness*, the *gloom of anguish*; and *they will be driven away into darkness*.”

What else could this mean besides what it clearly says, Shiloah departs sealing the law amongst His disciples while the Israel of God await while He hides His face from the literal Israel “house of Jacob” to then surprise the suffering church “*I and the children whom the*

*Lord has given me*” (the seed of Christ) “*are for signs and wonders in Israel from the Lord of armies, who dwells on Mount Zion*” (heaven) to direct Israel and reject their teachings like the Zohar and Kabbalah which teaches to connect with mediums “*should they consult the dead in behalf of the living?*” Yet Hebrew Israel still curse God as they did after the Holocaust.

If we are incorrect about our analysis so far, perhaps the scholars can answer, when was the following fulfilled:

“The waters of the river will dry up, and the riverbed will be parched and dry. The canals will stink; the streams of Egypt will dwindle and dry up. The reeds and rushes will wither, also the plants along the Nile, at the mouth of the river. Every sown field along the Nile will become parched, will blow away and be no more. The fishermen will groan and lament, all who cast hooks into the Nile; those who throw nets on the water will pine away.” (Isaiah 19:5-8)

Isaiah 19 levels punishment not only on literal Egypt, but allegoric Egypt is the harlot Babylon. This is why it becomes impossible for the scholar to file these prophecies into history for it says: “Behold, the LORD is riding on a swift cloud and is about to come to Egypt; the idols of Egypt will tremble at His presence, and the heart of the Egyptians will melt within them.” (Isaiah 19:1)

#### JEREMIAH 49-51 ALSO CONFIRMS THIS SCENARIO

How is it then that Jeremiah 49-51 regarding the destruction of the daughters of Babylon (Israel and Arabia) is fulfilled historically when that future judgment includes the involvement of “Persia” (Isaiah 21) and “Minni, Ararat and Ashkenaz” are clearly the nations of Magog. This is a massive invasion of this “Babylon” where it is destroyed “like Sodom and Gomorrah”?

If Jeremiah 49-51 is regarding Cyrus, how did Cyrus destroy Babylon in this manner (“like Sodom and Gomorrah?”) This is the homosexual supporting Sodom. The results of World War III and the plagues that will continue till the end are catastrophic. We already see the tensions between Ethiopia and Egypt over the Nile.



And it is not just the Nile, only the blind fail to see that the Nile and the Euphrates, both are in the news and both are in the Bible; the Nile drying in Egypt and the Euphrates in the Apocalypse of John is also slowly drying up in Iraq. It becomes clear then that a major drought while it affects the world; it also affects the Muslim world. Experts tell us that the Tigris-Euphrates basin comprising Turkey, Syria, Iraq, and western Iran is in great threat. The Journal of the AWWA, US water management expert Roger Patrick assesses the state of the scientific literature on water scarcity in all the world's main regions, finding that local water shortages are now having "more globalized impacts".

China, India and the US – that together produce half of the world's grain. The question is not whether water shortages will affect future harvests in these countries, but rather when they will do so. Among the big three, dependence on irrigation varies widely. Some four-fifths of China's grain harvest comes from irrigated land, most of it drawing on surface water, principally the Yellow and Yangtze rivers. For India, three-fifths of its grain is

irrigated, mostly with groundwater. For the US, only one-fifth of the harvest is from irrigated land. The bulk of the grain crop is rain-fed, produced in the highly productive Midwestern Corn Belt where there is little or no irrigation.<sup>361</sup>

“A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius ...” (Revelation 6:6) the price of wheat is addressed in Scripture at a silver denarius per quart for a reason. In New Testament times, the silver coin weight was 3.65 grams. A U.S. mint quarter has 5.625 grams of silver. If we take a measure of wheat to be a quart (32 ounces) and the price of wheat in bulk is at an average of \$332 per 2000 pounds (metric ton), which is 32 cents a quart. This is a 10-fold increase and the average bread winner in the Levant area would have to work all day just to get a loaf. Therefore, Jeremiah 25:15 to Jeremiah 25:38 are the “judgment of the nations” and the end of the age: “He has left His lair like the lion; For their land is desolate because of the fierceness of the *Oppressor*, And because of *His fierce anger*.” (Jeremiah 25:38)

The expanse of such an invasion by “the sword of the oppressor” here becomes unquestionable, the Diaspora for both “flock” (church) and “shepherd” (priesthood) which has never yet occurred in history:

“Weep and wail, you shepherds; roll in the dust, you leaders of the flock. For your time to be slaughtered has come; you will fall like the best of the rams. The shepherds will have nowhere to flee, the leaders of the flock no place to escape. Hear the cry of the shepherds, the wailing of the leaders of the flock, for the LORD is destroying their pasture. The peaceful meadows will be laid waste because of the fierce anger of the LORD. Like a lion he will leave his lair, and their land will become desolate because of the sword of the oppressor and because of the LORD’s fierce anger.” (Jeremiah 25:34-38)—also see 3<sup>rd</sup> secret of Fatima.

So it is not only the “oppressor” who punishes, God allows it because He is angry at the world “because of the Lord’s fierce anger.”

Both shepherds and flock will wander in the outskirts of Mystery Babylon (in the wilderness) and God will pursue them and give refuge for an elect, a remnant to be fed in the wilderness after the falling away expressed in prophecy as trusting in the “shadow of Egypt” that is, reverting backwards to paganism as Jeremiah’s prophecy is also confirmed by Isaiah:

“Woe to you, *apostate children*, says the Lord, that you would take counsel, and not of me: and would begin a web, and not by my spirit, that you might *add sin upon sin*: who walk to *go down into Egypt*, and have not asked at my mouth, hoping for *help in the strength of Pharaoh*, and *trusting in the shadow of Egypt*. And the strength of Pharaoh shall be to your confusion, and the confidence of the *shadow of Egypt* to your shame.” (Isaiah 30:2-3)

This prophecy is key. It sheds light as to this allegoric “Egypt” and as we said prior, this “Sodom and Egypt” are big words with magnificent consequences upon the world. This harlot is of the “shadow of Egypt,” in other words, it *mimics* ancient Egypt and brings back

---

<sup>361</sup> Outgrowing the Earth by Lester Brown, Pg. 67-68

ancient Egypt's cult including its persecutions. Ezekiel 32 explains this and Isaiah 10 clearly mentions this "I am bringing a stroke upon thee, that *thou* may see the way of Egypt." (Isaiah 10:24)

#### ISAIAH EXPLAINS THE FALLING AWAY

In essence, what the prophecy says is this: the church will take its treasures and the talents God gave them and invest it in paganism:

"Through a land of hardship and distress, of lioness and lion, of viper and flying serpent, they carry their wealth on the backs of donkeys and their treasures on the humps of camels, to a people of no profit to them. Egypt's help is futile and empty; therefore I have called her Rahab Who Sits Still." (Isaiah 30:7)

How could it be that this harlot is working away depicted on a moving caravan of wealth (gold and treasures) and then is called "Rahab Who Sits Still" (lazy)? When we find a *contradiction* is when we have a *parable*. Parables require wisdom. This is not speaking of the ones who leave this mystery Babylon but remain. This is the lazy servant. This is the "Rahab" (harlot) that sits where still her treasures are spent for lavishness:

"The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication." (Revelation 17:4)

"In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow." (Revelation 18:7)

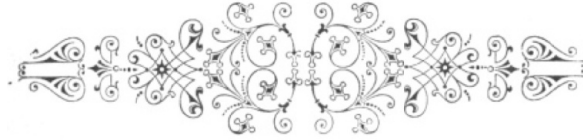
She is not lazy from a worldly sense but reached spiritual bankruptcy, she serves much, that is, to use her talents (treasures God gave) by bringing in the ways of Egypt, that instead of serving God's vineyard she "sits as a queen" lavishly as the "lazy servant":

"You wicked and lazy servant, you knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather where I have not scattered seed." (Matthew 25:26)

"For the kingdom of heaven is like a man traveling to a far country, who called his own servants and delivered his goods to them." (Matthew 25:14) Christ entrusted His vineyard to His servants in His absence for the servant to scatter the seed (not Him): "But his lord answered and said to him, 'you wicked and lazy servant, you knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather where I have not scattered seed.'" (Matthew 25:26) These divorced themselves from the corporate relationship with heavenly Zion. The "lazy servant" fails Him and is taken to darkness (Matthew 25:30) for the proof of a good servant is charity. (Matthew 25:35) Ezekiel 27 depicts the scenario of such falling away as it describes all the merchants of the earth trading with Tyre is symbolic of how the world with its wealth served the Antichrist depicted as "the Prince of Tyre":

“Son of man, say to the prince of Tyre, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: “Because your heart is lifted up, and you say, ‘I am a god, *I sit in the seat of gods*, in the midst of the seas,’ yet you are a man, and not a god, Though you set your heart as the heart of a god” (Ezekiel 28:2).





THE SECOND EXODUS  
THAT BAFFLED THEOLOGIANS  
UNLOCKED

The most dangerous myth that permeates prophecy circles is this: when we read “Israel” it always means “the Hebrew race”. Isaiah 11 is a prophecy out of so many that completely shatters such myth once and for all since it speaks of a Second Exodus: “the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people” (Isaiah 10:11) where God dries up “the seven channels” of Egypt’s Nile Delta so that Israel can cross over dry land:

“And the Lord shall make desolate the sea of Egypt; and he shall lay his hand on the river with a strong wind, and he shall smite the seven channels, so that men shall pass through over dry-shod” (Isaiah 11:15).

Keep in mind, this is a “second Exodus” “the Lord shall set His hand again the second time” (Isaiah 11:11) is massive as when Israel came out of Egypt with Moses. When did this happen?

The Jesus-style question would be this: was this fulfilled for the Hebrews (Jews) in 1948-1967, or is there another future exodus for the Jews? Either answer is a checkmate. When did the Hebrews have a massive Exodus in 1948 out of Egypt? And if this is to be fulfilled in the future; where are the massive numbers of Hebrews living in Egypt? All that, plus Jeremiah 16 is already being used for the return of the Jews to the land:

“but, ‘The LORD lives who brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north and from all the lands where He had driven them.’ For I will bring them back into their land which I gave to their fathers.” (Jeremiah 16:15)

The key here is “back to their land which I gave to their fathers,” this is an obvious literal fulfillment since it speaks of a land and the descendants of Israel. In Jeremiah 16, didn’t God already bring them out of the northwest: Germany and Poland and then Russia (north) back to “the land which I gave to their fathers” and the First Exodus out of Egypt during the times of Moses?

Isaiah 11 fails all theories, especially since Isaiah 11 says that this massive future Exodus is a Second Exodus of Gentiles out of Egypt. Jeremiah 16 is not the same as Isaiah 11, especially that there was no drying up of the sea of Egypt and its seven-channel Delta-Nile and neither did Jewish migrants “pass through over dry-shod” or will they ever do since there is no major distinct Hebrew people living in Egypt.

There is only one key that fits this lock.

And it is here that an example is given how people miss allegory. Today we only have 2 channels at the Delta Nile; five of the channels dried up ages ago and last we heard of the seven channels was from Pliny the Elder (23-79AD).

Did God err? The claimers use this prophecy extensively yet fail because *there is only one key that fits the lock*: this exodus is of the Israel of God (the church, majority Gentile and minority Jew) while the “seven streams” and “the sea of Egypt” is allegoric for the seven heads of Antichrist and Egypt here is the neopagan world.

“And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest [the gentile church] shall be glorious. It shall come to pass in that day That the Lord shall set His hand again the second time to recover the remnant of His people who are left, from Assyria and Egypt, from Pathros and Cush, from Elam and Shinar, from Hamath and the islands of the sea.” (Isaiah 11:10-11)

“In that day” is not speaking of when the Gentiles first converted. This includes a conversion of simple poor Muslims and poor Hindus converted while accompanying Christians just as in the days of Moses when pagan Egyptians converted and accompanied Moses in the First Exodus. It is then “in that day” when this prophecy is fulfilled and here it is as clear as the sun, this massive exodus are GENTILES who are called “ISRAEL.” “The islands of the sea” is likely Great Britain and Targum Jonathan renders “Cush” as “India”. If so, this exodus encompasses the flight of Gentile Christians from the Far East (India, China), the Middle East and as far as Europe where they mostly reside.

11 And it shall come to pass at that time, *that* the Lord shall use<sup>s</sup> a second time His might to redeem the remnant of His people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pattros, and from India, and from Elam, and from Babylon, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea.

India today is resurrecting its paganism like never before while increasingly becoming a hostile anti-Christian beast and in Ireland and England it was persecution against Catholics more than anything. How can we forget St. Thomas Moore? Should we expose the fraudulent Protocols of the Elders of Zion and ignore another hoax: the Fox Book of Martyrs that blamed Catholics for all the phony persecutions? What historian will vouch for Fox Book of Martyrs? Should we discuss at length the Catholic Irish exodus to the U.S., sparked by the Great Famine where Ireland was suppressed by British rule, and left the Catholics unable to own or lease land, or hold a profession? Or is another exodus of Jews coming from Egypt as if Egypt has a noticeable Jewish population? Egypt has a huge faithful Christian population: the Copts.

“it shall be to Israel as the day when he came out of the land of Egypt.” (Isaiah 11:16)

So how do we link this to an exodus out of literal Egypt? These are “Gentiles” that “seek the root of Jesse” and now it is also called “Israel”. It is impossible to unlock this prophecy unless we follow golden rules; God in Isaiah 11, only has a single nation in mind: His. The *Israel of God* includes all the patriarchs from the dawn of time be they Canaanite (Melchizedek), Hittite (Uriah who was more honorable than David), Roman (the Centurion who had greater faith than all of Israel) Jew or Greek. In addition, unless we understand how God uses allegory, we are doomed to failure. Isaiah 11 was not speaking about a general exodus out of Egypt. He was using an allegory how His people dwelt in an allegoric Egypt: the Harlot. Even Christians fleeing earthly Jerusalem applies, since John switched her name during such times to “Sodom and Egypt” that murders the Two Witnesses just as Jerusalem murdered Isaiah and Zechariah and every other prophet while they claim their books. John says that earthly Jerusalem is Egypt. Should we not pay close attention? The tares are set up for destruction. The prophecy even makes it clear; it is for a mainly Gentile Church and not for a Jewish haplogroup. So many err (I did) in making such prophecies exclusively for the twelve tribes of “Israel”. So lets now carefully examine the prophecy:

“And the Lord shall make desolate the sea of Egypt; and he shall lay his hand on the river with a strong wind, and he shall smite the seven channels, so that men shall pass through over dry-shod” (Isaiah 11:15)

Again, rivers and seas are “peoples nations and tongues” (Revelation 17:15) and the seven channels are the seven-headed beast which God calls this one Antichrist as “Pharaoh” and “monster of the seas” in Ezekiel. The geography of the world is a prophetic map that represents its destiny. Ancient Egypt has always been a symbol of paganism, slavery and bondage. Indeed, this is how God portrayed Egypt on hundreds of occasions. The seven Delta channels are also symbolic of the seven mountains “the five have fallen, one is and the other has not yet come” (Revelation 17:10). Five channels are dried up, a fact that reveals how amazing this prophecy is.

Today we have two channels left, just as the sixth and the seventh heads of Revelation 17 “was” and “are not yet” and are the “second beast [which] looks like a lamb with two horns and speaks like a dragon” (Revelation 13:11). Perhaps the Red Sea is symbolic of the serpent and parting it during the First Exodus at its neck, God was watching the severing of Satan’s head.



The God of the Bible is filled with surprises and fulfills His prophecies in remarkable ways. Today we only have two channels headed towards the White Sea into what westerners call the Mediterranean. Egypt also has a Red Sea. Perhaps these have a relation with the red and white horses where from Arabia (Islam) and Egypt (paganism) came the destruction of mankind. Babylon's destruction, after all is heard at the Red Sea (Jeremiah 49:21) might also be a reference of this allegoric Egypt.

But this Mystery, Babylon the Great, is much bigger than anyone thought, that once unleashed and God does not shorten the time, no flesh would be saved, that while the destruction of the mother—Israel plus Arabia—when the latter its destruction is heard at the “red sea” in Jeremiah 50, the destruction of the *daughter* is heard throughout the entire world:

“They seize their bow and javelin; They are cruel and have no mercy. Their voice roars like the sea; And they ride on horses, marshalled like a man for the battle against you, *O daughter of Babylon.*” (Jeremiah 50:43)

“At the shout, “Babylon has been seized!” *the earth is shaken*, and an outcry is heard among the nations.” (Jeremiah 50:46)

Christ came out of Nazareth (a city of rejects) living by the sweet Sea of Galilee and the Jordan (the baptismal water) flows from the Sea of Galilee into the Dead Sea, symbolic of Christ bringing life to the dead.

So here comes Isaiah to shatter everything that was taught about making the name “Israel” strictly synonymous to the 12 tribes of Israel. We can never exclude gentile Christians out of it. One (the gentile) is grafted into the other (Israel) and the two become one in the church. Yet the tare separates them while claiming that the wheat exercises Replacement Theology; a libel that the tare is guilty of the very thing he slanders since he made zero provisions for the church.

Correct interpretation gives God all credit whether He uplifts the Hebrews or others. To God even at the time of Moses there was neither Jew nor Egyptian. His people, both Jew and Egyptian, during the era of Moses were also the Israel of God:

“A mixed multitude went up with them also, and flocks and herds—a great deal of livestock.” (Exodus 12:38)

The first Exodus was minority Gentiles and majority Israelites as *one people*. God even instructed Moses to make provisions for these:

“And when a stranger dwells with you and wants to keep the Passover to the LORD, let all his males be circumcised, and then let him come near and keep it; and he shall be as a native of the land. For no uncircumcised person shall eat it.” (Exodus 12:48)

“And if you are Christ's, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.” (Galatians 3:29)

It did not matter one iota what DNA haplogroup the faithful were.

#### THE GREAT CHRISTIAN EXODUS

No Christian can dispute; Isaiah 11 is the rescue mission, which includes God's people who follow the 'root of Jesse' (the Messiah), whom Isaiah says: "the gentiles seek" (not the Jews):

And in that day there shall be a Root of Jesse, Who shall stand as a banner to the people; For the Gentiles shall seek Him, and His resting place shall be glorious." (Isaiah 11:10)

Then we have the stunning summary of the prophecy in verse 16:

"And it shall be to Israel as the day when he came out of the land of Egypt" (Isaiah 11:16, translated from the Septuagint).

*"As the day when he came out of the land of Egypt,"* leaves no room for any wiggle; this "as" means 'in a similar fashion' to the original. The prophecy ends up being for the Church. And we can never understand this prophecy unless we accept, that to God, there is only one spiritual Israel of all times from Abraham forward.

It is the rule of the *two*. According to God there are only two exoduses. Therefore, God already declared it: the recreation of the state of Israel is not one of these. This is a second Exodus of God's faithful; "it shall be" [in the future] "that Israel" [the spiritual Israel, the church] "as the day when" [in the past], ancient faithful Israel (Israelites and Egyptian) was rescued "when they came out of the land of Egypt". "My people in Egypt" are here primarily "gentiles" who seek the root of Jesse. Isaiah calls them "Israel" and then He says that God will rescue this "Israel" as He did in the past with Moses, but this time out of greater Egypt (the harlot), which John said "Come out of her my people, lest you suffer in her plagues".

This is the case even if we take translations from the Masoretic text: "There will be a highway for the remnant of His people Who will be left from Assyria, As it was for Israel in the day that he came up from the land of Egypt." (Isaiah 11:16, translation from MTT)

So the rescue will be "as it was for Israel," in other words, this highway for the remnant who lived through the persecution of this Antichrist called the Assyrian, who are left in Iraq, Iran, India, Egypt and Turkey shall be as God saved the Jews during the times of Moses. While these prophecies are allegories, they do have a dual nature. Now we can even comprehend Isaiah 19 when the mass civil unrest begins:

"And it will be for a sign and for a witness to the LORD of Hosts in the land of Egypt; for they will cry to the LORD because of the oppressors, and He will send them a Savior and a Mighty One, and He will deliver them." (Isaiah 19:20)

"And the LORD will strike Egypt, he will strike and heal it; they will return to the LORD, and He will be entreated by them and heal them." (Isaiah 19:22)

Egypt was Christian Copt in its entirety before Islam. This rescue mission is primarily out of global Egypt when the Christian begins to feel the pinch of Antichrist "they will cry to the Lord" and God will send them "a Savior and a Mighty One". This dual prophecy is hinted by Isaiah 27:

“So it shall be in that day: the great trumpet will be blown; they will come, who are about to perish in the land of Assyria, and they who are outcasts in the land of Egypt, And shall worship the LORD in the holy mount at Jerusalem.” (Isaiah 27:13)

And here is our Jesus-style question: Did God 1—order “the great trumpet” to “be blown” in 1948 when Israel became a state and then all came to worship on the Temple Mount at Jerusalem or 2—did Isaiah, Ezekiel and John prophesy of a revival of an Israel-Sodom? Did God make null-and-void His Jerusalem coming from above when this “great trumpet will be blown” and now elevated Sodom and Egypt instead?

Only one key fits: use it.

We used to consider this prophecy exclusively regarding Israel’s Diaspora of the Jews returning back to Israel. But the Jews of modern Israel did not primarily flock out of Assyria and Egypt but Europe and later on Russia. So “Israel” here is the Israel of God. Israel in many prophecies is synonymous with the church stolen and re-interpreted by tares. Therefore, depending on the context, we must never read the Old Testament without applying New Testament rules. The New Testament was primarily addressing the people of God and the Israel of God. While there exists Coptic Christians in Egypt (Israel of God) this is speaking of all of his people, the remnant faithful church. So this “Egypt” while it will also include Egypt’s Copts (the most ardent Christians on earth), it is not strictly Egypt, but a world becoming Egypt (again see Isaiah 19). In Isaiah 26, God even addresses the harlot:

“Open the gates, That the righteous nation which keeps the truth may enter in.” (Isaiah 26:2)

“For He brings down those who dwell on high, The lofty city; He lays it low, He lays it low to the ground, He brings it down to the dust.” (Isaiah 26:5)

Is this speaking of a rescue mission for earthly Israel which is “Sodom and Egypt”? The tares are being set up from the pit leading them to the pit.

## THE SECOND EXODUS (WHERE TO ESCAPE)

Christ instructs:

“As you fled from the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah. Thus the LORD my God will come, and all the saints with You” (Zechariah 14:5)

You must be in Azal (separated) and “thus the LORD my God will come”. In other words, Christ comes to only the ones who do not join the corrupted splits on the mount of harlotry. And then He says that this escape must be as when the faithful fled as they fled during the days of king Uzziah. This is key. So what happened at that earthquake? In the first century, the Jewish historian Josephus wrote that this biblical quake served as part of the rebuke to King Uzziah of Judah when in his pride he attempted to burn incense to the Lord in the Temple in Jerusalem.<sup>362</sup> Even the Scriptures document the story, this was a task that only

---

<sup>362</sup> Antiquities of the Jews, Book IX 10:4

the priests were to perform. When Uzziah became angry with the priests who withstood him, God struck Uzziah with leprosy on his forehead:

“But when he was strong, his heart was lifted up to his destruction: for he transgressed against the LORD his God, and went into the temple of the LORD to burn incense upon the altar of incense. And Azariah the priest went in after him, and with him fourscore priests of the LORD, that were valiant men: And they withstood Uzziah the king, and said unto him, It appertaineth not unto thee, Uzziah, to burn incense unto the LORD, but to the priests the sons of Aaron, that are consecrated to burn incense: go out of the sanctuary; for thou hast trespassed; neither shall it be for thine honour from the LORD God. Then Uzziah was wroth, and had a censer in his hand to burn incense: and while he was wroth with the priests, the leprosy even rose up in his forehead before the priests in the house of the LORD, from beside the incense altar.” (2 Chronicles 26:16-19)

Uzziah was cursed with leprosy on his forehead. This very act, symbolizing when Antichrist enters the temple and then after marking his Protestant acolytes (who are not consecrated priests), they receive the sores for taking this mark as we see in Revelation 16:2, 11:

“So the first went and poured out his bowl upon the earth, and a foul and loathsome sore came upon the men who had the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image.” “They blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and did not repent of their deeds.”

The two types match. And in Amos chapter one it links the whole issue when he speaks of Uzziah’s earthquake:

“For behold, the LORD command, and he will smite the great house with breaches, and the little house with clefts.” (Amos 6:10)

The punishment of defiling the temple has a greater application with the church:

“Who drink wine from bowls, and anoint yourselves with the best ointments, but are not grieved for the affliction of Joseph.” (Amos 6:6)

How was ancient Israel “not grieved for the affliction of Joseph”? Joseph was taken as a slave in Egypt done by the other children of Israel. In this case the church suffers in the greater Egypt (the paganized world), and God inflicts Egypt symbolized by Christ threshing it for not caring for the suffering of Joseph because it preferred to entertain syncretism:

“Woe to you who are at ease in Zion, and trust in Mount Samaria, notable persons in the chief nation, to whom the house of Israel comes!” (Amos 6:1)

The “chief nation” is speaking of Rome where the Israel of God went to be fed but was not. The church leaders will be appointed by secular governments and slowly become syncretistic while they ignore the suffering of their flock which is being massacred. Orders of mass



killing includes a prohibition on even conducting proper burials (demanding cremation) and even religious funerals would be prohibited:

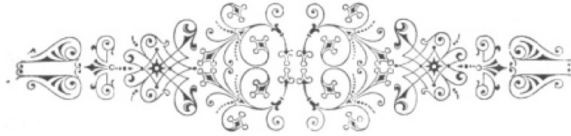
“And when a relative of the dead, with one who will burn the bodies, picks up the bodies to take them out of the house, he will say to one inside the house, “are there any more with you?” Then someone will say, “None.” And he will say, “Hold your tongue! For we dare not mention the name of the LORD.” (v.10)

Even during the plagues, as they cremate bodies, to even mention the name of Christ in a funeral will be completely prohibited. And now we understand why in Isaiah 1 it says: “your hands are full of blood”:

“Offer sacrifice no more in vain: incense is an abomination to me ... and when you stretch forth your hands, I will turn away my eyes from you: and when you multiply prayer, I will not hear: for your hands are full of blood.” (Isaiah 1:13, 15)

God will no longer accept the Communion from these faithless and only accept it from the ones who separate themselves from the wicked. This ensures His church *continues* since the “gates of hell shall not prevail against it”.





## THE CONVERSION OF MUSLIMS BY CYRUS THE GREAT

How could Cyrus convert Muslims when Islam came twelve centuries later?

With massive wars and persecutions and destructions what remains of the world will finally come to conversion. Just as Isaiah 11 become impossible to unravel unless a Second Exodus of primarily Gentiles is understood, Isaiah 45, when read carefully becomes impossible to strictly and exclusively be attributed to ancient Cyrus:

“I have raised him up to justice, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and let go my captives, not for ransom, nor for presents, says the Lord the God of hosts. Thus says the Lord: The labor of Egypt, and the merchandise of Ethiopia, and of Sabians, men of stature shall come over to you, and shall be yours: they shall walk after you, they shall go bound with manacles: and they shall worship you, and shall make supplication to you saying: only in you is God, and there is no God besides you. Verily thou art a hidden God, the God of Israel the savior.” (Isaiah 45:13-15)

“See, they will come from afar— some from the north, some from the west, some from the region of Aswan” (Isaiah 49:12)

Here we find the fulfillment of Numbers 24 “And Edom shall be an inheritance, and Esau his enemy shall be an inheritance” so we also have Sabeans “men of stature” (Arab princes and kings) including Egyptians and “Cush” come “bound with manacles” (a sign of penance) all these fall down and make supplication and worship the greater Cyrus who is the Christ saying: “Truly You are God” and “only in you is God, and there is no God besides you.”

Therefore, the title “anointed” (Messiah) could never be proper for a mortal man like the ancient Cyrus whom God said of him: “I have named you, though you have not known Me” (v.4).

The key in unlocking the mystery of Cyrus is in the name. Cyrus has been the topic of discussion amongst historians, linguists, and scholars who conclude that the name Cyrus is Persian "kuruš" meaning "the Sun" Greek Κῦρος, Kȳros, Persian Kūruš, Elamite Kuraš, Babylonian Kuraš, Aramaic and Arabic kwrš.<sup>363</sup>

The historic Cyrus assisted the exiles of God’s people (Israel) on an Exodus from Babylon to rebuild the temple. But this was the historic Exodus and a close examination reveals Isaiah 45 mimics Isaiah 11: a dual prophecy with a Grand Exodus of primarily Gentiles.

This becomes impossible to refute, especially since one cannot have a Cyrus without an Exodus, for this was the primary reason of Isaiah 11’s prophecy. In addition, did God give a messianic title “My anointed” to a righteous pagan?

---

<sup>363</sup> See ancient Greek historians Ctesia and Plutach, Artaxerxes 1. 3

Not exactly, “My anointed” is a title strictly reserved for Christ and in this case Christ’s Second Coming. The prophecy was not strictly speaking of Cyrus (which means the sun), but ultimately the Messiah, who also has the title “the sun” as in Malachi 1 and Psalm 84:

"But unto you who fear my name the Sun of justice shall arise" (Malachi 4:2).

“For the LORD God is a sun and shield; The LORD will give grace and glory; no good thing will He withhold From those who walk uprightly.” (Psalm 84:11)

Isaiah 45 was ultimately designed to address the plan of salvation for Muslims and others when Christ returns.

But there is more. Now that we solved this dilemma, let us get to the Muslim creed: “there is no God but Allah,” yet here, it is “there is no God besides you” (the other Sun, Christ).

Therefore, this part of the prophecy is not regarding the historic Cyrus. God ordained the name Cyrus (who rescued Israel out of Babylon) the title “sun” as a clue to the One Who also brings the exiles out Babylon; that is this “Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and the Abomination of the Earth”. One is a small (Cyrus) and the other is a Grand Cyrus (Christ).

It all adds up, two comings; one is humble, the other is grand, two Israels; one is the small tribes of Israel and the other includes a remnant from the grand Gentile nations, two CyruSES; one small “Cyrus” the other is Grand “Christ”, two testaments; one revolves around a small temple, the other is grand, a Temple from Heaven, Mt. Zion, Heavenly Jerusalem, two Jerusalems; one earthly the other heavenly, two Arks; one is God residing in a box, the other is God residing in the most pure of all women, the victorious Eve, St. Mary, two continual sacrificial systems; one is small, temporary animal sacrifices, the other is grand, Christ’s perpetual sacrifice forever ... and we could go on and on.

Unless interpreters recognize the allegoric and the dual nature of prophecy and here Isaiah 45 link to Malachi “the Sun,” they will always be blind leading the blind. To connect the dots and answer why God chose the name “sun,” the clue is in Isaiah 45, verses 1 & 6, which applies the same usage and the perfect connect found in Malachi. First, here is Isaiah 45:

“Thus says the LORD to His anointed, To Cyrus [the Sun], whose right hand I have held—To subdue nations before him and loose the armor of kings, to open before him the double doors, so that the gates will not be shut” (Isaiah 45:1)

“That they may know from the rising of the sun to its setting that there is none besides Me. I am the LORD, and there is no other.” (Isaiah 45:6)

“From the rising of the sun to its setting” is a clue. Cyrus allowed Israel to “open the gates” of the temple to resume animal sacrifices from sunrise to sundown. God later on (after the Hebrews rejected Christ) shuts it and Malachi then prophesied the end of animal sacrifices using the same terminology “shut the doors” and “rising of the sun”:

“Who is there even among you who would shut the doors, so that you would not kindle fire on My altar in vain? I have no pleasure in you,” [Israel] says the LORD of hosts, “Nor will I accept an offering from your hands. For from the rising of the sun even to its setting, My name will be great among the nations [gentiles], and in every place incense<sup>364</sup> is going to be offered to My name, and a grain offering that is pure; for My name will be great among the nations [gentiles],” says the Lord of hosts. (Malachi 1:11).”

The historic Cyrus (the sun) opens the gates for the Hebrews and Christ (the other sun) then shuts these gates and opens them for the Gentiles so that the sacrifice must continue from sunrise to sunset for God’s people (the Church).

This is the transfer of authority to the Gentiles to becoming the custodians of these gates for the rest of humanity to enter. Here God speaks clearly that He will no longer accept the temple’s burnt offerings and a new standard a “better offering” is established with the Eucharist, a pure “grain offering” (as Daniel calls “daily sacrifice”) from sunrise to sunset. That is “from the rising of the sun” is an allegory that after the ascension, Christ fulfills Isaiah 45 to open the door until the setting of the sun (when “the sun” dims and no longer give His light at the end of the world under Mystery Babylon), that until then, one thing is certain, that the Gentiles (non-Jewish Christians) will offer the daily sacrifice the “hidden God” spoken of in Isaiah 45. And if one has difficulty with His name being “the sun” would calling Him “a branch” be an insult making Christ a twig? God forbid.

Therefore, it is the faulty circulated interpretation (which attribute to pagan Cyrus the ultimate title “Messiah”) that is suspect.

Prophecy is written for all times to be our torch to light the way in different eras of history so that for ancient Israel, the prophecies spoke of a rescuing Cyrus and for the second advent, these same prophecies still speak of a rescuing Messiah out of Mystery Babylon:

“I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways; He shall build My city And let My exiles go free, not for price nor reward,” Says the LORD of hosts. (Isaiah 45:13)

These exiles (Second Exodus), Isaiah confirms includes converted Muslims in Egypt:

“And it will be for a sign and for a witness to the LORD of hosts in the land of Egypt; for they will cry to the LORD because of the oppressors, and He will send them a Savior and a Mighty One, and He will deliver them. Then the LORD will be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians will know the LORD in that day, and will make sacrifice and offering; yes, they will make a vow to the LORD and perform it.” (Isaiah 19:20-21)

And how did ancient Cyrus fulfill the prophecy in Isaiah 45 regarding the conversion of the Sabians including Cush and Egypt? Did the ancient Cyrus make them convert to the

---

<sup>364</sup> To avoid the literal sense, Protestants allegorize literals and literalize allegory where the *incense* they render as *prayer* and the *offering* is a personal *sacrifice* of the *self*.

Judaism of the time? No sane person would accept this. And how did Cyrus fulfill the following (which is the meeting of the saints raining from heaven with the redeemed on the converted earth):

“Rain down, you heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness; let the earth open, let them bring forth salvation, and let righteousness spring up together. I, the LORD, have created it.” (Isaiah 45:8)

Now we understand the process how God gains the victory after this bitter journey out of Sodom, Babylon and Egypt. To “bring forth salvation” is not regarding a people who are already saved. The prophecy in Isaiah 45 gives Christ a unique feature: “Verily thou art a hidden God”. Indeed, Christ is likened to the sun not only because His light shines upon a world of darkness, but also the sun is used in prophecy as an allegory of the resurrection and also is an expression of the light of the church. So when the sun grows dark, is an allegory for faithlessness (the falling away in II Thessalonians II) just prior to His second coming. God finally opens heaven and sends help from above. One can exchange the name Kurus with its proper translation from Aramaic “sun” and the message flows in perfect harmony with Malachi’s prophecy regarding “the Sun of Justice” which serves multiple purposes. Cyrus’s campaigns continue all the way to Isaiah 60 to the wedding where He discusses Him saving His bride:

“For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and deep darkness the people; but the LORD will arise over you, and His glory will be seen upon you. The Gentiles shall come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your rising.” (Isaiah 60:2)

Then to Christ God says:

“They all gather together, they come to You; Your sons shall come from afar, and your daughters shall be nursed at your side.” (Isaiah 60:3-4)

What a remarkable description of Christ’s children flocking from all over to gather with Him. God speaks to a corporate entity—The Son, The Saints, the Angels in heaven, the Bride: “call you The City of the LORD, Sion of the Holy One of Israel” (Isaiah 60:14) He reveals to His Son and His bride encouraging: “Lift up your eyes all around and see”. This fulfills: “He shall see the labor of His soul, and be satisfied” (Isaiah 53:11). And what is “the labor of His soul?” Was it not a bride? This is similar to Jacob’s love for Rachel and how he endured the torments of Laban. To the Son, He says of His bride: “The Gentiles shall come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your rising.” And God here addresses the Bridegroom and the Bride as one (a corporate entity). Even at times of darkness, He encourages that His victory will repeat when Kedar (Arabs) and then “the coastlands” (the West) will soon come after. Imagine that wonderful relationship in heavenly Jerusalem as you read Isaiah 60, the promise of a bride for His Son who suffered much to redeem His beloved and the Father kept the promise to prosper His seed. God congratulates and comforts Him saying:

“Lift up your eyes all around, and see: They all gather together, they come to you; Your sons shall come from afar, and your daughters shall be nursed at your side. Then you shall see and become radiant, and your heart shall swell with joy; because the abundance of the sea shall be turned to you, the wealth of the Gentiles shall come to you. The multitude of camels shall cover your land, the dromedaries of Midian and Ephah; all those from Sheba shall come; they shall bring gold and incense, and they shall proclaim the praises of the LORD. All the flocks of Kedar shall be gathered together to you, the rams of Nebaioth shall minister to you; they shall ascend with acceptance on My altar, and I will glorify the house of My glory. “Who are these who fly like a cloud, and like doves to their roosts? Surely the coastlands shall wait for Me; and the ships of Tarshish will come first, to bring your sons from afar, their silver and their gold with them, to the name of the LORD your God, and to the Holy One of Israel, because He has glorified you. “The sons of foreigners shall build up your walls, and their kings shall minister to you; for in My wrath I struck you, but in My favor I have had mercy on you. Therefore your gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day or night, that men may bring to You the wealth of the Gentiles, and their kings in procession.” The glory of Lebanon shall come to you, the cypress, the pine, and the box tree together, to beautify the place of My sanctuary; And I will make the place of My feet glorious. Also the sons of those who afflicted You shall come bowing to you, and all those who despised you shall fall prostrate at the soles of your feet; and they shall call you The City of the LORD, Zion of the Holy One of Israel.” (Isaiah 60:2-14)

So even though “the darkness shall cover the earth” God still repeats His victory and the same peoples who brought to Him at the sole of His feet in the manger; gold, frankincense and myrrh from Kuwait and from Persia and Arabia, these will come again, be blessed and be redeemed. Then He speaks of the gates: “Therefore your gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day or night”. (Isaiah 60:11) The gates were shut (for Israel) and were re-opened for the Gentiles (see Malachi 1). It is all allegorically interpreted. If not, how do we interpret: “You shall drink the milk of the Gentiles, and milk the breast of kings” do male kings have breasts and otters like cows that Christ milks them? But with time, for the wise, we gain much. God promised that Knowledge increases:

“And thou, Daniel, close the words, and seal the book to the time of the end; until many are taught, and knowledge is increased.” (Daniel 12:4).

And so it is with understanding the living words of God, that prophecy is sealed for the time of the end when such knowledge increases. Understanding prophecy is like man’s first attempts to dissect the human body centuries ago. So he thought he had a good grip on the basic functions, yet when centuries passed by, he began to probe further to see that it is way more complex than he previously thought. So then we discover for the first time the inner makings, a complex creature with DNA including the brain, which we can hardly fathom with all its complexities. Then we probe further to only discover a genome containing 20000-25000 genes (3 billion letters). The approximate number of atoms necessary to encode human DNA is 200 billion.

Likewise, when we begin to understand the DNA strand of scriptures, the richness and uniqueness of the Semitic expression chiseled way back in history to prophetically and continually defy all the scholars who simply grasped it as when they initially began to dissect the human body.

So we begin to see multi-layered fulfillments in the double, triple and quadruple applications for each verse or even by using one word and as time pass knowledge increases.

The Bible (as simple as it appears) is so well knitted together to form the full story. Every verse and at times even a single word involve a major prophetic theme.

In the end, we all realize that we cannot simply jump into prophecy without being a surgeon, without comprehending the keys to unlock God's ways to explain His mind and even then we can never in a million years fully explain it as we cannot fully explain the brain or the DNA.

God's ways are not man's ways. Each and every verse has a unique feature like a strand of DNA so intricately tied with the rest of scripture to see how they all glorify God and reveal His plan for the salvation of man. None of us will be able to unravel every detail until after these events are all accomplished.

And so we have so many verses applying to short and then long-term fulfillments that repeat like the regeneration of the cells, all interwoven making them difficult to put in sequential order since they surprise us and revive again and then repeat again. The historic ones seem to repeat so as to fulfill Solomon the Wise "What has been will be again, what has been done will be done again; there is nothing new under the sun." (ECC 1:9)

Ancient cataclysmic events repeat. From Babel and Sodom to Jerusalem surrounded by its enemies, it all repeats from ancient Israel from the seven-headed beasts to the seven eras of Christendom's history. Unless we comprehend such repeats we can never comprehend the prophecies.

Another key in understanding prophecy is to unravel names, words and allegories and the meanings behind using these names and words that pertain to the living.

In scripture we find summaries declared first and detail explained after. And even all this detailed language—with all of its history passed and future—all of its stories—all of its intricate complex DNA—all of its inductive links and cross references—can be stuffed into three words: Christ conquered death.

He is in the Manna. He is the Hidden God which the Sabian confesses to Cyrus "the Sun" that God is in Him (the ultimate Cyrus). So few see this in Isaiah 48. The Bible is God's wonderful gift. Not even the most precious gem, ruby or diamond is worth the discovery of its ancient parchments. It confounded the best archeologist and always in the end silences the ardent critic where for missing a verse, their entire manuals end up in the waste, while scripture stands as an anvil, crushing every hammer. As James Burton Coffman writes:

"All of the doodling engaged in by critics about how many authors produced these chapters, or particularly what dates should be assigned to various chapters, etc., is of no importance at all. The fundamental facts are indisputable, these being: (1) that every line of this great book was printed in the Greek language about 250 years before the Son of God was born, in what is called the Septuagint (LXX) Version. A vast number of the prophecies in Isaiah were fulfilled long after that date, absolutely destroying the critical dictum regarding the impossibility of predictive prophecy; (2) the subject matter, the vocabulary, the style, and the spirit of Isaiah dominate every

paragraph of the whole prophecy; and (3) our Lord Jesus Christ and his holy apostles had the utmost respect for the whole prophecy, right down to this very last chapter, quoting from it, by inspiration adding to it, and by attributing it repeatedly to Isaiah. In our opinion, the critical enemies of the Word of God totally discredited both themselves and their system by their vain efforts to divide and discredit Isaiah.”<sup>365</sup>

Even the Semitic language; where in the West can they find a word that can represent so much? Immanuel is not simply a name, but is regarding it’s meaning: the living “God with us” and even this “God with us” cannot be completely fathomed by man.

The ones who ignored the Old Testament allegory missed Christ and so shall it be in the Second Coming and the Second Exodus. We can never fathom how an observance “Passover” is to be observed “forever” (Exodus 12:14). How do we observe “Passover” in heaven where “eye has not seen” “or has it entered into the heart of man...”

### THE HIDDEN GOD

Now we come to this: “Verily thou art a hidden God” the Muslims will say to Christ (Cyrus) when they convert and will participate in the Christian Eucharist and believe that Christ is “hidden” in the “pure offering”.

This prophecy can never strictly be speaking to earthly Israel; for the core of its message is to the Gentiles “My name shall be great among the Gentiles”. The converted Muslims will participate, indeed, the Egyptians, like the Christian Copts of Egypt, to even offer “incense” to His glorious name “the Sun of Justice” for He delivers them out of the bondage of Antichrist.

The Eucharist and the “incense” are major clues as to who holds the keys. Perhaps even the etymology of Cyrus has much to do with connecting these nations by his name: “kuruš” to Christ and the hidden host, for the English pronunciation misses the goal post, the name starts with a “K” (Kurus) and not a “C” (Cyrus).

Strong’s Definitions [?]

(Strong’s Definitions Legend)

כֹּרֶשׁ Kôwresh, ko'-resh; or (Ezra 1:1-2 (last time)) כְּרֶשׁ Kôresh; from the Persian; Koresh (or Cyrus), the Persian king:—Cyrus.

It is also Arabic for wafer Kurs and Kursiy is the throne of God and Kristus is Christ and Kuru is Baga African for God. The Greek for Eucharist comes from a combination of words — eu charistia — meaning “good thankfulness”.

Yet volumes of anti-Christian material were written contending that Catholics worship a sun-disc. But once we comprehend, all such writings are worthless for the Old Testament itself describes God as “the sun”. “Kurs” which also means wafer (Semitic, Persian), a round crust of bread and even the Manna was “a small round thing” (Exodus 16:14-16).

---

<sup>365</sup> See Coffman Commentaries on the Bible. Isaiah 66.



*o sard*, The sun and moon. قرص, نان *kurs-i nān*, A cake or loaf of bread. א *Kuras*, (pl. of قرصة *kursat*) Crusts. Pastiles. א *karsabat* (from قرصب *q*), Amputating, breaking. א *kursat*, A loaf; a pastil; the holy wafer, the host. قرص زير *kursa-izar*, The sun. א *Kirasat*, (pl. of قرص *kurs*) Crusts of bread.

Children should stop squabbling over the shape of the Manna complaining that it looks round like a sun disk. It should, for He is called by God “the Sun, ” for we do not worship a literal sun, but an allegoric Sun; the Son of God.

### HE IS THE MANNA

Here we will reveal the hidden God, the double use (it is always two) and the amazing allegory. The name manna is said to derive from the question “man hu,” seemingly to mean: “what is it?” but “man hu” also means “who is he?” This is perhaps an Aramaic etymology God had ordained for ancient Israel. The question of the Manna (what is it) is a mystery for Israel and will remain so until He is revealed from the source in Heaven. When we read scripture in Aramaic it gives richness unparalleled to anything written in the common translations provided. For example:

Semitic: טו וַיִּרְאוּ בְנֵי-יִשְׂרָאֵל, וַיֹּאמְרוּ אִישׁ אֶל-אָחִיו מִן הוּא—כִּי לֹא יָדְעוּ, מֶה-הוּא; וַיֹּאמֶר מֹשֶׁה, אֲלֵהֶם, הוּא הַלֶּחֶם, אֲשֶׁר נָתַן יְהוָה לָכֶם לֶאֱכֹלָהּ

Transliteration: wa-ra’u Bani-Israēl wa-amaru Ais Al-achee’o Man Hua kai La ydao Ma-hoa”

English: “and the children of Israel saw [it the manna] and [each] said to his brother Who is He because they did not comprehend what is it.”

This is the other meaning of the verse and is perfectly accurate. They said “man hua” which means “manna it is” but “man hua” also mean: “who is He” for “Hua” also means “He”.<sup>366</sup> So the essence of this manna is life, a living being. What is even more fascinating is when Moses replies:

Semitic: “וַיֹּאמֶר מֹשֶׁה, אֲלֵהֶם, הוּא הַלֶּחֶם, אֲשֶׁר נָתַן יְהוָה לָכֶם לֶאֱכֹלָהּ”.

Transliteration: “Wa-amar Mosheh, Elohim Hua ha-Lehem aser natun Yahweh lakum li-akleh”.

English: “Your God is He, His Flesh, Yahweh gave you to eat Him”.

“Ha-Lehem” while it also means “the bread” in Aramaic and Arabic it also literally means “the flesh” and is where we get His birthplace Bet-Lehem (Bethlehem) the house of meat/flesh. So the text in the ancient mindset can be read both ways and both are perfectly accurate; one is small and the other is great. The last word, “li-akleh” is composed of “li” (so

<sup>366</sup> See Strong’s Hebrew <https://biblehub.com/hebrew/1932.htm>



that you may) “akl” (eat) and the “eh” can either be an “it” or a “him”. So “li-akleh” could also perfectly mean: “that you may eat Him”. But to ‘eat Yahweh’ would not sound logical to an ancient Israelite who does not even know “Who is He” so they translate it to an “it”. Rabbinic Judaism would frown on the translation we provided, yet linguistically, we invite any linguist of the Semitic to dare deny that such translation is absolutely accurate. Christ said to eat Him “this is My body, eat ...” So reading the whole verse, in its grand meaning would be:

“and the children of Israel saw [it] and [each] said to his brother Who is He because they did not comprehend what is it. Moses then answered: Your God is He, in the Flesh, Yahweh gave you to eat Him.”

And there is even more, the wine. In verse 31 in Exodus 16, it even describes the Manna:

Semitic: וַיִּקְרְאוּ בֵּית־יִשְׂרָאֵל אֶת־שְׁמוֹ מִן וְהוּא כְּגֵרֶעַ גַּד לֶבָן וְטַעְמוֹ כְּצַפְיֹחַת בְּדָבָשׁ:

Transliteration: we-qara-u beit Israel et-semu Mn wa-hu-wa ka-zar' gad laban ka-sfeehat<sup>367</sup> bi-dibs

English: And the house of Israel called the name thereof Man[na]: and it was like coriander seed, white; and the taste of it was like round wafers made with grape molasses.

The common translations simply say: “honey” instead of grape-molasses. In ancient times there were two types of what they considered “honey,” one from bees and the other was grape molasses out of Hebron. The Semitic language describes the Manna “ka-sfeeha” (round as wafers) made with “dibs” which is not from bee honey but grape molasses which is still bought from Hebron to this day (see #2 below). So it is not just like “honey” as most translators render the word “dibs,” but round “wafer” and with the “grape” resembles the Body and Blood of Christ. See “Arab. دبس”

---

<sup>367</sup> k-safeeha, like a disc, safeeha literally means round disc and in the Middle East Sfeeha is a disc shaped dough and also means the same as Kurs

דְּבִשׁ with suff. דְּבִשִּׁי m., HONEY [“so called as being soft like a kneaded mass”]. Arab. دَبْس, Syr. دَبْس, id. Maltese *dibsi*, yellow, i. e. honey colour, No verb from which this noun can come exists in the Phœnicio-Shemitic languages; but there is also formed from such a verb, Gr. τριβαίβωσσω to make honey, Od. xiii. 106. Specially it is—

(1) *honey of bees*, Lev. 2:11; 1 Sam. 14:26, 27, 29, 43; Prov. 16:24; 24:13, etc. Used of wild or wood honey, Deut. 32:13; Psal. 81:17, קִצְוֹר דְּבִשׁ אֲשַׁבְּינֶיךָ “with honey out of the rock would I have supplied thee.”

(2) *honey of grapes*, i. e. must or new wine boiled down to a third or half; (Gr. ἔψημα, Lat. *sapa*, *defrutum*, Ital. *musto cotto*;) which is now commonly carried into Egypt out of Palestine, especially out of the district of Hebron (comp. Russel's Natural History of Aleppo, p. 20); Gen. 43:11; Eze. 27:17.

[“*Milk and honey* are often joined together as being delicacies provided by nature, Eze. 8:17; 13:8; 33:3; Lev. 20:24; Num. 13:27; used of very pleasant discourse, Cant. 4:11.”]

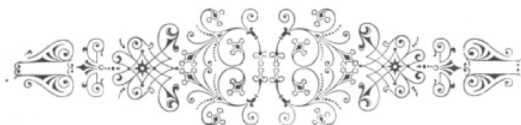
(above notice (2) “honey of grapes” ...“out of Palestine, especially out of the district of Hebron”.)

Is our analysis wrong here? Christ Himself explained this, for in Exodus resides the prophecy and Christ fulfilled it:

<sup>32</sup>“Jesus then said to them, “Truly, truly, I say to you, it is not Moses who has given you the bread out of heaven, but it is *My Father* who gives you *the true bread out of heaven*. <sup>33</sup> For *the bread of God* is that which *comes down out of heaven* and gives life to the world.”

And now we completely understand how this was fulfilled in Christ Who gave His disciples His flesh to eat Him and His blood to drink.

Any questions?



## EGYPT'S MUSLIMS CONSUME THE EUCHARIST

“And it will be for a sign and for a witness to the LORD of hosts in the land of Egypt; for they will cry to the LORD because of the oppressors, and He will send them a Savior and a Mighty One, and He will deliver them. Then the LORD will be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians will know the LORD in that day, and will make sacrifice and offering; yes, they will make a vow [Ndr] to the LORD and perform it.” (Isaiah 19:20-21)

Just like the other prophecies we examined regarding this Second Exodus; the Jews are not the main theme. Isaiah 19 has a grand plan for a global Egypt as well as Egypt itself. The key verse in this amazing prophecy is this: “Then the LORD will be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians will know the LORD in that day.” “In that day” makes it impossible to pertain to the Coptic Christians in Egypt who already know God and these are not Jews but Egyptians which proves beyond any doubt, the “Second Exodus” is for the Gentile Church for it perfectly correlates to Isaiah 11 and Isaiah 45 when the “Sabians” (Arabs) “Cush” (India, Africa) and “Egypt” are converted.

But if one reads the typical modern interpretations on this prophecy one can instantly see how they contradict failing to address the core issue—not just how Egyptians will “know the Lord”—but do “sacrifice and offering” and God is pleased with this: “yes, they will make a vow to the Lord and perform it.”

And it is here where the secret is: the word for vow (sacrifice) in the Bible is *Nzr* pronounced *Nizr*, *Nidhr*, *Nidr* or *Nithr* in Aramaic, Hebrew and Arabic which is the word Matthew uses its root when he said: “He shall be called a Nazarene”. Today in the entire Muslim world they all know “Nzr” is “sacrifice” and they too use the exact word. So how is God pleased with a “sacrificial” offering? Was this perhaps fulfilled in AD 33, when Christianity entered Egypt because of The Apostle Mark? Still yet, why would Mark teach a sacrificial system? Or was it fulfilled when Constantine through the Edict of Milan in 313 ended the persecution of Christians over the course of the 4th century when paganism was finally suppressed? But was it Constantine who “rides on a swift cloud coming into Egypt” (Isaiah 19:1) to defeat “the cruel master” (Isaiah 19:4)?

This is when all Bible literalist have no choice but to allegorize this one—but only when it is convenient—for the tare allegorizes literals and literalizes allegory (and is how you know them) since Christ Himself called literalists “fools” (see Proverbs 1:6-7, (Matthew 13:11,14,15). And this is why none of these interpreters can make the key for the lock for there is only one key that fits.

Christ is “coming on a swift cloud” as the Sun (Cyrus) in Isaiah 45. He is coming to defeat an Antichrist (cruel master) who invades Egypt (see Daniel 11:42) then Christ (The Sun, Cyrus) rescues the Egyptians who “Make sacrifice” and God says “yes, they will make a vow”. God approves.

Translations cannot pack what this one single word “Nzr” means so they state “a vow” as an English term to simply mean “a promise”. Nzr involves much more: a prayer-request (in

Egypt's case it is deliverance from this Antichrist who invaded Egypt, Daniel 11:42). It is then always accompanied with a promise to God if He keeps His end of the bargain (that God shows favor and fulfills the request) then the deal is consummated by the recipient offering a sacrifice, usually a lamb which is explained in Leviticus 22:18, Leviticus 7:16, Leviticus 22:21, 23, Leviticus 23:38, Leviticus 27:2, Numbers 15:3, Numbers 15:8, Numbers 29:39, Deuteronomy 12:6, 12:11, 12:17, 12:26, 23:18 ...

So in the prophecy, you have the prayer request "they will cry to the LORD because of the oppressors" God accepts "and He will send them a Savior and a Mighty One, and He will deliver them" and then Egypt must also keep its end of the bargain: "will make sacrifice and offering; yes, they will make a vow (Nzr)".

It's quite simple. And so in this case, God answers—He delivers them—and the Egyptians in turn comply by keeping their end of the bargain by doing the sacrifice.

Is this prophecy about Egyptians simply offering lambs? Hardly. Once we understand the meaning of the Semitic use and language we can unlock much. When Egypt is converted they will participate in a perpetual sacrifice: the text says "[they] will make 'sacrifice' not 'a sacrifice' or 'sacrifices'. This is the continual, perpetual sacrifice, "forever" which we find in Exodus 12:14 "keep it a feast by ordinance for ever" which the Jews stopped doing and only the Christian does, continuing this even after His Second Coming (it is forever). It is here that we solve the dilemma of so many scholars critiquing Matthew's prophecy of Christ coming out of Nazareth so that it fulfills what the prophets foretold He shall be called a Nazarene from the word Nzr (much more on that later).

In other words, when we examine the prophecy of Ezekiel 32 when all the birds of heaven will settle on ancient Egypt drawing from its carcass (spiritual fountain) while these nations forget God and consume ancient Pharaoh's carcass and compare this to when we combine other warnings from Daniel how Satan desires to "bring an end to sacrifice and offering," Ezekiel's message becomes quite simple to comprehend. It warns about the soul-destroying pagan sacrifices in Satan's city versus the life-giving sacrifice God provides in the Most Holy Eucharist. Daniel clearly states, Antichrist stops the "perpetual sacrifice" which is a stickler for many who weave these prophecies and massage the text insisting a Jewish sacrificial system must revive, including finding a Red Heifer. Yet such interpretation presents another major hurdle; Christ became the sacrifice once and for all and therefore they claim the Hebrew sacrificial system is 'not approved' by God while forgetting that God in Joel approves when the priests lament:

"The grain offering and the drink offering. Have been cut off from the house of the Lord; the priests mourn, who minister to the Lord ... Alas for the day! For the day of the Lord is at hand; It shall come as destruction from the Almighty."

These are priests and not the pastors of some Harvest Christian Fellowship church. Daniel 8:11-12 gives us some serious nuggets to consider:

"Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host, and by him [the prince of the host] the perpetual [Hebrew ha tameed 'continual' sacrifice] was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. And an host was given him against the perpetual sacrifice".

The only “perpetual sacrifice” we know is the Eucharist in Orthodox and Catholic churches. If the Eucharist is only symbolic, as many claim, why then we find so much focus on it as when desecrated not only does earth tremble but heaven itself screams “abomination of desolation?” Why wasn’t such abomination, in lets say desecrating a Bible? Heaven is not shaken at some fellow stepping on a flag or a printed paper; the Eucharist is God’s literal presence; His Temple dwelling with us.

The tares will continue to jimmy-rig every prophecy to fit their heresy, but are never able to perfectly fit their concocted interpretation into the text, for prophecy is like the parable of Cinderella where the shoe only fits her foot, but for her ugly two sisters trying to interpret the shoe will never fit. To these, reading the Bible is reading a set of contradictions. Unless they recognize the difference between the Hebrews and the Israel of God; allegory versus literal; the Eucharist and a cracker, the Bible becomes a contradiction.

This gets us closer to understand the abomination of desolation in the Temple of God.

If Christ shocked the Pharisees by saying that the Temple is His body and not the physical temple; how dare these say that the Temple is now a revival of a ritualistic animal sacrifice on the Temple Mount? This is in itself paganism. After Christ, to revert to the old ways becomes pagan and if a temple is rebuilt with the sacrificial system indeed it is the epitome of paganism regardless that the name of Yahweh is invoked.

Jesus is the New Temple, where God dwells among us, and also the Body, which is sacrificed is central to St John’s Gospel. “Destroy this Temple and in three days I will raise it up” (John 2:19). This is put at the beginning of his Gospel. John says that Jesus was referring to his own Body. John uses the word “*soma*” for “body” in Greek, the same word used by Jesus at the Last Supper for His Eucharistic Body, the Eucharistic “flesh” of Jesus. “The Word was made *flesh (sarx* in Greek)” and Jesus uses the same word “The bread that I shall give is my *flesh (sarx)* for the life of the world.” (John 6:51) This is a prophecy not only of the Incarnation but also of the Holy Eucharist and of the Tabernacle for Christ for He “Tabernacles with us” universally regardless of the multiplicity of places, His Temple (Body) becomes with us. “My flesh is real food and my blood is real drink” (John 6:55), yet the other side says that “My flesh” is not real but allegoric. Only a tare allegorizes literals and literalizes allegory. He is in perpetual reverse like Mecca’s circumambulation going counterclockwise replacing the interpretation of Christ’s perpetual sacrifice with what Muslims do in Mecca still; offer animals.

The mass attack on transubstantiation is in itself evidence. Who today is interested in attacking a non-perpetual, unsubstantiated cracker and alcohol free grape juice, which is the bloodless sacrifice of Cain? Satan only attacks what is genuine.

In other words, the rebellion will reach such an extent that Satan wants to become like Christ and himself as Christ standing in the holy place at the altar dedicating Himself in the Eucharistic sacrifice. Such defiance is the utter abomination that renders the body desolate.

Ezekiel 32 is an amazing prophecy with the same apocalyptic features as the other prophecies “cover the sun with a cloud ...” the syncretistic religion covers the sun (the light of God).

## THE SACRIFICE OF PRAISE

Many who read Hebrews 13:15, skim through thinking its about a singing choir:

“By Him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to His name.”

The Hebrew for “sacrifice of praise” is tôwdâh. This brings us to the Book of Jonah as he is in the belly of the fish:

“But I will sacrifice to You With the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay what I have vowed. Salvation is of the LORD.”

This “voice of thanksgiving” is tôwdâh and this “vowed” is Nzr/Ndr, נָדַר; a primitive root “to promise” “makes a vow” and “thanksgiving (tôwdâh) “sacrifice”. This is the whole crux of the matter where Christ, like Jonah was in the earth (the belly of the wale) and resurrected and obtained us salvation. His instruction is we observe this by Communion.

|  |                               |
|--|-------------------------------|
| Strong's Definitions [?]   | (Strong's Definitions Legend) |
| תּוֹדָה tôwdâh, to-daw'; from H3034; properly, an extension of the hand, i.e. (by implication) avowal, or (usually) adoration; specifically, a choir of worshippers:—confession, (sacrifice of) praise, thanks(-giving, offering).   |                               |
| Gesenius' Hebrew-Chaldee Lexicon [?]   |                               |
| תּוֹדָה f. (from the root יָדָה Hiph.)—(1) <i>confession</i> , Josh. 7:19; Ezr. 10:11.<br>(2) <i>thanksgiving</i> , Psal. 26:7; 42:5. זָבַח תּוֹדָה to offer praise to God (for a sacrifice) Ps. 50:14, 23; 107:22; 116:17 (where the phrase is not to be taken as though proper sacrifices were spoken of). זָבַח תּוֹדָה Lev. 22:29, הִשְׁלֵמִים זָבַח תּוֹדָה Lev. 7:13, 15; comp. 12, and ellipt. תּוֹדָה a sacrifice of thanksgiving, Ps. 50:13.<br>(3) <i>a choir</i> of givers of thanks, praising God, Neh. 12:31, 38, 40. |                               |

It is all about the thanksgiving. Such is the tradition from ancient history. If a man has a prayer request that his wife has a son, and if God provides a son, that man better offer a thanksgiving; a lamb is then slaughtered. We find this throughout history, tradition and in scripture with also the grain offering:

“then he shall offer with the sacrifice of thanksgiving “Towdah” unleavened cakes” (Lev 7:12)

“Besides the cakes, he shall offer for his offering leavened bread with the sacrifice of thanksgiving [Towdah] of his peace offerings.” (v.13)

“he shall offer for his offering leavened bread with the sacrifice of thanksgiving” (v.13), “Offer unto God thanksgiving; [Towdah] and pay thy vows unto the most High” (Psalm 50:14)

These were the most important and common peace offering and leavened bread is inferior since the sinless Christ has not yet come. This was the backdrop for Jesus and the Last Supper. The Hebrew tôwdâh was eucharistia, “thanksgiving” and is how it was viewed from the earliest Christian sources and is how they celebrated the Lord’s meal, the

Eucharist from when the Last Supper Jesus took the bread and wine and gave “thanks” (eucharistia) over them (Luke 22:19). It was commanded to “observe the Feast of Unleavened Bread ... throughout your generations, as a statute forever.” (Exodus 12:14) So if God prophesied “keep it a feast by ordinance for ever” how crucial is this practice? It is because this “sacrifice” (Ndr/Nzr, tôwdâh) is forever. It is a perpetual sacrifice. Jesus brought about a new exodus. So when Jesus told them “Do this in remembrance of me” (Luke 22:19), this act of remembrance is not simply a mental remembrance but the tôwdâh is the exercise of such remembrance recalling in gratitude God’s saving deeds “unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you have no life in you.” How can such a remembrance be void of the act? “And do not forget to do good and to share with others, for with such sacrifices God is pleased” (Heb. 13:16). These are praises and Eucharistic sacrifice and is why in Hebrews 13 it says:

“We have an altar from which those who minister at the tabernacle have no right to eat...”

The Jews at the Temple made animal sacrifice and Paul made a Eucharistic sacrifice. So whenever there is “an altar” there is also a sacrifice (not a choir) and is why this sacrifice is key. If the Eucharist is simply “in remembrance” as if one observes a scene of Christ at the last supper or His Passion: why is it then, that Antichrist “put a stop to sacrifice and grain offering”? It is because such an event is so crucial that it signals the countdown of His return for this practice can never cease, God promised it is “forever” while Satan wants to disprove God’s prophecy. This is why the “grain offering” is called “sacrifice” in several prophecies. If it is simply “praise” as in a choir, why then did not Daniel speak of stopping the hymnals, prayers, or abolish the Bible, or warn us about church demolitions? To Christ, only this one single warning was the crucial one: “that when you see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet” (Matthew 24:15) where Antichrist “will suspend [both] the sacrifice and grain offerings” (Daniel 9:27). We need to heed Christ’s warning.

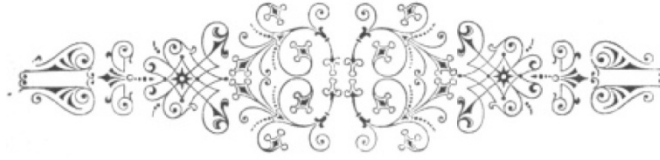
If choosing the wrong spouse is a health hazard, choosing the wrong religion is certain death. But even when one decides on the right religion misinterpreting its recipes is deadlier. Ask Eve the outcome of a wrong interpretation of one verse where she listened to some bad local preacher telling her to take out the word “not” from “do not eat”. And the same goes when Christ says, “eat” and you add the word “not”.

So in conclusion, these prophecies present other greater problems for people who undermine Communion as the sacrificial system incorporated when Egypt is converted since some refer to Ezekiel’s temple and argue that Israel will rebuild the third temple and carryout animal sacrifices in Jerusalem (before and even after Christ returns). How then will the Egyptians do their “daily sacrifice”? Are there perhaps two ‘Ezekiel’ temples, one in Egypt and another in Jerusalem? Keep in mind that the “daily sacrifice” is “daily”.

This is why the Church Fathers were the right Locksmiths where all such new fanciful theories crumble since there is only one perpetual sacrifice and it is initially promised to the Gentiles (see Malachi 1:10-11) which Daniel calls “the daily sacrifice”. All these interpretations wiggle to avoid that the *Communion* is also a *perpetual sacrifice*, Christ’s sacrifice is forever observed as the Passover prophecy when Moses said it: “throughout your generations, as a statute forever” (see Exodus 12:14, 15-20). Do Jews still sacrifice animals? No.

This alone proves beyond any shadow of doubt that if earthly Israel were intended to exclusively being the subject of these prophecies, it would render God to being the liar. Therefore, the god of these people who interpret falsely is The Liar, for they listened to the wrong "Morning Star" since the text clearly says that this statute will be "forever". Satan used the very scriptures when he tempted Christ and quoted the Psalms. Christ understood the correct interpretation. The devil quoted God's words to Eve. Eve failed to interpret correctly and is why we are all in this mess that we are in. So did the prophecy fail? No. Are Egyptians perhaps going to sacrifice Christ on a Crucifix again? Impossible. There are only *two keys*: one fits and the other doesn't. To have the perfectly fitting key one must go to a locksmith, a church father named Mr. Allegory and not some Al Gore.





## THE MOST DIFFICULT PROPHECY U N L O C K E D

Now we come to debunk (what should be a wakeup call for all Protestants), once and for all, the most used argument against the New Testament: Jesus of Nazareth being a Nazarene. The most argued prophecy in history is this:

“And he went and dwelt in a city called *Nazareth*, that what was spoken by the prophets might be fulfilled, ‘He shall be called a *Nazarene*.’” (Matthew 2:23)

Why this one is the most controversial is because the Messianic claim hinges on Jesus being a Nazarene. This verse has been used to confound theologians and no matter what the theologian tried to reason with answers, the archeologist and the scholar will never be satisfied repeating their mantra that: 1—We find no such prediction in the Old Testament about anyone coming out of *Nazareth* and neither was Jesus (who drank wine) a Nazarene (one who fasts from wine). 2—“He will be called a Nazarene” in Matthew 2:23 is written in Greek Ναζαρηνοσ “Nazareinos,” with a “z” from which the English “Nazarene” derived. Yet to claim it fulfills Isaiah 11:1 of being a “Nsr” (Hebrew נצר) of the branch of Jesse, Matthew should have used “Nsr” (Nasareinos) with an “s” which is the Hebrew term meaning “offshoot” the use of the Greek Ναζωραίωσ/Nazoraioσ with a “z” and not an “s” ζ (which is always represented by a σ sigma) makes the link to Isaiah 11:1 invalid since Isaiah 11:1 says that Messiah will be “Nsr” (branch) and not “Nzr”. Therefore, the argument goes that Matthew pulled a fast one out of his sleeve to legitimize Christ as Messiah who was of rejected Nazareth and not of esteemed Jerusalem.

In a nutshell, the scholars found a “z” and no matter what anyone provides—that an “s” is probably intended since the gospel of Matthew was originally Hebrew—it did not matter, even if we had accent differences, to these, this is the hook line and sinker that sinks Christianity, a “z”.

And so here I will give an overdue complete refutation—once and for all—to completely debunk such poor linguistic scholarship—not to convince these—but to equip the weak. And if I may have some sense of humor and sound preachy Jesus has all the answers; today we write “Jesus” even though we pronounce it Jezus with a “z”. Now imagine a couple millennia pass, scholars argue over this, or that the text says “Zion” not “Sion”?

### FIRST UNDERSTAND THE NATURE OF YOUR ENEMY

It is not as if I hate archeology, it is that there are better pursuits in life than to chase dust in the wind, biblical archeology from after Albright had set itself as an enemy of the Gospel. The worst strategy of any battle is not studying your enemy. What an enemy of the Gospel does is simple: throw a carrot and hope the rabbits gather to eat. But do not make it easy, shred and pulverize the carrot through the juicer taking out all the liquid and then sprinkle the dust so that the rabbit spends a lifetime hunting for dust in the wind. The rabbit that

follows such trail never quenches its thirst and then eternally dies. Today they deny even Nazareth existed regardless that they know (the rabbit is ignorant) the Jews wiped it out when they allied with the Persians to kill all the Christians in Nazareth when Sahrparz, general of Chosroes II of Persia around 614 AD conquered Damascus, Galilee, and then Jerusalem killing 90,000 Christians.

The Jews bought the captive Christians for a small sum, and in their wickedness put them to death.<sup>368</sup> The Jews hoped to induce the Persians to cede Jerusalem to them and instead were exiled to Persia fulfilling the prophecy of Zechariah “I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces” (Zechariah 12:3). The enemies destroyed every trace of ancient Nazareth. But despite all this an archeologist (Avi Yonah) found a reference to “Nsrt” (Nazareth) on a chard. Finding the small carrot did not satisfy the critics, the archeologist’s personal background then became a “controversy” and a “hot topic” in order to dismiss his discovery since he does not follow their peer’s goal in making the Bible untrue. If in doubt about what we say here, search on Google and watch the zoo. The enemy of Christianity knows, it is not about fact, but the one who makes the most circulated publications win. They ignore prophecy; the victor in the end is the one who is slaughtered in the beginning.

And if the Pharisees condition and muster the crowds to turn on Christ, today’s bulk majority of revisionist scholars are no different; for they are like the Pavlov dog; he must abide by the behaviorist conditioning in order to be accepted by the academic guild. They enter the hauls of universities by huddling over a carrot called a diploma. But such efforts only fulfill prophecy and prove the scriptures: “For professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.” (Romans 1:22) It really works in reverse and God ordained life this way. Archeologists look for a biblical contradiction (which the Muslim who will slaughter them loves and uses) while ignoring that their own premise; supposedly being a “scholar” and a fact seeker these have an array of supposed facts that contradict. They generate so many different opinions that all contradict and the rabbit then must choose which of the victors makes the least worst sense since no matter what—none of them has the full facts. The idea is this: for the rabbit to continue hunting for the pulverized carrot; he must read through entire essays that contradict each other. The fact is, their contradictions way supersede any supposed problem they found. In reality, once you leave them alone, they are their own worst enemy since they run after their own pulverized carrot more than anyone. With these, no question is ever fully fixed or fully settled and it is always about weighing probabilities since they could not unearth all the pulverized evidence that has been long gone. Most of the carrot (archeological evidence) is *dust in the wind*.

These are earthly; it is like attempting to resolve a crime scene in a court two millennia later by refusing to trust the court documents (the Bible) believing they need to reconstruct the entire case from scratch out of rubble. All court systems globally condemn criminals with only a fraction of the evidence discovered, for if we insist on acquiring every fact we must then release all criminals. Yet out of all the religions, only when it comes to Christianity there is such a demand we prove everything from the miraculous to the historic which is in itself proof of a spiritual battle between two cities; one is earthly and the other is not. To us this should add (not diminish) biblical credibility. In fact, the more these react to the Bible the more evidence we acquire and not vice versa. So to these its best to ignore them parrot to the

---

<sup>368</sup> see Eutychius, Ibn Batrîk, George the Monk, Theophanes, *Byzantinische Zeitschrift*, iii. 343

weak to join their city, for anyone who tried to please them in attempting to connect the words Nazareth to Nazarene (branch) matters little. If one searches the answers to the scholar, to them, these are only attempts. They insist we compare ancient manuscripts to only find variations on spelling. Even Wikipedia pounces on the argument that supposedly baffled theologians for centuries:

“... Nazareth fulfilled a messianic prophecy, which he [Matthew] quotes: "He will be called a Nazarene." However, no such prophecy is found in the Old Testament, or any other extant source. Because of this, the verse has been much studied, and various theories have been advanced attempting to explain the enigmatic quote.”

So when they say: “no such prophecy about Messiah coming from Nazareth is found in the Old Testament” they intentionally use a false premise; what Matthew is saying is that His dwelling in Nazareth *caused* Christ to be called a “Nsri” or “Nzr” which is what the prophets foretold. It is the *latter* word (Nzr) what fulfills the prophets while the first (*Nsrt*) is how destiny made it; that Naserat is not simply a word-name, but the root word from *Nasr* which also means victory and Nasra is “to give victory” is the name from ancient times; *Nsr* (with an ‘s’). So it would be like a Canadian saying Messiah lived in “Victoria” so that He (as the prophets foretold) shall be called “Victorious”. The second word is the fulfillment and the first word is what God designated this city for such purpose. In other words, the enemy fulfills the prophecy by insisting to call Jesus a “Nasarite”. Jewish apologist believing they have a carrot forgets that their sages called Jesus in the Talmud a “Nasri” and by their hatred they continually fulfill the prophecy. Yet (for example) one ignorant Jewish rabbi named Tovia Singer<sup>369</sup> argues:

“A Nazarene, on the other hand, is a person from the city Nazareth. These words may sound alike but in Hebrew, they are spelled differently and are totally dissimilar – one contains the Hebrew letter zayen (נזר), while the other has the Hebrew letter [s] tzadik (נצר).” (Tovia Singer, Jews for Judaism)

So the dilemma is the word “Nsr” (נצר).

First of all, even if we choose the word “Nzr” “He dwelt in the city of “Nazret so that it fulfills the prophets He will be called a Nzr”. This makes it even better for the word “Nzr” truly fulfills more than the word “Nsr” (we will explain more later). Secondly, these ‘experts’ are intentionally ignoring what is meant here. For example: the Peshitta is the ancient Church of the East’s Holy Scripture written in Aramaic. If one looks up Jesus in the Peshitta he finds:

תאלד דין ברא ותקרא שמה ישוע הו גר נחיהי לעמה מן חטהיהון

“And she will bear a son will call his name Jesus (Yeshu’a) for he will save (Yoshia) his people from their sins.”

---

<sup>369</sup> I crossed Canada on a speaking tour driving with Tovia and did rings around the rosie with his faulty theology. He could not find Lucifer in the Old Testament and claimed that Lucifer was an agent for good for his mission was to test Job.

There are no Old Testament prophecies mentioning “Yesh’u”. The text in Greek or English would not make sense since the name “Jesus” and the word “save” are not as in Hebrew, Aramaic or Arabic. But the point of the prophecy is that “Yesh’u” and “Yoshia” are different words that sound similar and mean the same thing: *to save*. The most respected Archeologist was Albright commented on the Aramaic language stating that Nāṣrat was intended. Albright has argued that an assimilation of the middle consonant from “s” ש (צ) to “z” ז (ט) is possible in Aramaic expressions. Jews for Judaism ignore that their own Talmud has it as an “s” in their own two censored traditions about Jesus and his disciples written in the early 3<sup>rd</sup> century and removed in the 15<sup>th</sup> giving an independent witness that the earliest Jewish teaching about Jesus: “On the Eve of Passover, they hung Jesus of Nazareth for sorcery and enticing Israel”.<sup>370</sup> In this text Jesus is called “Ha-Nasri” (The Nasarite with an “s”).<sup>371</sup> So the Talmud itself fulfilled the prophecy that Jesus is called a Nasri. The more they attack, the more they fulfill.

In addition, there is an early reference to Nazareth in a Hebrew list of towns - found in an excavation in Caesarea reading Nsrt (נצראת) with an “s” just as the detractors demand.<sup>372</sup> This discovery according to archeologist Avi Yonah was important since it solved this old dispute once and for all. ‘Nazareth’ in Hebrew was written with an “s” (צ) or with a zayin (ז) made no real difference. The Clear “s” (צ) in the inscription supports the connection of the name with Nsr ‘branch’<sup>373</sup> which fulfills Isaiah 11:1 “A shoot [Nsr] will come up from the stump of Jesse; from his roots a Branch will bear fruit.” (Isaiah 11:1)

This passage has messianic overtones as is evident in the context. The term “Nsr” נצַר (branch, shoot, offspring) also means “to protect,” “to guard,” “to give victory,” “to keep,” and is most certainly the root word of Nazareth (Nsrt). Today no linguist who speaks the Semitic would argue over these meanings. It seems likely, given this information, the Isaiah prophecy is the messianic reference in Matthew 2:23. The Aramaic influence on Hebrew explains why Jesus used Aramaic phrases just as Arabic entered the Modern Hebrew of today. Mishnaic Hebrew differs from Biblical Hebrew as a result of historic developments related to the Hebrew language itself in the Second Temple period.<sup>374</sup>

But we also have Jerome’s account stated that Matthew composed the gospel in Hebrew for the Jews (to the Jew first then the Greek) which was later translated to Koine Greek with the Hebrew Matthew preserved in the library at Caesarea which suffered during the persecutions under the Emperor Diocletian and then destroyed by the Arabs in the 7th century. But to these scholars Jerome’s testimony is in doubt since we have to somehow obtain evidence of a Matthew in Hebrew from the rubble. Today in the whole Middle East including in Israel “Nusri” “Nasiri” (נוצרי) is still the general word for “Christian” while “Nasara” is what everyone calls Nazareth, not with a “z” but an “s”.

---

<sup>370</sup> Instone-Brewer 2012: 20

<sup>371</sup> Ἰησοῦ ἀνοζκου. (ישו הנוצרי). 2x in Av.Zar. 16b-17a).

<sup>372</sup> Avi-Yonah 1981: 757-58

<sup>373</sup> Pixner et al. 2010: 29

<sup>374</sup> see Safrai page 229

<sup>6</sup> G. F. Moore, "Nazarene and Nazareth", in F. J. Foakes Jackson and K. Lake, *The Beginnings of Christianity*, Part I, vol. I (London 1920), p. 428.

<sup>7</sup> Schaefer, *TWNT* IV, 880. Cf. also G. Dalman, *Sacred Sites and Ways: Studies in the Topography of the Gospels*, trans. by P. Levertoff (London 1935), p. 58: "That the name of the place was pronounced not with *Zayin*, but with *Tsade*, can be seen in the *Naserat* and *Naseraya* of the Peshita; it is the direct witness of Jerome in his *Liber interpret. hebr. nom. de Ev. Matth.*, in the relation which he establishes to the Hebrew *naser* (*Ep.* 46 ad Marcellam), in the *Nasrat* of the elegy of the Jewish poet Kalir..., in the Jewish hebraised form *noṣri* for "Nazarean", and in the Arabic *En-nasi-ra* (*en-nasiratu*) of modern Palestine".

<sup>8</sup> Moore, *Beginnings* I, 428.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, 429.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, 427. Cf. also Schaefer, *TWNT* IV, 884 for more examples of such transliteration in the LXX and other Greek versions.

<sup>11</sup> Moore, *Beginnings* I, 428.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, 429f.

Languages are tricky and have different pronunciations. It is here where wisdom enters. Without comprehending the hidden and different meanings and the similarities or difference between two words *Nsr* and *Nzr*, the sheep is shredded by the wolf. So let us build on the first word (*Nsrt*), then the second (*Nzr*). The Christian (forget the revisionist scholar) needs to focus on the use of allegory; it is in the meaning of these words that the prophecy relies. This is after all is what they also claim. They only focus on prophecy when it supposedly aids their view while they ignore every prophecy that condemns them.

So now we come to the difference in meaning this "vow" (*Nzr*) instead of "shoot" "branch" as in "*Nsr*" and understand since words have hidden and deeper meanings in the Semitic language. The scholar has no problem that Matthew was written in Greek and that the language of the time was Semitic Aramaic and in Aramaic, Sabian, Arabic, Syriac, or even Persian, Nazareth is *Nsrt*. Today no one in the East ever called or pronounced that town with a "z" but an "s" just as they say "Sion" or "Sahiun" for "Zion". *Nazareth*, like *Zion*, is not Hebrew but Aramaic with an "s" not a "z". The words are Sion (not Zion) and *Nasra* (not Nazareth). *Nasra* (root *Nsr*) means "victory," "savior" "helper," "advocate," "counselor," "watcher," "defender," "vindicator," al-Naser "God the giver of victory" (see "ناصر" in [Almaany.com](http://Almaany.com)). This perfectly matches "His name shall be called wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God ..." This alone should end the argument, except that Matthew said that He "dwelt in a city called Nazareth, [so] that what was spoken by the prophets might be fulfilled, 'He shall be called a Nazarene.'"

#### NZR IS EVEN A BETTER CHOICE

So now, the whole of the Middle East lost its language, lost every tradition, lost any common sense, and now we only have these western scholars to tell us that we were hit with amnesia and they are going to heal us? And why do I always have to go to my own Arabic dictionaries instead of their abbreviated reference guides that offer meager crumbs?

ناط

1551

ناصر *nāsir*, A defender, an assistant. (God) the giver of victory. A canal; any channel through which water runs, that

(Above: even the Persian dictionary recognizes "Nasr" as "(God) the giver of victory")

When they say that Christians are ‘zealots’ and ‘dogmatic’ it is not true; the scholar who claims open-mindedness now became the bigoted ‘zealot’, so here let us (like the scholar) be dogmatic zealots that Matthew used a “z” for “Nazerene” and gosh ‘it’s the word of God’ and ‘if God used a “z” then by golly it is a “z”’. Let us all for the sake of their argument agree with the scholar it is a “z” and let us see what happens:

“And he went and dwelt in a city called Nasra, that what was spoken by the prophets might be fulfilled, ‘He shall be called a Nzr.’”<sup>375</sup> (Matthew 2:23)

So Nasra and Nzr have no similarity whatsoever (so they say). Fine. Let us go with that and what happens is the scholar’s argumentation falls apart completely to the point that he would later on argue for Nsr as more preferred use instead of Nzr since Nazarene (Nzri) fulfills way much more.

Nazarene is from the root *Nzr* (vow), which compounds a theological concept. From Arabic and Aramaic to Sabians and Persian, Naser mainly pertains to “(God) the giver of victory” while Nzr is primarily a sacrificial lamb.

Then we have Nzr, Nthr “to have vision,” “to watch,” and “Nazur” or “Natur” “watchman” and also “to consecrate”. And how many biblical prophecies do we have on “watchmen”? He dwelt in the city of Watchtower that He will be called a watchman? But a watchman “Nazur” is not someone who only sounds a trumpet; he is a guard who also kills wolves. Some of what ends of “zr” are the same family of words. “A’zr” is “to aid” “to come to rescue” as out of the mouth of a beast, as when in the Passion of Christ in Aramaic Christ says “Elahi Qumma bi-**ezrati**” “Lord, arise to my aid” “be my helper” and is used at moments of extreme agony is where we have names like A’zariah stands for **A’zriahu** (Lord is my helper). Psalm 70 “Make haste to help me, O LORD!” אֱלֹהִים לְהַצִּילֵנִי יְהוָה לְעֹזְרָתִי “Elohim Le-Haselni Yahweh L-Ezrati” Psalm 38:22: “Make haste to help me, O Lord, my salvation!” חוֹשָׁה לְעֹזְרָתִי אֲדֹנָי תְּשׁוּעָתִי: “Ho-Sha le-Ezrati Adoni te-Shu’ati” (also see Psalm 22:19, 27:9, Psalm 35:2, Psalm 38,22, Psalm 40:13, Psalm 40:17, Psalm 44:26, Psalm 46:1) Even Azr (with an “A” aleph) is to aid fulfilling the same Psalms.

HE WAS A “NZR”

---

<sup>375</sup> The Arabic is Ndhr but the Fellahin Arabic of Palestine would be Nzr with a “z” or a “d”—see the First Bible pg. 46. Published by W. Blackwwod



In the cases of Samuel and Samson the unshorn locks are a mark of consecration to God (נזיר אלהים, Judg. xiii. 5) for a particular service,—in the one case the service of the sanctuary, in the other the deliverance of Israel from the Philistines. Since, moreover, the Hebrew root **N-Z-R** is only dialectically different from **N-D-R**, “to vow,” both corresponding to the same original Semitic root (Arabic **N-DH-R**), it would seem that the peculiar marks of the Nazarite are primarily no more than the usual sign that a man is under a vow of some kind. To leave the locks unshorn during an arduous undertaking in which the divine aid was specially implored, and to consecrate the hair after success, was a practice among various ancient nations, of which examples may be seen in Spencer, *De Legibus Heb.*, iii. 1, cap. 6; but the closest parallel to the Hebrew custom is found in Arabia. There the vow was generally

Nzr and Ndr, Nadara both are in the Bible and mean “consecrated” as “a sacrificial vow” for atonement. From ancient Ugaritic, Aramaic, Punic, Jewish Aramaic to Syriac this is what it stands for.

**L 1. Etymology.** There are identical or equivalent verbs corresponding to Heb. *nāḏar*, “make a vow,” in Ugaritic, Imperial Aramaic, Palmyrene, Punic, Jewish Aramaic, Samaritan, Syriac, and Mandaic.<sup>1</sup> The same is true of the noun *neḏer* (more rarely *nēḏer*), “vow, vow offering,” in Ugaritic, Phoenician, Punic, Jewish Aramaic, Syriac, and Mandaic.<sup>2</sup> Old Aram. *nzr*; Arab. *naḏara*, “consecrate,” *naḏr*, “vow, consecrated offering,” *nāḏīr*, “consecrated one,” as well as Sab. *nḏr* I, “make atonement,” together with Heb. → נזר *nzr* niphal, “abstain,” *nāzīr*, “consecrated one,” and *nezër*, “consecration,” raise a difficult problem of historical linguistics: the relationship of the roots *ndr*, *nzr*; and *nḏr*.<sup>3</sup> Akk. *nazāru*, “revile, curse,” Arab. *naḏīra* IV, “warn,” and Sab. *nḏr* II, “warn, threaten,” must also be taken into account.<sup>4</sup>

*Nzr* also has to do with crowning. Leviticus 22:21 and [Deuteronomy 33:16](#) is taken direct from [Genesis 49:26](#) and the crowning of the High Priest is also the crowning of the Messiah:

“The semitic root נזר *nzr* / *ndr* (“withdraw from the customary use”) is behind the Hebrew noun נזר *nezær* “consecration / diadem” and is related With the designation נזיר *nāzīr* “Consecrated / Nasirä” (→ [Nasirä](#) ). From the type נזר *nezær* describes rather the diadem than the closed crown (G. Mayer, 329f.).

Matthew’s one-line prophecy was speaking of a Messiah being anointed as High Priest and King and at the same time being the atonement for sin, which is being a *Nzr* sacrifice. Being *Nzr* is also to be separated. Christ was separated as the only one, unique, as the sacrificial lamb “sacrifice of peace offering” from the rest of his brethren as in Deuteronomy 33:16 uses “separated”—Heb., *nāzīr* of the root *nzr*. This basically covers the entire prophets where one simply has to rewrite the entire Bible to see how Matthew was correct when he said: “to fulfill the prophets”. This was the particular feature in Joseph’s history, when he was “sold into Egypt,” and “separated from his brethren,” is part of the meaning of “Nazarene” when applied to Messiah in [Matthew 2:23](#). And like Joseph who saved Egypt from doom, Christ too in Isaiah 19 will also rescue Egypt from doom which interpreters fail to catch: “He will

send them a Savior and a Mighty One, and He will deliver them” as a favor for housing Him at His need when the Holy Family escaped from Herod paralleling when Egypt helped the Hebrews at a time of need (famine). “To rescue,” is to save and is where we get the term (naṣrāniyy, “Nazarene, Christian”). He rescues the world from the impending destruction. Indeed, Matthew’s one line “that what was spoken by the prophets might be fulfilled” covers everything the prophets foretold which makes this one line so amazing, not “weak” as claimed. Matthew could not have formulated a better verse just as the ancients could not have chosen better names than Bethlehem and Nazareth.

He “dwelt in a city called Nasareth” (Victorious).  
He was born in Bethlehem (the House of the Lamb).  
He was a Nzr (a sacrifice)

So one could say that the Son of God sprouts from the abode of lambs (Bethlehem) to later come out from Victorious (Nasr), this becomes an allegoric hint. Nasra or Nazra (watchtower) is also a stone throw from the Jezreel Valley where watchmen kept an eye to incoming invasions. Christ also has the “victory” against Antichrist at Jizreel. Nasra/Nazra is by the Sea of Galilee, that He will finally bring life to the Dead Sea. symbolizing His “victory” “O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory”.

Even the name Bethlehem can never be fathomed unless we understand its Semitic root; “Beth” is really pronounced “beit/bayt” stands for “house” and Lahm stands for both, “flesh,” “lamb,” and “bread” *combined*. So the town was given that name as providence from God to fulfill a prophecy in the same manner as Nazareth (providence from God) also fulfilled prophecy.

No one could have chosen better fitting names “Bayt-Lhm” (house of meat) for it was the house of His flesh (the lamb) and the house of the Bread of Life. It is why He was born in a manger amongst sacrificial animals since He too was destined to be one. Every hint in scripture has greater meaning.

The dual meaning gives us the hidden—He then gave the disciples the “bread” and said “this is My Body, eat” because He was the *Nzr*: the bread of life and the lamb of sacrifice Who gives salvation to the world.

Names in the Semitic always have a meaning and a message. Unless a westerner spoke an ancient Semite language, they will miss this crucial key and stumble. Unless one understands this, they can never comprehend Matthew who simply said one thing that combines many meanings, one of which is:

“And he went and dwelt in a city called Nsrat (Victorious), that what was spoken by the prophets might be fulfilled, [that] ‘He shall be called a Nzr (Sacrifice).”

Christ Victorious is not only history, Christ dwelling in Nazareth and being a Nazerene is inseparable from its Old Testament antecedents without which we are left with a reductionist view of Christ. We must repeat the sacrificial victory etched in a prophecy few examine the meaning:

“And it will be for a sign and for a witness to the LORD of hosts in the land of Egypt; for they will cry to the LORD because of the oppressors, and He will



send them a Savior and a Mighty One, and He will deliver them. Then the LORD will be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians will know the LORD in that day, and will make sacrifice and offering; yes, they will make a vow (Nzr) to the LORD and perform it.” (Isaiah 19:20-21)

He will send them a “savior” which also means “Nasri” where the Egyptian converts will make “sacrifice” (Nzr). This “Nzr” is the same as in Isaiah 45 “the hidden God” when the Sabians (Arabs) are converted. When it comes to a Nzr (vow) it is not what one thinks of the word in English terms to simply mean “vow” as in “promise”. A Nzr involves much more: a prayer-request (in Egypt’s case it is deliverance from an Antichrist who invaded Egypt). It is then always accompanied with a promise to God if He keeps His end of the bargain (that God shows favor and fulfills the request) then the deal is consummated by the recipient offering sacrifice. The typical modern interpretations miss this prophecy where they instantly contradict each other because they fail to address the core issue: how Egyptians will “know the Lord” and do “sacrificial offering” and God is pleased with this.

He was the sacrifice of victory over sin, the ultimate message given in the beginning of the story of mankind in Genesis. God never intended a Messiah to initially come and defeat the Romans but the sins of all: the Jew and the Roman. And how did Christ obtain this Victory? He became the Sacrificial Lamb. This is why He came out of Victory to be called victorious. In other words, He dwelt in the city of Victory so that by these names, “everything the prophets foretold about Him be fulfilled” being the *Conquering-Sacrifice*. He is the *sacrificial lamb* Who *conquered* death and Hades. And we linguistically apply the same logic with “Nazarene”, Nzr or Ndr, which, means a vow, sacrifice, and promise:

“Now the man Elkanah and all his house went up to offer to the LORD the yearly sacrifice and his vow. [Nidru]”

Keep in mind, the word for “offer” is “Zabach” to “slaughter”. A “Nzr” is a sacrifice. Jacob made a vow:

“Then Jacob made a vow [Nzr], saying, “If God will be with me, and keep me in this way that I am going, and give me bread to eat and clothing to put on, “so that I come back to my father’s house in peace, then the LORD shall be my God.” (Gen 28:20-21)

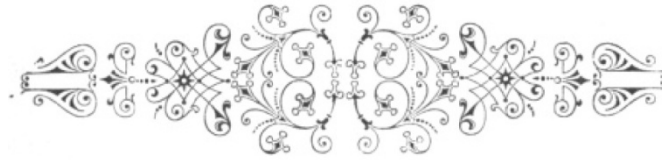
The words become obvious that it is speaking of the living God, He dwelt in Victorious to fulfill everything the Old Testament regarding the King manifest in a temple, residing in the Ark and then proclaimed as the sacrificial lamb. Scriptures are written regarding life itself for even all the living proclaims the things of God.

This is where all such theories crumble since there is only one perpetual sacrifice and it is initially promised to the Gentiles (see Malachi 1:10-11) which Daniel calls “the daily sacrifice”. All these interpretations wiggle to avoid that the Communion is also a perpetual sacrifice, Christ’s sacrifice is forever observed as the Passover prophecy when Moses said it: “throughout your generations, as a statute forever” (see Exodus 12: 15-20).

SECTION VIII:

ST. MARY

AND HER ROLE IN CONVERTING HUMANITY



## PROPHECY CONFIRMS THE THIRD SECRET OF FATIMA

"This Ali Agca," Ratzinger said, in response to a question about the relationship of the Pope to Fatima, "was an absolutely precise marksman. He once said, 'When I fire, the matter is finished.' Therefore, he carried out this attempt with the utmost precision and if the Pope survived, it really was a miracle. The date, May 13, Feast of Our Lady of Fatima, is in itself significant."<sup>376</sup>

In that private gathering, the Pope spoke of a "troubling" message, of predictions of "oceans flooding entire continents, people annihilated suddenly, by the millions, from one instant to the next." "We must be well prepared," the Pope said, "for great trials in the near future, which can even require the sacrifice of our lives." And he explained why he had not made the message public: "If a message announces that millions of people are going to die, one doesn't really wish to have it made public. Many want to know it only out of curiosity, but they forget that knowledge brings responsibility."<sup>377</sup>

The third secret of Fatima mentions the killing of a Pope including cardinals and priests, yet no one links this prophecy to Jeremiah 25:30:

"... he will roar mightily against his fold, and shout, like those who tread grapes, against all the inhabitants of the earth ... disaster is going forth from nation to nation, and a great tempest is stirring from the farthest parts of the earth! ... "Wail, you shepherds, and cry out, and roll in ashes, you lords of the flock, for the days of your slaughter and dispersion have come, and you shall fall like a choice vessel. No refuge will remain for the shepherds, nor escape for the lords of the flock ... For the LORD is laying waste their pasture, ... for their land has become a waste because of the sword of the oppressor, and because of His fierce anger."

"So I will bring on that land all My words which I have pronounced against it, *all that is written in this book*, which Jeremiah has prophesied concerning *all the nations*."

It is similar to what Christ said about Jerusalem "because these are *days of vengeance*, so that *all things which are written will be fulfilled*" (Luke 21:22) and also here God says "For behold, I begin to work disaster at the city that is called by my name, and shall you go unpunished? You shall not go unpunished."

But we already explained in a previous chapter, the battle of Jeremiah 25 is massive "a sword against all the inhabitants of the earth" "from nation to nation" "from the farthest

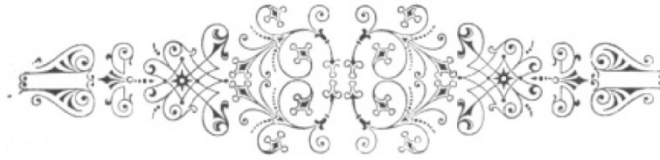
---

<sup>376</sup> EWTN *Is The End Near*

<sup>377</sup> Ibid

parts of the earth” “Bind up the testimony, seal the Law among my disciples” where even priests and cardinals are murdered “*wail, you shepherds*, and cry out, and *roll in ashes, you lords of the flock*, for the *days of your slaughter* and *dispersion* have come, and *you shall fall* like a choice vessel. *No refuge will remain for the shepherds, nor escape for the lords of the flock* ... For the LORD is *laying waste their pasture*, ... for *their land has become a waste* because of *the sword of the oppressor*, and because of His fierce anger”.

While none of these verses were in the “secret” it confirms that Fatima is a genuine prophecy.



## IS THE ARK JESUS OR ST. MARY

“From now on all generations will call me blessed” (Luke 1:48) and if all Christian generations throughout the ages and unto eternity will call her blessed, what would the Protestants eternally call her? While Zechariah (Elizabeth’s husband) could not speak, Elizabeth was hidden for five months then on the sixth month Mother Mary visited Elizabeth who greeted St. Mary with: “But why is this granted to me, that the *mother of my Lord* should come to me?” (Luke 1:43) And we ask a Jesus-style question: is Mary 1—the “Mother” of your God or is she 2—only the Mother of Elizabeth’s God?

While it is impossible for Protestants to scripturally answer this question unless they choose number one (and confess their error) since by choosing number two you just declared that you have the wrong God. If Protestant interpreters cannot consolidate a unified interpretation to one verse, why then trust their ability to interpret thousands of verses?

Ironically, not all protestant commentaries reject the title “Mother of God,” though very rare. For example: Gill’s Exposition<sup>378</sup> shockingly admits: “the virgin is said to be the mother of our Lord, and so may be called the mother of God” while Whedon’s Commentary gets into clear heresy: “Mother of the human nature of the incarnate. But there is something that grates painfully upon our heart as we survey the phrase of the Romish Church, ‘Mary the Mother of God’”. Such false piety and fanaticism against Rome exactly mimics the Jews of Bar Kochba’s day. Another example is Constable’s Expository which even goes into deeper heresy: “Elizabeth meant Jesus, not the entire Godhead. Consequently the Bible never ascribes the title ‘Mother of God’ to Mary. She was the mother of Jesus, who was Elizabeth’s Lord, since He was God.”<sup>379</sup>

---

<sup>378</sup> John Gill (1697 – 1771) was an English Baptist pastor and biblical scholar.

<sup>379</sup> See Expository Notes of Dr. Thomas Constable on Luke 16. But such a view is a heresy: “If anyone does not confess that the Word from God the Father has been united by hypostasis with the flesh and is one Christ with his own flesh, and is therefore God and man together, let him be anathema.” “If any one dares to maintain that the Word of God the Father was God or Lord of the Christ, and does not rather confess that the same was at once both God and man, the Word being made flesh according to the Scriptures, let him be anathema.” (Anathema II, VI, Concilium Ephesenum 431 AD “If anyone does not believe that Holy Mary is the Mother of God, such a one is a stranger to the Godhead.”—St. Gregory Nazianzen (c. 329–390), Father and Doctor of the Church. The council was called in large part to deal with the claim of Nestorius, Patriarch of Constantinople, that Mary should be called Christokos—Christ-bearer—but not God-bearer. Nestorius did not believe Jesus was consubstantial with the Father. Nestorius himself had requested that a council be convened to prove his orthodoxy. The opposite occurred: the Council of Ephesus condemned his teaching as heresy. The council affirmed that Jesus was one person—fully human and fully divine—not two separate people. Unfortunately, a major schism within the Church followed the council’s decisions. Even Protestant reformer Martin Luther acknowledged Mary as Mother of God: “St. Paul says, ‘God sent His Son born of a woman.’ These words, which I hold for true, really sustain quite firmly that Mary is the Mother of God” (Martin Luther’s Works, volume 7).

## THE ARK IS ST. MARY

St. Mary is the Ark that descends in Revelation 11. Without understanding the allegory of the Ark, the tare will miss and reject the rescue mission, for the Ark is the lead subject of Revelation 11-12. It is impossible to attribute the Ark to Christ after carefully examining Psalm 132:

“Lord, remember David and all his affliction! For he swore to the Lord and vowed [Nzr] to the God of Jacob: “I shall not enter to the roof of my house; I shall not ascend to the mattress of my bed ... Until I find a place for Lord and a tent for the God of Jacob”.” (Psalm 132:1-3, 5)

Is this speaking of rebuilding a temple when it says “a tent for the God of Jacob”? No. It is a dual-natured prophecy that ultimately speaks of the human Ark. The psalmist here made a vow (Nzr) not to sleep until “a tent” is built for the Lord where the Lord Himself will reside in it which verse 8 speaks of Christ’s resurrection and St. Mary’s assumption:

“Arise, Lord Jehovah, to your rest, you and the ark of your might!”

Psalm 132:8 completely debunks the notion that the Ark represents Christ. How could Christ resurrect to heaven with the Ark if the Ark was also Christ? Christ has risen and His Ark rising is the human Ark He resided in before His birth. This is His Mother’s Assumption. And just in case one insists this is speaking of the box, verse 11 explains the humanity of this Ark:

“The Lord hath sworn truth to David, and he will not make it void: of the fruit of thy womb I will set upon thy throne.” (Psalm 132:11)

David’s womb will be this “Ark”. And how does David (a male) have a female womb “fruit of thy womb”? Whether Hebrew, Aramaic or Arabic the word for womb is “Beten,” yet the translators were so confounded by this word “womb” being in this context (which should always be for a female) so they simply translated it as “body” in several translations. What right do translators have to make the Hebrew word “Beten” as “body?”

Even the Septuagint kept the integrity of the meaning:

“The Lord swore to Daudid the truth, and he will never annul it: “Of your belly’s fruit I will set on your throne.” (Septuagint translation)

In the Septuagint it’s the Greek word (“koilia”) “womb” as in Luke 1:42 and in the Hebrew it’s “Beten” (womb) and “Beten” here can only mean womb. The Septuagint even pronounced David’s name correctly “Daudid” for the sixth Hebrew letter is not pronounced as “V” (which came from the Jews living in Germany) but “W”/“U” as we did in Bethlehem.

But David had no womb. Mary (the Ark), his descendant did. Mary was of the tribe of Judah and the lineage of David (Psalm 132:11, Luke 1:32). She was connected by marriage with Elisabeth, who was of the lineage of Aaron (Luke 1:36). Jesus is not only the fruit of Mary’s womb; he is the fruit of David’s seed and the fulfillment of Psalm 132 as well. Therefore, the allegory of Psalm 132 is speaking of Christ coming through the seed of

the woman (the Ark) through David and then He ascends and His Mother Sion (chaste, virgin); the Ark that housed Him is assumed to heaven. The Ark was God's dwelling:

"Because Lord Jehovah is pleased in Sion and he chose it a dwelling place." (Psalm 132:13)

God is pleased with Mary "full of grace" "highly favored" (Luke 1:28) and here she is also given the title "Sion" (much more on that later).

Protestants must not contend that the prophecy of a virgin birth only exist in Genesis 3:15 and Isaiah 7:14. By unlocking allegory, the virgin birth is in several prophecies. This is why interpreting the meaning of words is so crucial. In addition, there are usually two fulfillments, one is short-term and the other is long-term. Psalm 132 is intended for the long term human Ark. This is key and a good locksmith knows which is which. So when examining Psalm 132 we need to ask: who does this Ark represent and how does God reside in it and where else in scripture does God speak of it? Is this a box? To the Jews, God is supposed to dwell in an Ark in Jerusalem, not lowly Bethlehem ("Ephrata"), yet the Psalm tells us where to find it:

"Behold, we heard [about] it [the Ark] in Ephrata and we found it in the fields." (v.6)

This confirms the story of the Shepherds told by the angels regarding the birth of Christ in Ephrata (Bethlehem, see Micah 5) where St. Mary (the Ark) was with the God-child.

Without comprehending all this, it is impossible to interpret Revelation 11 which mentions the Ark returning to earth. And since the Ark in Revelation 11:9-12:17 is not simply a box then she is what Revelation 12 says she is: the woman who brought forth the man-child, the God-bearer, Theotokos and the Mother of god, Mother of the faithful. So the verses below now become obvious:

"And the daughter of Sion shall be left as a covert in a vineyard, and as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers, and as a city that is laid waste. Except the Lord of hosts had left us seed, we had been as Sodom, and we should have been like to Gomorrha." (Isaiah 1:8-9)

The Earth supporting Sodom is about to be annihilated. Mary "the daughter of Sion (the virtuous, virgin) is that "covert" "lodge" "tent" (the Ark) and she as mother is sent as helper. When reading from Revelation 11:12 to the end of Revelation 12, it becomes obvious the prophecy is speaking of a human Ark coming to aid just as she did the people of Mexico and converted millions as she comforted the Copts of Egypt at Zeitun preventing a Muslim uprising in Egypt that intended to massacre the Copts. St. Mary will be that covert when the cities are destroyed. Zephaniah 1 speaks on the destruction of all "strong cities". "*Every city was made desolate*; he will *shut up the house so that no one can enter.*" (Isaiah 24:10) It is just as it was in ancient Egypt that the faithful shut the doors that the angel of death does not slay the first born. Yet this is a massive operation since it encompasses the world turned into Egypt: "Look, *the Lord is ruining the world* and *will make it desolate*" (Isaiah 24:1) and the only place to be is in the Islands of the sea:

“Therefore the glory to the Lord will be in the islands of the sea; the name of the Lord will be glorious.” (Isaiah 24:15)

“The LORD reigns; Let the earth rejoice; Let the multitude of isles be glad!” (Psalm 97:1).

To interpret “Islands of the sea” one first must interpret “sea” as peoples, nations, tribes and different tongues. So to be on an “island” on a sea of peoples is to be separate and isolated from the fallen world.

The key is in solving allegories. When God describes the holy, He speaks of the living, not of dead objects. From the early primitive church, from Justin Martyr to Irenaeus onward, this is how scripture was interpreted, allegorically. These were the good Locksmiths. The New Testament fulfilled the Old. So in the Old, an Ark is simply a box unless God resides in it in the New, then this Ark is a living being (St. Mary). The Bread in the Old is simply bread unless God resides in it in the New—then Christ is in it. The Olive is not Christ unless it is used symbolically “He was crushed” (Isaiah 53:5) to obtain the oil to light the lamp, for He is “the light of the world” (Matthew 5:14, John 1:9, John 3:19, John 8:12, John 9:5, John 12:46) and the sun of righteousness. Even the “Nzr” is in Psalm 132 as a promise to crown the Messiah:

“His enemies will I clothe with shame; but upon himself shall his crown [nzt] shine.” (Psalm 132:18)

So psalm 132 now becomes obvious, David made a “vow,” He would not sleep until God finds a place for Him in the Ark and then God responds that out of David’s womb (Mary’s womb) which will be His Ark where He will reside. David’s seed the Messiah then will be Victorious King defeating His enemies and that He and His Mother will rise to heaven:

“Arise, Lord, and come to your resting place, you and the ark of your might.” (Psalm 132: 8)

A Nzr is all about God’s vow:

“The Lord has made a vow (Nzt) and will not change his mind: ‘You are a priest forever.’” Psalm 110.

“And whosoever offer a sacrifice of peace offerings unto the LORD to accomplish his vow (Hebrew: Nzt), or a freewill offering in beeves or sheep, it shall be perfect to be accepted; there shall be no blemish therein.” (Leviticus 22:21)

The Nzr (vow) in Leviticus is a sacrificial vow “offering in beeves or sheep.” God made a “sacrificial vow”. It was the vow that changed history. It was also David’s vow in Psalms 132 before He (Messiah) arose with His Ark (Mary). How else can one interpret the resurrection and the assumption of Mary without understanding allegory?



“Arise, Lord, and come to your resting place, you and the ark of your might.”  
(Psalm 132: 8)

Had the Ark symbolized Christ, we would have two risings of Christ “you [Christ] and the Ark [Christ]”?

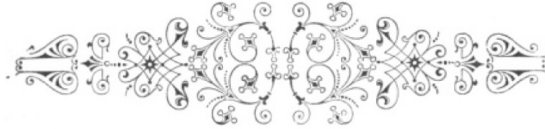
Do we have two Christs?

Do Catholics worship Mary? God forbid. Israel bowed towards the Ark. Did they too worship the Ark? They worshipped God in the Temple Who was upon the Ark. They did not worship the Ark or the two cherubs. They worshipped Who was in the Ark: God.

And is not the “woman” “the Ark” who will be chased by this “red dragon”? She is “the daughter of Sion is left as a booth in a vineyard, as a hut in a garden of cucumbers, as a besieged city. Unless the LORD of hosts had left to us a very small remnant, we would have become like Sodom, we would have been made like Gomorrah. Hear the word of the LORD, You rulers of Sodom; Give ear to the law of our God, You people of Gomorrah” (Isaiah 1:8-10)

There is much to glean from multiple prophecies to gain a picture of what the world will soon look like. From several prophecies we studied so far we see the story of the church fleeing from the onslaught of the beast and this allegoric Sodom and Egypt (harlot) when this beast murders the coming Enoch and Elijah in Jerusalem. We also see the rise of Sodom all around us especially stemming from Israel and American Jews and even amongst many evil Catholic priests. Even the cry against the homosexual abusers and supporters, God addresses as “rulers of Sodom” and “people of Gomorrah”. To add to all this, she is chased by the red dragon (Revelation 12) which she stomps his crescent as the Catholic League did at Lepanto (back to Daniel 11:30) and as when Gideon took the crescent moons from the camels necks in Judges 8. We shall later on share prophecies of the Muslim hordes want to gaze at St. Mary’s beauty as in the story of Holofernes where the Queen Mother brings his head low.

Then we even have biblical prophecies on Antichrist’s aider and abettor—the host who aids these enemies of the church go against the “Daily Sacrifice” (The Eucharist) where the saints are fed in a tabernacle in the wilderness since “the place of his [the prince of the host] sanctuary was cast down”. We even have biblical prophecy on the Third Secret of Fatima where the Pope is even murdered is in the Bible, which stems from the flood from the host against the “shelter,” a tabernacle is set up in the wilderness where the “woman” in Revelation 12, is chased that “the earth swallows the flood” (they fail to stop the perpetual sacrifice) since she flees “into the wilderness where she had a place prepared by God, so that there she would be nourished [fed the Eucharistic sacrifice] for one thousand two hundred and sixty days” (Revelation 12:6). These future events are supported by multiple prophecies as we carefully examined that historically no one addressed, and as we shall further examine what no one has ever considered.



## DEBUNKING JEWISH DENIAL OF THE VIRGIN BIRTH

“And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.” (Genesis 3:15)

“Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.” (Isaiah 7:14)

Here we will dispel the myth of the Jews. The first myth is that there is no enmity between the Jews and the Christians. Well, they deny the Virgin Birth. Even the Muslim does not deny the Virgin Birth. Is this not “enmity” with “the woman”? Which of the two seed are these “I will put enmity between thee [the devil] and the woman [St. Mary]”?

The Jewish contention regarding Isaiah 7:14, they claim uses the word “Alma” (Maiden) instead of Betulah (Virgin). The other myth we will dispel is that we only have two verses in the Old Testament that attest to the Virgin Birth.

Fact is, Protestant interpreters missed so many. Later on we shall reveal just a few verses that speak of the Virgin Birth, but they can only be found once one comprehends allegory, the very issue Christ instructed to do.

### A CRASH COURSE ON THE SEMITIC LANGUAGES

To dispel myths takes homework. In the West, Sion (or as it is misspelled “Zion”) is understood as David’s Fortress. What is not understood is how or why the authors of the New Testament gave the residents of heaven the name “Sion”. To go to Sion is not a holy pilgrimage flying El-Al Airlines to see the Wailing Wall, a stone foundation of a crumbled Temple Christ promised will be no more. Sion is a direct call to God including all His friends who are linked to the meaning of the word Sion. Sion is such a crucial word through of which, God speaks to a corporate entity—The Son, The Saints, the Angels in heaven, the Bride: “call you The City of the LORD, Sion of the Holy One of Israel” (Isaiah 60:14)

So the name “Sion” is so important, yet no Protestant commentary focuses on it. Sion has a crucial meaning regarding the Virgin Birth. Protestants who would object to our analysis here must also object to having to believe in the Virgin Birth with only two verses in the Old Testament, one of which (Genesis 3:15) is completely allegoric.

FIRSTLY: notice here, we did not write “Zion” but Sion. The word Zion in the Bible is always spelled with a Sad (an “S”) in Hebrew and Aramaic and Arabic. Zion should never be spelled with a “Z”. This is significant. Also the word is not even Hebrew:

“Because Zion was originally not Israeli, the name Zion comes to us probably from a language other than Hebrew. HAW Theological Wordbook of the Old Testament mentions an Arabic root s-w-n [s’wn], meaning to protect or defend, which may give Zion the meaning of fortress.” <sup>380</sup>

---

<sup>380</sup> see Etymological Dictionary of Egyptian Vol III, P.p 845

“šwn / Semitic roots Examples of words with the root šwn: Zion. šwn West Semitic, to protect. Zion, from Hebrew šiyyôn, probably originally meaning "stronghold, fortress", and derived from a root akin to Arabic šāna, to protect.”<sup>381</sup>

SECONDLY—Bring all the Hebrew, Aramaic and Arabic scholars to debate the language and they will all admit; the pronunciation of names and places are not exactly intact where they will all agree; the ancients would never say “Zion” or “David” but “Sion” and “Dawid” and even Strong’s pronunciation “Tsiyown”; Sion does not begin with a “T” or a “Z”. To say that Zion starts with a “Z” is laughable. This is indeed the worst spelling which also the Messianic are notorious for pronouncing Christ’s name as Yashua. His name does not end with an “a” but a “aiyn,” which they cannot pronounce yet these insist we correctly pronounce and drop Yesus the Greek way of saying the name.

Germans are to blame since the English, which based this pronunciation on German orthography, where the “s” is always pronounced as [z] (e.g. “zog”) is incorrect. Even the Hebrew experts confirm. Today, hordes of people read the scriptures, and when they run into name locations, they simply pinpoint a geographic location behind each name without searching the meaning or the rest of scripture (especially the New Testament) to see how it relates to the culture and tradition of biblical lands or how these prophecies have a dual fulfillments. So they strictly relate to what they have been accustomed to: Zion is simply a location in the land of Israel.

One might say: “so what”? Why is pronouncing and spelling is crucial?

First of all, the choice of Arabic reveals that God is not a racist; He at times uses Arabic, Aramaic, Greek, and even had people speak in tongues because He wanted to fulfill what was written:

“Is it not written, ‘My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations’? But you have made it a ‘den of thieves.’” (Mark 11:17)

Ancient Judaism unlike modern Judaism was a proselytizing religion and included gentiles from all walks of life who were also included in the Israel of God. Uriah was a Hittite, Simon of Cyrene (al-Qayrawani) was Tunisian and Melchizedek was Canaanite. Israel became nationalistic and were mistreating the court of the gentiles, which angered Christ. The story is also prophetic and regards His anger when our current world turns that direction becoming ultra-nationalists. From ancient Judaism till now, God wanted all to join one single nation: His.

If we may conjecture, perhaps to God the loss of Hebrew for over two millennia was insignificant since God used Israel’s enemies who preserved the Arabic. We would also suspect, it is because He has a plan: to redeem the Muslim world so that they comprehend what Immanuel (the God with us) means.

THIRDLY—today, every Arab knows that while the word Sion does mean, “protect” and “defend,” but also this word is used in a culture that the Bible alludes to, that is to protect

---

<sup>381</sup> see Free Dictionary by Farlex

“chastity” “purity” and specifically “virginity” and is why this is crucial. Scriptures used the word Sion in the context of “Virgin Daughter of Sion”. There is a reason for this. His bride (the church) is to remain virgin, chaste, without blemish and His Ark (the place of His first dwelling on earth) was the belly of the purest of virgins. God promised David that out of his belly Messiah would come. The West translated the word “beten” (belly) to “loin” or “body” and the whole virgin birth in Psalm 132:11 was missed.

Is that not important? They did this because the scholars probably disdained such allegory, that David (really Daud, Dawid) became figuratively pregnant with Christ. The point that God was making is that from David’s seed, a maiden of his descendant will have a virgin birth. And it is these types of allegories westerners ignore.

FOURTHLY—Sion is Arabic as admitted by experts. I am fluent in the language since my upbringing in Bethlehem where I was raised amongst simple shepherds in a time where the beautiful ancient was about to be interrupted and corrupted by the modern. Lowly Bethlehem (south of Jerusalem) linguistically has prophetic significance since the meaning “Lehem” in Aramaic pertains to both “bread” and “flesh,” combined. But such translation makes the Communion as both substances, which upsets certain interpreters who would rather use a booklet translation of words from Strong’s Dictionary.

But the westerner is left with no choice; the Arabic is the only richest lingua-franca that survived in the Semitic world which kept much on how Semites used and understood their languages and culture and is why all Bible commentaries use Arabic to bridge the gap from when Hebrew was lost after Israel’s Diaspora. So the Arabic in a way was a Rosetta Stone God preserved that without, our vision becomes impaired. For example, what commentary will explain Sion to mean this:

“s-w-n (Sion) is regarding the protection of virginity. “lady of royalty and of high stature” used for “protecting chastity” “She has been ‘s-w-n’ [that is] “the maiden has kept her chastity” “a chaste maiden. (singular) from “san,” the lady of chastity. A nickname given to a lady of high stature” “The young maiden is clocked in her ‘s-w-n’; meaning she kept herself chaste”. (see Al-maani Arabic dictionary):

This, they do not document in your dictionaries but is in every Arabic dictionary. So when we (who speak fluent Arabic whether Muslim or Christian) say “daughter of Sion,” Arabic “bint-al-Swn” Hebrew “Bat Syeon” we know exactly what that means that when the two words are combined, it means *the maiden who kept her virginity*. There is no other meaning to this and is why even Muslims (unlike Jews) they do not deny the Virgin Birth. In every wedding when a girl, before she weds, she is introduced as “bint-al-swn” to publicly announce that her bridegroom is getting his girl intact. One cannot divorce the culture from how language was used.

This is why it is by no accident we have in the Bible itself “Virgin Daughter of Sion”, Hebrew “Betula Bat Sion” בְּתוּלַת בַּת-צִיּוֹן Arabic “Al-Batul Bint al-Swn” as a double confirmation *this is a virgin*.

يسمونه "المندبل، أو المحرمة، أو الشاش". وعندها تتطلق الأعييرة النارية والزغاريد احتفالاً وتأكيداً لشرف العائلة، وأن هذه الفتاة بنت الصون والعفاف، ويعود أهلها رافعين "المحرمة" وسط جموع الناس المحتشدة.

واليوم بعد أن التحقت الفتيات بمعاهد التعليم، وخرجن إلى العمل، فقد تغير تفكير

Above is excerpt from Egyptian Women's Issues Between Heritage And Reality: "They call it the cloth. And when the bullets are fired and the wedding sounds erupt, and to ensure the family's honor that this "bint-al-swn" (pure chaste maiden) that her family carry the cloth parading it amongst the crowds"

In fact, in every occurrence anywhere whether scripture or not, this combined two-words are used to always pertain to virginity and with "Betula Bat Sion" בְּתוּלַת בֵּית-צִיּוֹן in the Bible what else do we need to make this point since the Bible itself uses the very word "Betula" which the Jews demand to prove St. Mary's virginity? Such expression is still used from ancient times.

In the middle east (whether Muslim or Christian), we need not enter debates with Jews who denounce the virgin birth arguing over Isaiah 7:14 where westerners forage to find what is meant by "Alma" (maiden), then to only be cornered by Jews belaboring that "Betula," not "Alma" is the word for 'virgin' they then add and insist "we speak Hebrew, you don't!" Our response would be "we speak Arabic and Aramaic and YOU don't". These would never debate such issues with an Arab scholar on the languages for they know they will look like fools.

But our scholars easily refute even this confusion about "Alma" amongst westerners. But to explain it all to a westerner is not easy. To explain a single letter in Aramic or Arabic and how it is used takes a few pages.

But I shall give a summary. First of all, an English speaking person cannot even pronounce the Semitic word "Ghulama" translated as "Alma". In the Bible it is: הַעֲלָמָה, (Ha-Ghulama) which has an equivalent sister word "Fata". A third-grade Arabic speaking knows exactly that either of these words hits two birds with one stone, since "Ghulama" or "Fata" is always a "Virgin" and also pertains to a "Young girl".

maiden

فتاة ، بكر ، شتلة [كيمياء]

(Above from Al-Maani Arabic dictionary, "Fata": "Virgin," "Maiden")

Secondly, the Hebrew "Alma" does not start with an "A" but "Aiyin" as "Ha-A'alma" (הַעֲלָמָה) which is impossible to pronounce in writing since that letter "aiyn" does not exist in the English vocabulary.

Thirdly, the word in scripture is "HaGhulama" one single word: הַעֲלָמָה — "The Young Maiden". The "Ha" is extremely significant here. It means "The". In other words, she is not just any virgin, but "The Virgin" shall conceive. This "The" is so crucial and significant.

For example: "His name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God". The word for Mighty God is Al-Jabbar/Al-Gabbar (Hebrew El-Gebor).

Had it been Jabbar without the "Al" it would be insignificant since the "Al" makes this person as the only one of his kind. Basketball player Karim Abd Al-Jabbar means Karim



(generous) Abd (the Servant) of Al-Jabbar (the Mighty One). He is only a servant of God. Had his name been Karim Al-Jabbar without the “Abd” (servant, slave of) Muslims would have killed him since this basketball player is claiming to be deity.

Now you begin to comprehend how Semites view names.

Therefore, when the ancient text calls the child Al-Gebor (Al-Jabbar), there is no way around this. So “Al-Ghulama” is *The Only Virgin of her kind*. Jewish apologists play word-games that are impossible to defend if they take their arguments to Arab scholars, even if they are Muslim who deny Christ’s deity, they will translate Al-Jabbar to being deity and Al-Ghulama to being The Virgin Maiden. Try it.

Fourthly, the first letter “Ayn” is pronounced as “Gh”. In Modern Hebrew the phonetic value of the letter has changed, or the phoneme has been lost altogether (thus, in Modern Hebrew it is reduced to a glottal stop or is omitted entirely). In Hebrew loanwords in Greek and Latin, ‘ayin is sometimes reflected as “Gh” which is represented in Hebrew writing by the letter ‘ayin’.

For example: Gomorrah is from the original A’mora and Gaza (“Ghazza”) is from the original “A’za” (which no linguist denies) and Jews call it that way till today and so “Ghulama” is A’lma. So the “Ayn” is a “Gh” sounding. This is easily found even on Wikipedia:

“As in Hebrew, the letter [Ayn] originally stood for two sounds, /ʕ/ and /ħ/. When pointing was developed, the sound /ħ/ was distinguished with a dot on top (ע̣), [Gh] to give the letter ghayn [Gh]. In Maltese, which is written with the Latin alphabet, the digraph gh, called ‘ajn, is used to write what was originally the same sound.”

Now if we take this issue and apply it to the entire Bible, it would take much to show how many times Scripture allegorically mentions the Virgin Birth. I spent days with Rabbi Eliezer Ben Yehuda in Florida. He is the grandson of the man who single-handedly revived Hebrew in Israel and I did rings around the rosie with few of these words to show how poorly the Jews of today have a command on that lost language.

What I have explained so far is precisely why the Septuagint interpreted the word “Alma” with “virgin”. What we have as far as meaning from the ancient Hebrew is like looking for a ruin of an ancient city to only find a few stones. One could literally fill a room high of one series of Arabic dictionary to only have a Hebrew or Strong’s dictionary look like a midget.



So when one seriously examines Sion in the Bible in its original intended meaning, it screams virginity in every verse and even uses Betula. And we do not say this being boastful, but how many in the West concentrate on the subject of virginity in scripture when they

cannot even convince their own to keep such virtue? How many sons and daughters of the West were virgin before tying the knot? Today the West scorns virginity. Their women belabor about emulating Christ (God) when they cannot even emulate His mother.

So when one says “virgin daughter Sion” (2 Kings 19:22) from an Old Testament perspective with the New—he would literally be saying “virgin daughter chaste in heaven”. Mother Mary is the prime example; she was literally prophesied, as “Young Virgin” in the Old Testament and Sion is heaven in the New.

But remember, Sion is a corporate entity where God addresses a multitude with one word using it singularly at times and at other times has a double or triple meaning. So when the Bible uses “daughter of Sion” it is also the chaste pure church with their Mother St. Mary and the Son (Christ). Heaven is complex and is why God says “eye has not seen ...”

But many verses say “the virgin” and the “daughter of Sion”; by whom is the church as by “the bride of the lamb” (Rev. 21:2, 9; 22:17) who are also “the seed of the woman” is pertaining to the church with Mother Mary as their mother.

While the goal is always Christ, but had the Church been strictly of the seed of Christ (“he [Messiah] will see his seed [offspring] and prolong his days”) (Isaiah 53:10), why then we also find in Apocalypse 12, it is rendered:

“And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.” (Revelation 12:1, 14,17)

So if this “seed” is the Church who is “her seed”? Seed is plural, not singular. In other words, had the woman been “the church” with only its seed as the sole corporate entity, and then the dragon makes war with the seed’s seed? This would be preposterous. The only way to make the verse fit (to please the detractors) is to say: “went to make war with the seed of Christ”. And if the woman is “Israel,” (as in the Hebrews) how does that seed “have the testimony of Jesus Christ”?

Sion is the whole corporate entity: “But you have come to Mount Sion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are registered in heaven, to God the Judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel.” (Hebrews 12:22-24)

So you come to “Mount Sion”. This is also the kingdom of the Chaste Virgin. Also, how does one come to “the spirits of just men”? To answer our question is to unravel the secrets of heaven. And to give an answer they must first announce they have inner-knowledge and denounce: “Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart of man the things which God has prepared for those who love Him.” (1 Corinthians 2:9)

God prepared Sion. The problem with these is not St. Mary. It is that they claim to fathom the unfathomable and these reject her name being part our connect to heaven yet accept that its gates have the names of the twelve tribes of Israel. We have no problem with such names for they are in the Bible and God ordained it.

This “her seed,” then pertains to the source: the seed of Christ and the seed of St. Mary. God took on flesh, He loves to adopt us as orphans, and He is, after all, the God of adoption. How could this be without having a mother, especially (and can any sane Christian deny)

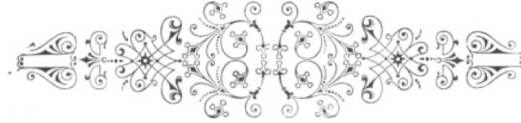
when God Himself, in the flesh chose to have a Mother? If God chose her as Mother why do we reject her as Mother?

And here, God, the Son, speaks on how He was called by His Father from the matrix of His mother (St. Mary):

“Listen, O coastlands, to Me [God the Son], And take heed, you peoples from afar! The LORD has called Me from the womb; From the matrix of My mother He has made mention of My name.” (Isaiah 49:1)

“Take heed” is a serious reprimand. “My name” is a loaded issue that takes books to explain it all. Is it far-fetched to say that “the coastlands,” in Isaiah 49 is Europe’s Protestants who denied that Mary is the Mother of God?





## MOTHER MARY AND THE SECOND COMING

And so now in the next chapters we shall examine “Sion,” (chaste) and here we shall give a couple of examples (out of many) to show how Sion is used for the Virgin Birth then show more on her involvement in helping her seed (the church).

Revelation 11-12 is no small issue. In Isaiah chapter one, the main theme is the war against Sodom, which starts off by telling us that this earth will plunge into Sodom “Hear the word of the LORD, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah.” But two verses before, we have a crucial solution for the saints and is part of this same theme of events with the war on Sodom:

“And the daughter of Sion shall be left as a covert in a vineyard, and as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers, and as a city that is laid waste. Except the Lord of hosts had left us seed, we had been as Sodom, and we should have been like to Gomorrha.” (Isaiah 1:8-9, see also Romans 9:29)

This “daughter of Sion” (chaste virgin) is left as a “lodge” who will come so that we may rest and be protected in the midst of a world under destruction. This links to Revelation 11-12. It is extremely rare to hear of this prophecy as to how it also links to Micah 4 regarding the shepherd’s announcement of the birth of Messiah. This “cucumbers” is only mentioned once in scripture. Being from Bethlehem, this is easily pinpointed, as Bethlehem’s Shepherds Fields was the center of growing this special specie of cucumbers till this day in fields we called “Miqtha” or “Miqsshah” as Strong’s pronounce the word and the “covert” (small tent) to this day is used for the watchman or watch-woman usually a shepherd.

|   |                               |
|---|-------------------------------|
| Strong's Definitions [?]  | (Strong's Definitions Legend) |
| מִקְשָׁה <i>miqshâh</i> , mik-shaw'; denominative from H7180; literally a cucumbered field, i.e. a cucumber patch:—garden of cucumbers. |                               |
| Gesenius' Hebrew-Chaldee Lexicon [?]  |                               |
| II. מִקְשָׁה for מִקְשָׁה, Arab. مِقْشَاة f. denom. from<br>קִישָׁה a cucumber; <i>a field set with cucumbers</i> ,<br>Isa. 1:8.        |                               |

This “tent” in Isaiah 1:8-9 “And the daughter of Sion (the virgin) shall be left as a covert in a vineyard, and as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers” is the “Tower of Edar” (Tower of the Flock, in the Shepherds Fields) where Jacob settled after his wife Rachel died. She is symbolic of The Tower which is one meaning for Sion which till today we use the term that a virtuous woman is like a tower.

Eusebius (AD 265-340) says the tower, 1000 [1480 meters] paces from Bethlehem where Micah 4 says:

“And thou, O tower of the flock [Tower of Edar], the strong hold *of the daughter of Sion*, unto thee shall it come, even the first dominion; the kingdom shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem.” (Micah 4:8)

Micah’s message was direct and hard-hitting: O Bethlehem the stronghold of the Virgin unto you shall come the first residency and the kingdom shall come to Jerusalem. This too is a pronouncement of the Virgin Birth as God’s first residency. The heavens rejoiced when she became pregnant and the Psalms confirmed it:

“Sing praises to the LORD, who dwells in Sion. Declare his deeds among the peoples.” (Psalm 9:11)

This would mean:

“Sing praises to the LORD, who dwells in the chaste virgin. Declare his deeds among the peoples.”

How about:

“Praise is due to you, O God, in Sion; and to you shall vows be performed.” (Psalm 65:1)

This would mean:

“Praise is due to you, O God, in the chaste virgin; and to you shall the Eucharist be performed.” (Psalm 65:1)

The word for “vow” as we discussed previously is “Nizr” is also Arabic, Aramaic and Hebrew, which means sacrificial offering (perpetual sacrifice, Communion) which we also explained. So to Christ the daily sacrifice is dedicated, the Holy Communion. The King then is born out of chaste virgin Sion:

“Out of Sion, the perfection of beauty, God shines forth.” (Psalm 50:2)

This would mean:

“Out of the chaste virgin perfection of beauty [Messiah] shines forth”.

Messiah is Perfect. She was the “tent” (covert) and “the Ark” in Psalm 132. Yet in the previous prophecy (Isaiah 1:8-9) this “tent” becomes our lodging when the earth is being destroyed and God will send help:

“May he send you help from the sanctuary, and give you support from Sion” (Psalm 20:2).

He sends help from “Sion” (the chaste Virgin). He also sends help from the Virgin Chaste from heaven to also rebuild the church:

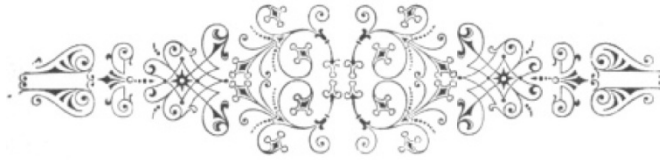
“Do good to Sion in your good pleasure; rebuild the walls of Jerusalem.” (Psalm 51:18)

“O that deliverance for Israel would come from Sion! When God restores the fortunes of his people, Jacob will rejoice; Israel will be glad.” (Psalm 53:6)

This would mean:

“O that deliverance for Israel would come from the chaste virgin! When God restores the fortunes of his people, Jacob will rejoice; the Israel of God will be glad.” (Psalm 53:6)

And there are many examples like these. We say that God will send Two male Witnesses and we all accept it. Sure. But if God sends us a female witness why do the Protestants reject her?



## MOTHER MARY TO THE RESCUE

The star falls out of heaven to possess Antichrist:

“Then the fifth angel sounded: And I saw a star fallen from heaven to the earth.”  
(Revelation 9:1)

This also is intertwined with Revelation 12, which confirms this event:

“And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer. So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.” (Revelation 12:6)

The author of confusion knowing he has “little time” spreads his poison:

“To him was given the key to the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit, and smoke arose out of the pit like the smoke of a great furnace. So the sun and the air were darkened because of the smoke of the pit.” (Revelation 9:1)

The “smoke”<sup>382</sup> of confusion from the “author of confusion” blocks the Sun, inhibiting the truth of Christ darkening the air. At this point the saints go into hiding since:

“Also it causes all, both small and great, both rich and poor, both free and slave, to be marked on the right hand or the forehead, so that no one can buy or sell unless he has the mark, that is, the name of the beast or the number of its name.” (Revelation 13:16)

And since:

“When they finish their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit will make war against them [the two witnesses], overcome them, and kill them.” (Revelation 11:7)

Then (in this unpopular prophecy) the seed of the woman cry out to God:

---

<sup>382</sup> “the smoke of Satan”—*the very words of Pope Paul VI* concerning what he saw invading the Church after the Second Vatican Council.

“To the Chief Musician. A Psalm of David. May the LORD answer you in *the day of trouble*; may the name of the *God of Jacob defend you*; May He *send you help from the sanctuary*, and strengthen you out of *Sion*; may He *remember all your offerings* and accept your *burnt sacrifice*.<sup>383</sup> Selah. May He grant you according to your heart’s desire, and fulfill all your purpose. We will rejoice in your salvation, and *in the name of our God* we will *set up our banners!* May the LORD fulfill all your petitions. Now I know that the LORD *saves His anointed; He will answer* him from His holy heaven with the saving strength of His right hand. Some *trust in chariots*, and some in *horses*; but we will remember the name of the LORD our God. *They have bowed down and fallen*; but *we have risen* and stand upright. Save, LORD! May the King answer us when we call.” (Psalm 2)

The faithful from their hiding place call upon the Lord for help and “He send you help from the sanctuary and strengthen you out of Sion” is when God sends help directly from Mount Sion (heaven) and the heavens open up and then the woman (the Ark of His covenant) is revealed:

“Then the temple of God was opened in heaven, and *the ark* of His covenant was seen in His temple. And there were lightnings, noises, thunderings, an earthquake, and great hail. Now *a great sign appeared in heaven*: a *woman* clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars.” (Revelation 11:19-12-1)

We shall see her sign. The “trusting in chariots” is the enemies fallen since “they have bowed down” to the beast and “fallen” but the wheat has “risen and stand upright” which brings us to the travailing of St. Mary recorded in Isaiah 45 (regarding the conversion of the Middle East) where God also says:

Woe to him who says to a father, 'What are you begetting?' or to a woman, 'With what are you in travail?'” Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel [the Son], and his Maker [The Father]: “Will you question me about my children, or command me concerning the work of my hands?” (Isaiah 45:10-11)

Keep in mind what we discussed about Isaiah 45 being the prophecy about Cyrus the Great (Messiah, Kurush). In the same theme, the unpopular part of this prophecy God asks: “will you question me about my children,” is clear, God is not to be questioned who He chooses for children, but what about “or to a woman, 'with what are you in travail?'" The Mother of God watches after her children and she is in travail over the persecution of the remnant church. This is obviously confronting the tares who are in denial as to how God chooses His seed also defined as the “seed of the woman” (St. Mary). And now we understand the crying of our Mother in Ramah is the massacre of God’s offspring as it was in Bethlehem, our village. Here the Father and the Son respond to the boastful Hebrews as in the allegory of the two sons with one wallowing with the pigs to later repent and be chosen. So many of these prophecies are missed and not properly linked by the so-called scholar. God rarely

---

<sup>383</sup> “burnt sacrifice” is still the Communion since the Christian is the Temple that consumes the sacrifice

uses scholars; He uses shepherds and fishermen, yet westerners insist on following only the scholar. In Isaiah 45, the children whom she travails over are the seed of the woman as well as God's seed and is why in Revelation 12, it is also the seed of the woman: "And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of *her seed*, which *keep the commandments of God*, and have the *testimony of Jesus Christ*." (Revelation 12:17)

While being the outcasts of society to evade being forced to take this mark, the Church then goes into hiding guided by the woman into the wilderness where Antichrist cannot reach:

"Then the woman *fled into the wilderness*, where she *has a place prepared by God*, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days."

"So the *serpent* spewed water out of his mouth like a flood *after the woman*, that he might cause her to be carried away by the flood." (Revelation 12:15)

The dragon is also depicted like a "serpent" and his seed are like a "scorpion with tails" and he also has a tail and with it:

"His *tail* drew a *third of the stars of heaven* and *threw them to the earth*." (Revelation 12:4a)

So even Revelation 12 confirms this casting of the demonic realm to earth (1/3<sup>rd</sup> of the angels) to possess the tares:

"Then out of the smoke locusts came upon the earth. And to them was given power, *as the scorpions of the earth have power*." (Revelation 9:3)<sup>384</sup>

In Luke 10 we are comforted that from such an allegoric "scorpions" even including "the serpent" (or by default his seed) in Revelation 12:15 will not harm the wheat:

"Behold, I give unto you power to tread on *serpents* and *scorpions*, and *over all the power of the enemy*: and *nothing shall by any means hurt you*." (Luke 10:19)

These allegoric scorpions are heretic tares now possessed can trouble the tares (by demonic affliction or possession) but they cannot infect the true Christian as promised in Luke 10 and also confirmed by John:

---

<sup>384</sup> "Our Lady showed us a great sea of fire which seemed to be under the earth. Plunged in this fire were demons and souls in human form, like transparent burning embers, all blackened or *burnished bronze*, floating about in the conflagration, now raised into the air by the flames that issued from within themselves together with *great clouds of smoke*, now falling back on every side like sparks in a huge fire, without weight or equilibrium, and amid shrieks and groans of pain and despair, which horrified us and made us tremble with fear. The demons could be distinguished by their terrifying and repulsive likeness to frightful and unknown animals, all black and transparent. This vision lasted but an instant. How can we ever be grateful enough to our kind heavenly Mother, who had already prepared us by promising, in the first Apparition, to take us to heaven. Otherwise, I think we would have died of fear and terror."—Santos, *Fatima in Lucia's Own Words I* (2003), pg. 123.

“They were commanded *not to harm the grass of the earth, or any green thing, or any tree, but only those men who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads.*” (Revelation 9:4)

The simple Christian the green “grass” or “any tree” (faithful church) remains unharmed and steadfast and only the followers of Antichrist are infected with the demonic afflictions, which sting and torment them. These are vicious demonically afflicted or possessed peoples, they have the spirit of Sodom, the harlot and Mystery Babylon <sup>385</sup> they are effeminate “men” with “hair like women”:

“On their heads were crowns of something like *gold*, and their faces were like the *faces of men*. They had hair like *women’s hair*, and their teeth were like *lions’ teeth*.” (Revelation 9:7-8)

So immoral are these seed of Satan that they (in this unpopular prophecy) even express a desire to profane (as in the story of Lot with the angels) and molest the beautiful Mother of God:

“Now many nations are assembled against you, saying, “Let her be profaned, and let our eyes gaze upon Sion.” But they do not know the thoughts of the LORD, they do not understand his plan, that he has gathered them as sheaves to the threshing floor. Arise and thresh, *O daughter of Sion*, for I will make your horn iron and your hoofs bronze; you shall beat in pieces many peoples, and shall devote their gain to the LORD, their wealth to the Lord of the whole earth.” (Micah 4:11-13)

Let her “daughter of Sion” (The Chaste Virgin) “be profaned,” and let our eyes gaze upon Sion” is the lust of Holofernes for Judith (Judith 8-15) had her kill Holofernes and likewise, God responds: “you shall go to Babylon” and similarly accomplish how Judith defending her people cut off the head of the Persian Holofernes. This is another pre-figuring of Mary’s role in the crushing of Satan’s head at Babylon and is why Babylon’s crescent is under her feet.

And just in case some reject Judith as “non-canonical,” how about Deborah defeats Sisera by driving a, iron spike through his head by another woman, Jael (Judges 4).

How can these reject Mother Mary participating in the battle while claiming they ‘as saints’ will come with Christ to redeem the earth? Where is Mother Mary in this battle? Is she in the last row while you are in the front row? Was she in the rear or the front row when God announced her to give birth to Him? There is only one creature who gave birth to her Creator. Tells us her name, if you can?

This is a massive spiritual attack but only infects the ones who do not have the mark of God:

“They had tails like scorpions, and there were stings in their tails. Their power was to hurt men *five months.*” (Revelation 9:10)

---

<sup>385</sup> “crowns of gold” see Daniel 2, the head of gold is regarding Babylon and “teeth of lions” the “lion” is also symbolic of Babylon.

And the chaste virgin also applies to the church with their queen mother well mentioned:

“Go forth, O daughters of Sion, and see King Solomon with the crown with which his mother crowned him on the day of his wedding, The day of the gladness of his heart.” (Songs of Solomon 3:11)

The Queen initiates the Marriage Supper of the Lamb and it involves battle:

“They all hold swords, being expert in war. Every man has his sword on his thigh because of fear in the night.” (Songs of Solomon 3:7)

So we begin to see the dichotomy; on the one hand we have a war with Babylon and unless God has a refuge for us we will perish unless “except the Lord of hosts had left us seed, we had been as Sodom”.

“Had been like Sodom”? Is this not crucial? But God always provides a refuge: in the simple allegory in a cucumber field with a lodge. We, from Bethlehem, all know where this cucumber field is, Bethlehem’s Shepherds Fields, my birthplace, where the King was born. Even the Muslims in Bethlehem do not deny this and will defend it. So Isaiah 1:8-9, God provides a solution, “a refuge,” “a lodge” “a tent” “a temple” for the earthly saints to connect with the church of the first born, the saints in heaven, the angels and to God the Judge of all, to Jesus the Mediator and only Savior. This “heavenly” multitude will one day connect with earth to first punish and then cleanse mankind, just as it was done where Sodom is completely destroyed and only a small remnant “a few seeds” are redeemed.

This seed will be primarily the reject of rejects and the lowly of the earth.

This corresponds to Revelation 12, the Woman, our Mother, Mother Mary, Daughter of Sion (Virgin Chaste). This is how the primitive church interpreted. And we can see Revelation 12, already interpreted for us in this unpopular prophecy in Micah 4:

“In that day, says the LORD, I will assemble the lame and gather those who have been driven away, and those whom I have afflicted. And the lame I will make the remnant; and those who were cast off, a strong nation; and the LORD will reign over them in Mount Sion from this time forth and for evermore.” (Micah 4:6-7)

Like Jacob, Christ is given the rejected sheep “the lame” and with these, He will be a strong nation where Christ reigns over them “in” (not on) Mount Sion, that is, in heaven for evermore. This is not a duration of one millennium. It is eternal. He picks all the rejects, refugees, foreigners, and afflicted and cast offs ...

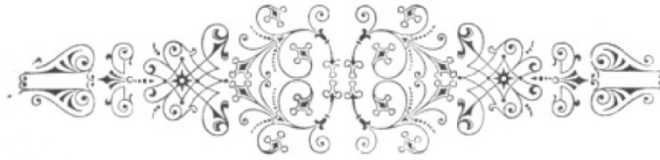
Now we can see the full picture:

“And you, O tower of the flock [Tower of Edar], hill of the daughter of Sion, to you shall it come, the former dominion shall come, the kingdom of the daughter of Jerusalem. Writhe and groan, O daughter of Sion, like a woman in travail; for now you shall go forth from the city and dwell in the open country; you shall go to **Babylon**. There you shall be rescued, there the LORD will redeem you from the hand of your enemies.”



The chaste comes out of heavenly Sion to dwell in Babylon. Why? It is because her children remembered her in their greatest time of need: "By the rivers of Babylon -- there we sat down and there we wept when we remembered Sion." (Psalm 137:1)

The plan of God is kept a mystery for the ones who cannot understand parables. And here God reveals the situation on Revelation 11-12 where the Ark comes from heaven (St. Mary). "The daughter of Sion" is "like a woman in travail," St. Mary weeps for the suffering of her seed. She responds just as she responded at Zeitun in Egypt when the Muslims were about to massacre the Copts and then all came, Muslim and Christians alike to adore her and many converted. They in Mexico and South America, the poor, in millions they converted. But the next time she appears when Sodom takes hold of this world it is this: "Thresh, O daughter of Sion" is the symbol of St. Mary threshing the crescent (Revelation 12)."



## THE DAY YOU LOCK UP THE DOORS AND COVER THE WINDOWS

Now we begin to understand why prophecy addresses this world as an allegoric Egypt. Now the prophecies become as clear as the sun. So just as Moses and Aaron were sent to Egypt calling for an Exodus where the Israelites entered their homes after marking the doors and lintels with the blood of lambs; and just as the angels were sent to rescue Lot out of Sodom, the angels locked the doors, the Church will experience a similar event in this unpopular prophecy:

“Come, my people, enter your chambers [houses], And shut your doors behind you; hide yourself, as it were, for a little moment, until the indignation is past. For behold, the LORD comes out of His place to punish the inhabitants of the earth for their iniquity” (see Isaiah 26:19-21)

“The city of confusion is broken down; every house is shut up, that no man may come in.” (Isaiah 24:10)

“No man may come in” allow no one to enter and “shut your doors” and “every house is shut up” (boarded) is a clear instruction that “no man may come in” as not to allow anyone entry no matter what, for everyone who is outside be it human or demon is wicked and attempts to enter if you permit. It will be an event as in Sodom when the sodomites paraded the streets around Lot’s home and wanted to enter his house and the angels shut the door.

Who has ever quoted the above verses as a warning? No one. Many quoted this:

“I will display wonders in the sky and on the earth, blood, fire and columns of smoke. “The sun will be turned into darkness And the moon into blood before the great and awesome day of the LORD comes. “And it will come about that whoever calls on the name of the LORD Will be delivered; for on Mount Sion and in Jerusalem there will be those who escape, as the LORD has said, even among the survivors whom the LORD calls.” (Joel 2:30-32)

This is not the day of the Lord but before that day comes it strikes.

Therefore, when such a global event occurs, the houses must be shut and no matter what noises you hear even if it sounds like a relative or loved one, once that doors and windows are boarded up, never open until the complete destruction of every Sodom city is completed by God since all these “are worthy of death”. Such “death” stems from God and we are not to take such verses as taking the law into our own hands. We are called to advocate for repentance. The condition outside is given to us:

“There shall be a *crying for wine* in *the streets*: all mirth is forsaken: the *joy of the earth* is gone away. *Desolation is left in the city* and calamity shall oppress the gates. For it shall be thus in the midst of the earth in the midst of the people as *if a few olives that remain* should be shaken out of the olive tree: or grapes when the vintage is ended. Fear and the pit and the snare are upon thee O thou inhabitant of the earth (Is. 24: 1ff).

Olive harvest was a serious job where they left so few olives. I gleaned the olive trees in my youth in Bethlehem. After the harvest, I would have to reach a few olives, 2 or 3 at the upper branches. It would take from day to sunset and a hundred olive trees gleaned to make a jar of olives. What the prophecy says that after God’s wrath city life will have so few inhabitants:

“Their carcasses were as refuse in the midst of the streets. For all this His anger is *not turned away* but His hand is *stretched out still*.” (Isaiah 5:25)

But this is not the end “His hand is stretched out still” it is the parallel of the death of the first-born in Egypt where conversions hail by the droves.

And with this comes the sifting:

“Associate yourselves, O ye people, and ye shall be broken in pieces; and give ear, all *ye of far countries*: gird yourselves, and *ye shall be broken in pieces*; gird yourselves, and ye shall be broken in pieces.” (Isaiah 8:9)

One could imagine what God meant by “far countries”. Israel also has two invasions:

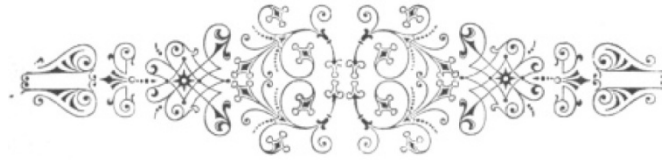
“The *Syrians* before, and the *Philistines* behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.” (Isaiah 9:12)

Assyria comes first then the seafarers of Europe (“Philistines”) last to fulfill Numbers 24.

“Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this *his anger is not turned away*, but his *hand is stretched out still*.” (Isaiah 10:4)

“His hand is stretched out still” as in the hand of Moses when He leveled the curses upon Egypt. This shall continue until the Exodus: Isaiah 11.

When the Book of Isaiah is read as a historic record (as when it is read as one views history as a type of fulfillment) it does not flow as when it is read with the end of the age in mind.



## THE BATTLE OF THE TWO VIRGINS AND HOW ST. MARY HELPS CONVERT THE MUSLIMS

“This brings us to our second point, namely, why the Blessed Mother, in this twentieth century, should have revealed herself in the insignificant little village of Fátima, so that to all future generations she would be known as ‘Our Lady of Fátima.’ Since nothing ever happens out of heaven except with a finesse of all details, I believe that the Blessed Virgin chose to be known as “Our Lady of Fátima” as a pledge and a sign of hope to the Moslem people, and as an assurance that they, who show her so much respect, will one day accept her Divine Son, too.” (Fulton Sheen, *The World’s First Love*)

The problem with the Muslim is the last part of venerable Sheen’s view—how will an image of St. Mary persuade Muslims to “accept her Divine Son” when Muslims reject the divinity of Christ?

In the 12th century, when the region was still disputed between Christians and Muslims, a noble girl, called Fátima in honor of prophet Muhammad, daughter of the governor of the castle of Alcácer (Arabic for Castle) do Sal, was involved in a meeting between both groups. A famous paladin, knight Templar of the Reconquest, Don Gonçalo Hermingués (known as *Traga Mouros*), fell in love and married her, after she converted to Christianity and was baptized with the name Oureana. Unfortunately, the very beautiful love that existed between the two was soon interrupted by the premature death of the young woman.<sup>386</sup> But her conversion could have significance. And it is not only this one acquired an Arabic name. There are three ‘Our Lady’ images that explain all this: *Our lady of Guadalupe*, *Our Lady of*

---

<sup>386</sup> *Fatima for Today: The Urgent Marian Message of Hope* by Andrew Apostoli · 2010, pg.12

*Fatima*<sup>387</sup>, and *Our Lady of the Almudena* are completely Arabic names as we shall explain in detail the secrets hidden in preparation for another battle with Islam between *Our Lady of Fatima* and the Muslim *Fatima al-Zahra*.

## BACKGROUND

We are always offered two choices; one is a cup of salvation and the other is the cup of damnation. The rule of the *two choices* is how God ordained our search for salvation from Genesis 3:15; Satan first bruises Christ's heel and Christ then crushing Satan's head, *Cain* (with the false Communion being fruit) and *Abel* (with the proper Communion being true flesh and blood) and this message is carried all the way to the Apocalypse; *Bride of Christ* (legitimate of the true Mother) vs. the Harlot of Babylon (prostitute). There we have the constantly repeated battle of two images in Apocalypse 12; one is virtuous (as in *Our Lady of Guadalupe*) and the other is not, *Tonantzin* in Mexico where the first was victorious and the second defeated.

But first, such battles are also depicted in Apocalypse 2:12, Pergamum (today Asia Minor, Sufi Muslim nation of Turkey) stands at the "seat of Satan" where was the image of Artemis (Acts 19:35) with the crescent on her head which Christianity brought low and defeated.

---

<sup>387</sup> There is more to Fatima than we are told. For example, Pope Pius XII said: "I am worried by the Blessed Virgin's messages to little Lucia of Fatima. This persistence of Mary about the dangers which menace the Church is a divine warning against *the suicide of altering the faith, in her liturgy, her theology and her soul*.... I hear all around me *innovators* who wish to dismantle the Sacred Chapel, destroy the universal ame of the Church, reject her ornaments and make her feel remorse for her historical past.... A day will come when the civilized world will deny its God, *when the Church will doubt as Peter doubted*. She will be tempted to believe that man has become God. In our churches, Christians *will search in vain for the red lamp* where God awaits them. Like Mary Magdalene, weeping before the empty tomb, they will ask, "Where have they taken Him?" (Msgr. Georges Roche, *Pie XII Devant L'Histoire* (Paris: Editions Robert La ont, 1972), pp. 52, 53.) The main obstacle is revealing the message of Fatima has been when in the spring of 1962, in Metz, France when Cardinal Eugene Tisserant had a meeting with none other than Metropolitan Nikodim of the Russian Orthodox Church whom according to some was a KGB operative negotiated what came to be known as the Vatican-Moscow Agreement the Catholic Church would agree that the Council would refrain from any condemnation of Soviet Russia compromising the moral liberty of the Church while the Soviets were persecuting millions of Catholics, just as Our Lady of Fatima predicted in 1917.



But the victory in Asia Minor and Persia soon lost to Islam. But for such people, God sends an image of Our Lady during when Christianity defeated the Ottomans at the Battle of Lepanto, the greatest naval battle in history, the image also exposes paganism's theft of the true message; the image of Diana had the crescent on the top (the head), and Sufi Islam elevated Fatima Al-Zahra' while lifting up the crescent on every *Mua'dena* (minaret). Our Lady's image reverses this, bringing the crescent under her feet to fulfill the prophecy:

“For the day of the LORD of hosts Shall come upon everything proud and lofty, Upon everything lifted up—And it shall be brought low”— (Isaiah 2:12)

St. Mary herself declared this prophecy in her Canticle, quoted in Luke's Gospel:

“He has shown strength with his arm; he has scattered the proud in the thoughts of their hearts; he has brought down the mighty from their thrones and exalted those of humble estate” (Luke 1:51-52)

Satan's “head” is crushed (defeated) and brought low and the “heel” that was wounded does the crushing. The image of our lady is in itself the defeat against false accusations by Protestants connecting Mariology with the worship of Diana, since to build a case based on similarities while ignoring the differences is a false premise, especially when the order (crescent on top) is reversed (crescent on bottom). While many object to images, God created an image of Himself: “Let Us make man in Our image” (Genesis 1:26) then punishes all who affix the image of Antichrist on their foreheads: “...If anyone worships the beast and his image and receives his mark on the forehead or on the hand, he, too, will drink of the wine of God's fury ...” (Revelation 14:9-10) while He exalts the ones who “have the seal of God on their foreheads.” (Apocalypse 7:3)

Apocalypse 12 is the war between two given, in an allegory of images; the woman and the dragon: “Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars” which the dragon always gains a head-start persecuting her seed: “And the dragon was wroth with the woman” (Apocalypse 12:17) “Then the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God ...” (Apocalypse 12:6)

And this is the battle where Satan is at Christ’s heel (after her seed) and at the end Christ crushes (defeats) Satan’s head bringing his symbol low at the feet of His mother. This prophecy continues until the day of the Lord as to show God’s victory over the devil fulfilling Genesis 3:15: “you [the devil] shall bruise his heel” yet the ultimate victory is accomplished by her seed, “he [Messiah] shall bruise your head”. Ezekiel the prophet reveals this head:

“Son of man, set your face against Gog, of the land of Magog, the chief prince (Rosh) of Meshech and Tubal” (Ezekiel 38:1).

Rosh<sup>388</sup> literally means “head” and *Meshech* today is “the north quarters” in Asia Minor (Turkey) where Apocalypse 2:12 prophesied is “the seat of Satan” where the seven churches got established defeating the throne of Zeus to only have a satanic comeback defeating Christendom where Ezekiel tells the end of this battle is the defeat of Gog (the head). In Ezekiel 38 we learn that besides Turkey, Iran will also be a key player in the Last-Days “Persia...will be with them, all with shields and helmets...” Persia is simply the ancient name for modern day Iran.

And as honorable Fulton Sheen expressed, there is indeed a prophetic purpose in the naming of *Our Lady of Fatima*, but the other key is the image of *Our Lady of Guadalupe*. Starting with the Fatima, what the Turks and the Persians have in common is Sufism and the adoration of Fatima, not *Our Lady of Fatima* but *Fatima al-Zahra’*, the daughter of Muhammad. Fatima means: “to be set aside, separated”. This will be the war of the *Two Fatimas* and the claim of being the rightful Mother; one being the true Virgin and the other is claiming to be, but is not, and is “virgin daughter of Babylon” (Isaiah 47:1) stemming from Arabia.

---

<sup>388</sup> Historian Edwin Yamauchi notes that even if one translated the Hebrew rosh as a proper name, it can have nothing to do with modern Russia. He writes, “This would be a gross anachronism, for the modern name [of Russia] is based upon the name Rus, which was brought into the reign of Kiev, north of the Black Sea, by the Vikings only in the Middle Ages.” (Merrill F. Unger, *Beyond The Crystal Ball* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1974) p. 81 11 Edwin M Yamauchi, *Foes from the Northern Frontier: Invading Hordes from the Russian Steppes*, (Grand Rapids, MI Baker Book House, 1982).



(Our Lady vs. Fatima Al-Zahra)

It is a repeat between the spiritual battle with the female Aztec earth deity *Tonantzin*. Likewise now we have the two Fatimas. The Muslim defines: “Lady Fatima was chosen from all women to be The Mother source of Prophet Muhammad's lineage [his seed], the core of the generation of the Prophet. Through her, the progeny of the Prophet multiplies — through a woman and became guardians of his message.”

To the Muslim, his Fatima is *Siddiqah* (the honest), *Al-Mubarakah* (the blessed one), *Al-Tahirah* (the pure), *Az-Zakiyah* (the chaste), *Az-Zahraa* (the splendid).

Fatima is beloved of all Muslims whom Muhammad called “Um Abi’ha” (mother of her father) she is Fatima Al-Batool (the virgin) her house is the living Ka’ba, another woman covered in the *Kiswa* (dress) made of black silk with verses of blasphemy against Christ all adorned on her forehead. Francis Burton writes regarding the Ka’ba:

“the part of the cover (*Kiswa*), covering the door, is called [a *Burka*] just like the veil the Arabic women are wearing in front of their face...in fact, Arab mystics even compare the Ka’ba to a virgin, adorned with her finest wedding dress.” (Vol 3, page 295)

The core message of Our Lady of Guadalupe is Lucifer’s head brought low “the moon under her feet” (Revelation 12:1).

#### THE BATTLE

While Our Lady of Fatima’s name is Arabic and links to Muslims through their Fatima, “Guadalupe” is an entire theological thesis in Arabic. Prince Shakib Arslan was known as “Prince of Eloquence” (*amir al-balagha*) that is the eloquence of the Arabic language. He was an influential Muslim writer, poet and historian who traveled in the footsteps of the Muslims who invaded Spain. In his book “What Arabs Said About The Geography of Andalusia (Spain),” he calls “Guadalupe” as “Wad Al-Lubb”.

How Arslan derived to his pronunciation is simple: to an Arab scholar carefully examining how Guada is pronounced in Spanish and how Lupe is pronounced in Arabic, the “G” is silent (*Wada*) and the “p” is always pronounced as “b” (*Lubba*) since there is no “p” in



Arabic. So if you ask any Arab, “say Waddalupe,” he will say “Waddalubba” or “Wadi Al-Lubb”. Try it. Even the Spanish skip over the “G” since the original name is Arabic as in Guadalajara is the Canyon of Clay (Wad-Al-Jarra), names that stem from when Muslims occupied mother Spain and then the names were exported to the New Spain.

Wadd also means “love” and Lubb means “heart”. Lubb is spelled with simply two letters: Lb and is the same word occurring over 700 times in the Old Testament Aramaic/ Hebrew as heart and pronounced the same.

“In the end, my Immaculate *Heart* will *triumph*”—  
Our Lady of Fatima

This packs much for Arab linguists, since Arabic is an ancient rich language and these two words combined packs a whole theological meaning that corrects Islam’s theological misconceptions.

Besides the emphases in Arabic that Wadd means “love” it also means “desired” while “Lubb” is “gem” “heart” and is mostly used for “core” where the seed resides as in the core of an apple.

For example, the ‘lubb’ of the atom is its nucleus; the ‘lubb’ of the earth is its core; the ‘lubb’ of the fruit is its core seed (life’s source). The “lubb” is also “heart” and Lubba is “Her heart” or “Her core” (womb).

Lubba also means “her neck,” but not just any part of a woman’s neck, Arabic is very meticulous. In Arabic it is precisely where a woman places the necklace on her neck. So if a Muslim would specifically look at the *lubba* in the image, he will find a brooch with a black cross, which recalls the agony of the death of Jesus Christ on the Cross for the salvation of all mankind. Black here is significant of death and is the attire of sorrow which women dress for forty days in the Middle East. So in this case Christ-Crucified is in her heart. *Lubb* is also *wasitat al-qilada*, which signifies “the jewel,” “the purest and best from all,” and a symbol of sanctity. Wasitat also means the intermediary as the cross here is the bridge between man and God.

This “heart” symbolism is clear from the Arabic which is the Sacred Heart with flames above it are only in Guadalupe and Fatima apparitions have this sign which shows the two are linked for the same purpose.

So what happens when we combine the two words *wadda* and *lubba*, becomes earth shattering since the ‘a’ in the end of “*wadd*” becomes “*wadda*” pertains to a woman (her); Wāda Lubba then becomes a packed message: “love is the desire of her heart” and if we use wadd in its most common usage it literally pertains to a male deity which means “the god of love”. But what we have here is wadda, which strictly means *her god of love*. Wadd is also regarding someone most precious to a woman, a husband or an only son or firstborn. Adding *lubba*, the construct becomes rich:

“Her God of love is in Her core (heart) and is her only son.”

The use of *lubb* (core) is no accident for it is the word used in scripture for heart. It is no wonder why in Italian the word core is literally heart and in Spanish *corazon* is also heart. In other words, once we take all the different meanings from the richness and all the variant meanings in the Arabic, the message becomes clear:

“The desired one, this God of love Who is desired, Who is most precious to her, her jewel, this male Son Deity, is in her inner core or what she contains in her inner being Who constitutes love who is also God Himself.”

Therefore She is pregnant with God. And that is only the name; we have not superimposed the image yet.

In essence Wāda Lubba (Guadalupe) has a response to Islam. This “Wadd” (love) is Christ Who was in the Womb of Mary and is why Christians say: “blessed is the fruit of your womb (*lubb*), Jesus.” In her womb (*lubb*) always resides the seed and it is this “fruit of Her womb” that is this blessed one.

She is Queen and is the loving Mother and Christ is her Heart and is Her love and He (Jesus) is the very essence of love and He is Her desire as The Father’s only Son, conceived as the man-god in the womb of the Virgin Mary.

There are no better Semitic two words (two letters each) to use in the entire language, a total of only four letters “Wd” and “Lb” to construct such a message. Anyone objecting the two word construct can give such rich meaning need to only examine Arabic dictionaries and see that what we gave here can be found in the Arabic.<sup>389</sup>

Just to give an example on the richness of Arabic, just the word lion has 346 words. It is no wonder as to why the Arabic language is used in concordances of the Bible, where the Semitic languages, including Arabic, add richness to the meaning where I could read the Old Testament in Aramaic and derive what no other translation includes with amazing theological construct.

The premise I set here is not without merit. What scholar of Islam and Arabic can deny that from Arabia’s pre-Islamic times and even in Islamic theology, *Wadd* was proclaimed as a title of God worshiped pre-Islam (search “Wadd”) and even in Islam Allah as “*Al-Waddud*” (the loving). *Wadd* is “love” and is also “God” and *wadud* is loving and *Al-wadud* is the loving God which anyone can look up in the 99 names on how Muslims define God.

Allah in pre-Islamic Arabia was named “Wadd-the moon god which stood at the head of the Minaean Pantheon: Allat, Uzza and Manat were the three daughters of Allah for this Wadd”.<sup>390</sup> Allah was called *Wadd* in Mecca itself.

Now adding the image to the name Wadda-Lubba, the message becomes the story of the Gospel and the story of the Triumph of the Church and the Triumph of the Suffering Servant and the history of Christianity’s struggle with Islam, Paganism and Protestantism. The image expresses a summary of the Bible from beginning to end (which we cannot elaborate in full here).

The Lady’s image is correcting Islam’s misconception that she is not deity (as Muslims accuse Christians), but that the God of love resides in her core (*lubb*) as she is the Ark that housed God. In other words, the construct says that it was God Who was in Mary’s core. This message corrects the Quran’s claim:

---

<sup>389</sup> Just look up the Arabic ود and لب in Al-Balagha (eloquence of Arabic) (For abbreviated look up see <https://en.wiktionary.org/wiki/ود> <https://en.wiktionary.org/wiki/لب> <https://www.almaany.com/en/dict/ar-en/ود%E2%80%8E/>)

<sup>390</sup> Hitti, 2002, pp. 97-98

"O Jesus the son of Mary! Didst thou say unto men, 'Take me and my mother for two gods beside Allah'? –Quran 5:116

"they disbelieved when they said: 'Christ, the son of Mary, is indeed God'" –Quran 5:72

The message from our Lady is "no," she never claimed deity and God The Son, her "Wadd" (love) is the Creator of heaven, its stars and the earth and He is in Her "lubb" (core, womb) and is also Her Heart (the Sacred Heart of Mary). This signifies Jesus Christ's physical heart as the representation of His divine love for humanity.

The image of St. Mary did not play a significant role in Mexico when the image came in 1531. There was another icon that played a similar role: *Guadalupe de Extremadura*. It was a much older image connected to the Spanish *Reconquista* and the ultimate victory over the centuries long Islamic invasion of Spain. It is said to have been carved by St. Luke the Evangelist and given to Saint Leander to be brought to Spain's Extremadura province where it remained until the Muslim Tariq Ibn Ziyad and his armies crossed the Gibraltar towards Spain.



When I was Muslim, our history books taught that this invasion was the pinnacle of Islamic expansion into Europe for the ultimate victory of Islam's iconoclasm over the Cross in 711 AD. Being the typical iconoclast (like the Protestants), Tariq Ibn Ziyad, after conquering Spain transformed churches into mosques including the Church where this ancient icon of Mary was located. It was said to be hidden at the Guadiana River, also known as the Wolf River, or in Latin, lupe where Muslims controlled the area and kept the name given by the Spanish, but referred to the local river using the Arabic term *wadi* (valley, oasis) and hence the name stuck and the river and the surrounding area came to be known as wadi lupe or the way the Spaniards said it: *Guadalupe*.

This western version, while correct, misses how a Muslim would see the name. The West is unaware that we have a Wadi Lupe in the Sinai, another in Saudi Arabia and yet another in Yemen. So perhaps there might be future surprises at these locations.

#### OUR LADY THE CITADEL

To confirm that names would mean much to a Muslim, there was also another *Our Lady of the Almudena* and like *Our Lady of Guadalupe* of Mexico, it too had the crescent moon

under her feet and her name had a message that reversed Islam's foundation flipping it upside down.

Why? *Almudena* is commonly known in Spain to mean 'the citadel' (Sion is Arabic also means citadel). But *Almudena* is purely Arabic and has zero meaning in Spanish. But what the West misses is that in Arabic *Almudena* means a different type of 'citadel' than is commonly known by westerners. It stems from the word for minaret (Arabic "Al-Ma'dana") and *Almudean* (Al-Mu'adena) is a woman cantor calling from the Citadel (Minaret). This use has never been in Islam for the cantor is always "Al-Muaden" without the "a" at the end which makes it feminine—*She is the cantor that calls from the minaret.*

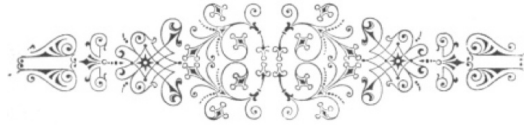
But this type of citadel (minaret) adds a crescent moon on top. So why destine the name of our Lady to be called *Almudena*? Was St. Mary Muslim and is now lifting up the crescent? God forbid. The very image of *Almudena* brings the crescent low, below Her feet. To a Muslim, this naming *Almudena* calls St. Mary as the true citadel and here she points to Allah as Lucifer and his symbol is under her feet. *Almudena* is a construct of two words: "Al" (the) and "mudena" (the cantor on top of the minaret, citadel). She is not just a cantor of any minaret, but *the cantor and the minaret.* And since *Almudena's* purpose is to proclaim loudly and audibly, five times a day to gather everyone for prayer, here, *The Citadel*, the true *Almudena's* image persists to proclaim loudly her participation to obey and fulfill her Son's wish.

In 712, prior to the capture of Madrid by the advancing Muslim forces, the inhabitants of the town secreted the image of the virgin, the patroness of Madrid, for its own protection, inside the walls surrounding the town. In the 11th century, when Madrid was reconquered by the King Alfonso VI of Castile, the Christian soldiers endeavored to find the statue. After days of prayer, the spot on the wall hiding the icon crumbled, revealing the statue. Another version of the story says that as Christian soldiers approached the town, they had a vision of Mary imploring them to allow her to lead them into the city. Again the miraculous crumbling of the wall occurred, with the icon showing an entry route through the walls.

After the Church's defeat in Spain, God was eventually victorious as *Almudena* stomping Allah the crescent, revealing the true citadel.

This is exactly what happened when the third icon involving the war with Islam was found: the *Guadalupe de Extremadura*. Therefore, the Lady's image and its connection to battles and victories against the devil was not exclusive to Mexico's 1531 massive conversion of Aztecs. Nearly two centuries prior to this, the *Guadalupe de Extremadura* after being lost was miraculously found centuries later in 1326 where a shrine was built in its name. It was the discovery of the image that rejuvenated the Christians under Portuguese King Alfonso IV and Castilian King Alfonso XI and in 1340 dedicated a pilgrimage to the new Shrine of Our Lady of Guadalupe, entrusting the battle to St. Mary in accordance to Revelation 12. They and the Catholic armies met the forces of Islam at the Salado River in Seville reversing the course and driving the Muslims back to Morocco and bringing down the crescent where it belongs, below the feet.

And so it shall be a more amazing and fascinating victory is Our Lady of Guadalupe's image has several crushing responses to Muslims, not just to Allah, but also to his false messenger Muhammad, history's leading heresiarch.



## DEFEAT OF THE LUMINOUS ONE

Lucifer means “luminous” and Muhammad gained the title of “luminous” and “moon light” after the Battle of Tabuk when Muhammad appeared emerging from the Wada’ valley. His appearance sparked the first Muslim hymn *Tala’a Al-Badru A’layna* (“Here arose the moon upon us”). The moon, again, with the advent of Islam was raised to the pinnacle attempting to reverse God’s order. Muhammad was depicted as the *badr* (full moon) and “the sun” when the Ansar (residents of Madinah) sang greeting Muhammad upon his arrival at Madinah to welcome him. The Sufi Muslims sing it this way:

“The full moon (badr) rose over us from the valley of Wada. We ought to be thankful. You [Muhammad] are the sun. You are the full moon. You are light upon light. You are the lamp of the star. You are my spring O messenger”

This indeed is the Muslim “hymn of hymns”. It is sung to Sultans and Erdogan of Turkey was elated at its sounds (search Youtube “Erdogan” and “Tala al badru Alayna”).

From here and like the Aztec deity Huitzilopochtli, according to Islam, Muhammad gained such glorified titles as *Al-Siraj Al-Muneer*, literally “the Luminous Lamp”. The Quran claims that the angel Gabriel addresses Muhammad as such (see Quran 33:45-46) where Muhammad became the “illuminating lamp”:

“O Prophet, indeed We have sent you as a witness and a bringer of good tidings and a Warner. And one who invites to Allah, by His permission, and an illuminating lamp.”

So as Mesoamerica etched such theology on their emblems, Islam’s theology was etched in the main image of the Muslim Ottoman Empire.



Such theological forgeries attempt to mimic what belongs to our Lady the transcendent light emanating from behind her, Islam had the radiating sun with its transcendent “light upon light” emanating from behind the crescent image (who is Muhammad) and a star (who is also Muhammad), which within it, is the glowing lamp (*Tughra*) which is also Muhammad inside the morning star (which is also Muhammad).

This idea had colored later mystical Islam on both the elite and folk levels.<sup>391</sup> In the Ottoman image, it depicts Muhammad's titles stemming from Allah who is also described as this light:

“the Light of the heavens and the earth... the Parable of His Light is as if there were a Niche and within it a Lamp: the Lamp enclosed in Glass: the glass as it were a brilliant star...luminous...Light upon Light!” (Q 24:35).

The imagery spills right out of Scripture regarding Lucifer, the “morning star” and the star (referred to as “he” a living being who fell from heaven in Apocalypse 9 as poisoning the waters (nations)).

So this forgery (depicting Muhammad as the light of the sun), the image reveals the woman of Revelation 12 has 12 stars. There are 12 disciples. God's Temple has 12 gates and the Lady's image appeared on 12/12 of the years 1531. This would be the twelfth day of the twelfth month regarding an image mentioned in the twelfth chapter of the Apocalypse and she had twelve stars.

Twelve is holy. Converting that date to an Islamic Hijri calendar would mean that St. Mary appeared on 2 *Jumada Al-Awwal* (I Jumada) year 938 Hijri. Jumada I is the fifth month in the Islamic calendar.

One of Islam's holiest numbers is five. Islam has five daily prayers. Its pillars are five. In Islam, particularly Shia Islam, the Panjetan or Holy Pentagram, also known as *Ahl Al-Bait* or *People of the House* the *Five Holy Purified Ones* are the members of Muhammad's family: *Muhammad, Ali, Fatima, Hasan, and Husayn* and is often symbolically represented by an image of the *Khamsa* (five). The five-pointed star is part of the symbol of the Ottoman Empire and has been a Muslim symbol for multiple Muslim works, most notably on flags. Islam's most blasphemous chapter is the fifth chapter (Maida “The Table”) mentioning Mary in the most blasphemous verses:

“they disbelieved when they said: ‘Christ, the son of Mary, is indeed God’; whereas Christ had said: ‘Children of Israel! Serve Allah, Who is your Lord and my Lord.’ ... Those who said: ‘Allah is one of the Three’ ...The Messiah, son of Mary, was no more than a Messenger”

The Quran: An Encyclopedia says:

“The Quran's objection to Christian practice is Christianity's shirk, its worship of Jesus, Mary and the saints ‘in derogation of Allah’. There is no justification in believing in the Trinity, for Jesus never would have condoned such a concept”.

“Jesus is the son of Mary” is what Muslims and schismatic Protestants have a thing in common, they accuse true Christians of “Mary worship” and “Saint worship”. Yet here appears St. Mary in this image with humble eyes looking downward in worship and her queenly hands and the sleeve cuffs with fur means royalty/ancient Israel's nobility. Indeed, this is a humble Queen in prayer to God and not in splendor of deity.

---

<sup>391</sup> Enc. Rel. 11:23

The Quran in 66:12 describes Mary as Qanitah (submissive) where Mary is in constant submission and prostration to God. But in the fifth Sura it specifically denigrates Catholics:

“And behold! Allah will say: “O Jesus the son of Mary! Didst thou say unto men [Catholics], “Take me [Jesus] and my mother for two gods ...” (Qur’an 5:116)

Muslims and other heretics accuse Catholics of Mary worship, and this verse evinces that Islam (just like Protestantism) was founded as an anti-Catholic cult.

But Muslims who would look at our lady’s image in conjunction to the Quran’s denial of the Trinity, and the Ottoman depictions, Muhammad who is identified as “crescent” in Ottoman imagery is now beneath her, dead, since he is black (symbol of death and darkness), at her feet. By this, the message from St. Mary, is that God never reflected His light on Muhammad, which is seen as a lightless dark crescent. He is after all depicted as “the crescent” and even “the full moon” (Badr).

Adding to the meanings of the name Arabic Wāda Lubba including the construct of the image, we have the following message:

The woman—not Muhammad—she is the true humble servant to whom God sent Gabriel (not to Muhammad); God splendid Her (not Muhammad) with His light. The desired one, this God of love Who is desired, Who is most precious to her, her jewel, this male Son is Deity, He is in her inner core or what she contains in her inner being Who constitutes love who is also God Himself. The divine Light emanating from this woman, she is the Mother of our Salvation, will too vanquish this light of Muhammad. The ‘luminous light’ of the moon who arose from the valley of Wada is brought low defeated by Wāda Lubba and cursed under her feet.

Apocalypse 12 never said “crescent” but “moon”. Yet both are descriptions of Muhammad. He is depicted as Badr (full moon) and crescent. So whether a Muslim reads Apocalypse or sees the image, the conclusions are but the same.

With the entire construct, had I remained Muslim, the way we would see this is that the Lady’s image responds to “Nur Muhammad” (“Light of Muhammad”), which is a term central to later Sufi (Turkey) and Shiite (Iran). The Ottoman emblem appeals to these specific two. These transform Muhammad into a spiritual, luminous being even beyond Wahhabi theology to a godly status, especially since they call him “light upon light” a title that only belongs to Allah himself in the Quran. For one to rise to the pinnacle in Islam (as Erdogan is trying to do), the multitudes must proclaim him Mahdi. This makes that person as if he was deity in Sufi Islam. This is why the Douay-Rheims Bible had the perfect description:

“Who opposeth and is lifted up above all that is called God or that is worshipped, so that he sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself as if he were God.” (2 Thessalonians 2:4)

Islam’s last Caliph or Mahdi would never plainly say: “I am God”. This is why there is this “if” in 2 Thessalonians 2. Whether Muhammad or Mahdi, these are “lifted up” “above all” “as if he were God”. The Lady’s image brings it down. It simply reverses what was reversed.

The aureole or luminous light surrounding the Lady is reminiscent of the “woman clothed with the sun” of Rev. 12:1. The light is also a sign of the power of God who has sanctified and blessed the one who appears.

Islam therefore receives similar defeat like Huitzilopochtli after the Aztec religion crumbled. The images, too, crumble. Islam’s Al-Siraj Al-Muneer (the glowing lamp) is major; it is one of Allah’s 99 names. Muhammad (even the Mahdi) in Islam, is the very reflection of Allah’s light:

“The moon reflects the sun. The Messenger [Muhammad] is al-Siraj al-Munir – a lamp radiating light. He reflects the beauty and majesty of the One who sent him.”  
(Muslim Judicial Council, Saudi Arabia)

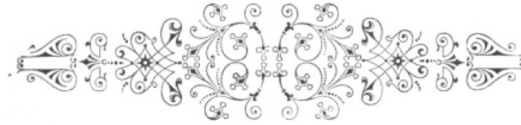
The two religions of the Aztecs and Islam stem from the same thief whom Christ warned us of coming to kill and plunder bringing nothing more than bloodshed through a false sacrificial system where Islam had salvation through martyrdom in war-conquest, where Muslims are saved by the first drop of their shed blood, and the Aztec heart-plucking ensured the victims eternal heaven by shedding their blood. The Aztecs believed that those who were sacrificed or who died in war would become Teo-micqui (“the god-dead”) and were said to “go pure... live hard by, nigh unto the sun ... [who] always forever ... rejoice ... [since] the House of the Sun is .... a place of joy.”<sup>392</sup>

So when a Muslim believes that his own blood saves, he unknowingly proclaims, like the Aztecs, that he is “the-god-dead” since a Muslim now by shedding his blood replaces Christ’s sacrifice. All these roads stem from the same pit and they all lead to the same pit.

---

<sup>392</sup> Sahgun, book 6 verse 21





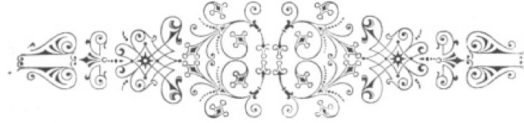
## DEFEAT THE QURAN

But this is not the only light she defeats. The image is a challenge. If one asks any observant Muslim for evidence that Islam was transmitted from God, the answer is instant—the Quran is claimed to be an *Āyat* or *Āyah* which means miracle from heaven for how could a humble illiterate simpleton like Muhammad construct it? According to the Quran it says that the whole of humanity including the demons can never replicate anything like it (see Quran 17:88).

The screenshot shows the Oxford Islamic Studies Online website. The header includes "OXFORD ISLAMIC STUDIES ONLINE" and navigation links for "ABOUT", "WHAT'S NEW", and "LOGIN". Below the header are links for "SUBSCRIBER SERVICES", "CONTACT US", and "HELP". A secondary navigation bar contains "BROWSE CONTENTS", "HOW TO SUBSCRIBE", "FREE TRIALS", "GUIDED TOUR", and "FAQS". A search bar at the top right shows "Look It Up" and "Highlight On / Off". The main content area displays the definition of "Ayah/Ayat" from the Oxford Dictionary of Islam. The definition states: "Usually translated as 'verse' or 'sign.' Refers to divisions within surahs (chapters) of the Quran. Also used within Quranic texts to refer to evidence of God in nature, miracles confirming truth of prophetic message, revealed messages in general, or a fundamental point within a surah." Related content includes "Qur'an" and "Quran".

The Virgin Mary left an Image of herself imprinted miraculously on Juan Diego's tilma called "ayate". *Āyat* is literally Arabic which means "sign," "miracle" "proof" from heaven. To Muslims, the Quran itself is an "*Āyat*" (sign/miracle) and the chapters are divided into verses called "*Āyat*".

So here comes our Lady with her true sign (*Āyat*) made of a poor quality cactus-cloth (sabra, in Semitic languages), which defies all scientific explanations of its origin while challenging all mankind to replicate it. She is telling Muslims that you have met your match and more. It is as Moses' serpent ate the serpents of pharaoh's magicians.



## OUR LADY OF GUADALUPE ARE REAL LOCATIONS IN ARABIA

A Wādī Lubba also exists in the Sinai<sup>393</sup> which is named after Sin the moon god. Mary defies the cult and its symbol, which spread from Mesopotamia to Anatolia. Galatians 4 speaks of such symbolism between the god Sin and the woman. It is the war between ‘*the twos*’, this continuing duel between righteousness over unrighteousness, between two women, Sarah’s seed vs. Hagar’s seed, Isaac vs. Ishmael which corresponds to Genesis 3:15. The core (lubb) of such battles stem from “Sinai” which “is in Arabia” (Gal 4:25). This analogy is the hint and the clue, which Galatians 4 calls “an allegory”. She conquers Sin through Her Son. There are in fact three places called “Wadi Lubba” one in the Sinai, Egypt, another in Saudi Arabia and another in Yemen. These (Sinai, Saudi Arabia and Yemen) are the very heart of what history calls Arabia, and which Isaiah 21 renders as “Babylon is fallen, is fallen.”

What transpired in Mexico will also transpire in the heart of Islam. God sees no difference between Arabia’s pre-Islam, Islam, or Mesoamerica. They link to the crescent moon in pre-Christian Mexico as Quetzalcoatl, and for Mary to be seen stepping on the crescent, signified her vanquishment over their heathen god. As one scholar puts it:

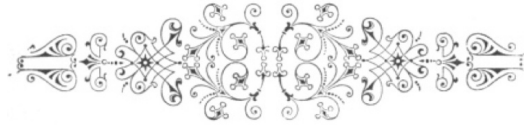
“Her foot rested in the crescent moon – She had clearly vanquished their foremost deity, the feather serpent ‘Quetzalcoatl’, this being the primary reason for converting the Aztecs of Mexico.”<sup>394</sup>

But the crescent is not the predominate symbol of the Aztecs; the Muslim world truly dominates when it comes to this symbol. The same image has an ultimate future fulfillment, which was prophesied by John in Revelation 11-12. Initially this dragon seems victorious where the woman is hidden. But the end of this “red dragon” is not depicted in John’s imagery. Yet Her image reveals the conclusion. The attempt to devour the woman by the dragon coming from under her is simply silenced by crushing the beast.

---

<sup>393</sup> Wadi Lubba at latitude 28.6205556 / longitude 34.5188889

<sup>394</sup> Spirit of Truth, pg.334



## OUR LADY OF GUADALUPE DEFEATS THE CRESCENT-BOW-ALLAH

An eye-opening discovery is “the stele at Petra” dedicated to Qos-Allah (Glueck 516). It sheds more light in understanding the symbolism behind our Lady’s image. The Arabic “Qos” or “Qaus” means “bow” and the crescent-bow symbolized Allah and still does. This hunter Allah was also found with the same name “Alla[h]” in the Epic of Atrahasis chiseled on several tablets dating to around 1700 BC.

This is extremely ancient and the oldest discovery with the name. The stele at Petra is horned and displays a star and crescent,<sup>395</sup> both consistent with a moon deity. In fact, in Islam it is forbidden to call a rainbow anything but Qos-Allah (Allah’s bow). This even drew the shape of the Muslim sword in crescent form resembling the crescent-bow of Allah.

So from a Muslim perspective when viewing the image, the Lady is not exclusively threshing the crescent, the very symbol and honor of Islam, but also Islam’s sword and the bow of the Mahdi.

How the latter is explained is simple. The early Muslim transcription of prophet Mohammed’s Hadith, Ka’b al Ahbar writes:

“I find the Mahdi recorded in the books of the Prophets...For instance, the Book of Revelation says: ‘And I saw, and behold a white horse. He that sat on him had a bow ... he went forth conquering and to conquer.’”

Egyptian authors Muhammad Ibn ‘Izzat and Muhammad ‘Arif then go on to say,

“It is clear that this man is the Mahdi who will ride the white horse and judge by the Qur’an (with justice) and with whom will be men with marks of prostration on their foreheads.”

In essence the Lady’s image is threshing the Mahdi’s bow.

And this is not without merit. The pride of the Muslim Ottomans shooting the bow while riding backwards on their horses is “Tarshish, Pul and Lud, that draw the bow, to Tubal, and Javan...” (Isaiah 66:19). These today are the Turkic regions whose pride is the crescent, the bow and war: “Then I will knock the bow out of your left hand, and cause the arrows to fall out of your right hand” (Ezekiel 39:3).

God Himself uses imagery in Scripture, for an image speaks a thousand books. This is the Red Dragon who “persecuted the woman, who brought forth the man child” by “making war with the rest of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.” The image also depicts Her conquering what injured her heart: “And thy own soul a sword shall pierce ...” (Luke 2:35). Persecuting “her seed” is persecuting Christ as

---

<sup>395</sup> Browning 28

if a sword pierced Wāda Lubba the very Love of Her Core (Heart). Therefore, She threshes “the bow” which is Islamic warfare: Jihad. She also threshes Allah himself.

She in turn provides humanity with Christ, the ultimate and only acceptable sacrifice. In Chapter 2 of St. Luke’s Gospel, the evangelist twice reports that Mary kept all things in her heart, that there she might ponder over them. Luke 2:35 recounts the prophecy of Simeon that her heart would be pierced with a sword. Simeon presents an image (the pierced heart). This became the most popular representation of the Immaculate Heart. St. John’s Gospel further invited attention to Mary’s heart with its depiction of Mary at the foot of the cross at Jesus’ crucifixion. St. Augustine said of this that Mary was not merely passive at the foot of the cross; “she cooperated through charity in the work of our redemption”. St. Leo said that through faith and love she conceived her son spiritually, even before receiving him into her womb [lubba], and St. Augustine tells us that she was more blessed in having borne Christ [her Wadd] in her heart [her Lubba] than in having conceived him in the flesh.

Such piercing is metaphorical depicting the suffering of God’s people. The bent dagger (Hanzar) of Islam which was made in the shape of the crescent was on purpose, in honor to Allah, who was depicted throughout Islam as crescent, even during Nazism, when the Ottoman-Nazi conscripts of the Hanzar (literally Muslim dagger) division, which besides persecuting the Jews, they persecuted also “the rest of her seed who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.” The world today forgets the millions of Polish Christians martyred by Nazis.

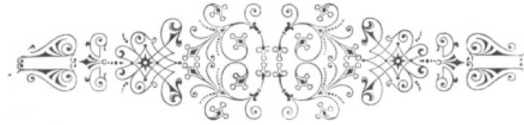
How Muslims see this, is that St. Mary here is clearly seen stepping on the crescent bow including the sword that symbolically pierced her heart when Muslims kill “the remnant of her seed” (the Christians).

But this is not all. To a Muslim, this stomping includes everything else that is the pride of Islam. Again, the image does not differentiate between Allah pre-Islam or post Islam for the simple reason that there are several Nabatean inscriptions in the Sinai and other places displaying widespread references to names regarding this deity including Allah and Shalm-lahi ‘Allah is peace’ (we have continually heard that Allah is the god of peace) and Shalm-allat, ‘the peace of the goddess Allat’ (Allat is the feminine Allah the transgender god), Amat-allahi ‘she-servant of Allah’ and Halaf-Ilahi (Caliph ‘the successor of Allah’).

The image stomping the crescent (Qaus Allah) is perhaps the response to the god of the bow and war (Jihad), Allah (as he is depicted in the Ottoman emblem). This includes not just Allah, but his crescent sword, Allah’s coming last caliph, Allah’s approval of trans-genders and Islam’s false peace (we have continually been bombarded that Islam means peace). This is summarized therefore in the image we clearly see: her foot stepping on the crescent the very symbol of Qaus-Allah. But this is not all.

Besides the Quran in its most blasphemous fifth chapter, so many are the slandering works that attempt to hint an evolution of the Catholic faith from paganism by showing visual similarities between pagan depictions vs. Catholic. On the contrary, it is paganism that stole from the truth “The thief came only to steal” just as we see the LGBT stealing the rainbow. Therefore, it is *the differences* not the similarities, *which makes all the difference*. Waddalubba shows “enmity” with and not glorification of the crescent. Pagan female deities uphold the crescent on their heads and arms just as Antichrist will demand from his followers. Such is the enmity “between thee [Lucifer] and the woman [Mary]” where “her seed shall crush thy head” (Genesis 3:15) and if the crescent is Islam’s head, it is under St. Mary’s feet.

The schismatic created a controversy over the Latin Vulgate when Genesis 3:15 said “she” instead of “He” “shall crush thy head” which does not take away the Marian understanding of the passage since the power of the devil (as the image portrays) is broken through Jesus, Mary’s Son where all Christians regardless of their persuasion would agree.



## OUR LADY OF GUADALUPE DENOUNCES THE ENEMY'S ICONOCLASM

She appears as an image. To the Muslim and Protestant, this alone is offensive. The Muslims have Ā'ishah bint Abī Bakr as Umm-Al-Muminin (mother of the faithful) yet like the schismatic these refuse to accept Mary as their mother. The schismatic (who would not mind saying 'mother earth' or 'mother nature') need to inquire why they and the Muslim have this rejection in common, especially that the Ark had carved images of angelic cherubs and even Christ in the Bible was depicted as "rock," "sun," "branch," and even a "bronze serpent". There are differences between depictions that are holy and unholy. Islam's black stone is unholy just as the "image of the beast" (Rev 15:2) and in Acts 19:35 another stone (representing Artemis with the crescent moon on her forehead) is also unholy: "any man who worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead ..."

At the Battle of Lepanto Christian ships formed the image of the Cross with the leading ship hoisting the image of Our Lady of Guadalupe defeated the Ottoman ships that sailed in crescent formation where the crucifix circulated around the crescent formation and won the greatest naval battle in history.

But the battle is not over. Where Islam rules, their crescent image is always on top higher than the cross.

To a Muslim looking at the lady's image, here comes St. Mary dressed with virtuous attire to give Her view of what she thinks of this dark symbol hoisted on high and she reverses it. Using Islam's own etiquette when Muslims enter a mosque under their crescent pinnacles by taking off their slippers entering always with the right foot, never the left, here comes St. Mary using her right foot not to enter a mosque but to step on its highest pinnacle, the crescent, and without even taking off her gray colored royal slipper. Few focus on this part of the image.

As for me, a man born and raised in the land of the shepherds who were first to witness the proclamation of His birth, I had once ignorantly stoned with my very young sons her image at St. Francis of Assisi in Concord California. Now I will rise at Her amazing portrait begging forgiveness:

O clement, O pious, O gentle Mary.  
O shepherds, rise before your God,  
relate what you have seen of Christ.

### THE IMAGE OF ANTICHRIST

The next obvious and essential observation that needs to be made is that her image destroys all four of these elements—the Mark, the Name, the Number, and the Image of the Beast of the Apocalypse:

"If anyone worships the beast and his image and receives his mark on the forehead or on the hand, he, too, will drink of the wine of God's fury, which has been poured

full strength into the cup of his wrath. He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.”

This calls for patience and endurance on the part of the saints who obey God’s commandments and remain faithful to Jesus (Revelation 14:9-12). The Greek word *charagma*, used for “mark” means “a stamp, an imprinted mark” (Strong’s 5480). So a follower of the Antichrist will have a stamp on some sort of material as a badge to be placed on the forehead or arm. In John’s time, the use for “charagma” was reserved for slaves in what was called a “badge of servitude” (Strong’s 5482). So it is a badge that declares slavery and ownership by the master and followers use it to demonstrate allegiance to this master. This would fit with Islam since according to Islamic theology Muslims are “slaves of Allah.” Islam is the religion of submission. These followers have an option to either place this badge of servitude on the foreheads or the arms. Western analysts think that the mark is placed on the hand. This is not necessarily the only spot. We know from the Greek word *dexios*, which could also be translated “right side”, “right arm” or “right shoulder”. To become a Muslim (literally means submit), one must confess the *Shahadatan*, a declaration that demonstrate allegiance and servitude to Allah and Muhammad. This submission is always combined with a commitment to fight the world:

“Men, do you know what you are pledging yourselves to in swearing allegiance to this man? ‘Yes. In swearing allegiance to him we are pledging to wage war against all mankind’” (Ishaq: 204).

“We are steadfast trusting Him. We have a Prophet by whom we will conquer all men” (Ishaq: 471).

“In faith I do not fear the army of fate. He gave us the blood of their best men to drink when we led our army against them. We are a great army with a pungent smell. And we attack continuously, wherever our enemy is found” (Ishaq: 574).

“O Muslim, we will cut off thine enemies’ heads to prove our allegiance to thee! We will drink cups of blood from the skulls of thine enemies!”

This mentality can be observed in many of the arm badges and headbands they wear. These items contain Islamic mottos, creeds, words, and symbols, which fulfill Scripture’s mandate. Often on the forehead the bands worn read: “No god but Allah, Muhammad is his messenger.” Another favorite is the crescent of Islam included with the Islamic organization of their choice. These all fulfill the blasphemous nature of the Mark of the Beast. Amazingly, and in keeping perfectly with what the Bible predicted so long ago regarding the beast and his mark, the badge is in fact an Islamic commandment from the prophet himself:

“Allah will save a man from my nation above all creation on Judgment Day. In front of him will be laid 99 registers for his sins. Every register is as long as the eye can see. Then he is asked, ‘Do you deny any of these?’ Then he says, ‘No O Lord.’ Then he

is asked, 'Do you have any excuse?' He responds, 'No Lord,' Then he is told, 'You have but one good deed and there will be no condemnation for you today'. A badge is brought forth. Scrolled across it are the words: 'No God but Allah, and Muhammad is His messenger.' Then he is asked to bring forth his deeds. He asks, O Lord, what is this badge that is with these registers?' He is told, 'You will receive no condemnation.' The deeds are put on one hand, and the badge in the other. Then the registers will float and the badge will outweigh the registers" (Tirmuthi 2639).

To sum it up, the "Name of the Beast" along with variations of the name of Allah, is worn as a sign of submission on the right arm or foreheads. Islam is submission and allegiance to a foreign god, the *Shahadatan* is blasphemous, the badge worn by Muslims on the foreheads—all of these things meet the Biblical requirements of the Mark of the Beast.



And just in case anyone still doubts, even the part of the Bible that predicted the beast will mark the foreheads is in the Qur'an and the Hadith: *Dabat Al-Ard* (literally the Beast out of the Earth) is an Islamic version of the account of the "Beast of the Earth" in Revelation 13:11. But unlike the biblical narrative, in which this beast is evil, the Qur'an gives him a holy mission to revive Islam and mark the foreheads of all true Muslim believers. According to Islam's holiest book Al-Quran, the Beast emerges in the Last-Days:

"And when the word is fulfilled concerning them, We shall bring forth a Beast of the Earth to speak unto them because mankind had not faith in Our revelations" (Qur'an. 27:82).

And in the Hadith:

"The prophet of Islam declared, "The first of the signs that will come is the rising of the sun from the place of its setting and the emergence of the Beast upon the people.

Whichever of these two occurs before the other then the other is right behind it."

Why do Muslim fundamentalists mark their foreheads with badges of submission to Allah? It comes from their belief that the hour is near:

"The task of the Beast will be to distinguish the [Muslim] believers from the non-believers, with Prophet Moses's staff it [the beast] will draw a line on the forehead of every [Muslim] believer whereby his face will become bright and luminous and with the ring of Solomon it will seal the nose of every non-believer where by his whole face will become black. Thus there will be complete distinction between the Muslim and non-Muslim, so that if many parties sit at a dinner table, the Muslim and non-Muslim will be distinguished."



According to Islamic tradition, when Jesus returns, he does not merely come to convert most Christians to Islam but to literally abolish Christianity. This is understood when we analyze a very well-known tradition which states that when Jesus returns he will “break the cross, kill swine, and abolish Jizyah. Allah will perish all religions except Islam.” The three actions are based on the notion that Jesus will assault all of the symbols of Christianity in order to abolish it as a religion. Shafi and Usmani explain that to “break the cross” means to “abolish worship of the cross.” Muslims believe that Jesus will break or remove all crosses from the rooftops and steeples of churches throughout the earth. This action is understood as a clear statement regarding Jesus’ disapproval of the notion that he was ever crucified on a cross. The killing of the swine is so that the “Christian belief of its lawfulness is belied.” The reason for abolishing the Jizyah tax (the compulsory poll-tax that non-Muslims must pay in order to live in a Muslim land) is based on the idea that when Jesus returns, the Jizyah tax will no longer be accepted. The only choice that Christians will have is to accept Islam or die. As Sideeqe M.A. Veliankode states in *Doomsday Portents and Prophecies*:

“Jesus, the son of Mary will soon descend among the Muslims as a just judge. Jesus will, therefore, judge according to the law of Islam...all people will be required to embrace Islam and there will be no other alternative.”

Ahmad ibn Naqib al-Misri (d. 1368) from *The Reliance of the Traveller*, the classic Shafi manual of Islamic jurisprudence:

“...the time and the place for the poll tax is before the final descent of Jesus (upon whom be peace). After his final coming, nothing but Islam will be accepted from them, for taking the poll tax is only effective until Jesus’ descent (upon him and our Prophet be peace).”

While Islamic tradition claims that Jesus will return and destroy all symbols of Christianity, there are also significant parallels in Psalm 83 and Judges 8:21 that say He will, in fact, destroy the symbols of Islam. Psalm 82-83 states there will be a war between Messiah and the Antichrist. The Gideon-Messiah or War-Messiah who comes to rescue His Israel of God will carry out an important task:

“Do to them as you did to Midian, as you did to Sisera and Jabin at the river Kishon, who perished at Endor and became like refuse on the ground. Make their nobles like Oreb and Zeeb, all their princes like Zebah and Zalmunna, who said, ‘Let us take possession of the pasturelands of God’” (Psalm 83:9-12).

The Psalmist prays: “Make their nobles like Oreb, and like Zeeb: yea, all their princes as Zebah, and as Zalmunna.” But what happened in the story of Zebah and Zalmunna? The answer is found in Judges 8:21:

“Then Zebah and Zalmunna said, ‘Rise yourself, and fall upon us; for as the man is, so is his strength.’ And Gideon arose and slew Zebah and Zalmunna; and he took the crescent ornaments that were on the necks of their camels” (Psalm 83:11).

Later in verse 26, the Bible says that the Midianite kings were wearing the same crescent ornaments around their necks. After Gideon stripped all of the crescent ornaments off of the slain kings, the people and the camels, he melted the gold. The story of Gideon is the story of Messiah. It is also the story of David and Goliath—a parallel to the showdown between Christ and the Antichrist, who blasphemes the God of Israel and God proclaims, “I am against you O Most Haughty One” (Jeremiah 50:31).

David, with precision bombing, lodges a stone into Goliath’s forehead, the very spot where the mark is positioned by Antichrist and the boils that Uzziah was punished when he defied the priests as he entered the temple of God. This symbolizes Antichrist’s entry.

In Judges 8:21, the word used for crescent is *saharon*, which literally means ‘crescent moon’. It comes from the root of *sahar*, which is literally used for the name of the one Isaiah 14 calls *Hilal ben Sahar*, while it translates as Lucifer, the full phrase is actually a Semitic name which means “Crescent Moon, Son of the Morning Star” which is the very symbol of Islam since “Hilal” also means “crescent”. In other words, the symbol of Islam and the name of this son of Satan are one and the same. This is significant and is a very clear hint into the spiritual origins of Islam and this one Antichrist.

---

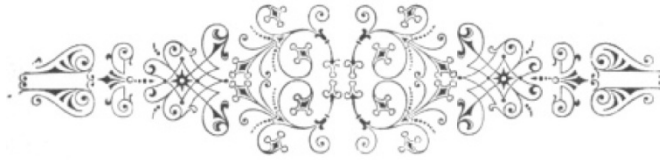
Notes

“O Muslim, we will cut off thine enemies’ heads to prove our allegiance to thee! We will drink cups of blood from the skulls of thine enemies!” (The Miracle Play of Hasan and Husain, by Pelly, London: Wm. H. Allen Co)

## SECTION IX

# LUTHIFER

HAVE THESE NOT LEARNED THAT LUCIFER APPEARS AS AN “ANGEL OF LIGHT?”



## LUTHIFER

---

And our Jesus-style question is: if Lucifer appears as an angel of light, and since many antichrists appeared to deceive the elect, tell us then, when and through whom and how do these antichrists appear? Does the wolf prefer the sheep that roamed away from the shepherd or the ones that remain close to the shepherd? Does the devil appear looking like a wolf or does this wolf appear dressed up in sheep clothing?

Without delving into the Protestant reformers, it becomes difficult to connect the dots how Daniel's Abomination of Desolation fits Protestantism rise and prosperity becoming its own principality or how Wisdom II's prophecy on the war with Eugenics (all excluded from the Protestant bibles).

While different historians do document certain works, effects and contributions of the reformers, no historian yet collected an all in one set showing how the seed of this bitter fruit grew from its beginning branching from its root to their branches and to the leaves where all the evil birds sat under its shade. This section is the first attempt to gather such a sequence from the beginning of Protestant so-called Reformation to now.

What we will find from the so-called reformers is the same tracks from the same ancient Manichean Gnosticism simply trickling downward the sewage pipes all the way to today's promotion of the religion of Evolution.

The war between good and evil will be a war between Orthodox Christianity and Gnosticism, or the belief that life is an illusion. To make multitudes of men into callous murderers, what better way to desensitize them than to have them believe that the evils that they are committing, are not real? In this same view of gnosticism, humanity is considered as being purely evil. To make men thirsty to destroy humanity, this system of antichrist will have them declare war on humanity, as something evil and worthy of destruction. In our study of the coming great conflict, it is pertinent for us to study Martin Luther; for it is he, who was so influenced by gnostic thought, who began the revolt against Orthodox Christianity, a theological and political revolution that would lead the world into Darwinistic thought, and enable the nations of the modern era to commit the most horrific atrocities on mankind.

Martin Luther was the patriarch of populism and ultra-nationalism. In Luther's ideology, political uprising and apocalyptic theology, become one. Luther made himself to be not some mere preacher, but the mouthpiece of God for the German race, commissioned to spark a most violent struggle between the Teutonic people and Christendom. As Luther himself said:

“God has appointed me for the whole German land, and I boldly vouch and declare that when you obey me you are without doubt obeying not me but Christ.”<sup>396</sup>

---

<sup>396</sup> W15, 27, in Weiner, Martin Luther: Hitler's Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 2, p. 26

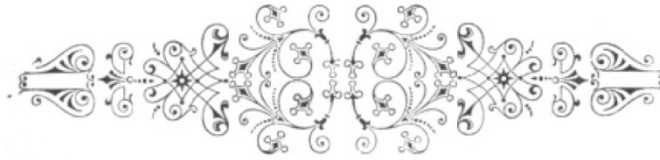
“When I am angry,” said Luther, “I am not expressing my own wrath, but the wrath of God.” He ascended the German Reformation as consisting of elite prophets whose words are God’s, and thus no objections could be made against them. “They shall respect our teaching which is the word of God,” said Luther, “spoken by the Holy Ghost, through our lips.” Luther would go on to adulate his own self as a prophet distinct amongst all prophets, saying:

“Not for a thousand years has God bestowed such great gifts on any bishop as He has on me.”<sup>397</sup>

What truly is the conflict between Orthodox Christianity and false religion? It is *the conflict between the tangible and the abstract*. It is between the Faith that can be touched and seen, and the religion that is but a shadow in the mind. This is truly at the center of the war between Christianity and the works of the devil, and it is this abstract religion that gave birth to not only Protestantism, but Nazism and Social Darwinism. Let me say, though, that I am not arguing that Protestants are Nazis, I am merely making an argument, based on history, that the man Luther, produced a doctrine that would serve as the stepping stone ideologically for the Nazis, and for future Darwinists.

---

<sup>397</sup> E61, 422, quoted in Weiner, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor, p. ch. 2, p. 25



## THE TANGIBLE VERSUS THE ABSTRACT

No reader of history can write about the so-called Reformation without writing, at least briefly, on the pre-Reformation Protestants. And what one will find in this history, is that the roots of Protestantism is gnosticism, or the belief that Christ was not physical, but a phantom. To reject the physical Humanity of Christ, would then lead to the rejection of the Eucharist, icons, spiritual holy water, and Confession. When perusing their history, one will find that these pro-Reformation sects rejected crucifixes, icons, and the Eucharist. In other words, they rejected *the tangible*. But one of the most untold truths behind these sects is that they did not become this way by simply reading their Bible which in those days were expensive, thus, people had to go to church to learn about the Faith. As Alister McGrath writes:

“In the early Middle Ages, literacy was rare, and often limited to the clergy. It was common for the courts of Europe to employ clergy to handle their correspondence and archives. This was not because the clergy might bring some special spiritual quality or blessing to these matters, but simply because the clergy were just about the only people at the time who could read and write.”<sup>398</sup>

Moreover, Christianity, be it in the early centuries after Christ, or in the Middle Ages — the epoch in which gnosticism sprung up — was Catholic. In fact, a student of the Apostles, Ignatius of Antioch, first mentions the gnostic rejection of the Eucharist. Gnosticism was being taught since the time of the Apostles. According to Church history, there was a heretic from Arabia named Scythianus who taught the dualistic doctrine of the two principles. He was influenced — as we learn from the Church historian Socrates — by the teachings of Pythagoras, Empedocles and the paganism of Egypt. We are told by Epiphanius of Salamis that Scythianus debated with St. John himself, being thoroughly defeated by the Apostle. Gnosticism was perpetuated in the time of the Apostles and their successors. There was nothing new under the sun. They taught against the Cross, teaching that it was an illusion. The denial of the Cross would inevitably lead to the denial of the Eucharist. The Eucharist, according to orthodox theology, is a sacrifice, it is a presentation of the Crucifixion, “For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord’s death till he come.” (1 Corinthians 11:26) The Eucharist is—in the words of St. Ambrose—“the true Flesh of Christ which crucified and buried, this is then truly the Sacrament of His Body.”<sup>399</sup> Thus, the denial of the sacrifice of Christ, will result in the denial of the Eucharist, which is Christ’s sacrifice in the form of bread and wine. Very close to the time of the Apostles there was a heretical sect called the Docetists. They rejected the Crucifixion as a delusion, and with this rejection

---

<sup>398</sup> McGrath, *In the Beginning*, ch. 1, p. 7

<sup>399</sup> Ambrose, *On the Mysteries*, 9.53

was also the rejection of the Eucharist as the literal body and blood of Jesus Christ. This gnostic anti-sacramentalism of the Docestists was warned about by St. Ignatius of Antioch, a direct student of the Apostles themselves, in his letter to the Smyrnaeans:

“Take note of those who hold heterodox opinions on the grace of Jesus Christ which has come to us, and see how contrary their opinions are to the mind of God... They abstain from the Eucharist and from prayer, because they do not confess that the Eucharist is the Flesh of our Savior Jesus Christ, Flesh which suffered for our sins and which the Father, in his goodness, raised up again. They who deny the gift of God are perishing in their disputes.”<sup>400</sup>

Thus, these groups did not learn or deduce the rejection of holy icons or the Eucharist — from Christianity, the Apostles, or even the Scriptures, but from gnosticism itself. The rejection of the Eucharist, of the Crucifix, of icons, is all gnostic beliefs. Gnosticism treats physical matter as evil, and thus any physical sacraments, such as the Eucharist, or any icons, would be rejected on account of their being physical. There are several sects that are esteemed as pre-Reformation groups: these are the followers of Wycliff — the Lollards — and Tyndale and his followers in England. Since the 12th century, favor towards dualist and Cathar heresy had been growing, from the Lollards all the way to the poetry of Milton. The pre-Reformation dualists in England would really be the foundation for the Reformation that would be commenced in Germany by Luther. Thus, in order to demonstrate the continuity of thought, from Luther to Nazi ideology, one must elaborate on gnosticism. With the acceptance of an abstract Christ, comes the denial of the physical Christ, with this, comes the adversity towards the Humanity of Christ, and ultimately, from this arises a war against humanity itself. To say that the Humanity of Christ was not a reality, is to deny reality itself, and thus does the genocidal thirsts of the diabolical erupt without restraint, since there is no guilt when slaughtering countless lives, when killers do not believe that reality is non-existent.

There has been very little scholarship done on the gnostic roots of both Tyndale and Wycliffe. But a recent study that has been presented by Bulgarian scholar Georgi Vasilev, called *Heresy and the English Reformation*, has shed significant light on this reality that has been so ignored. It will be from this referenced work that will bring much of my information. Valisev actually does not write from a pro-Catholic position, but the contrary, and so no accusation of bias can be made with merit when referencing this work. But such research reveals how man can end up worshiping Satan and Antichrist. The gnostics reversed the Scriptures and the positions of God and Satan, making Satan the champion of righteousness, and God to be the actual devil. They also held that God and Satan are co-eternal, in that they are the exact opposites — one being good and the other evil — but equal in power and might. The gnostics essentially believed that Satan was slandered and made to be the evil one, when in reality he was the noble protagonist. This respect towards Satan led some of the gnostics of the pre-Reformation into open devil worship.

Walter Lollard founded the Lollards who were zealous followers of Protestantism’s iconic martyr, Wycliffe. Walter first began preaching in Germany. His doctrine went to Italy, from

---

<sup>400</sup> Letter to the Smyrnaeans, Ch 6

where a Lollard named Basnage travelled from Piedmont with his followers to England and preached their doctrines.<sup>401</sup> According to Louis Moreri, a renowned 17th century encyclopedist who wrote a study on the Lollards, Walter “maintained that Lucifer and his associates were condemned unjustly”.<sup>402</sup> In the study by Moreri, he writes:

“These sectarians said that Lucifer and the angels that followed him were condemned wrongly, that is rather Archangel Michael and the good angels that deserved this punishment. They [the Lollards] added inadmissible blasphemies against the Virgin, they said that God does not punish us for the faults we commit here. The authors [or the sources] say that a girl, member of this unhappy sect condemned to perish on the stake, when asked whether she was a virgin, answered that she was one on earth but would not be under it. They [the Lollards] taught also that the Mass, baptism and the extreme unction were useless; they also denied penance and refused to obey the Church and the secular authorities.”<sup>403</sup>

These Lollards were the same as the Waldensians, for in a 1318 chronicle, referenced by Du Cange, “they called the lollard also a Waldensian”. According to scholar F. Lichtenberger, the Lollards had a prophecy that “Lucifer and the demons were unfairly chased away from Heaven will some day be restored there.”<sup>404</sup> The Lollards were therefore Satanists; devil worshippers who made Lucifer into their god and the true God into a demon.

In a 15th century document from Ignaz von Dollinger, the Lollards did not “accept any saints.” The Cathars, the gnostics of Southern France, as well rejected the intercession of the saints of heaven.<sup>405</sup> The one whom the Lollards followed, Wycliffe, limited God by asserting that He could not annihilate anything, and that He could only create a limited number of souls and not go beyond that number:

“God cannot annihilate anything, nor increase or diminish the world, but he can create souls up to a certain number, and not beyond it.”

Wycliffe also taught a form of pantheism, that anyone or any creature can become God:

“Every person is God. Every creature is God. Every being is everywhere, since every being is God.”

---

<sup>401</sup> See Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, notes for ch. 1, n. 10

<sup>402</sup> Moreri, *A New and General Biographical Dictionary*, Lollard

<sup>403</sup> La Moreri, *Dictionnaire historique ou melange curieux de l'histoire sacree et profane*, vol. 5 (1740), p. 213, quoted by Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 1, p. 14

<sup>404</sup> *Encyclopedie des sciences religieuses*, publ. sous la direction de F. Lichtenberger, vol. 8 (Paris: 1880), p. 347, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 1, p. 15

<sup>405</sup> Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, intro, p. 8



The similarities between the Lollards and other gnostic sects — like the Bogomils — are so paralleled and equal that to deny the connection between the two would be quite vacuous.

Both the Lollards and the Bogomils rejected the Eucharist; both were adverse to the Crucifix; both rejected Catholic respect paid to the Virgin Mary; both despised Christian icons; both saw Satan as the all powerful ruler over the earth. The Bogomils did not just read the Bible and learn these theological rejections, they learned them from the gnostics of the Middle East through their gnostic predecessors.

What needs to be emphasized is that such ideas were not deduced solely from a misinterpretation of Scripture, but learned from gnostic sects, contrary to what was being taught in Christendom through the Catholic Church. The Catholic Church was Christianity; their interpretation of Sacred Scripture was the collectively accepted interpretation. To then reject them was to reject Scripture — since it was the Church who compiled the Scriptures — and so the beliefs of the Lollards were passed down to them not by just ‘simple people reading their Bibles’, but rather they were learned from older gnostic sects like the Bogomils.

Let us peruse further the shared beliefs of the Lollards and Bogomils. Both esteemed the devil as an all-powerful being, ruler of the world, even to the extent (for the Lollards) that God owed obedience to him. The 12th century Byzantine monk, Euthymius Zigabenus, wrote on the Bogomils:

“Now they say that the great king is the devil, because he is cosmocrator [ruler of the world].”<sup>406</sup>

Moreover, the emperor of Bulgaria, Tsar Boril, convened a council in 1211, in which was mentioned “those who claim that the Devil is the autocrat of the world”.<sup>407</sup> Both the Cathars of France and the Bogomils of Eastern Europe believed that Satan created human beings, and that he took angels from heaven to possess their bodies. In the *Secret Book of the Bogomils*, which was read by both Bogomil and Cathar, we read:

“And in addition (Satan) devised and made man in his likeness, that is his own, and ordered the angel of the third heaven to enter a body of clay. And he took from it and made another body in the form of a woman, and he ordered the angel of the second heaven to enter the body of the woman.”<sup>408</sup>

Paralleling this gnostic belief, Wycliff taught that the human body is possessed by an angel from heaven, equating the human soul with an angel, and admitting that he learned this belief from an outside source, the name of which we do not know, but it is likely that it was a gnostic writing:

---

<sup>406</sup> Euthymii Zigabeni, *Panoplia Dogmatica* 40, *Patrologia Graecia*, quoted in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 1, p. 17

<sup>407</sup> *Synodicon of Boril*, (Sofia: 1928), p. 92, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 4, p. 62

<sup>408</sup> In Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 4, p. 63

“Thus man has a double nature ... this means body and soul ... and speaking of the soul, a true writing gives it as being created as a completely invisible and immortal spirit, it being possible that it is an angel in itself.”<sup>409</sup>

Similarly, the Lollard’s founder, Wycliffe, also taught that at times “God must obey the Devil”. This teaching, that at times God is less powerful than Satan, is really a gnostic belief, for the gnostics were devil worshippers, and being sympathetic towards the diabolical, they did not mind giving undeserved power to their lord, Satan. With the gnostic love of the devil and their hatred towards God and humanity, came open veneration for the devil. One Cathar named Guillelme Carreria was plowing his fields and the plower’s yoke was displaced, and upon this he said: “Devil, put back that yoke in its proper place!”<sup>410</sup> Martin Luther, like the gnostics before him, attributed much undeserved power to Satan, as was observed by historian Johannes Janssen, who described how Luther’s obsession with Satan helped lead his followers to abominations, iconoclasm and the occult:

“It is one of the chief characteristics of Luther that in his intellectual life, in his social intercourse, in speech, in writing and in preaching he always brought in the Devil — attributed far more influence and importance to him than is warranted by Scripture, and by his writings gained for him in Germany a popularity which he had never before enjoyed... The more the effectual methods of salvation instituted by God, the Sacraments and sacramentals were mocked and despised, the more did empty, fraudulent, absurd superstition and devil worship grow up among the demoralized people. They ridiculed the blessing of the Church in order to curse and swear more freely. They mocked the pictures and relics of the saints in order to carry on the most abominable superstitious traffic in hairs and bones of animals. They knocked off the head of the image of the immaculate Mother of God, in order day and night to give themselves up to the devil. The devil was formally enthroned in the people’s life and literature. There was more talk about him than about God.”<sup>411</sup>

Continuing in his depraved and twisted gnostic worldview, Luther once said: “Satan sleeps with me much more that my wife does”.<sup>412</sup> His gnostic hatred for God was expressed in other words. Luther once described God as “a master armed with a stick.” In one conversation, Luther said: “I look upon God no better than a scoundrel”, and “God is stupid”.<sup>413</sup> In more explicit gnostic terms, Luther said:

---

<sup>409</sup> De compositione hominis, pp. 3-4 (London, 1884), in Vasilev, Heresy and the English Reformation, ch. 4, p. 63

<sup>410</sup> The Inquisitorial Register of Jacques Fournier, Invocation of the devil: testimony of Arnaud Laufre, in Edward Peters, Heresy and Authority in Medieval Europe, ch. ix, p. 264

<sup>411</sup> Johannes Janssen, History of the German People at the Close of the Middle Ages, vol. 1, part 2, ch. 2, pp. 212-213

<sup>412</sup> Quoted by Weiner, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestors, ch. 2, p. 22

<sup>413</sup> Table Talk, No. 963, W1, 487, in Weiner, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 2, p.

*“When I beheld Christ I seemed to see the Devil.”*<sup>414</sup>

Spite and hatred was greatly shown against any reverence towards the Virgin Mary and any of the saints, or any of the holy icons, by both the Bogomils and the Lollards. Zigabenus describes the Bogomils as such:

“They do not venerate the glorious and pure Mary, the mother of our God Jesus Christ and say malignant gossip against her.”

Likewise the Lollards affirmed:

“Also that no honor is due to manifest to any sort of images of the cross, neither to the blessed Mary and to any of the other saints.”<sup>415</sup> The sign of the Cross and the Crucifix was seen with so much vitriol, both in England by the Lollards, and in Eastern Europe by the Bogomils. M.D. Lambert writes: “In East England the crucifix was attacked in terms oddly reminiscent of the Bogomils; ‘no more credence should be done to the crucifix’ it was said, ‘than to the gallows which thieves be hanged on.’”<sup>416</sup> The populist nature of Wycliff’s movement was manifested in the Lollard revolt of the late 14th century, in which Wycliff’s followers dragged Simon Sudbury, the Bishop of Canterbury, from the Tower of London and beheaded him. The animosity for icons and saints was also directed against the Eucharist. The Cathars taught “that none should believe that the host the priest shows the people during Mass is the body of Christ for it is only bread.”<sup>417</sup> The former Cathar, Bernard Gui, wrote in regards to the Albigensians in France:

“The body of Christ, they say, is not there [in the Eucharist], for if we assume it could be compared to the greatest mountain then the Christians would have eaten it all by now; the Eucharist is born of straw, passes through the trails of stallions or mares. In other words when the flour is cleansed of this filth through the sieve it goes down to the end of the stomach and excreted through the dirtiest organ. That is why it is impossible, they say, for God to be there.”<sup>418</sup>

---

<sup>414</sup> Wiener, *Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor*, ch. 2, p. 26

<sup>415</sup> In Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 1, p. 22, taken from the Depositions of Johannes Reve of Becele.

<sup>416</sup> In Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 1, p. 25

<sup>417</sup> *Acta inquisitionis Carcassonensis contra Albigensis a. 1308 et 1309*,” Dollinger, vol. ii, p. 18, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformatoon*, ch. 4, p. 64

<sup>418</sup> Gui, *Manuel de l’inquisiteur*, p. 26, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the Protestant Reformation*, ch. 5, pp. 90-91

John Wycliffe, continuing the gnostic teaching, said “That the essence of material bread and wine remains [the same] after their consecration at the altar.”<sup>419</sup> Tyndale taught the same heresy, saying: “Now the testament is, that is his blood was shed for our sins; but is impossible that the cup or his blood should be that promise”.<sup>420</sup> Tyndale held that the Blood of the New Covenant that Christ spoke of in the Last Supper was simply referring to the teachings of the Bible, and this same belief was taught by the Cathar Bogomils, for as Zigabenus says of them: “The ‘new wine’ they say is their teaching.”<sup>421</sup> When Christ said, “*my blood is real drink*” (John 6:55), the gnostic rejects this, and believes that the blood of Christ is an abstract, intangible thought, idea or teaching. Again, the conflict is between the tangible and the abstract. This heresy, of both the gnostics and of Tyndale and Wycliffe, is the same doctrine, and it substantiates that, in the words of Vasilev, “we have one and the same theology, born in Bulgaria and transferred to England, expressed in the 16th century with an almost identical vocabulary.”<sup>422</sup>

In ancient Israel, the prophet was the mediator between Man and God. Moses begged the Lord to show mercy unto the children of Israel as they were worshipping the golden calf. The people exhorted Samuel to “Pray for thy servants to the Lord thy God, that we may not die, for we have added to all our sins this evil, to ask for a king.” (1 Samuel 12:19) The people of Judea and Jerusalem flocked to St. John the Baptist, “confessing their sins.” (Mark 1:5) Jesus told the Disciples “Whose sins you shall forgive, they are forgiven them; and whose sins you shall retain, they are retained.” (John 20:23) And in his letter to the Corinthians, St. Paul wrote:

“And to whom you have pardoned any thing, I also. For, what I have pardoned, if I have pardoned any thing, for your sakes have I done it in the person of Christ.” (2 Corinthians 2:10)

While the priest in old Israel acted as an intercessor between Man and God, the priest of the New Covenant acts as a participant in the mediation of Christ. St. Paul said that there is “one mediator of God and men, the man Christ Jesus” (1 Timothy 2:5), and while this is true, we cannot isolate man from participating in the mediation of Christ. This is what the heretics do, redefining Christ’s mediation as something almost abstract, without it ever being conducted in any incarnational manner, portraying it as only man asking God for forgiveness, in which there is no human authority confirming absolution. It is obvious from the verses just quoted that God, indeed, established a Church in which man may participate, as priest, as the mediator between Man and God, as a partaker in the mediation of Christ, in the place of Christ on earth. This teaching of the Sacrament of Reconciliation was rejected by Cathars, Lollards and the later Protestant sects. In the 15th century it was declared in the

---

<sup>419</sup> XXIV Conslusiones Wycclif damnatae Londoniis in synodo, Fasculi Zizianorum, p. 278, in Vasilev, Heresy and the English Reformation, ch. 4, p. 65

<sup>420</sup> Tyndale, Doctrinal Treatises, p. 379, in Vasilev, Heresy and the English Reformation, ch. 5, p. 90

<sup>421</sup> See Vasilev, Heresy and the English Reformation, ch. 5, p. 90

<sup>422</sup> Vasilev, Heresy and the English Reformation, ch. 5, p. 91

Norwich heresy trial records that a certain Lollard leader, named Margaret, said: “confession is made only before God and no other priest.”<sup>423</sup>

Tyndale also rejected the Sacrament of Confession, preaching against the idea of a priest being “a mediator between God and us.”<sup>424</sup> Tyndale taught really a theological socialism, where there is no hierarchy, and all peoples, “every man and woman that know Christ and his doctrine” have the sacrament “to bind and loose”.<sup>425</sup> That Wycliffe was a gnostic himself is further revealed by the fact that he actually translated the gnostic book, the Gospel of Nicodemus (the *Evangelium Nicodemi*), one of the numerous gnostic gospels that were rejected by the Catholic Church.

The Lollard sect had eventually evolved into the Puritan cult of England. As A.F. Thomson notes: “by the time that the Roman establishment was succeeded by the Anglican, the Lollardy was developing into Puritanism.”<sup>426</sup>

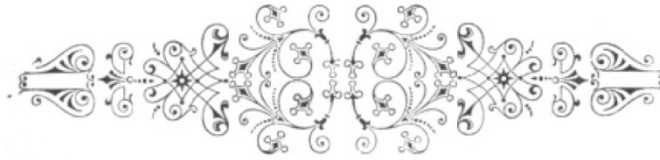
---

<sup>423</sup> N. Tanner, ed., *Kent Heresy Proceedings 1511-12* (Kent Archeological Society: 1997), p. 2, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 5, p. 87

<sup>424</sup> Tyndale, *Obedience*, p. 111, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the Protestant Reformation*, ch. 5, p. 87

<sup>425</sup> W. Tyndale, *Practice of Prelates*, p. 284, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch. 5, p. 89

<sup>426</sup> Thomson, *The Later Lollards*, p. 253, in Vasilev, *Heresy and the English Reformation*, ch.1, p. 30



## MARTIN LUTHER AND THE GNOSTICS

Martin Luther has for centuries been touted as a champion for Biblical Christianity, a reformer who wanted to bring the Church back to its original roots and eschew the “traditions of men.” They often show how much Luther referenced the Church Fathers—especially Augustine—with the intent of restoring their interpretation of Scripture and keeping them away from Roman Catholic corruption. But based on perusing notes written by the German reformer, reveals a gnostic Luther who was adverse to the orthodox view of the Trinity, the Humanity of Christ, and Augustine’s refutations of gnosticism with sentiments more in favor towards the Manichaeans heresy than orthodoxy. While it is true that Luther wrote many true statements on Christ—that would be anti-gnostic—such as that Christ is “that holy ladder by which we ascend to the knowledge of God,”<sup>427</sup> we cannot ignore what has been discovered in the thousands of notes written by Luther himself on the margins of books written by reputed theologians such as Augustine and Peter Lombard. The notes were written within the time periods of 1506 to 1516, and 1535 to 1545. But, they were much overlooked until during the 20th century when the German scholar Theobald Beer enduringly read through the notes, studying the patriarch of Protestantism for thirty-five years. Beer’s research on Luther was eventually published in his 1980, 584 page publication, *Der fröhliche Wechsel und Streit*, in which he exposed and discoursed on the heretical gnostic beliefs and teachings of Luther. In fact, Melancthon, Luther’s main confidant and one of the head figures of the Protestant Reformation, criticized the German reformer as having “Manichean delirium”. The central belief of Manichaeism is that there are two principles — one good and one evil — existing co-eternally, and eternally opposing each other. The evil principle — Satan — created humanity, and thus humanity unto itself is evil; and the good principle — the god of Mani — created the spiritual world. This doctrine places humanity and God not in an intimate relationship, but rather sets them up in war against each other. By making God co-eternal with the devil, it places Satan’s power at an equal level with God’s. It is reminiscent to the Mormons — who are just modern day gnostics — when they say that Christ is the brother of Lucifer; the teaching makes Christ just another *Son of God*, and Lucifer as also another *Son of God*. The doctrine enables a high esteem for Satan, and a decayed view on God, and in numerous cases opens the doors for devil worship. Hilaire Belloc wrote that gnosticism “bred all sorts of secondary effects. In some men it would lead to devil worship”.<sup>428</sup> One of these men was Luther. This gnostic precept, and its decayed and diabolical hermeneutics, is seen in Luther’s words:

---

<sup>427</sup> Quoted by K.A. Hagen, *A Theology of Testament in the Young Luther*, p. 92

<sup>428</sup> Belloc, *The Great Heresies*, p. 72

“the devil must be granted an hour of divinity and I must attribute fiendishness to God”<sup>429</sup>

Luther, in his glosses, did not affirm that Christ was murdered on account of humanity’s sin — which is in accordance to orthodox doctrine — but that Christ was guilty of sin Himself. As we read from the quote just presented, Luther believed that Christ submitted to the devil. For Luther, there is no reconciliation between humanity and divinity, since the former is too evil to be worthy of union with the latter. This is why Luther rejected the hypostatic union<sup>430</sup> of orthodox theology, which signifies (for lack of better words) the unification of the two natures, Humanity and Divinity in Christ. Christ is very Man and very God, and He is one, in a beautiful and sublime harmony and perfect theandric. The divinity and humanity did not mix into a composite — they were not compounded, but became one, with the flesh maintaining its own nature, and the divinity its own nature, while at the same time remaining in union in the person of Christ. In the words of St. John Damascus:

“He became hypostatically united to the rationally and intellectually animated flesh which He had from the holy Virgin and which had its existence in Him. He did not transform the nature of His divinity into the substance of His flesh, nor the substance of His flesh into the nature of His divinity, and neither did He effect one compound nature out of His divine nature and the human nature which He had assumed.”<sup>431</sup>

Luther went against the just quoted words of St. John of Damascus. Luther held that Christ was a compound nature. One might ask: what is the significance of calling Christ a compositum and not a person? Even Melancthon tried to correct such errors after Luther’s death, saying: “The formulas to be rejected are: ‘Christ is composed of two natures’ and ‘Christ is the fruit of creation.’ Christ is one, both very God and very Man, without any of these two natures mingling together or mixing, but remaining the same unchangingly. Luther on the other hand believed that Christ composed of both divinity and the diabolical, because humanity unto itself is of the devil. Hence, Luther said that Lucifer “must be granted an hour of divinity”, with Christ — in His sinful Humanity — submitting to Satan in guilt of its sin. Since humanity is evil, then Christ’s humanity is also evil, and thus the Word of the Father became evil, in the warped theology of Luther. In regards to the personhood of Christ Luther writes: “[The term] ‘person’ in God is a term common to many and signifies the substance of the divinity.” This goes against the orthodox teaching that says that the

---

<sup>429</sup> 30 Days, No. 2, 1992, “Luther: Manichaeism Delirium” by Antonio Socci and Tommaso Ricci, pg. 55)

<sup>430</sup> *hypostatic* comes from the Greek word *hypostasis* appears four times in the New Testament. For example: Hebrews 1:3 where Jesus is said to be “the radiance of the glory of God and the *exact imprint* of his *nature*” uses the word in reference to the oneness of God. Both the Father and the Son are of the same “nature.” Christ is the *two natures* united in *one person* in the God-man not as two persons but one. The hypostatic union is the *joining* (mysterious though it be) of the divine and the human in the one person of Jesus.

<sup>431</sup> John of Damascus, Orthodox Faith, book 3, ch. 2

person of Christ signifies both His Humanity and Divinity, and not the substance of divinity. To isolate the person of Christ to just His Divinity is to disregard His Humanity.

Christ's Humanity remains the same; His Divinity remains the same, and they both are one, yet both are unchanged. In fact, Luther split Christ's two natures and made two separate christs, one human and the other divine:

“So one is the Abraham who believes, one is the Abraham who works, one is the Christ who redeems, one is the Christ who works...distinguish between these two things as between heaven and earth.”<sup>432</sup>

This statement of Luther is absolute Nestorianism, the heresy — founded by Nestorius — that severed Christ into two persons, one human and the other divine. One must understand that when we say that Christ is a person, that the word used signifies *the union of His two natures*. The person of Christ is not one nature, and nor does it signify one nature, but rather conveys the hypostatic union of His two different natures — Humanity and Divinity. St. John of Damascus wrote:

“Moreover, the Word makes human things His own because what is proper to His sacred flesh belongs to Him; and the things which are His own He communicates to His flesh.”<sup>433</sup>

In Luther's compositum Christ's Humanity is belittled to the point that it is deemed as merely an accident. Commentating on the words of Christ, “Before Abraham was, I am,” Luther wrote:

“This is what happens in all names *regarding accident*, but *not substance*. Christ did not say, ‘Before Abraham was, I am Christ’; He said simply, ‘I am.’”<sup>434</sup>

In other words, Christ did not say, ‘Before Abraham was, I am Christ,’ because His human nature is an accident mingling with His Divinity, humanity being irreconcilable to God. Thus there is no hypostatic union, but an accidental humanity merged with a divinity. Christ's Humanity, because in Luther's view it is evil, only protects us from the Father's wrath, but nothing beyond that there being no profound union with Christ's Divinity and His human creatures through His own Humanity. Theobald Beet explained Luther's idea of Christ as our shield:

---

<sup>432</sup> Socci and Beer, 5

<sup>433</sup> St. John of Damascus, ca 675-749 A. D. AN EXACT EXPOSITION OF THE ORTHODOX FAITH, BOOK I, CHAPTER IV

<sup>434</sup> Socci and Ricci, 56. "Sicut albus est respectu hominis, ita Christus respectu filii dei."



“The first... is the function of shielding us from divine wrath and the second that of giving us an example. This is twofold justification.”<sup>435</sup>

Christ’s Humanity is only a shield. Mortals cannot become in union with Christ’s Divinity through His Humanity, because His flesh unto itself is evil. *This is why the concept of works in the journey of humanity’s salvation is viciously rejected in protestant theology. But this comes from the gnostic hatred for humanity.*

Since humanity is evil, then his works mean nothing “filthy rags,”<sup>436</sup> even if they are righteous. Luther wrote that when Christ died on the Cross, “the devil had free access to Christ, and the divinity had withdrawn its power and left the humanity to fight alone.”<sup>437</sup>

Satan torments the Humanity of Christ while the Divinity of Christ combats the dark powers. This is utterly contrary to the Catholic teaching, which says, in the words of St. John of Damascus, “Nor was He [Christ] ever deserted by His divinity — on the contrary, it was ourselves who were left behind and overlooked. And so He appropriated our appearance and prayed these things.”<sup>438</sup> And in another line, this great Doctor of the Church writes:

“And so, even though as man He did die and His sacred soul was separated from His immaculate body, the divinity remained un-separated from both — the soul, I mean, and the body.”<sup>439</sup>

In the Diet of Augsburg — a council between Catholics and Protestants — the Catholics used the verse in Galatians 5:6, “faith working through love” to expound on how faith is demonstrated by works under the Law of Love. Luther responded to this by writing:

“The relationship between God and man is like a line *touched by a sphere*; the sphere only ever meets the line at one point and it is at precisely this point that Christ is sited. We are always on the same path but the sphere only ever touches us at one point.”<sup>440</sup>

---

<sup>435</sup> *30 Days*, No. 2, 1992, "Luther: Manichaeism Delirium" by Antonio Socci and Tommaso Ricci, pg. 55

<sup>436</sup> This is a devil’s interpretation of Isaiah 64 which in context states: “But when we *continued to sin against them*, you were angry. How then can we be saved? All of us have become like one who is unclean, and all our righteous acts are like filthy rags; we all shrivel up like a leaf, and like the wind *our sins sweep us away*. Your sacred cities have become a desert; even Zion is a desert, Jerusalem a desolation.” This speaks of Israel sinning against God *without repentance* and *return to the former state*. It is only then that God abandoned them where Jerusalem and its Temple were destroyed and calls their works as “filthy rags”. This by no means says that the works of righteousness are ‘filthy rags’.

<sup>437</sup> WA 45.239, 32-40, quoted in the Oxford Handbook of Martin Luther’s Theology, P. 280

<sup>438</sup> St. John of Damascus, Orthodox Faith, 3.24

<sup>439</sup> St. John of Damascus, Orthodox Faith, 3.27

<sup>440</sup> *30 Days*, No. 2, 1992, "Luther: Manichaeism Delirium" by Antonio Socci and Tommaso Ricci, pg. 55

This is taken not from Scripture, but from the gnostic figure Hermes Trismegistus:

“God is an *infinite sphere* whose center is everywhere...God is a sphere with as many circumferences as there are *points*.”<sup>441</sup>

The gnostic description of God as a sphere, done by Luther, evidences his own gnostic beliefs. When Luther read St. Augustine’s words, that “It was said that the Father invisible, united with the Son invisible with Him, sent that same son and rendered Him visible,” Luther, not being agreeable, wrote as a note to this: “Look, what a strange conclusion!” Luther could not see the Humanity and Divinity of Christ as being in harmony, but rather in opposition. Luther held that it was the Divinity of Christ that saves us, but not His Humanity, writing: “Christ works for our salvation, but without the cooperation of human nature.” This goes along with the gnostic view, that humanity is evil and therefore the Humanity of Christ must also be rendered useless in the redemption of mankind. Paralleling this view, the Albigensian gnostics of southern France taught that the Christ of the Gospels was evil, because He came in the flesh, while the Christ Who Paul saw was good because He came in the spirit and not the flesh. While Luther did not teach this, it is reminiscent to his adversity to the Humanity of Christ. What we do, our actions, are part of our salvation; for since God became one with the whole of Humanity, it is the truth that humanity’s righteous actions participate in the Humanity of Christ.

There is a duality in Luther’s false christ just as the Cathars saw an evil god and a good god living co-eternally and in constant warfare against each other, Luther saw the two principles of evil humanity and good god in perpetual opposition. Although Luther did not subscribe to the Cathar teaching of two gods, he — just like the Cathars — saw God as evil and cruel. When St. Paul writes that in Christ “dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily” (Colossians 2:9), Luther responds by noting: “It is good that we have such a man, because God in himself is cruel and bad.” Luther was also in agreement with the Albigensian Cathars in that most deranged and demonic belief, that Christ fornicated with Mary Magdalen. Luther taught:

“Christ committed adultery first of all with the women at the well about whom St. John tell’s us. Was not everybody about Him saying: ‘Whatever has He been doing with her?’ Secondly, with Mary Magdalen, and thirdly with the women taken in adultery whom He dismissed so lightly. Thus even, Christ who was so righteous, must have been guilty of fornication before He died.”<sup>442</sup>

This was a belief strongly held by the Albigensians in Southern France, and it should not be surprising that a heretic is in accord with them, for he, too, was a gnostic. Luther actually supported gnostic dualism against Augustine. When Augustine wrote in his Confessions against the Manichaeian belief in two deities constantly warring against one another, Luther writes in the margin: “This is false. This is the origin of all Augustine’s errors.”

---

<sup>441</sup> Assigned to Hermes Trismegisto quoted in the Book of the 24 Philosophers (twelfth century)

<sup>442</sup> Trishreden, Weimer Edition, Vol. 2, Pg. 107

The nature of Christ is very specific, and at the same time mysterious, and while its majesty perplexes our mortal minds, we cannot let our pride overtake us with the desire to redefine its wonders or force it under the scope of callous sciences, but to only stand and behold in awe its ineffable beauties. For it is when we begin to change the nature of Christ for the sake of our egos that the spirit of the diabolical enters. Leave Christ under the opinions of uninspired men, and you will no longer have Christ, but another christ — an antichrist — and you will fall to the devil. Christ is, He is the I Am; He never changes and nor does humanity have the authority to alter His majesty. For Christ unto Himself is majesty; Christ unto Himself is Life Itself, “in Him all things consist” (Colossians 1:17); all those who hate Him are not in life but death. What useless opinion of man can change the very reason for existence itself? And to think that this wicked heretic, this corpulent bag of bile named Luther was presumptuous enough to go against the holy precepts explained and exclaimed by the holy fathers of the Church, and the councils of Christendom!

While the gnostics before him taught that the devil created the physical world, while God created the spiritual realm, Luther made God and the devil as one person, making God both the author of *good* and *evil*. But not only this, Luther would further affirm that God forces man to do evil, and that it is not of his own choice or will. He wrote: “Man, when he does what is evil, is not master of himself”;<sup>443</sup> “Man does evil because God ceases to work in him”.<sup>444</sup> Following his gnostic predecessors, he held man to be so evil that he had no control over himself, which is akin to the Lollard and Cathar position, that Satan is the autocrat over the earth, even over all human actions. Luther called “free-will,” “a mere empty name.” In his treaty, *Slave Will*, Luther wrote: “The world has allowed itself to be seduced by the flattering doctrine of free-will which is pleasing to nature.”<sup>445</sup>

Luther taught on what he called the “captive will,” which he described as the “most sublime mysteries of our faith and religion, which only the godless know not, but to which the true Christian holds fast.” Luther simply united the *evil god* and the *good god* of the Cathars into one forcing man to do evil as he does good:

“In the most shameful manner and without a blush, he revives the *old Persian idea of two eternal principles of good and evil* contending continually for the possession of man. With a slight variation of the ancient *debasement doctrine of Manes* [Mani], he declares that man is the merely passive subject of a contest between *God* and the *devil*.”<sup>446</sup>

In accordance with the gnostic view, God and Satan are merely fighting over control of man, over who will enslave humanity, and humanity is left with absolutely no choice as to whose will — that of God or Satan — he will obey. “Man,” wrote Luther:

---

<sup>443</sup> Luther (Complete) by Hartman Grisar, The Development of Luther’s Free Will from 1516 – 1524, Pg. 227 Also see The Facts About Luther by Patrick F. O’Hair, Pg. 264

<sup>444</sup> Ibid

<sup>445</sup> The Facts About Luther by Patrick F. O’Hair, Pg. 265, Also see “Assertio,” etc. “Werke,” Weim. ed., 7, p. 146: “Opp. Lat. var.,” 5, p. 233.

<sup>446</sup> O’Hare, The Facts about Luther, p. 271

“is like a horse. Does God leap into the saddle? The horse is obedient and accommodates itself to every movement of the rider and goes whither he wills it. Does God throw down the reins? Then Satan leaps upon the back of the animal, which bends, goes and submits to the spurs and caprices of its new rider. The will cannot choose its rider and cannot kick against the spurs and caprices of its new rider. It must go on and its very docility is a disobedience or a sin. The only struggle possible is between the two riders, who dispute the momentary possession of the steed ... *God is the author of what is evil in us* as well as of *what is good*, and, as He bestows happiness on those who merit it not, so also, does He damn others who deserve not their fate.”<sup>447</sup>

Luther held man to be so utterly evil to the point that he has no control over his own actions and passions. God placed a basic morality into man’s heart, what we call the conscience. But even Luther made war with this, pushing that we utterly reject the conscience and sin boldly:

“Do not ask anything of your conscience; and if it speaks, *do not listen to it*; if it insists, *stifle it*, amuse yourself; if necessary, *commit some good big sin*, in order to *drive it away*. *Conscience is the voice of Satan*, and it is necessary always to do just the *contrary of what Satan wishes*.”<sup>448</sup>

Luther wanted God to be the enforcer of sin, so much so that he called the voice of conscience as satanic. What Luther pushed for was, in some sense, a self-fulfilled prophecy: Man is utterly depraved, with no will to do good, and when his internal morality objects to evil deeds, he must disobey it, to fulfill the doctrine of captive will. Luther was just like the Bogomils who believed, in the words of Cosmas that “everything exists by the will of the devil”.<sup>449</sup> The god of Luther is the creator of sin, a deity with a split personality, one of good and one of evil. It is the two gods of the gnostics converged into one. It is of no wonder that Pope Leo, in 1520, called Luther a new Porphyry (a ancient gnostic heretic), writing:

“For now a new Porphyry rises who, as the old once wrongfully assailed the holy apostles, now assails the holy pontiffs, our predecessors.”<sup>450</sup>

St. Augustine wrote against Porphyry for his gnostic heresy of — like that of Luther — deeming with disgust the flesh of Christ:

---

<sup>447</sup> De Servo Arbitrio, in op. lat. 7, 113 seq, ellipses mine, in O’Hare, Facts about Luther, p. 272

<sup>448</sup> J. Dollinger, La Reforme et les resultants qu’elle a produits. (Trans. E. Perrot, Paris, Gaume, 1848-49), Vol III, pg. 248)

<sup>449</sup> The sermon of Cosmas the Priest against Bogomilism, in Edward Peters, Heresy and Authority, ch. iii, p. 113

<sup>450</sup> Pope Leo, Exsurge Domine, 1520

“But Porphyry, being under the dominion of these envious powers, whose influence he was at once ashamed of and afraid to throw off, refused to recognize that Christ is the Principle by whose incarnation we are purified. Indeed he despised Him, because of the flesh itself which He assumed, that He might offer a sacrifice for our purification—a great mystery, unintelligible to Porphyry’s pride, which that true and benignant Redeemer brought low by His humility, manifesting Himself to mortals by the mortality which He assumed.”<sup>451</sup>

Even Luther’s student — and later enemy — Ulrich Zwingli, taught the god of Luther in his book, *On Providence*, on the god in whom are both evil and good:

“God *leads* and *forces man into evil*; that he makes *use of the creature to produce injustice*, and that yet he does not sin; for the law which makes an act sinful does not exist for God, and, moreover, He always acts from right and supremely holy intentions. The creature on the contrary, although acting involuntarily under the Divine guidance, sins, because he violates the law and acts from damnable motives.”<sup>452</sup>

And this is why we find such prominent Calvinist apologists as James White who believes that if a woman was raped, it was pre-destined.<sup>453</sup>

This same Zwingli wrote that one can murder his parents, and still the evil act would come from God, and the murderer would be forced by God to commit the evil deed:

“I will indulge my sinful desires and whatever I shall do, God is the author of it. It is by the ordination of God that this man is a parricide and that man is an adulterer.”<sup>454</sup>

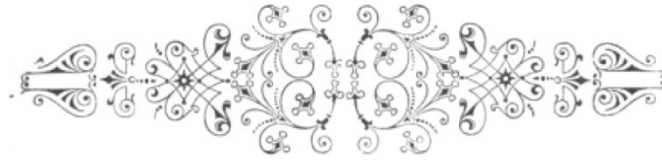
---

<sup>451</sup> City of God X.12, 13, 24

<sup>452</sup> O’Hare, The Facts about Luther, p. 277

<sup>453</sup> Calvinist theologian James White, in a debate with Hank Hannegraaf and George Bryson, was asked, “When a child is raped, is God responsible and did He decree that rape?” To which Mr. White replied... “Yes, because if not then it’s meaningless and purposeless and though God knew it was going to happen he created it without a purpose ... and God is responsible for the creation of despair.... If He didn’t [decree child rape] then that rape is an element of meaningless evil that has no purpose” ([Bible Answer Man interview](#), ‘Why it is important to go back to the sources, illustrated’, Friday, August 19, 2011).

<sup>454</sup> Galton, Hereditary Genius



## LUTHER AND DARWINISM

The mission of all false religion can be simply put into one line: *to reduce man to an animal.*

Only Christianity stirs in its followers the inner volition to rise above impulses, fears and concupiscence. If we examine some of the major religions, Islam does not stir a man to rise above his impulses, but rather promises him an eternity of sensualist paradise; Buddhism enables murder quiet easily, by teaching that man is the designer of his own reality, that if he murders, it is only murder if *he* says it is; the Mormon heresy instills into its followers that man will become his own god with his own celestial harem after death, as opposed to eternally living with God in Heaven; Odinism, like Islam and Mormonism, teaches that there will be eternal pleasures, with wine and fornication, in the realm of Valhalla; Hinduism pushes its followers into all sorts of perversities and violence.

Destroy Free-will, which separates man from all other creatures, and now we are confined within a natural impulse, and will always act in submission to our inborn inclinations. Man, on the other hand, was conferred with the mental faculties to choose to eschew his lower fallen nature. To then say that man has no freedom to spurn evil and sin, then reduces him to the level of the animal.

As we shall discover from multiple references, Luther held man to be so utterly evil to the point that he has no control over his own actions and passions and with such reformers, humanity is now reduced to become at an equal level with animals, and thus the *Protestant heresy feeds Social Darwinism.*

Darwinism, while it cloaks itself in 'science' is in itself a religion despite that its advocates do not define it as such. Under Darwinism, man can only choose what is going to advance himself, what is going to maintain his dominance, his survival, his pleasures, and thus man can only pursue his own self, while Christ taught *to deny the self.* So when Luther rejected free will Charles Darwin, followed:

“Now it is not a little remarkable that the fixed laws of nature should be universally thought to be the will of a superior being, whose nature can only be rudely traced out. When one sees this, one suspects that our will may arise from as fixed laws of organization. M. le Comte argues against all contrivance — it is what my views tend to.”<sup>455</sup>

The only difference between Darwin and Luther is that while Luther conveys the teaching through theology, the other does the same cloaked in scientific terms. In fact, Darwin even took the Protestant term, *predestination*, and reformulated it into an atheistic predestination, an atheist's calvinism:

---

<sup>455</sup> The Evolving God: Charles Darwin on the Naturalness of Religion By J. David Pleins pg. 49

“free will (if so called) makes change in bodily organization of oyster, so may free will make change in man. — the real argument fixes on hereditary disposition & instincts. — Put it so. — Probably some error in argument, should be grateful if it were pointed out. My wish to improve my temper, what does it arise from, but organization, that organization may have been affected by circumstances & education & by the choice which at that time organization gave me to will — Verily the faults of the fathers, corporeal & bodily, are visited upon the children.— ... The above views would make a man *a predestinarian of a new kind*, because he would tend to be an atheist. Man thus believing, would more earnestly pray “deliver us from temptation,” he would be most humble, he would strive to improve his organization for his children’s sake & for the effect of his example on others. It may be doubted whether a man intentionally can wag his finger from real caprice. it is chance which way it will be, but yet it is settled by reason.”<sup>456</sup>

The predestination of Luther is taught with theological words, while the predestination of Darwin, is taught under scientific terminology.

Herbert Spencer, the sociologist who actually coined the term, “survival of the fittest,” also rejected free-will as something contrary to evolutionism:

“To reduce the general question to its simplest form:- Physical changes either conform to law or they do not. If they do not conform to law, this work, in common with all works on the subject, is sheer nonsense: no science or psychology is possible. If they do conform to law, there cannot be any such as free-will.” Herbert Spencer

Francis Galton, the cousin of Charles Darwin and the coiner of the term “eugenics,” also rejected free-will and maintained that man is completely unable to change himself, since he is controlled by his genetically inherited nature. As he wrote: “man’s natural abilities are derived by inheritance, under exactly the same limitations as are the form and physical features of the whole organic world.”<sup>457</sup>

As Luther compared man to a horse, Galton also paralleled human beings with horses:

“Consequently, as it is easy, notwithstanding those limitations, to obtain by careful selection a permanent breed of dogs or horses gifted with peculiar powers of running, or of doing anything else, so it would be quite practicable to produce a highly-gifted race of men by judicious marriages during several consecutive generations.”<sup>458</sup>

The enemies of this idea of a perfect race, to Galton, were charities, or “social agencies”: “social agencies of an ordinary character, whose influences are little suspected, are at this

---

<sup>456</sup> Ibid, pg. 56

<sup>457</sup> Hereditary Genius, Francis Galton, 1869

<sup>458</sup> Ibid

moment working towards its improvements.”<sup>459</sup> Darwinism makes man a slave to his nature, and so Luther makes man a slave to his *sinful* nature. They are, essentially, the two sides of the same coin.

As Ludwig Ihmels, the Lutheran bishop of Saxony, wrote: “We can do nothing, we have nothing, we are nothing.”<sup>460</sup> Darwin and Luther, once their doctrines are stripped of their scientific and theological sophisms, essentially taught the same thing. Darwin’s teachings are wrapped with secular explanations, while Luther taught through theological terminology. Regardless of these differences, their teachings can be summed up in one line: man is a slave to his animalism, and he cannot be free. Luther taught that man was a slave to his sin nature, and could not be liberated; Darwin taught that man was a slave to his animal nature, and could not be free. Both men advocated and encouraged for the enslavement of self to animal impulses. Whether you call it Lutheranism or predestination, or Darwinism, the end is the same: embrace bondage, embrace slavery, and while you’re at it, be sure to enslave the whole world, to destruction, to death, to chaos.

The Catholic Faith, on the other hand, admits that man is a slave to sin, but it does not glorify this, it does not encourage man to remain in his state, rather it exhorts him to endure against it, to pursue liberation, to walk the path of the soul’s ascendancy to God. In the Catholic Faith, unlike the heresies of Luther or Darwin, there is choice. The Catholic Faith teaches that choice is a decision to do something that pertains to the soul. As the great Catholic Church Father, St. John of Damascus wrote:

“Those things, then, depend upon us which are contingent — as, for example, to move or not to move, to start or not to start, to desire things that are not absolutely necessary or not to desire them, to lie or not to lie, to give or not to give, to rejoice when one should and, similarly, not to when one should not, and all such things as imply virtue or vice — for in these things we are free.”<sup>461</sup>

What makes the Lutheran precept against humanity is its war against the human element in the plan of redemption. God the Son became one with Man in the Hypostatic Union, uniting with Humanity to save humanity. God created man without his participation, but, as St. Augustine says, “He will not save without it.” There needs to be a human participation in the work and appurtenances of redemption. So much does God want humanity involved in his own salvation that a Virgin gives birth to God — Jesus Christ — so that He, through His sacrifice, would save Man from bondage to the devil and his wiles. The animosity towards any mention of Mary’s role in mankind’s salvation, the rejection of the intercession of saints, the hatred for the Eucharist and for icons, all stems from a gnostic enmity against the physical world, and ultimately, against humanity itself. If I could sum up all heresies, all evil ideologies and beliefs in one description, it would be: *The hatred for the physical world.*

---

<sup>459</sup> Galton, Hereditary Genius

<sup>460</sup> We are Not Divided: A Critical and Historical Study of the by John Alexander Hutchison · 1941 · Page 238

<sup>461</sup> St. John of Damascus, Orthodox Faith, 2.26



Look at any evil idea, and you will see this. In Darwinist thought, destruction is embraced and a thoughtless process of selection for who dies and who lives is adulated; in Buddhism, murder is relativized; in paganism, humanity is but a body of numbers, disposable to an atavistic religion; in Protestant thought, physical sacraments are rejected for an abstract notion of random selection for who is damned to eternal hellfire, and who is amongst the glorious chosen ones for salvation. The results of all of these are disarray, confusion, cruelty, and destruction, only to later be glorified by future romanticists. Faith as incarnational was utterly rejected by Luther, who taught: "It does not matter what people do; it only matters what they believe." He also taught: "It does not matter how Christ behaved — what He taught is all that matters".<sup>462</sup> In the Sacrament of Confession, the priest stands as a representative of Christ on earth, between God and Man, being as a human partaker of the mediation of Christ. This is the human element working within the eternal ways of salvation. The Protestant worldview rejects this. In the intercession of saints, God loves Man so much, that even death does not separate him from reaching the Deity, death does not prevent nor preclude humanity from reaching the summit of the divine, where the angels, the souls of righteous men, and the Holy Trinity, stand in effable glory. They will say that once death comes, that is it, it is final, there is no more praying for one's fellow man, nothing can go beyond death, and the relationship between the living and the deceased is utterly severed regardless that "I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me though he may die, he shall live." (John 11:25) This is a materialistic perspective, a position closer to Darwinism than to the Christian Faith. To those who argue in such diabolical ways, let us ask them a Jesus-style question: who in heaven is dead? Let them read the holy Apostle when he wrote:

"For I am convinced that neither *death* nor life, neither angels nor demons, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, <sup>39</sup> neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord." (*Romans 8:38-39*)

The Hebrews of old partook, under Judas Maccabees, in a holy war against the pagans, and the Prophet Jeremiah, from heaven, "loves the Jewish people and offers many prayers for us and for Jerusalem, the holy city. Then Jeremiah stretched out his right hand and gave Judas a gold sword, saying as he did so, this holy sword is a gift from God. Take it and destroy your enemies." (2 Maccabees, 15:14-16) What is all this, but humanity partaking in the war of God against Satan, with death never preventing this sacred participation? It is that which Jean-Pierre de Caussade wrote of:

"Loving, we wish to be the instrument of his [God's] action so that his love can operate in and through us."<sup>463</sup>

The rejection of this, is the severing of God from humanity, the isolation of God from humanity, and thus a belief in a deistic god, cold and mechanical. "Luther thus treats us,"

---

<sup>462</sup> E29, 196, in Wiener, Martin Luther: Hitler's Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 2, p. 28

<sup>463</sup> De Caussade, The Sacrament of the Present Moment, ch. 5, p. 30

says Vedder, “to the ultimate absurdity of his system, a God who is wholly irrational, and acts without any reason, or else He could not be God.” It is the rejection of the human element, the reducing of man to that of a slave or an animal. The participation in God, signifies human freedom; the rejection of free-will, is a means of manipulation by which man is reduced to a slave of animal impulses, and conditioned into a callous mechanicalism. “Free-will,” writes St. Augustine, “is not destroyed because it is assisted by grace; it is assisted because it has not been destroyed.” The freedom of Catholicism is reflective in the physicality of Her Sacraments. Man must show his effort, his will to be with Christ, and not to be as the Disciples once were, sleeping in the presence of Christ as blood dripped from His holy flesh. Actual participation in one’s salvation, in the Sacraments, signifies that man must *do*, he must act, and thus it means that he has freedom. Take away the Sacraments, and you have no obligation to do and to act. In this case, a new belief is established, one absent of freedom and trumping predestination, and the enslavement to one’s impulses. The fact that we partake in the sacraments means that there is a liberation within man’s existence to work out his salvation with *fear and trembling* (Philippians 2:12), there is therefore freedom to rise above enslavement to animalism. But if the sacraments are made no more than what will replace them are doctrines of bondage, in which the idea of free will is warred upon. God the Son is one with Humanity, and thus any participation in Christ’s Salvation, must consist of a physical nature, it must partake in the physical world. Thus, an attack on the Humanity of Christ, is an attack on humanity itself, for anything we do in the journey of salvation, requires human nature, that is, it requires our wills, it requires *us*.

All of the attacks made against the Catholic Church, against Her exhortations towards penance, Confession, Baptism, and all things pertaining to the path towards God is all, ultimately, an attack on the Eucharist, for it is around the Eucharist that all other sacraments revolve, and it is for the Eucharist that they are done. You cannot partake in the Eucharist without Confession, without baptism, without penance. The entire priesthood of the Catholic Church was established to administer the Eucharist, alongside the other sacraments that revolve around the body, blood, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ. It is no wonder that Hegel, the most praised philosopher of the German Enlightenment and German idealism, and who influenced both Nietzsche and Marx, declared that everything that he saw as disgusting with the Catholic Church had flowed from the Eucharist.<sup>464</sup> From Luther to Hegel, from Luther to Darwin, we see a continuity of thought, all containing the escalating hatred for Catholic truth.

What Hegel hated so much about the Catholic Church is what he called, “externality,” that is the physical and tangible sacraments, and he saw all of these as stemming from the Eucharist. It was because of Catholic externality that, in the words of Hegel, “Luther therefore could not do otherwise than refuse to yield an iota in regard to that doctrine of the Eucharist in which the whole question is concentrated.”<sup>465</sup>

Take away the Church, and the State becomes the Church, and its representatives, gods on earth. Hence, Hegel once said: “The State is the march of God in the world” and “The

---

<sup>464</sup> See Merold Westphal, Hegel, Freedom, and Modernity, ch. 9, p. 152

<sup>465</sup> Hegel, The Philosophy of History, section iii, ch. 1, p. 415

State is the divine idea as it exists in the world”.<sup>466</sup> The fullness of this imperial religion was manifested in Nazi Germany, and its incipient state was conceived in the German Reformation. For example, the Reformation placed the State as God’s theological representatives, as opposed to the bishops holding this position. Melancthon, one of the most prestigious of Protestant Reformers, said that “The prince is God’s chief bishop (summus episcopus) in the Church,”<sup>467</sup> and from this idea, statism<sup>468</sup> arises and evolves into more and more fanatic forms. From the prince being the bishop, the prince soon becomes divine.

We therefore can see continuity in the history of German thought, from the gnostics, to Luther, to Hegel, and to one who he would later influence, Nietzsche, the prophet of the German tyranny of the First World War, and for the Nazis. It is no wonder then, that the Nazis — being amongst the greatest haters of humanity — praised Luther’s war against the priesthood — and thus — in hating the physical nature of Catholic dogma, they hated humanity itself. Alfred Rosenberg, the head ideologue of Nazi ideology, wrote:

“the greatness of Luther’s deed does not consist in merely founding a church, but is much more important than the introduction of a division between two versions of faith. However much Luther may still have been deeply embedded in the middle ages, his deed signifies the great revolution in the history of Europe after the penetration of Roman Christianity. Luther denied the priesthood as a power in itself, that is, denied the right of justification by a caste of men who claimed to be in closer relationship with the godhead than others, and who on the basis of alleged knowledge of god presumed they possessed better insight concerning god’s plans for salvation and conditions in heaven. As a result, Martin Luther hindered the further advance of that magical monstrosity [the Catholic Church].”<sup>469</sup>

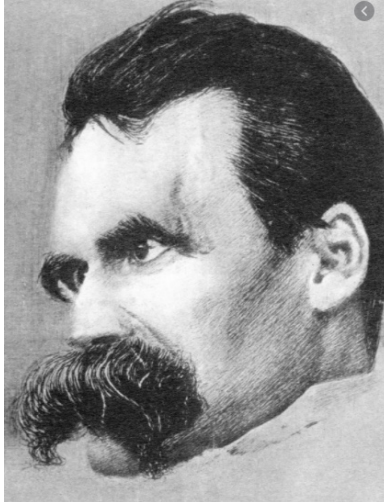
---

<sup>466</sup> Philosophy of History, pp. 260, 41, as quoted by Weiner, Luther, p.87

<sup>467</sup> Quoted in John Witte, Law and Protestantism, ch. 4 p. 137

<sup>468</sup> Statism is a political system in which the state has substantial centralized control over social and economic and religious affairs.

<sup>469</sup> Rosenberg, The Myth of the Twenty First Century, brackets mine



Nietzsche

After reading this, it is not surprising that the Nazis tried to replace the Eucharist with their own. In 1938, the Italian publication, *Osservatore Romano*, took a photo of a Nazi procession in which an altar was presented, and on top of it was a replica of a Catholic monstrance, but instead of a Eucharist being at the center of it, there was put in its place an abomination: the Swastika. Under the photograph, the *Osservatore Romano* noted: “Doctrinal parodies; a parody of the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar displayed in Hamburg.”<sup>470</sup> There shall be many “desolations” as God warned in Daniel 9:26 “even to the end there will be war; desolations are determined.”



The violent and fanatic advancement of Luther’s “Slave Will” doctrine is an obvious outcome of his theology, since the bottom line of Luther’s doctrine is the rejection of free will. For

---

<sup>470</sup> See *The Persecution of the Catholic Church in the Third Reich*, p. 286

man's participation in his salvation means that he is free, because he is in God; but the rejection of the human element in salvation, only means that man is a slave. For what greater freedom is there, than the liberty to partake in redemption? To do so only signifies a God Who loves man so much that He unites with him, and allows him to partake in the plan of redemption. But the absence of this only means that man has will over nothing, that he is like dry leaves in the winds, being swayed here and there, moved to good and to evil. So fanatical was Luther in his devotion for his rejection of free will that he wrote:

“To me, the defense of this truth [predestination] is a matter of supreme and eternal importance. I am convinced that life itself should be set at stake in order to preserve it. It must stand though the whole world be involved thereby in strife and tumult, nay, even fall into ruins.”<sup>471</sup>

And indeed, the whole of Europe fell into ruins on account of Luther's veneration of his “slave will.” The bloodiest war in Europe's history, before the two World Wars, was the Thirty Years War, in which Catholics and Protestants slaughtered one another for three decades, with entire cities and nations ruined, and with ten million lives taken.

Luther was merely continuing the theology of John Hus, a Bohemian heretic who was simply perpetuating the heresies of the gnostic John Wycliff. Luther himself wrote:

“Until now I have held and espoused the teachings of John Huss without knowing it. ...In short we are all Hussites without realizing it.”<sup>472</sup>

Luther spitefully remembered how the Catholic Council of Constance condemned Wycliffe for his rejection of free-will, writing:

“For I confess that that article of Wycliffe, ‘all things take place from necessity, that is, from the immutable will of God, and our will is not compelled indeed, but it cannot of itself do good,’ was falsely condemned by the Council of Constance, or that conspiracy or cabal rather.”<sup>473</sup>

Luther, in his rather mindless, diabolical and chaotic writing, mockingly wrote of the Church's condemnation of him and John Huss:

“Thus are the Scriptures fulfilled.—Blessed are ye who persecute Luther, for yours is the kingdom of heaven! Blessed are ye who curse and say all manner of evil against Luther; rejoice and be exceeding glad in that day, for great is your reward in heaven;

---

<sup>471</sup> Luther (Complete) by O'Hair, pg. 272

<sup>472</sup> *Tradition and Authority in the Reformation* by Scott H. Hendrix, 1996 P.p 161

<sup>473</sup> De Servo Arbitrio “On The Enslaved Will” by Martin Luther. LXXV.

for so persecuted they the apostles, the holy bishops, John Huss, and others who were before Luther!”<sup>474</sup>

Luther’s rejection of free will and his belief that God created evil and forced man to sin, corresponds with a gnostic deity, one of good and evil. This animosity for law, and this embracing of chaos, would coincide with Luther’s hatred for Moses and the Decalogue. Luther once said:

“If Moses should attempt to intimidate you with his stupid Ten Commandments, tell him right out: chase yourself to the Jews.”<sup>475</sup>

“We have no wish either to see or to hear Moses. He and his books should be looked upon with suspicion, as the worst heretic, as a damned and excommunicated person, yes worse than the pope and the devil.”<sup>476</sup>

Luther also exclaimed: “To the gallows with Moses.” He asserted that Moses “was sent to the Jewish people only and had nothing whatever to do with Gentiles and Christians.” His advice was to “chase that stammering and stuttering Moses,”<sup>477</sup> and moreover affirmed that “Moses must ever be looked upon with suspicion, even as upon a heretic, excommunicated, damned, worse than the Pope and the devil.”<sup>478</sup> Luther’s hatred for Moses was shared by the early gnostics, who rejected the Old Testament as the work of the “evil god.” The gnostic hatred for Moses, by both Luther and his predecessors, was continued through Nazism. Utilizing Luther as a symbol of German identitarianism and nationalism, the head ideologue of National Socialist ideology, Alfred Rosenberg, expressed his admiration for Luther’s rejection of Moses, writing: “Luther did cast aside the Jews and their lies, and declared that he no longer had anything to do with Moses.” The rejection of the Old Testament was a primary call by the Nazi party which was utterly contrary to the Catholic truth, but both Luther and the Nazis accepted it. Alfred Ernst Rosenberg was the main Nazi theorist and ideologue pushed Marcion and the gnostic heretics of old. Rosenberg acknowledged the Marcionite and gnostic rejection of the Old Testament books and upheld it in opposition to the Catholic Church:

“About the year 150, Marcion, who was a Greek, once again represented the Nordic idea of a world order based on organic tension and hierarchical structure. This was in direct contrast to the Semitic conception of a capricious god who exercised a boundless despotism. Marcion therefore rejected the old testament as the book of

---

<sup>474</sup> Ibid

<sup>475</sup> Wittenb., ad. 5, 1573, sighted by O’Hare, The Facts about Luther

<sup>476</sup> Martin Luther. *Commentary on The Epistle to the Galatians, also see Manual of Universal Church History* by Johannes Alzog · 1912 Volume 2, Pg. 39

<sup>477</sup> Ibid

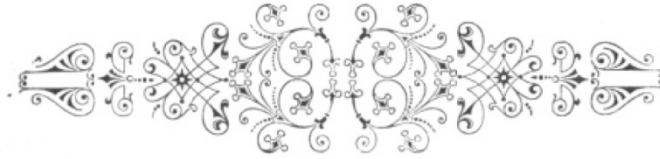
<sup>478</sup> Luther: An Historical Portrait J. Verres · 1884 – Pg. 137

laws of so false a deity. Similar efforts were made by a few of the Gnostics. But Rome, now racially polluted beyond redemption, was utterly committed to Africa and Syria, and smothered the simple essence of Jesus with the accretions of late Roman goals of world empire and ecumenical church.”<sup>479</sup>

From this we can see the peregrination of the influence from the gnostic sects, to Luther and to later the 19th and 20th century Germans.

---

<sup>479</sup> The Myth, by Alfred Rosenberg, translated by James Whisker, Pg. 18



## SOCIAL DARWINISM AND THE ENLIGHTENMENT

And from henceforth, the waters continued to being poisoned and the completion of Satan's plan was ultimately ushered when Charles Darwin, who picked up from here and learned of the idea of evolution from his grandfather, Erasmus Darwin, a major figure of the Enlightenment. Erasmus rejected Christianity and adopted the heresy of deism, a belief that states that God simply created the world and set the processes of nature as the clockmaker sets the clock, being separate from His creation, leaving man to be governed by reason and not any of the divine inspirations that we find in the Scriptures. Erasmus Darwin was not just a deist, but an occultist Freemason.<sup>480</sup> Before Charles Darwin was even born, Erasmus Darwin wrote in his book, *The Temple of Nature*, that "mankind arose from one family of monkeys on the banks of the Mediterranean; who accidentally had learned to use the adductor pollicis, or that strong muscle which constitutes the ball of the thumb, and draws the point of it to meet the points of the fingers; which common monkeys do not; and that this muscle gradually increased in size, strength, and activity, in successive generations; and by this improved use of the sense of touch, that monkeys acquired clear ideas, and gradually became men."<sup>481</sup> Before Charles Darwin ever wrote on natural selection, Erasmus Darwin wrote that "the strongest and most active animal should propagate the species, which should thence become improved."<sup>482</sup> Much of Erasmus' scientific works were written in the form of poetic, religiously pagan verse, alongside his own commentary on what the verses signified. In these writings he affirmed that all life sprung from the sea and evolved. In his book, *The Temple of Nature*, he wrote:

"ORGANIC LIFE beneath the shoreless waves  
Was born and nurs'd in Ocean's pearly caves;  
First forms minute, unseen by spheric glass,  
Move on the mud, or pierce the watery mass;  
These, as successive generations bloom,  
New powers acquire, and larger limbs assume;  
Whence countless groups of vegetation spring,  
And breathing realms of fin, and feet, and wing."<sup>483</sup>

---

<sup>480</sup> The Works of Charles Darwin, Volume 29. Pg. 80

<sup>481</sup> Temple of Nature, canto i, III. 122n

<sup>482</sup> Zoonomia, sect. xxxix, 4.8

<sup>483</sup> Temple of Nature, Canto i, V. 295-302



Erasmus then wrote of how mankind, while declaring he is made in the image of God, evolved from microscopic animals:

“Imperious man, who rules the bestial crowd,  
Of language, reason, and reflection proud,  
With brow erect who scorns this earthy sod,  
And styles himself the image of his God;  
Arose from rudiments of form and sense,  
An embryon point, or microscopic ens!”<sup>484</sup>

Erasmus Darwin was a product of the Protestant Reformation — or rather, the Protestant Revolution—rejecting Catholic doctrine, such as that of Transubstantiation, while subscribing to deist and mechanical theology. On March 15th, 1790, James Keir, a prestigious chemist of his time, wrote to Erasmus:

“You are such an infidel in religion that you cannot believe in transubstantiation, yet you can believe that apples and pears, &c., sugar oil, vinegar, are nothing but water and charcoal, and that it is a great improvement in language to call all these things by one word—oxydehydro-carbonneux.”<sup>485</sup>

Commentating on this letter, British academic and professor at the University of East Anglia, Rebecca Stott, makes a very interesting observation:

“It was an astute comment. What Keir saw was that Erasmus Darwin was replacing the mystery of the Catholic belief in transubstantiation (the bread being transformed into Christ’s body in the sacrament, the wine into his blood) with his own materialist chemical transubstantiation. It was a dangerous kind of heresy but so disguised as to have gone unnoticed.”<sup>486</sup>

With his mechanical and Protestant theology, filled with a deism projected through the lens of a callous, Masonic, systematic worldview, one that rejected the sublime mystery of the Catholic Faith and imposed a mythological, pagan and pseudo-biological philosophy, it is really of no wonder as to why Erasmus supported the genocide of Catholics, their priests and their governors, in that most diabolical French Revolution. That Erasmus was a Freemason makes this less surprising, since the philosophers who would have provided the ideological framework for the sanguinary revolt, such as Rousseau and Voltaire, were Freemasons. To rival the violence and carnage of the French Revolution is almost an unsurmountable task. Marie-Jeanne Roland (1754-1793) was a French writer and political figure whose husband

---

<sup>484</sup> Temple of Nature, Canto i, V. 309-314

<sup>485</sup> See Charles Darwin, *The Life of Erasmus Darwin*, p. 36

<sup>486</sup> Stott, *Darwin’s Ghosts*, p. 176

was France's Minister of the Interior. Roland, an adamant supporter of the revolution, was herself horrified and recounted the cruelty done by the rebels:

“Women were brutally violated before being torn to pieces by those tigers; intestines cut out and worn as turbans; bleeding human flesh devoured.”<sup>487</sup>

A man was about to be executed, his daughter begged the slaughterers to have mercy on him. The killers murdered another man, drained out some of his blood into a cup and told her, that if she wanted to save her father, she must drink the blood. To save her father's life, she drunk the blood. The murderers took another woman, and with sadistic pleasure, finished her off by setting a fire between her swollen legs. Within this same time, in the bloody year of 1792, two hundred and fifty priests were rounded up and slaughtered, although they embraced death with joy, leaving one witness to write: “I do not understand, they seemed happy. They went to death as to a wedding.”

In 1794, sixteen Carmelite nuns were brought to the execution stand. One of them asked why they were being executed. The answer was: “foolish attachment to your stupid religious practices,” upon which the nun looked to her fellow monastics and said: “There you are, sisters: we have been condemned for our religion. ...What a happiness to die for our God!” They began singing *Veni Creator*, and the last one to continue the song was to final nun to be beheaded in the guillotine. <sup>488</sup>

Cannibalism, cruelty, massacres, and the genocide of true Christians, would have all fit in within the darwinian utopia of Erasmus Darwin, wherein mankind is nothing but creatures evolved from lower oceanic animals. Erasmus Darwin praised the anti-Catholic cause of the revolution in his 1791 book, *The Botanic Garden*:

“The Warrior, LIBERTY, with bending sails  
Helm'd his bold course to fair HIBERNIA'S vales;—  
Firm as he steps, along the shouting lands,  
Lo! Truth and Virtue range their radiant bands;  
Sad Superstition wails her empire torn,  
Art plies his oar, and Commerce pours her horn.  
“Long had the Giant-form on GALLIA'S plains  
Inglorious slept, unconscious of his chains; Round his large limbs were wound a  
thousand strings  
By the weak hands of Confessors and Kings;  
O'er his closed eyes a triple veil was bound,  
And steely rivets lock'd him to the ground;  
While stern Bastile with iron cage intralls  
His folded limbs, and hems in marble walls.  
—Touch'd by the patriot-flame, he rent amazed

---

<sup>487</sup> The Church in an Age of Revolution, Henri Daniel-Rops · 1967 1789-1870 - Volume 2 - Page 36

<sup>488</sup> See Stanley L. Jaki's introduction to A. Barruel's History of Jacobinism

The flimsy bonds, and round and round him gazed;  
Starts up from earth, above the admiring throng  
Lifts his Colossal form, and towers along;  
High o'er his foes his hundred arms He rears,  
Plowshares his swords, and pruning hooks his spears;  
Calls to the Good and Brave with voice, that rolls  
Like Heaven's own thunder round the echoing poles;  
Gives to the winds his banner broad unfurl'd,  
And gathers in its shade the living world!

Notice how Erasmus refers to the Catholic world: one of “sad superstition” and “Confessors and Kings,” that is, the Catholic Church, Her teachings, Her priests and monarchs. Erasmus Darwin praised the destruction of all of this, as did his Protestant predecessor, Martin Luther.

Satan's star, King of Tares, Martin Luther began a revolution against the Catholic Church, and Erasmus simply continued it. The relationship between the Protestant Reformation and the Enlightenment heresy was astutely observed by Anglican theologian and priest, Alister McGrath:

“It was Protestant, rather than Roman Catholic or Eastern Orthodox, theology which was especially open to influence from the new currents of thought which arose from the Enlightenment and its aftermath.”

Several factors were significant in Protestantism's role in the Enlightenment, but it can all be summarized into one element within the heresy, and that is the very nature of Protestantism itself. The whole of the movement was established to uproot the very authority of the Catholic Church, the cause of which was the fragmented churches scattered about, free to devise their own doctrines and councils, confined within their own distant lands, and infused with no specific theology but the call to rebellion against the Catholic Church. With no order, comes disorder, and thus there was no centralized authority to impede the spreading of the Enlightenment heresy. Moreover, the Enlightenment heresy was just another theology brought about by rebels amongst other rebels, protestants in the midst of other protestants. “While the ‘essence of Protestantism’ remains disputed within scholarly circles,” writes McGrath:

“there is agreement that a spirit of protest is part of the birthright of the movement. The Protestant predisposition to challenge authority, and the commitment to the principle *ecclesia reformata, ecclesia semper reformanda* (‘the reformed church must always be the church which is reforming itself’), encouraged a spirit of critical inquiry concerning Christian dogma. This attitude resonated with the ideals of the Enlightenment, leading to an alignment of many Protestant writers with the movement, and a willingness to absorb its methods and outlooks.”<sup>489</sup>

---

<sup>489</sup> McGrath, *The Making of Modern German Christology*, p. 19

The way in which Protestantism sees the Bible, is the same way that the United States views its Constitution: as a living document, ever changing to the times and trends. From one rebellion, comes more rebellion. Chaos only births chaos. And so the Enlightenment was just a mere continuation of centuries of rebellion against the Catholic Church and Her teachings. In ancient Israel, God commanded that if controversy ever arose amongst the people:

“thou shalt come to the priests of the Levitical race, and to the judge, that shall be at that time: and thou shalt ask of them, and they shall shew thee the truth of the judgment.” (Deuteronomy 17:9)

It does not say, “go to the Scriptures,” or to an individual interpretation, but rather, to go to the priests and trust in their authority. The Scripture goes on to say that:

“he that will be proud, and refuse to obey the commandment of the priest, who ministereth at that time to the Lord thy God, and the decree of the judge, that man shall die, and thou shalt take away the evil from Israel” (Deuteronomy 17:12).

The religious institution established by God, then, is to be the authority, and not the individual. And the fact that God commands that protestors against the priesthood are to be put to death shows that the Catholic Church was right when She would execute rebels. When the earliest heretics argued that circumcision was obligatory, they used the Scriptures to prove their point. But the Apostles, still, gathered together in the Council of Jerusalem, and declared that circumcision was not obligatory. To have been a Jew in those days and believe this judgements would have been very difficult, because the heretics had the Scriptures, and the Apostles had their authority. It was those who trusted in the authority of the Apostles — that is, the Church — and not in judaizers’ interpretation of the Old Testament, who would have been on the side of Orthodoxy, and not vice-versa. But Protestantism desires to destroy this faith, to revolt and obliterate the Councils and the Fathers of the Church.

The toppling of ecclesiastical authority and the elevation of individualist anarchy is truly the core of all Protestant thought, and the precursor to the bloody tempest of the Enlightenment reign of terror. One of the most famous thinkers of German idealism and the Enlightenment, Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel, who was called a “Protestant Aquinas” by Karl Barth, defined Protestant thinking, bridging it with the Enlightenment individualistic position:

“It is the fundamental principle of the Protestant church that its contract shall rest on the unanimity of all its members, that no one shall be required to enter an ecclesiastical contract whose terms insist on his subjecting his faith to a majority vote. At the start of his great work, Luther did appeal to a free General Council, but the great foundation of Protestant freedom, the Palladium of the Protestant church, was discovered when men refused to appear at a Council and repudiated all part in its proceedings, not because they were assured in advance of losing their case there, but because it would contradict the very nature of religious opinions to decide them by majority vote, and because everyone has the right to settle for himself what his faith

is. Thus the faith of every individual Protestant must be his faith because it is his, not because it is the church's." <sup>490</sup>

From the gnostics of the Middle Ages, to Luther's so-called Reformation, to the so-called Enlightenment, violent revolt continues with red and black horses like a torrent of blood and carnage, for its trail is crimson and its song is one of confusion. "The Catholic Church as a whole was very critical of the Enlightenment," writes scholar Gottfried Adam, "whereas the Protestant side was much more open-minded and reacted positively to the educational impetus of the Enlightenment." <sup>491</sup> The calls for death of Catholics by Luther are no different than statements made by numerous of the "Enlightenment" thinkers. Martin Luther declared:

"If I had all the Franciscan friars in one house, I would set fire to it, for, in the monks the good seed is gone, and only the chaff is left. To the fire with them!" <sup>492</sup>

Now compare this sort of talk to that of the Enlightenment writer, Denis Diderot:

"Let us strangle the last king with the guts of the last priest." <sup>493</sup>

In 1540, a series of fires broke out in North and Central Germany. It is said that some persons were apprehended, and under torture, confessed that the Pope and the monks sent them. Without any conclusive evidence, Luther immediately used the story as a pretext to foment the slaughter Catholic clergy, saying:

"If this be proved, then there is nothing left for us but to take up arms against the monks and priests ; and I too shall go, for miscreants must be slain like mad dogs."<sup>494</sup>

After making his statement, Hieronymus Schurf, a lawyer who was present with Luther, said that it would be most unjust if one is tortured after being accused too hastily, to which Luther said: "This is no time for mercy but for rage!" In a 1520 letter written to Spalatin, Luther wrote:

---

<sup>490</sup> Hegel, *Early Theological Writings*, trans. T.M. Knox, p. 121

<sup>491</sup> Adam, *Protestantism and Modernisation in German Children's Literature of the Late 18th Century*.

<sup>492</sup> Mathesius, "Tischreden," p. 171, sighted by Grisar, *Luther*, vol. 6, p. 247

<sup>493</sup> *The Enlightenment: And why it Still Matters* by Anthony Pagden, Pg. 125

<sup>494</sup> Mathesius, "Tischreden," p. 179, Aug., 1540. 3 *Ibid.*, p. 171. Also see Grisar, IV, pg. 293. On pg. 247 although Grisar attributes these statements to Luther's outbursts and does not believe he meant them although the continuation seems to have an attorney warn Luther whom Luther rebuked which Grisar concluded that Luther would let the Revolution take care of them: "What better do they deserve than to be stamped out by a great revolt?"

“The die is cast; the despicable fury or favour of the Romans is nothing to me; I desire no reconciliation or communion with them. ... I shall burn the whole of the Papal Laws and all humility and friendliness shall cease.”

Both the Protestant revolution and the Enlightenment led to violence against the Catholic Church. The horrific violence done by the early Protestants on account of the calls for rebellion by Luther and other “reformers,” was well documented by contemporaries of that time. At the Diet of Worms in 1545, the Catholics made this report:

“The Protestants have made themselves masters of churches and monasteries and have driven into misery all who wished to abide by the old faith. They have invaded bishoprics and have been reckless of justice and peace; have constrained the poor inhabitants to embrace their religion, as, for instance, in the land of Brunswick, where they had no other right than the might of the sword. They *trample under foot* and oppress everything, and then *complain of being themselves oppressed*.”

“They are insatiable in their demands and are for ever producing fresh cards to play, at every Diet putting forward fresh claims which they insist on having conceded to them before they will take part in the transactions or vote supplies.”

“Scandals and abuses innumerable certainly existed and were openly flaunted, and were growing worse and worse nowadays, because, owing to the perilous times and the teaching of novel sects and preachers, all good works were being abandoned, and unbelief and contempt for religion was becoming the custom among high and low. Many thousand livings stood vacant and the people were without helm or rudder.”<sup>495</sup>

Carl van der Plassen, a doctor of Cologne, wrote a letter in 1545 to the Diet of Worms in which recounted the horrors done by Protestant leaders and thugs:

“...we must bear in mind all that has happened in Germany since the subjugation of the peasants by the Princes and municipal authorities, all the *countless violations of human and Divine law*, of the public peace, of *property, civic rights, conscience and honour*. Let us but reckon up the number of churches and monasteries, which have been destroyed and pillaged during these twenty years, and all the accompanying crime and iniquity. And to what purpose have these stolen goods been applied? What has become of all the Church property, all the treasures? . . . A new religion has been forced upon the people by might and by stratagem, and they have been forbidden under threat of punishment to carry on the old service of God, with its rites and Christian usages. *Is this the vaunted freedom of the Gospel*, to *persecute* and coerce others, to imprison them or drive them into exile? Everything that was formerly revered has now fallen into contempt, with the result that *right and property are no longer respected*; the endless disturbances in matters of religion have upset the whole national equilibrium; discipline, loyalty and respectability have

---

<sup>495</sup> Quotes can be found in Grisar, Luther

vanished. . . . What misery results from want of clergy and schools even in the lands which have remained Catholic! Princes and towns, making their boast of the Gospel, have not been satisfied with introducing the new Church system into their own territories, but have invaded the Catholic bishoprics and secular dominions and turned everything topsy-turvy in order to set up their own institutions. The Schmalkalden confederates extend their operations from year to year and grow more and more audacious. At this moment they are actually preaching a war of extermination against the Pope and his adherents. There will be no checking them if the sword of the Emperor is not used to restrain them, as it ought to have been long ago.”<sup>496</sup>

Another Catholic contemporary protests in similar fashion:

“Religion is perverted, all obedience to the Emperor destroyed, justice set aside and insolence of all sorts everywhere encouraged.”<sup>497</sup>

The eminent Protestant historian, Karl Hagen, wrote of the violence and bloodshed called for by Luther against Catholics:

“Even Luther... in his earlier writings, contributed to foster the rebellious felling among the people; for one he actually incited the German nation to bathe itself in the blood of the Papists, and he declared that they would do a thing agreeable to God who would make away with the Bishops, destroy churches and convents!”<sup>498</sup>

This violent sea of anti-Catholic hatred flooded Europe in modern times, when German troops attacked cathedrals and Catholic monuments. In 1917, during the First World War, Canon William Barry, in the fourth centenary of Luther in London, declared the evils of German soldiers against Catholic Christendom:

“The heart of Luther, German to its last fiber, is beating still in those armies which are attempting to ruin our Western civilization, are attacking our faith as inherited from Christendom of old time. It was Luther, multiplied, like Southey’s monstrous creation, Kehama, into a myriad of furious assailants, that burnt Louvain, shattered Rheims, and desecrated nearly thirteen hundred Catholic churches in its onset, East and West. For negation with arms in its hands cannot fail to be destructive. This “justifying faith” in the virtues of Teutonism, which wrought havoc all round four centuries ago, today strikes hard, strikes without pity, at our Christian monuments. It has not spared French cathedrals; it aims, with malice worthy of Luther him-self, at St. Mark’s, Venice. And who believes that it would show mercy to Rome, if it could take the Holy City by assault, now, in November, 1917, any more than it did in May,

---

<sup>496</sup> On May 29, 1545. Janssen, *ibid.*, p. 286 f. , in Grisar, Luther

<sup>497</sup> *Ibid*

<sup>498</sup> *Ibid*

1527? Rage knows no law. And it cannot stay to argue. ‘Why should we not wash our hands in the blood of popes and cardinals?’ was Luther’s top note in the diapason of his fury. ‘If any man resists me, him I will smash,’ exclaimed the Kaiser, while Germany heard and trembled. The Teuton ego is feeling, not reason, will rather than law.”<sup>499</sup>

Thomas Paine, one of the great prophets for the Enlightenment, praised the French Revolution for its violently intolerant abolishment of the Catholic Church:

“In countries under despotic governments, where inquiry is always forbidden, the people are condemned to believe as they have been taught by their priests. This was for many centuries the case in France: but this link in the chain of slavery, is happily broken by the revolution; and, that it may never be rivetted again, let us employ a part of the liberty we enjoy scrutinizing into the truth.”<sup>500</sup>

Jean-Jacques Rousseau, another one of the Enlightenment teachers, advocated for the execution and expulsion of all Catholics within his own utopian vision, a vision which became a reality in late 18th century France:

“There is therefore a purely civil profession of faith of which the Sovereign should fix the articles, not exactly as religious dogmas, but as social sentiments without which a man cannot be a good citizen or a faithful subject. While it can compel no one to believe them, it can banish from the State whoever does not believe them—*it can banish him, not from impiety, but as an anti-social being*, incapable of truly loving the laws and justice, and of sacrificing, at need, his life to his duty. *If anyone, after publicly recognizing these dogmas, behaves as if he does not believe them, let him be punished by death*: he has committed the worst of all crimes, that of lying before the law. ...The existence of a mighty, intelligent, and beneficent divinity, possessed of foresight and providence, the life to come, the happiness of the just, the punishment of the wicked, the sanctity of the social contract and the law: these are its positive dogmas. ...Now that there is and can be no longer an exclusive national religion, tolerance should be given to all religions that tolerate others, so long as their dogmas contain nothing contrary to the duties of citizenship. *But whoever dares to say: ‘Outside the Church is no salvation,’ ought to be driven from the State*”<sup>501</sup>

And of course, anyone who says: “Outside the Church is no salvation,” is emphatically Catholic.

---

<sup>499</sup> Canon William Barry, Four Centuries of Luther, The Tablet, p. 552, 1917

<sup>500</sup> Thomas Paine, Letter to Camille Jordan

<sup>501</sup> The Social Contract: Book IV, Chapter VIII



Voltaire, another teacher who was very significant in forming the ideology for the French Revolution, believed in a form of evolutionism, teaching that Africans were still at a lower state of the evolutionary process. He wrote:

“It is a serious question among them whether the Africans are descended from monkeys or whether the monkeys come from them. Our wise men have said that man was created in the image of God. Now here is a lovely image of the Divine Maker: a flat and black nose with little or hardly any intelligence. A time will doubtless come when these animals will know how to cultivate the land well, beautify their houses and gardens, and know the paths of the stars: one needs time for everything.”<sup>502</sup>

Francois-Rene de Chateaubriand, whose mother and sister were both murdered by the deist rebels, wrote a brief history on how the French revolution commenced, in which he recounts on the nascent stages that led to the violent torrent, on how it was Voltaire and his fellow sophists who influenced it:

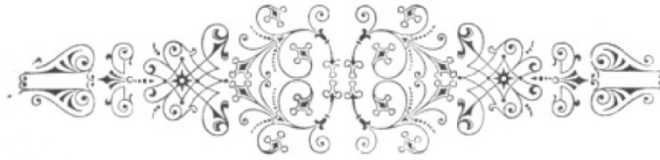
“Voltaire renewed the persecution of Julian. He possessed the baneful art of making infidelity fashionable among a capricious but amiable people. Every species of self-love was pressed into this insensate league. Religion was attacked with every kind of weapon, from the pamphlet to the folio, from the epigram to the sophism. No sooner did a religious book appear than the author was overwhelmed with ridicule, while works which Voltaire was the first to laugh at among his friends were extolled to the skies. Such was his superiority over his disciples, that sometimes he could not forbear diverting himself with their irreligious enthusiasm. Meanwhile the destructive system continued to spread throughout France. It was first adopted in those provincial academies, each of which was a focus of bad taste and faction. Women of fashion and grave philosophers alike read lectures on infidelity. It was at length concluded that Christianity was no better than a barbarous system, and that its fall could not happen too soon for the liberty of mankind, the promotion of knowledge, the improvement of the arts, and the general comfort of life.”<sup>503</sup>

Thus, Voltaire was one of the contrivers behind the French Revolution. From sophism, sadistic sarcasm, the ridicule of all things holy, the praise of infidelity, came a mountain of carnage and gore. Rousseau and Voltaire both were involved in the occult, being both Freemasons, and both believed in a form of evolutionism (Rousseau held that orangutans could be a lower species of man), and both — like Martin Luther — wanted to see the destruction of the Catholic Church.

---

<sup>502</sup> Voltaire Les Lettres d'Amabed (1769), Septième Lettre d'Amabed

<sup>503</sup> Voltaire Les Lettres d'Amabed (1769), Septième Lettre d'Amabed



## THE PROTESTANTS BEHIND DARWINISM

Long before Darwin wrote his *On the Origin of Species*, a Protestant minister of the Anglican Church, Baden Powell, was teaching and promoting evolutionism. He, like Darwin and his predecessors, hated the Catholic Church. In an 1841 speech given at Oxford University, Powell said that the Catholic Church had made “corruptions of the simplicity and purity of the Christian faith,” that it had stemmed from “Successive ages of darkness and general barbarism” and that it was to the Church “that men’s minds were made to bow in abject submission.” Powell praised the cause of Luther and his fellow protestant leaders, saying that the “Reformation cleared away a vast mass of these corruptions.” Most notably, in this same speech, Powell said:

“Let not Protestants, then, forget their main ground of trust. Let them not perplex themselves, and waste their strength in vain disputes on lesser matters; but hold resolutely to the broad principle of the Bible, and every man’s right to search it and think for himself, on which alone the Reformation proceeded, or was, in fact, justifiable. Let them consider well, and remember that, in one word, Protestantism is Scripture.”

Observe what he says here, that every man should read the Scriptures and “think for himself,” this is the creed of the “Enlightenment” from which stems all of spiritual and political chaos. To equate the Scripture with Protestantism is to then force the Bible, and the interpretation thereof, to the capricious vicissitudes of mortals, of the ever changing and fleeting trends of people, for the protests of man do not cease, at that which is holy and never changing, man will never cease at trying to force it to submit to his will. Look at what Powell would say later in the same speech:

“The spirit of the Reformation is the spirit of enlightenment and free Scriptural enquiry.”<sup>504</sup>

In other words, the interpretation of the Scripture is enslaved to man’s enquiry, that is, his deviant desire to conform the Bible to the contrivances that he wants to be popular or dominating is the utter rebellion God warned throughout the scripture. As soon as Darwin’s book, *On the Origin of Species*, came out, Powell did not hesitate to continue the protest against orthodoxy, and force the Bible to conform to evolutionism, writing in 1860:

“that ‘creation’ is only another name for our ignorance of the mode of production... while a work has now appeared by a naturalist of the most acknowledged authority, Mr. Darwin’s masterly volume on *The Origin of Species* by the law of ‘natural

---

<sup>504</sup> The Protestant’s Warning and Safeguard in the Present Times By Baden Powell, pg. 18

selection’ — which now substantiates on undeniable grounds the very principle so long denounced by the first naturalists, — the origination of new species by natural causes: a work which must soon bring about an entire revolution of opinion in favour of the grand principle of the self-evolving powers of nature.”<sup>505</sup>

Protestant Powell then fed Charles Darwin who wrote a book, entitled *An Historical Sketch of the Recent Progress of Opinion on the Origin of Species*, published in 1866, in which he documented numerous of the figures who taught evolutionism, or at least nascent forms of it, before he did. Darwin hailed the Protestant pastor Baden Powell, as one of his predecessors, crediting him as a thinker who had written on natural selection before he did. Darwin wrote:

“The ‘Philosophy of Creation’ has been treated in a masterly manner by the Rev. Baden Powell, in his ‘Essays on the Unity of Worlds.’ 1855. Nothing can be more striking than the manner in which he shows that the introduction of new species is ‘a regular, not a casual phenomenon,’ or, as Sir John Herschel expresses it, ‘a natural in contradistinction to a miraculous process.’”<sup>506</sup>

And from here, two of the most central figures in the spreading of evolutionism, Charles Darwin and Alfred Russel Wallace, were both not just influenced, but pulled into concluding evolutionism by a Protestant minister named Thomas Malthus. Utilizing his Protestantism, Malthus interconnected theology with eugenics, writing in his later 18th century work, *An Essay on the Principle of Population*,

“But the doctrine of life and Mortality which was brought to light by the gospel, the doctrine that the end of righteousness is everlasting life, but that the wages of sin are death, is in every respect just and merciful, and worthy of the great Creator. Nothing can appear more consonant to our reason than that those beings which come out of the creative process of the world in lovely and beautiful forms should be crowned with immortality, while those which come out misshapen, those whose minds are not suited to a purer and happier state of existence, should perish and be condemned to mix again with their original clay. Eternal condemnation of this kind may be considered as a species of eternal punishment, and it is not wonderful that it should be represented, sometimes, under images of suffering.”<sup>507</sup>

---

<sup>505</sup> Chateaubriand, *The Genius of Christianity*, intro., pp. 46-47

<sup>506</sup> see the Appendix in Stott’s *Darwin’s Ghosts*, p. 299

<sup>507</sup> *An Essay on the Principle of Population*, CHAPTER 19 by Thomas Malthus (1798)

And from henceforth one can deduce where state control became king and city life, public crowding and the worship of state and city life became the new Babel where population control became the rule. In the 6th edition, published 1826, of this same book, Malthus advocates for the State to enact certain policies that would guarantee that a large amount of people in the society die, such as making streets narrower to force people to be closer, in order to encourage the spread of disease; advocating for poorer people to forsake cleanliness, that way it would liken the chances of them getting sick; establish processes that would ensure that more and more babies die, and penalize doctors for striving to make medicine for diseases:

“It is an evident truth that, whatever may be the rate of increase in the means of subsistence, the increase of population must be limited by it, at least after the food has once been divided into the smallest shares that will support life. All the children born, beyond what would be required to keep up the population to this level, *must necessarily perish*, unless room be made for them by the deaths of grown persons. It has appeared indeed clearly in the course of this work, that in all old states the marriages and births depend principally upon the deaths, and that there is no encouragement to early unions so powerful as a great mortality. To act consistently therefore, *we should facilitate, instead of foolishly and vainly endeavouring to impede, the operations of nature in producing this mortality*; and if we dread the too frequent visitation of the horrid form of famine, we should sedulously *encourage the other forms of destruction*, which we compel nature to use. Instead of recommending cleanliness to the poor, we should encourage contrary habits. In our towns we should *make the streets narrower, crowd more people into the houses, and court the return of the plague*. In the country, we should build our villages near *stagnant pools*, and particularly *encourage settlements in all marshy and unwholesome situations*. But above all, *we should reprobate specific remedies for ravaging diseases; and those benevolent, but much mistaken men, who have thought they were doing a service to mankind by projecting schemes for the total extirpation of particular disorders.*”<sup>508</sup>

Darwin also fed off the teet of Alfred Russel Wallace prior to him authoring his book, *On the Origin of Species*. Russel was close to Darwin, who had conceived of the idea of evolutionism, but Russel was not only an evolutionist, but also an occultist as well steeped deeply and entrenched in the idea of philosophical biology. Wallace was greatly pulled, while under strong delusion, to read Malthus’ essay on population. He was a diabolically possessed individual,<sup>509</sup> suffering from hallucinations and other dark visions. In his chaotic

---

<sup>508</sup> An Essay on the Principle of Population by Thomas Robert Malthus, Book IV, Chapter V

<sup>509</sup> See People From the Other World to Wallace and William Crookes. Also see excerpts by Wallace reprinted as 'Testimony of Mr. A. R. Wallace' in *The Spiritualist* (London) 3(20): 307-308 (1 Sept. 1873); as 'Experiences at a Séance' in *Psychic Facts. A Selection From the Writings of Various Authors on Psychical Phenomena*. ed. by W. H. Harrison (W. H. Harrison, London, 1880): 80-82; as 'Letter of Mr. Alfred Russell Wallace' in *The Spiritual Magazine* 8 (n.s.): 67-70 (Feb. 1873); in 'Appendix to Chapter IX. Spiritualism and Science' in *Glimpses of the Supernatural* by Frederick George Lee (2 vols., H. S. King and Co., London, 1875), Vol. 2: 193-197.

hallucinations during his stay in the Malay Archipelago, he would begin to imagine that he was having a conversation with Charles Darwin, or times with the French naturalist, Jean-Baptist Lamarck, about evolution and natural selection. “All species have evolved,” Wallace would say in his delusional and shaking voice, with his face covered with sweat,<sup>510</sup> “adapted and mutated. All living organisms have descended from earlier forms.” While in his hut, Wallace recounted, “somehow my thoughts turned,” he wrote, to Malthus’ book on population, which he had read fourteen years earlier in Leicester. He continued to write in his recounting of this contemplation on Malthus, and how he inspired him in his acceptance of Social-Darwinism:

“it occurred to to ask the question, Why do some die and some live? And the answer was clearly, that on the whole *the best fitted survive*. From the effects of disease the most healthy escaped; from enemies, the strongest, the swiftest, or the most cunning; from famine, the best hunters or those with the best digestion; and so on. Then it suddenly flashed upon me that this self-acting process would necessarily *improve the race*, because in every generation *the inferior would inevitably be killed off* and the *superior would remain* — that is, *the fittest would survive*. Then at once I seemed to see the whole effect of this. ... The more I thought over it the more I became convinced that I had at length found the long-sought-for law of nature that *solved the problem of the origin of species*.”<sup>511</sup>

Wallace was also an extreme heretic, following the teachings of David Friedrich Strauss, that the miracles of Christ were merely myths that grew from rumors that naturally were said about all great men of the past.<sup>512</sup> Other than being a heretic, he was a firm believer in occultism and partook in spiritism, necromancy and the ouija board. He put out a book in 1866 entitled, *The Scientific Aspect of the Supernatural*. Wallace had one hundred copies of the book printed out, and reserved twenty-five copies for his friends. These reserved copies, wrapped with paper, sat in the study of Wallace’s sister, Frances, who was supposed to distribute them to her brother’s friends. But she neglected them for several days, thinking that she would eventually give them away when she had the time. One day she left the study for a few minutes and when she returned she saw that the books were scattered about the room. Frances, frightened, called her friend, Agnes Nichol, who summoned a spirit through a ouija board to seek the answer as to why the volumes had been scattered about. “One for my sister Frances, I have marked it,” said the spirit. Frances picked up a copy and began

---

<sup>510</sup> “Sometimes in these fevered hallucinations Wallace talked aloud to himself, or to Ali, or to absent friends, acquaintances, and correspondents to his fellow collector and friend Henry Bates, who was some-where on the Amazon, or to the naturalists Charles Darwin and Charles Lyell as he imagined them back in England in their clubs or walking in their rose-heavy English gardens, or to Lamarck or the anonymous author of *Vestiges*. Imagined and familiar conversations branched off in all directions. All species have evolved, adapted, and mutated. All living organisms have descended from earlier forms.” Alfred Wallace’s *Fevered Dreams*. Chapter 12, Pg. 261

<sup>511</sup> See Stott, *Darwin’s Ghosts*, ch. 12, p. 263

<sup>512</sup> *Ibid* 268-269

flipping through the pages. She found red crayon marks on some of the pages and believed that they were made by the spirit. “If you could do this while the book was shut up,” said Frances to the spirit, “you could write my name in this book while it lays under my hands.” She closed the book, and after a few moments she reopened it and found her name, “Frances Wallace,” written on the top of the first page.<sup>513</sup> In this cursed book, Wallace taught that human evolution is a process that encompasses both biology and spirit; that man is evolving physically and spiritually into a higher being. “Survival of the fittest” was something that entailed both biological evolution and spiritual evolution. A man could not only be superior in his biological evolutionary state, but in his spiritual state as well. He wrote:

“The organic world has been carried on to a high state of development, and has been ever kept in harmony with the forces of external nature, by the grand law of “survival of the fittest” acting upon ever varying organisations. In the spiritual world, the law of the “progression of the fittest” takes its place, and carries on in unbroken continuity that development of the human mind which has been commenced here.”<sup>514</sup>

The “fittest” beings of the human species, to Wallace, progress to a higher, superior spiritual plane than inferior beings. Superiority is not only obtained biologically, but religiously. For Wallace and those like him, the “selected” beings — the “fittest” that is — progress in the evolutionary process into a form of *ubermensch*, an ideal superior human, high in the sphere of biological fitness, and lofty in his state of intellectual and spiritual disposition, the perfect human who has obtained the impeccable state of consciousness. Both Wallace and Darwin envisaged a utopia caused by the elimination of those deemed “inferior,” and the evolution of the “superior” towards superhumanity; they both lamented that this process was not being facilitated. In 1890, Wallace recounted:

“In one of my last conversations with Darwin he expressed himself very gloomily on the future of humanity, on the ground that in our modern civilization natural selection had no play, and the fittest did not survive. Those who succeeded the race for wealth are by no means the best or the most intelligent, and it is notorious that our population is more largely renewed in each generation from the lower than from the middle and upper classes.”<sup>515</sup>

That Darwin observed that this progression towards a society of perfect humans was impossible without governmental facilitation shows that the theory of evolution had it been an advocacy based on truth, it would have progressed naturally without promotion instead of the push to seize power and the creation of a dark, dismal, mechanical and despotic society, in which the pompous, filled with a perception of power, conduct genocide on the meek, the humble, the holders of the Faith, the holders of humanity against whom the father of lies is at war. It is not coincidental that evolutionism, within the period of its 19th century

---

<sup>513</sup> See Ross A. Slotten, *The Heretic in Darwin’s Court*, p. 245

<sup>514</sup> Wallace, *The Scientific Aspect of the Supernatural*, pp. 49-50

<sup>515</sup> See Daniel J. Kevles, *In the Name of Eugenics*, ch. v, p. 70

conception, was promoted as a religion, as a fortifier for the occult. For all false religion — following its first member, Cain — is about the pursuit of power. So occultism, being utterly bent on domination, coincided with evolutionism with all of its advocacy for Darwinism and eugenics. Thus, Charles Johnson, one of the teachers for the occult Theosophical Society in the early twentieth society, said in a lecture in 1928:

“We are immensely indebted to the great teaching of evolution, which Darwin and Alfred Russel Wallace put forward tentatively in 1859. We could hardly have hoped for the success of the Theosophical Movement had not the teaching of evolution preceded by sixteen years the founding of The Theosophical Society in 1875, because we teach — or, to put the matter in its true order, because we first learned, and then tried to convey, the teaching of spiritual evolution, with a far greater scope and larger potency than anything of which Darwin ever dreamed.”<sup>516</sup>

Evolutionism simply strengthened occultism, and Protestantism merely led to evolutionism. Lets not forget, it was Thomas Malthus, a Protestant minister, who inspired Alfred Russel Wallace, and it was also this same minister who influenced Darwin on natural selection. As Darwin wrote in his autobiography:

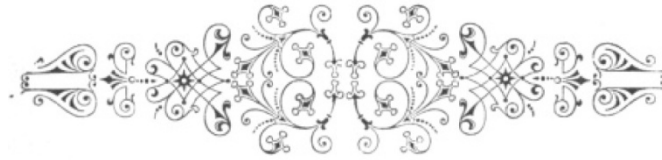
“In October 1838, that is, fifteen months after I had begun my systematic inquiry, I happened to read for amusement Malthus on Population, and being well prepared to appreciate the struggle for existence which everywhere goes on from long- continued observation of the habits of animals and plants, it at once struck me that under these circumstances favourable variations would tend to be preserved, and unfavourable ones to be destroyed. The results of this would be the formation of a new species. Here, then I had at last got a theory by which to work”.<sup>517</sup>

From Protestantism to evolutionism, from one form of anarchy to another, while Darwinism sprung from England, it greatly thrived in Germany, the heartland of Protestantism, and a link between Luther and Darwin was being hailed as the triumph of the Northern European over the Catholic Church of Southern Europe exported by Darwin’s German colleague, Ernst Haeckel.

---

<sup>516</sup> From Theosophy, lecture 9, Theosophical Quarterly, July, 1928

<sup>517</sup> Population Theory: Malthus's Influence On The Scope Of Evolution



## THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE AND EUGENICS

Protestantism would influence evolutionism, Ernst Haeckel, a German the evolutionist, was instrumental in influencing Young Turks on Darwinism. The Young Turks, influenced by Darwinism, would carry out the Armenian Genocide

Ernst Haeckel was deeply influenced by the German religious teacher, Friedrich Daniel Schleiermacher. In 1799 book, *On Religion*, Schleiermacher taught that true religion was forged deeply into the human heart, and that all rites and dogmas were merely poor expressions of this true religion. Influenced by Protestantism, Haeckel erected a bridge between Luther's revolt against the Catholic Church, and Darwin's revolt against the Christian teaching of Creation. In October of 1882, just months after Darwin's death, Haeckel gave a speech in Eisenach in which he expressed his adulation for Darwin, paralleling him with Luther, who in his words, "with a mighty hand tore asunder the web of lies by the world-dominating Papacy, so in our day, Charles Darwin, with comparable overpowering might, has destroyed the ruling, error-doctrines of the mystical creation dogma and through his reform of development theory has elevated the whole sensibility, thought, and will of mankind onto a higher plane."



Protestantism would influence evolutionism, Ernst Haeckel (bottom left), a German evolutionist, was



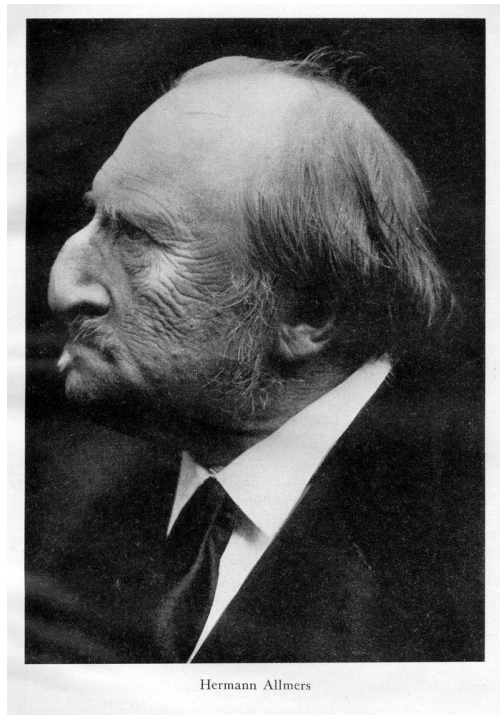
instrumental in influencing the Young Turks (bottom right) on Darwinism. The Young Turks, influenced by Darwinism, would carry out the Armenian Genocide

Haeckel said that it was in Italy where he finally came to the realization of the distinct nature of the German and Northern European race, from the Southern European peoples. In an 1859 letter, writing from Messina, he explained how staying in Italy “stirred up and cultivated” more than anything a “heightened inner love for our incomparable German fatherland.” He wrote how anytime he visited Italy, no matter how beautiful its nature and scenery, he felt compelled to express his reverence for Germany. “It has to be heard over all of Italy and Sicily,” he wrote, “in the majestic environment of Naples, as well as on the glorious plains of Palermo, among the quarries of Syracuse, as well as on the peak of Aetna: Deutschland, Deutschland uber alles, uber alles in der Welt! — Ich bin ein Deutscher, will ein Deutscher sein! [Germany, Germany above all, above everything in the world! I am a German, I will be a German!]’ This superiority of Germany over Italy was really a continuation of what was advocated for by Luther in his mission to sever Germany from Catholic Christendom and the Roman universal Church.

Haeckel travelled through Italy with his friend, the German poet Hermann Allmers, who concluded that Darwin had fulfilled the promise of higher German thought, and that Darwinism was the expression of triumph over the Catholic Church. While the two were in Sorrento, they came across a Norwegian traveller. “The common bond,” Haeckel wrote, “of our German racial nature quickly allowed us to become acquainted with him and we were overjoyed to hear so well expressed... the noble and great ideas of the free German spirit.” He referred to other Germans that they met as “sons of the north” and of the “same great national race.” In another note he wrote: “This experience strengthened anew in me my belief that there exists in our common German nation a healthy embryo which is capable of evolution and it is only because of this that one may hope for a healthy surge in social relations.”<sup>518</sup>

---

<sup>518</sup> See Daniel Gasman, *Scientific Origins of National Socialism*, p. 3



H

Haeckel esteemed Darwinism and evolutionism as the final stage of the German struggle — starting from Luther — against the Catholic Church. “What the Wartburg was for Martin Luther,” wrote Haeckel, “what Weimar was for the greatest heroes of German literature, Jena will remain in the future; a mighty fortress of free thought, free scholarship, free teaching — a mighty fortress of reason!”<sup>519</sup>

The beliefs of Haeckel would impact all of Western Europe, but it would also find significant influence in the souls of violently anti-Christian, Masonic, Islamic elites: the Young Turks. In 1908, the Turkish secret society, the Committee of Union and Progress, or the Young Turkey Party, commenced a revolution against the Sultan, Abdul Hamid II. The Sultan eventually abdicated his throne and gave it to his brother. But, by 1913, the Young Turks officially took over the dying empire.

Unlike the Sultan, the Young Turks held on to secularism, and believed that through modernization, the Ottoman Empire would be able to stop European expansion into Turkish territory.<sup>520</sup>

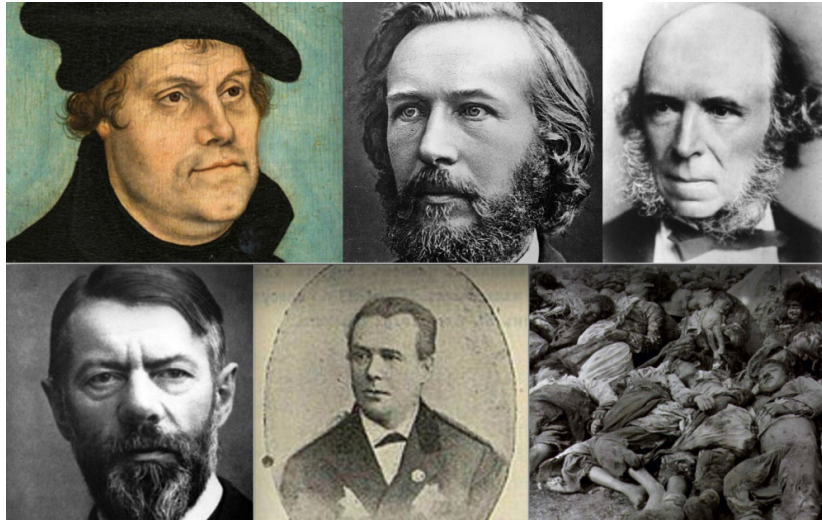
In 1871, Germany became an officially unified nation, and soon after its successful unification, Germany formed an alliance with the Ottoman Empire. The Ottoman elites — statesmen, students, officers and bureaucrats — were the ones who had formed the alliance between Germany and the Ottoman Empire. They had lived in Germany where they studied medicine, military science and engineering, and took a strong interest in German philosophy and ideology. One aspect of German thought that the Ottomans dug into enthusiastically,

---

<sup>519</sup> Ibid, p. 17

<sup>520</sup> See Fromkin, *Europe's Last Summer*, ch. 10, pp. 68-69

especially after 1909, was the ideology of the racial nation, the “blood and soil” religion <sup>521</sup> that would be enacted in Nazi Germany. The Ottomans learned this ideology through the teachings of both Haeckel and Herbert Spencer, the one who actually termed the phrase, “survival of the fittest.” Haeckel, alongside his fellow German Darwinists, Max Weber and Paul Von Lilienfeld, applied Social Darwinism to economics, praising the principle of economic competition as the force behind Social Darwinism. From this ideology, militarism and the extinction of those considered as “weaker, primitive races”, was justified in the Social Darwinist construct. This eugenic ideology seeped into Ottoman thought, and greatly inspired the annihilation of the Armenians, alongside the Greek and Assyrian Christians. <sup>522</sup>



Martin Luther (upper far left corner), influenced Ernst Haeckel (top middle), and alongside Herbert Spencer (top right), Max Weber (bottom far left) and Paul Von Lilienfeld (middle bottom), their work would influence the Young Turks who would go on to exterminate the Armenians

The Ottomans, just like the Identitarians of our day, looked to Japan as a prime example of a racially and religiously unified nation. The Ottomans were ashamed that their own empire was too religiously and ethnically diverse, being filled with Christians of Armenian, Greek and Assyrian descent. The Sultan, Abdulhamid II, himself lamented this, and coveted the nation of Japan. The Sultan wrote in 1917:

“I do not know how appropriate it is to compare Ottoman lands to Japan, to expect success from this Sultan similar to that of the Emperor! Japan is a country of islands, tucked away on one side of the Pacific Ocean; it is a great society, ethnically integrated, uni-religious, uni-national. If there is any region in the world that it does not resemble, it is our wretched country. How could I have reconciled the Kurd and the Armenian, the Greek and the Turk, the Arab and the Bulgar? ... Never at any time

---

<sup>521</sup> See Worringer, Ottomans Imagining Japan, ch. 3, p. 50

<sup>522</sup> See Worringer, Ottomans Imagining Japan, ch. 3, pp. 50-51

did Mikado Hatsuhiro [sic] come up against such obstacles and never did Japan confront such difficulties.”<sup>523</sup>

It was this desire for an ethnocentric, religiously unified and nationalist state that resonated into the minds of the Young Turks. Though the Sultan believed in this, he did not completely enact it, but was fulfilled by the Young Turks. When the Japanese defeated the Russians in the Russo-Japanese War, and when they conquered China, the Turks saw this as proof of the superiority of the Asian race over the European:

“Some Europeans and some Ottomans who imitate what they see without understanding, consider us a race in the lower part of the racial hierarchy. Let us say it in plain Turkish: they regard the Turks as second class human beings. Japanese people, being of the stock of the yellow race, are annihilating the slander against nature with the progress in their country and with their cannons and rifles in Manchuria.”<sup>524</sup>

The Ottomans viewed the Japanese slaughter of the Russians and the Chinese as a sign of racial superiority is also a perspective of neo-Nazis and ultra-nationalists is that Japan sets a great example of a homogeneous society, one worthy of emulation, an adopted perspective by the Young Turks in their magazine, *Turk*, praised the “homogeneous” society and the fanatic nationalism of Japan:

“...in all [its] natural disposition and knowledge a homogeneous people that from end to end is touched by the same sentiments, pursues the same hopes. They love the homeland, with zeal fall victim for the sake of the homeland, in an instant they sacrifice lives for honor and dignity, lives that they sincerely loved and appreciated. They never fear death.”<sup>525</sup>

The fascination with Japan and its nationalism by the Ottoman Empire will be, I believe, continuing into the future, and will help motivate and facilitate an Ottoman Japanese alliance. The Young Turks revered the Japanese for their barbarism (giving them the title, with pride, of “barbarians”), their callousness while conducting massacres, and also for the love of patriotism:

“Behold the work of these barbarians ... they whose civilization, achieved in half a century, has become superior to European civilization which has fallen into decay; they *who do not have to reproach massacres*, who do not have to gag any mouths out of which a liberal word came, who do not have to exile or suppress patriots, who

---

<sup>523</sup> See Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 5, p. 126

<sup>524</sup> An article written in 1904, and published on the Young Turk magazine, *Sura-yi Ummet*, Quoted by Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 5, p. 136

<sup>525</sup> Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 5, p. 139

do not have to dynamite any human beings under the pretext that their skin was dark and that it constituted a happy pastime!”<sup>526</sup>

The Ottoman military officer, Pertev Bey, praised the Japanese soldiers, and wrote in awe of how they went “one by one, like a machine, emotionless, heartless, spiritless, voiceless” to defend Japan with “patriotic affection”. This talk of patriotism, alongside a reverence for Japan, went in hand in hand with the Ottoman belief in the superiority of the Turanian race. This glorification of the Japanese as a race, overlapped and interconnected with Ottoman universalist religion.



Armenian beheadings (left); mass beheadings done by Japanese soldiers in China. The brutality and cruelty of the Japanese was admired by the Ottomans.

The Young Turk magazine, *Ictihad*, praised the Emperor of Japan and even saw the rise of Japan as an awakener of both Muslims and Hindus as well:

“The land of the Rising Sun [Japan] is today neck and neck with foremost nations of the world, intellectually, technologically, scientifically, productively, commercially, agriculturally, politically, socially, militarily ... yes, Japan’s rise made the awakening of the East a consequence. In the liberating motion of this [Japanese] ascension are awakened the dormant passions of the Muslim, the Hindu, the Brahmin, the Confucian. ...The miraculous transformation Japan showed, from an oppressive feudalism into an elevated and rather progressive constitutional monarchy, is a development owing to His excellency the late Emperor.”<sup>527</sup>

In wanting to be like Japan, the Young Turks desired a homogeneous society, one free of Christians who refused to integrate to the Ottoman society and conform to the Ottomanist ideology. For the Young Turks, to be a Christian, one was likely to also be a Greek, Armenian, or Arab, in short, they were not Turks and thus were a threat to the utopian vision of a racially and religiously homogeneous society. The Young Turks even began replacing the Arab officials within the government, with Turks. This measure was done on ethnic lines.<sup>528</sup>

As the historian, Renee Worringer, points out, the Young Turks’ “affinity with Europe and their increasingly exclusive possession of Ottoman political power caused them to be

<sup>526</sup> In the *Sura-yi Ummet* praise to the Japanese: Quoted by Worringer, ch. 5, p. 142

<sup>527</sup> See Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 6, p. 167, brackets mine

<sup>528</sup> See Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 6, pp. 178-179

profoundly attracted to racialized concepts of nationhood that would set them apart from others in the Ottoman Empire. This tendency was reflected in their particular view of a Japanese as a racially distinct and homogeneous nation, and their embrace of this attitude appeared frequently in the Ottoman Turkish literature of the period.”<sup>529</sup> In order to create a homogeneous society, the empire needed to be purged of Christians. Since the Christians either Armenians, Greeks or Semites, to be a Christian was to be deemed as being amongst the non-Turk and thus, inferior, races. The genocide of the Armenian Christians, and the Christians of Smyrna and other lands, was done under the fixation on a unified Ottoman Empire, without non-Ottomans, or those who would bring disunity to the empire.<sup>530</sup> This violent fixation on unity, on racial and religious lines, was inspired by the view of a “homogeneous” Japan. The Ottoman magazine, *Volkan*, headed by the Bektashi sufist, Kibrisli Hafiz Dervis Vahdeti, expressed this inspiration from Japan as such:

“Come heroes! Let us unite! Let us assume the strength of character of early Islam, let us be a noble people like the Japanese, who love their governments, their Mikados [emperors], who sacrifice their lives along the way. ...Postponing even for a moment what I said will and does cause the homeland to break into pieces.”<sup>531</sup>

Christians were seen as causes of the homeland breaking “into pieces,” and so thus, were exterminated. This envisioning of a unified empire, was inspired by Islam — from the desire for Islamic unity, or the unity of the Umma —, Japanese nationalist ideology, and German nationalism. Yusuf Akcura, a major ideologue for the Young Turks, wrote that “the German interpretation of nationality — one that assumed ethnicity as the basis of nationality ... is closer to reality,” and went so far as to put pan-Ottomanism as above pan-Islamism.<sup>532</sup>

Islam, and the ethnocentric ideologies of Germany and Japan influenced the Armenian Genocide. In summary, Protestant thought would influence Darwinism, and Darwinism would eventually influence the first holocaust of the 20th century, the Genocide done by the Ottoman Empire, and the later Holocaust done by the fatherland of Protestantism — Germany.

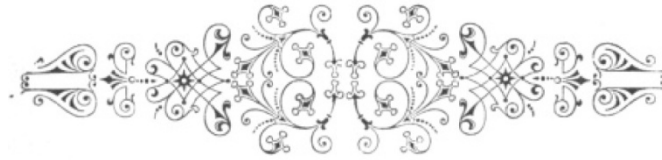
---

<sup>529</sup> Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 7, p. 185

<sup>530</sup> See Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 7, p. 196

<sup>531</sup> See Worringer, *Ottomans Imagining Japan*, ch. 7, p. 175, brackets mine

<sup>532</sup> *Ibid*, p. 189



## LUTHER AND GERMAN NATIONALISM

Martin Luther sowed the anti-Jewish hatred of Nazi Germany into the German soul. Luther once expressed his violent fantasy against the Jews as such:

“Were I able, I would knock him [the Jew] down and stab him in my anger. It is lawful according to both the human and the divine law, to kill a robber; then it is even more permissible to slay a blasphemer”<sup>533</sup>

He also said, “We ought to take revenge on the Jews and kill them”, and he lamented:

“it is our own fault that we have not annihilated the Jews but placidly let them stay where they are in spite of all their murders, their curses, blasphemies, lies, violations, and that we even protect their schools, their dwellings, their persons and property.”<sup>534</sup>

Hundreds of years before the Nazis took power Martin Luther introduced the idea of forcing all of the Jews into concentration camps and work camps. He pushed for this imposition in his anti-Jewish code:

“Pack them all under one roof or stable, like the gypsies, that they may know that they are not lords and masters in our land as they boast. ...Deprive them of the right to move about the country. ... Hand the strong young Jews of both sexes flail, axe, mattock, spade, distaff, and spindle; and make them work for their bread in the sweat of their brow, like all the children of Adam. Confiscate their property and drive them out of the country.”<sup>535</sup>

The German Nazis would follow the words of Luther, with their Darwinist ideology, in the Holocaust. Luther’s violent envisioning repulsed German scholars, contemporary to Luther. For example, Heinrich Bullinger of Zurich wrote: “Everyone must be astonished at the hard and presumptuous spirit of the man (Luther). The opinion of posterity will be that Luther was not only a man, but a man ruled by criminal passions.”<sup>536</sup> Martin Luther was not simply

---

<sup>533</sup> Detailed references given in Grisar, Luther, vol. v, p. 413, in Weiner, Luther, p. 73

<sup>534</sup> In Weiner, Luther, p. 74

<sup>535</sup> W53, 525 abridged, in Weiner, Luther, p. 75

<sup>536</sup> See Weiner, Luther, p. 76

a reformer but the patriarch of German nationalism self-appointed as the mouth piece for the German race:

“I am the prophet of the Germans, for such is the haughty title I must henceforth assume.”<sup>537</sup>

“As I am the prophet of the Germans, I will act as a faithful teacher and warn my staunch Germans of the danger in which they stand.”

“I have been born for my beloved Germans, for them will I die!”

For Luther, the Germans were the *Herrenvolk* or “the best nation.” “The Germans are conspicuous for their nobility of character,” said Luther, “their constancy, an fidelity.” In another pompous and antichrist statement, Luther said:

“If God is concerned for the interests of His son, He will watch over me; my cause is the cause of Jesus Christ. If God careth not for the glory of Christ, He will endanger His own and will have to bear the shame.”<sup>538</sup>

If the Germans were so enthusiastic about a man like Luther, then it should have been no surprise that they accepted Adolf Hitler as their leader. Or in the words of Wiener:

“A nation which found it easy to accept a character like Luther as Christ, could not find it difficult to accept a man like Hitler as Messiah.”<sup>539</sup>

The Germans were looking for the fulfillment of Luther’s envisioning of an absolutist leader — a fuehrer — for Germany. Luther once said:

“Germany is like a beautiful horse that has everything it needs. But it needs a horseman. In the same way as a good horse runs occasionally astray without a good horseman who governs it, so Germany has enough strength and people, but it lacks a good leader.”

Hitler was seen as the grand emulator of Luther. Karl Litzmann, a German general in the First World War who later joined the Nazi Party, definitely saw Hitler in this light. “Hitler,” he said in 1933, “is the greatest German, who can only be compared to Luther.”<sup>540</sup>

In this inquest on the connections between Darwinism, Protestantism and Islam, the First World War is of the utmost of significance. For in this conflict — amongst the most

---

<sup>537</sup> Weiner, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 2, p. 26

<sup>538</sup> Quoted in Wiener, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 2, p. 26

<sup>539</sup> Wiener, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 2, p. 27

<sup>540</sup> See Weiner, Luther, p. 88



horrific ones experienced by mankind — Islam, Darwinism and Protestantism, converged together to war against the true faith of Christianity.

When observing the problems of our present day, and how they presage the rise of another bloody conflict, one realizes somewhere along the road of inquiry, that the First World War parallels our own, and thus is a prerequisite for us to learn about it. In the words of historian George Kennan: “all the lines of inquiry, it seems to me, lead back to it.”

In the heart of Germany’s vision of supremacy, one will find Luther’s name engrained. Adolf Deissman, who was amongst Germany’s leading Protestant theologians during the First World War, unequivocally placed Luther as an inseparable pillar holding up German militarism. In 1914, Deissman wrote down the points of ideology, which German Protestants had to follow. It was entitled: “The War and Religion” and in it he proclaimed the diabolical equation of Christianity with German supremacy. He wrote: “The war has steered our religion ... We Germans can’t believe in anything else but a German God.” Deissman also said: “Our present religion is natural and German, and we preach a German God! A German, a national God!”<sup>541</sup>

By Making God German, what Lutheran ideology did was bring back the German people to its pre-Christian religion, when the Germans worshipped their own Germanic gods. By doing this under the guise of Christianity, it made it easier for people to return to paganism, without the trouble of appearing rebellious. Jesus Christ all of a sudden became a German, as we read in Deissman: “Only in a German cloak can the real Christ breath.” (124) This type of teaching went directly in line with the “back to roots” paganism that so grew in 20th century Germany. It also emanated from the Lutheran urge to form a German Christianity, in which lies the heresy of putting the race before the Faith. From nationalist religion, comes the idea that the race is above the Faith, and in this, do men put their own pride above mankind, and war against humanity itself. Hence why Protestant Germany had no problem in absorbing Social-Darwinism. Even in the words of the Protestant theologian, Deissman, do we find the Darwinist sentiment of “might makes right,” for he said: “I am proud to preach the religion of might and what our enemies call barbarism.”<sup>542</sup> Before the Protestant revolt, the German people were under the Universal Catholic Church, in which lied many nations, peoples and languages. There was a unified body called Christendom, under the Church, wherein Christian spirituality was the center of everything, culturally and politically. When the Pope declared a Crusade in the 11th century, French, Italians, Irish, Germans, and others, all gathered together to join the holy cause. There was spiritual unity, guided by the Church and not divided by the ideas of nations. What hindered the cause of Christendom was nationalism. There was actually a natural factor behind the development of nationalism: the Black Death of the mid 14th century. Estimates put the death toll, for the era of 1346 to 1353, from 75 to 200 million deaths. But even after this, the Plague continued all the way on to the year 1671, and even continuing in other parts like Russia, to the late 18th century.

Before the outbreak of the horrors of the Black Plague, the unity of Christendom, for the most part, was maintained by a common religion and Catholic civilization, and a large body of governors.

---

<sup>541</sup> Quoted by Weiner, Luther, p. 90

<sup>542</sup> Ibid

There was immense intermarriage between the people, there was free travel from kingdom to kingdom, people from different regions met one another through common zeal for holy causes — the Crusades and pilgrimages —, councils massed people from various areas of the continent together, and wars as well gathered them. People throughout England could speak French, with a man of Northumberland speaking not too differently from a man of Bordeaux. And even in other areas where they spoke different languages, like Spain and Italy, there was still a great amount of traveling and journeying being done by government officials, the upperclass, soldiers, clerics and scholars.

From the Black Death came the loss of tens of millions of people throughout Europe. The fear of infection kept people from traveling, and confined them to remain within their own lands. This serious decline of traveling naturally helped lead to the creation of national identities. Nationalism was something that was going to happen no matter what, but the Black Plague accelerated the process like yeast in water. Because of the Black Plague, within one lifetime the majority of people in England no longer spoke French, but English. In every place where the Black Plague had its effect, there was developed what has been called “particularism,” a rooting of the divisions between Christians peoples. By the year 1400, there were established differences developed between nations that greatly penetrated and altered the soul of Europe.

Within the 15th century, Jan Huss (inspired by John Wycliffe) led a revolt in Bohemia against the Catholic Church, calling Her the Harlot of Babylon and the Pope the Antichrist. He rejected the Eucharist and the priesthood, and his followers exhibited their destructiveness and cruelty when they smashed Catholic icons, which they believed to be idols, and beheaded and butchered Catholics. They revolted against the Holy Roman Emperor, Sigismund, and this led to the most brutal Hussite Wars, which lasted from 1419 to around 1434.

This revolt, and the wars that followed, were part of more so a nationalist movement than a theological one. The Hussites were separatists that wanted to make Bohemia into a Hussite state severed from the Holy Roman Empire. It is no wonder, then, that the father of German nationalism, Martin Luther, was inspired by the Hussite revolt, fervently writing: “my soul burns to see Bohemia and the religion so odious to the papal monster,” and “I do not fear the shame of the name ‘Bohemian,’ which is glorious in the sight of God.”<sup>543</sup> A similar observation of nationalism can be made in regards to the Wycliffite revolts in England, in which Lollards, led by Wat Tyler, caused an uprising against King Richard II, in which they decapitated the Catholic Bishop Simon of Sudbury. The goal was to sever England from the Universal Church and create an English Wycliffite church.<sup>544</sup> These revolts, and the political effects of the Black Plague, presaged how Protestantism would break down Europe and act as a seminal mover in the development of nationalism. Hilaire Belloc spoke of this consequence of Protestantism, “that unity has been broken by a religious

---

<sup>543</sup> See Donnelly’s translation of St. Thomas More’s *Responsio Ad Lutherum*, Preface to Luther’s Work, Written to a Certain Bohemian Noble, p. 102

<sup>544</sup> See Belloc, *How the Reformation Happened*, Introductory, pp. 46-48

revolution in which the corporate economy of the craftsmen disappeared and the already long-decaying village system disappeared with it.”<sup>545</sup>

In England, the State established an English church — the Anglican Church — and when English revolted against the Protestant policy of William Cecil, 1st Baron of Burghley, hundreds of Catholics were rounded up and butchered and, in the words of Belloc, “there was not a village that had not its corpses swinging from trees.”<sup>546</sup> The inevitable result of Protestantism was the perception of the Catholic Church as an evil and foreign entity, and the push for the formation of national churches.

Luther and Zwingli may have hated each other, they may have disagreed on the sacraments, but they agreed on one thing: to attack the organization of Christians under the Universal Church.<sup>547</sup> Luther held that there needed to be a separation between the German kings and rulers, and the Catholic Church. In his *Address to the Nobility of the German Nation* (a title that unto itself denotes German pride), Luther praised the heretical, pro-Islamic German tyrant, Frederick II, speaking about how “those beloved princes the Emperors Frederick, the First and the Second, and many other German emperors were, in former times, so piteously spurned and oppressed by the popes, though they were feared by all the world.” It is interesting that he would pick Frederick II, he was not too different from Luther. Frederick was, as Belloc said, “one of the most intelligent and most dangerous men that ever ruled in Christendom”.<sup>548</sup> He preferred Islam over the Catholic Faith, saying to the ambassador of Sultan al-Kamil, Fakhr-ad-Din:

“That [the Islamic religion] is excellent, far superior to the arrangement of those fools, the Christians. They choose as their spiritual head any fellow they will, without the smallest relationship to the Messiah, and they make him the Messiah’s representative. That Pope there has not claim to such a position, whereas your Khalif is the descendent of Muhammad’s uncle.”<sup>549</sup>

Now, contrast these words with this statement of Luther:

“They say that there is no better temporal government than among the Turks, though they have no canon nor civil law, but only their Koran; we must at least own that there is no worse government than ours, with its canon and civil law, for no estate lives according to the Scriptures, or even according to natural reason.”

Hitler, like Luther and Fredrick before him, also preferred Islam over Catholic Christendom, saying:

---

<sup>545</sup> Belloc, *The Crusades*, ch. 3, pp. 22-23

<sup>546</sup> Belloc, *How the Reformation Happened*, ch. v, pp. 190-191

<sup>547</sup> See Belloc, *How the Reformation Happened*, ch, iii, p. 137

<sup>548</sup> *Great Heresis*, Belloc pg. 94

<sup>549</sup> See Carroll, *A History of Christendom*, vol. iii, ch. vi, p. 214

“You see, it’s been our misfortune to have the wrong religion. Why didn’t we have the religion of the Japanese, who regard sacrifice for the fatherland as the highest good? The Mohammedan religion too would have been much more compatible to us than Christianity. Why did it have to be Christianity with its meekness and flabbiness?”<sup>550</sup>

Frederick II signed a treaty with the Muslims, giving the Christians control over Jerusalem for only ten years while giving the Muslims possession of Solomon’s Temple. He even told the Muslims one day, “God has now sent you to the pigs,” referring to the Christians. It was this same Frederick who, in 1240, brought an army of Muslims, alongside Europeans, into Central Italy. The Muslims did not hesitate to fight and kill the Pope’s troops. They ascended the walls of the church of San Damiano, saw a multitude of women and charged with the intention of ravishing them. A pious woman, St. Clare, was present, and before the heretics could seize their victims she cried out to God:

“Lord Jesus, do not permit these defenseless virgins to fall into the hands of these heathen. Protect them; for I, who have nourished them with Your love, can do nothing for them.”

All of a sudden the spirit of fear seized the barbarians; their boldness turned to panic, they clambered over the walls and fled with fright,<sup>551</sup> and the heretics emulated the demons whom they worshipped, and fled from the ever glorious church. That Luther would praise an emperor who praised Islam, hated the Catholic Church and brought in Muslim mercenaries to invade Catholic Italy, in a speech directed to the German elite. shows that he really wanted a German severed from Catholic Christendom, severed from the Roman Church, a separate nation and people; it shows a sign of nationalist fervor.

What Luther did was really sow the seeds for German nationalism. One can say that Luther’s revolt was the incipient stage of of German nationalism and identitarianism, as it emphasized the importance of a German Christianity, a German Bible, a German church, as opposed to a Catholic Universal Church. Once you remove the *Universal* nature of the church, then it becomes a *national* church, and from this, comes nationalist religion. “I thank God,” Luther would say, “that I can hear God now in my German tongue. Neither in Latin, nor Greek, nor Hebrew language would He be the same.”<sup>552</sup> The reverence for Luther as the patriarch for German identitarianism was very vibrant and animate in 19th and 20th century Germany. Wilhelm Wundt, a pioneer behind the racialist “folk psychology” of the 19th and 20th centuries, wrote: “The work of Martin Luther made possible the rebirth of Christian faith through the German spirit.”<sup>553</sup> For philosophers like Hegel, the Catholic Faith

---

<sup>550</sup> Speer, Albert (1971). Inside the Third Reich. Trans. Richard Winston, Clara Winston, Eugene Davidson. New York: Macmillan, p. 143; Reprinted in 1997. Inside the Third Reich: Memoirs. New York: Simon and Schuster. p. 96

<sup>551</sup> Englebert, St. Francis of Assisi, ch. viii, p. 119

<sup>552</sup> See Weiner, Luther, p. 81

<sup>553</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism, p. 112

did a heavy blow against the German people for having gotten rid of its native pagan religion, and replacing it with the Semitic religion of Israel and the Jews.

The Reformation, on the other hand, was for Hegel the exemplary collective expression of German national identity. As he wrote:

“Christianity has emptied Valhalla, felled the sacred groves, extirpated the national imagery as a shameful superstition, as a devilish poison, and given us instead the imagery of a nation whose climate, laws, culture, and interests are strange to us and whose history has no connection whatever with our own. A David or a Solomon lives in our popular imagination, but our country’s own heroes slumber in learned history books, and, for the scholars who write them, Alexander or Caesar is as interesting as the story of Charlemagne or Frederick Barbarossa. Except perhaps for Luther in the eyes of Protestants, what heroes could we have had, we who were never a nation? Who could be our Theseus, who founded a state and was its legislator? Where are our Harmodius and Aristogiton to whom we could sing scolia as the liberators of our land? The wars which have engulfed millions of Germans were wars waged by princes out of ambition or for their own independence; the people were only tools, and even if they fought with rage and exasperation, they still could only ask at the end: ‘Why?’ or ‘What have we gained?’ The Reformation, and the bloody vindication of the right to make reforms in religion, is one of the few events in which a part of the nation took an interest, an interest which did not evaporate, like the interest in the Crusades, as the imagination cooled, but which was animated by a sense of an abiding right, the right in matters of religious opinion to follow one’s own self wrought or self-acquired conviction.”<sup>554</sup>

Luther’s hatred against the Jews became a central focus in German nationalism, and this is especially seen in anonymous 1881 German nationalist essay, entitled “Luther and the Jews”, in which the idea of being a Protestant Christian is synonymous with being German, interlinking race with religion:

“A Jew cannot be a German because a true German can only be someone who is a Christian. ...How can we callow among us a people that slanders and derides every day our Lord and Savior? And because Christ stands in the center for our Dr. Martin Luther, he speaks with a true, holy wrath against the Jews.”<sup>555</sup>

Luther wanted to reduce the position of the Pope to just one of prayer and weeping, saying to the German nobility: “His office should be nothing else than to weep and pray constantly for Christendom and to be an example of all humility.” One can see the motivation of separating the German race from the universal Church of Rome, setting a difference between Germans and “the Romanists,” saying in one part of his address to the German

---

<sup>554</sup> Hegel, *Early Theological Writings*, p. 146, trans. T.M. Knox

<sup>555</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, p. 111

nobility: “let us rouse ourselves, fellow-Germans, and fear God more than man, that we be not answerable for all the poor souls that are so miserably lost through the wicked, devilish government of the Romanists, and that the dominion of the devil should not grow day by day, if indeed this hellish government can grow any worse, which, for my part, I can neither conceive nor believe.”

Luther marked a line between the Italians the Germans: the Roman Church, in Luther’s eyes, had destroyed Italy and now wanted to come for Germany:

“Now that Italy is sucked dry, they come to Germany and begin very quietly; but if we look on quietly Germany will soon be brought into the same state as Italy.”<sup>556</sup>

The historian, Thomas H. Dyer, in his *History of Europe*, astutely observed that Luther’s cause was for a German attack on Roman thought. “The Reformation,” he writes, “was a reaction of the Teutonic mind against the Roman.”<sup>557</sup>

In the words of Luther, German “Princes, nobles, and cities should promptly forbid their subjects to pay the annates to Rome and should even abolish them altogether.” Luther took whatever corruptions he saw in Rome as a pretense to foment division between Germans and the universal Church, saying that the German “Christian nobility should rise up against the Pope as a common enemy and destroyer of Christianity, for the sake of the salvation of the poor souls that such tyranny must ruin. ...Thus those at Rome would learn that we Germans are not to remain drunken fools forever”. Luther demanded that German governments outlaw any German from going to Rome for pilgrimage, stating to the German nobility:

“Pilgrimages to Rome must be abolished, or at least no one must be allowed to go from his own wish or his own piety, unless his priest, his town magistrate, or his lord has found that there is sufficient reason for his pilgrimage. This I say, not because pilgrimages are bad in themselves, but because at the present time they lead to mischief; for at Rome a pilgrim sees no good examples, but only offence. They themselves have made a proverb, ‘The nearer to Rome, the farther from Christ,’ and accordingly men bring home contempt of God and of God’s commandments. ... That this false, misleading belief on the part of simple Christians may be destroyed, and a true opinion of good works may again be introduced, all pilgrimages should be done away with. ... If any one wishes to go on a pilgrimage or to make a vow for a pilgrimage, he should first inform his priest or the temporal authorities of the reason, and if it should turn out that he wishes to do it for the sake of good works, let this vow

---

**556** The Collected Works of Martin Luther: Theological Writings, Sermons & Hymn

<sup>557</sup> Quoted in Weiner, Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor, ch. 1, p. 15

and work be just trampled upon by the priest or the temporal authority as an infernal delusion”<sup>558</sup>

Luther, thus, wanted the German governments to prevent their subjects from going to Rome, and therefore, to further isolate the German Christians from the universal Church. This was amongst the steps towards German nationalism and the end of the unity of Christendom. Writing as a seminal influence towards nationalism, and with the desire to sever the German nation from Christendom, Luther once wrote: “the German princes have now learned — they who were formerly most worthy of trust, to submit to the Roman idol to do nothing better than break their word, to the perpetual ignominy of our nation.”<sup>559</sup> To Luther, for the German princes to remain loyal to Rome was a disgrace, not for orthodox Christianity, but for the German nation. Destroying the relationship between the German nobility and Rome was, thus, essential for Christianity, and ultimately, for the rise of the German’s peoples dignity. This envisage to fully sever Germany from Roman influence was held in Germany, even to the times of Hitler himself. “I do insist,” Hitler once said, “on the certainty that sooner or later — once we hold power — Christianity will be overcome and the German church established. Yes, the German church, without a Pope and without the Bible, and Luther, if he could be with us, would give us his blessing.”<sup>560</sup> Luther also pushed the German nobility to control the building of Catholic monasteries: “Let no more mendicant monasteries be built! God help us! there are too many as it is.” In other words, Luther wanted the State to overpower the Church. The Catholic Church, to him, had become an entity that overlapped the national boundaries of German governments. By the late 16th century, 50 of Germany’s 65 imperial states had become Protestant. It was the Protestant religion that helped solidify the German identity and nation.

In fact, one of the reasons why Austria was not included in Germany’s 1871 unification was because it was traditionally Catholic. In 1906, the German Chancellor, Prince Bernard von Bulow, told his government’s representatives abroad in 1906, that if Austria were to be added into Germany, “We shall thereby receive an increase of about fifteen million Catholics so that the Protestants would become a minority ... the proportion of strength between the Protestants and the Catholics would become similar to that which led to the Thirty Years War, i.e., a virtual dissolution of the German empire.”<sup>561</sup>

Protestantism is no rooted in the political essence of Germany, that till this day Luther is used for populist movements. For example, the rising Alternative for Germany party (AfD) presents posters with Luther’s portrait adjacent to his infamous words: Here I stand, I

---

<sup>558</sup> The Prince By Niccolò Machiavelli pg. 313

<sup>559</sup> See Donnelly’s translation of St. Thomas More’s *Responsio Ad Lutherum*, Preface to Luther’s Work, Written to a Certain Bohemian Noble, p. 101

<sup>560</sup> Hitler’s Speeches, edited by N.H. Baynes, Oxford, 1942, p. 369, quoted by Frank R. Zindler, in his foreword for Wiener’s *Martin Luther, Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor*, p. ix

<sup>561</sup> See Fromkin, *Europe’s Last Summer*, ch. 9, p. 55

cannot do otherwise (Hier steje ich und kann nicht anders), alongside the slogan: “Courage to Truth” (Mut zur Wahrheit).<sup>562</sup> The first verses of the song sing:

“Wake up, wake up, You German land!  
You have slept enough,  
bethink, what God has turn to You,  
wherefore he has created You!  
Bethink, what God has sent You  
and entrust You his utmost pledge,  
therefore You should arise!”

The social-Darwinistic influence and apocalyptic language is expressed. In one part Bjorn Hocke, with words reminiscent to the prefacing Protestant hymn, says:

*“Perhaps it is the last chance for our people to once again awaken.”*

Later on he speaks of mass violence in the streets of Germany, saying: “this country will quickly become a country of civil war.” He then goes on to express gratitude to Thilo Sarrazin, a German eugenicist, social Darwinist and high ranking member of the Social Democratic Party of Germany. Bjorn says of the German eugenicist: “I believe without Thilo Sarrazin we would not be sitting here today... he characterized Germany as self-abolishing, it is not simply a prophecy of doom, but a reality.” The influence and impact of Luther and apocalyptic Darwinism in current German politics, is seen in this video. The Berlin pastor, Ernst Shaeffer, wrote in 1917 that Luther pursued the defense of “a German national Christian religion”.<sup>563</sup>

English eugenicist, Houston Stewart Chamberlain, loved Germany so much that he became a German citizen, and was admired by both Wilhelm II and Adolf Hitler. He too loved Luther and once said: “Unconditional patriotism and conditional theology made him [Luther] throw off his monastic habit.”<sup>564</sup> In other words, a limited theology with fanatic nationalism is what drove Luther to war against the Catholic Church. “Luther was more of a politician than a theologian,” said Chamberlain, he was “above all a political hero.” Chamberlain also wrote of Luther:

“It was Luther’s first thought to look in the Scripture for a political reformation. ... Religious and social questions mingle together in the Reformation; it was in fact quite as much a social and political revolution as a religious movement. ... Thus it was no

---

<sup>562</sup> Watch video of a speech given by one of the AfD leaders, Bjorn Hocke, and it is prefaced by a Protestant hymn, *Wach auf du deutsches Land* (Wake up, you German land), written by Johann Walter, a Lutheran poet of the Reformation era.

<sup>563</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, p. 112

<sup>564</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, pp. 112-113



accident that Luther was called on to take a leading part in the social and political struggles which followed on his theological controversies.”<sup>565</sup>

It is not to our marvel that Protestant church historian, H. Hermelink, called Luther “one of the greatest politicians of Germany”.<sup>566</sup> German nationalist, Alfred Falb, wrote in a 1921 book, *Luther and the Jews: Germany’s Leading Men and Judaism*, that:

“At a time when the pagan-Jewish spirit in the Roman Church had conquered the West, when the Jewish loaning of money dominated Europe and slowly gave birth to capitalism... there arose in the most dire circumstances the liberator in Luther’s fighting heroism. Pure German in his blood and born in poverty, he carried the fate of Germany in his chest. But this fate is yet to be fulfilled! He foresaw what is happening now; posterity ignored his warnings. Only the future will complete what he already felt in his anxious soul. ...A pointer in this book.”<sup>567</sup>

In the official publication for the German Faith Movement (*Deutsche Glaubensbewegung*), it said:

*“His [Luther’s] literary attacks against Judaism are the fruit of an enduring struggle for the birth of an unlimited, European Christian way of thinking and feeling; they are a legacy of the eternal German spirit that shall never be forgotten.”*<sup>568</sup>

In the 450th birthday of Luther in 1933, Julius Streicher, in his weekly journal, *Der Sturmer* (“the Assailant”), spoke of Luther as such:

“Luther stands before us as the warrior against the international power of the Jews. But his stance has been concealed from us. This is the great sin of omission of all responsible national educators. For enlightenment about the true nature of the Jews is neither an act of hate or envy but a duty for self-preservation patriotism. We hope that this is the time when Luther will be shown as a warrior to the people. We also want to see the full picture of Luther’s life in the church as the most proper place where truth must be honored.”<sup>569</sup>

For Alfred Falb, Luther had become the father of a “German religion.” He defended Luther’s rage against the Jews, speaking of them as such: “a hereditary, pernicious mental faculty in a people that, more than any other, inclines to be mentally ill, perverse, etc.”<sup>570</sup> In the 1930s

---

<sup>565</sup> Quoted by Wiener, *Martin Luther: Hitler’s Spiritual Ancestor*, ch. 1, p. 17

<sup>566</sup> H. Hermelink in *Zeitschrift fur Kirchengeschichte*, vol. 29, 1908, p. 478

<sup>567</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, p. 114

<sup>568</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, p. 115

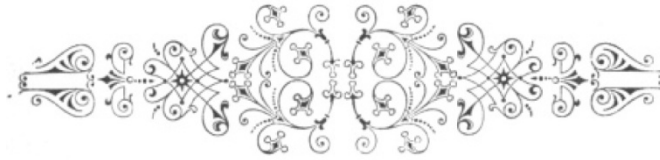
<sup>569</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, p. 115

<sup>570</sup> Quoted by Eric W. Gritsch, *Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism*, pp. 114

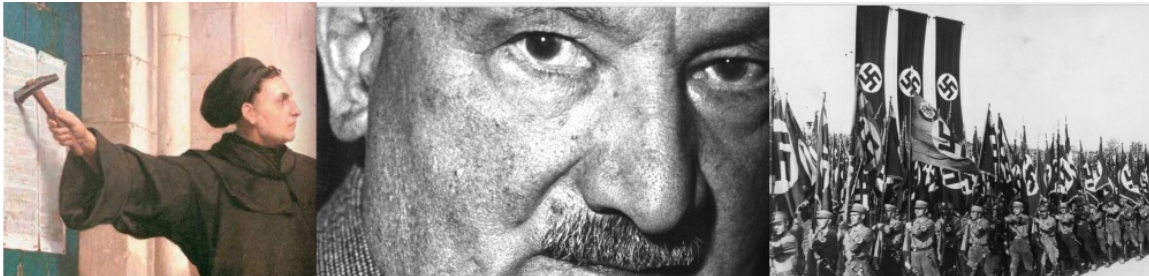
the German Faith Movement hailed Luther as the presager of a world struggle for a new order of the earth dominated by an “eternal German spirit” and that Luther’s book, “The Jews and Their Lies” should be a “folk book” (Volksbuch) for the education of the German populace on the Jewish threat to civilization. <sup>571</sup>

---

<sup>571</sup> Eric W. Gritsch, Martin Luther’s Anti-Semitism, pp. 114-115



## MARTIN HEIDEGGER, LUTHER AND NAZISM



(Martin Luther would influence Martin Heidegger, who would in turn be very influential on Nazi ideology)

One of the most influential Nazi ideologues was Martin Heidegger, and amongst the biggest influences on his own philosophy, was Martin Luther. Although Heidegger was born Catholic, he eventually left the faith, writing to his priest, Engelbert Krebs, in 1918 that “the system of Catholicism” is “problematic and unacceptable.” He believed — as all heretics do — that the Catholic Faith was far away from the original state of Christianity, writing in 1919 that: “the ancient Christian achievement was distorted and buried through the infiltration of classical science into Christianity. From time to time it reasserted itself in violent eruptions (as in Augustine, Luther, and Kierkegaard).”<sup>572</sup>

Rejecting the Church, Heidegger turned, with strong fixation and focus, upon the works of Luther. From 1919 to 1923, Heidegger frequently referenced Luther in his lectures. In 1921, Heidegger possessed a full set of volumes of Luther’s writings. By 1922, Heidegger was seeking a teaching position at the University of Marburg. The German philosopher, Edmund Husserl, wrote a letter in support of him being a professor there, in which he mentions his desire to link Protestant theology with philosophy:

“There is one major theme of [Heidegger’s] studies, which are centered essentially upon the phenomenology of religion, that he, as a former ‘Catholic’ philosopher, understandably cannot treat here [at Freiburg] freely, namely, Luther. It would probably be of great importance for his development if he could go to Marburg. There he would be an important link between philosophy and Protestant theology (with which he is thoroughly acquainted in all of its forms and which he appreciates fully in its great unique values).”

According to American lawyer, John van Buren, “Heidegger saw himself . . . as a kind of philosophical Luther of western metaphysics.” According to Bultmann, “Heidegger himself

---

<sup>572</sup> Cf. van Buren, J., *The Young Heidegger* (1994), p. 146, referring to *Grundprobleme der Phänomenologie* (GA58), p. 205.

never made a secret of the fact that he was influenced... most notably by Luther.”<sup>573</sup> Luther demanded a rejection of Catholic scholasticism and a return back to a “primal” Christianity. Heidegger, inspired by Luther’s aspiration, called for the “destruction of Christian philosophy and theology” and a return back to what he thought of as original Christianity.

Heidegger took Luther’s theology, secularized it and made it into a philosophy. As Edmund Schlink, a prominent scholar on Luther wrote, “Heidegger’s existential analytic of human Dasein [presence] is a radical secularization of Luther’s anthropology.” Heidegger’s teachings on Luther in the 1920s would have deep influence on well known Protestant theologians, such as Bultmann, Paul Tillich, and Heinrich Ott. He saw metaphysics as “the way of salvation”. Heidegger wrote that “religious consciousness wins its new position with Luther.”<sup>574</sup>

Heidegger took Luther’s fanatical emphasis on man’s enslavement to sin and interpreted it as being, that man is sin itself: “The being of man as such is sin. . . . Thus sin is not affixing moral attributes to man but rather his real core. In Luther, sin is a concept of existence.” St. John tells us, “He that committeth sin is of the devil: for the devil sinneth from the beginning.” (1 John 3:8) Since sin is of the devil, then to Luther, all of mankind’s existence itself is of the devil; and for Heidegger, humanity’s existence is enslaved to its fallenness, for as he writes: “Da-sein (human existence) has initially always already fallen away from itself and fallen prey to the ‘world.’” When writing this, he was doing so under the influence of Luther’s belief that man’s will was utterly controlled. In Heidegger, one find’s both Luther and his gnostic leanings.

In contrary to these evil writers, St. John says: “He that doth justice is just, even as he is just.” (1 John 3:7) Man, then, can be free from this enslavement from doing justice, or as Gregory Palamas wrote: “those who have elevated their minds to God and exalted their souls with divine longing, their flesh also is being transformed and elevated, participating together with the soul in the divine communion, and becoming itself a dwelling and possession of God;”<sup>575</sup> God, then, when man elevates his mind towards Him and strives to do good, transforms man into an instrument for His justice. While the gnostic worldview makes God into a hater of the physical body, St. Maximus the Confessor writes that “because God cares for what is lower, that is the body, and has given the command to love one’s neighbor, the soul prudently makes use of the body. By practicing the virtues the body gains familiarity with God and becomes a fellow servant with the soul.”<sup>576</sup> Such a beautiful teaching was conveyed by St. Bernard of Clairvaux in his letter to Pope Eugene III:

*“If the heart be cleansed, free from vice, and relieved of the burden of its sins, it may hereby be easily relieved of the burden of its sins, it may hereby be easily raised to*

---

<sup>573</sup> Van Buren, The Young Young Heidegger, p. 150

<sup>574</sup> A Companion to Heidegger - Page 23

<sup>575</sup> Palamas, The Triads, C. II. ii. 5

<sup>576</sup> Maximus the Confessor, On the Cosmic Mystery of Christ, Ambiguum 7, iv, p. 66, trans. Blowers & Wilkins

*things above; the admiring soul may sometimes also for brief intervals be even kept entranced with wonder and amazement.*"<sup>577</sup>

At the heart of Heidegger is the aim at destroying tradition. His mission was to obliterate the tradition of Aristotelian scholasticism and go back to the pagan philosophers before Aristotle and Socrates, and he looked up to Luther's mission of destroying Catholic tradition and replacing it with "primal" Christianity as his inspiration. As scholar Ken Hiltner notes:

"What Luther and Heidegger each envisioned was a deconstruction which could reclaim Christianity's original revolutionary spirit from the Greek philosophical thinking co-opting it. The irony here is that the Greek tradition threatening Christianity was, in part, the very tradition that these thinkers argued Christianity itself was designed to deconstruct. As the young Heidegger progressively put it in lecture notes that have recently come to light, "the great revolution [of Christianity] against ancient science, against Aristotle above all," not only failed, but turned on itself as he became "the Philosopher of official Christianity—in such a manner that the inner experiences and new attitude of [Christian] life were pressed into the forms of expression in ancient science."<sup>578</sup>

In 1929, Heidegger had written to Viktor Schworer with regard to appointments at the university:

"Either we restore genuine forces with educators emanating from the native soil to our German spiritual life, or we abandon it definitively to the growing Jewification."<sup>579</sup>

According to historian Yvonne Sherrat: "The term Heidegger used was *Verjudung*, an anti-Semitic term used in *Mein Kampf*." Emmanuel Faye also confirms this in his book:

"As for the word *Verjudung*, it is the most egregious example of anti-Semitism. It shadows precisely the discourse of Hitler, who, in the first part of *Mein Kampf*, speaks of the 'Jewified universities' (*verjudeten Universitäten*)."<sup>580</sup>

Adam Kirsch, the director of the MA program in Jewish Studies at Columbia University, once wrote on the connection between Heidegger's Nazi beliefs and his own philosophy:

---

<sup>577</sup> St. Bernard, *On Consideration*, 5.32

<sup>578</sup> Hiltner 2003: 78, quoted by Vishwa Adluri, *Heidegger, Luther, and Aristotle*

<sup>579</sup> Heidegger, *The Introduction of Nazism Into Philosophy in Light of the Unpublished Seminars of 1933 – 1935* translated by Michael B. Smith, pg. 34

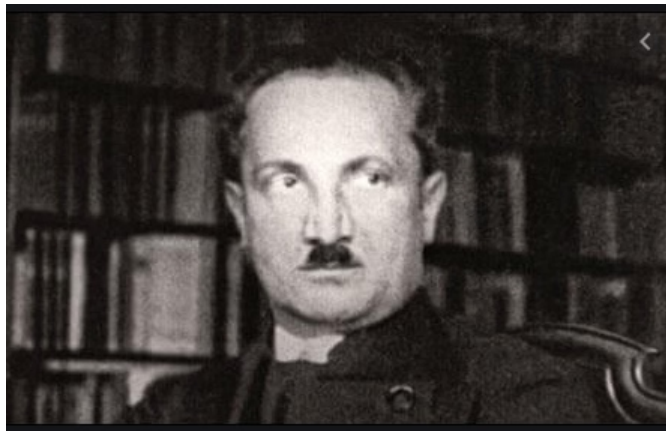
<sup>580</sup> Emmanuel Faye, *Heidegger, the Introduction of Nazism Into Philosophy*, p. 34

“The question of the role of World Jewry is not racial; it is, rather, the metaphysical question of the nature of a type of humanity, the absolutely unbound, that can assume the world-historical ‘task’ of uprooting all beings from Being,’ runs one of Heidegger’s dozen or so remarks about Jews. But this is hardly exculpatory. On the contrary, it is especially damning because it brings anti-Semitism into the central precincts of his thought. For Heidegger, the ‘uprooting of beings from Being’ was the metaphysical curse of the modern world, the source of the nihilism that afflicted humanity.”<sup>581</sup>

Joshua Rothman of the *New Yorker* writes that notes of Heidegger show that, even as Heidegger held the most banal and ignorant anti-Semitic beliefs (he wrote about a worldwide conspiracy of “calculating” Jews “unfurl[ing] its influence”), he also tried to formulate a special, philosophical, and even Heideggerian kind of anti-Semitism. (Jews, he writes, are “uprooted from Being-in-the World”—that is, incapable of authentically caring and knowing.)

According to Thomas Assheuer, writing in *Die Zeit*, “The Jew-hatred in ‘Black Notebooks’ is no afterthought; it forms the foundation of the philosophical diagnosis.” In other words, these newly published writings show that, for Heidegger, anti-Semitism was more than just a personal prejudice. In the *Guardian*, Philip Oltermann offers some choice passages:

“World Judaism,” Heidegger writes in the notebooks, “is ungraspable everywhere and doesn’t need to get involved in military action while continuing to unfurl its influence, whereas we are left to sacrifice the best blood of the best of our people.”<sup>582</sup>



---

<sup>581</sup> *Heidegger Was Really a Real Nazi* “Is the philosopher’s complexity enough to excuse his overt anti-Semitism? A dive into the so-called ‘black notebooks’ from the 1930s is revealing.” BY ADAM KIRSCH SEPTEMBER 25, 2016

<sup>582</sup> *Through the Dark Field: The Incarnation through an Aesthetics of Vulnerability* By Susie Paulik Babka, pg. 30

Photographs, impossible to unsee, show him wearing a Hitler moustache; that year, Heidegger told his students, “Let not theories and ‘ideas’ be the rules of your being. The Führer himself and he alone is German reality and its law, today and for the future.” In 1935, he spoke about “the inner truth and greatness” of National Socialism.

In ways large and small, he happily furthered the Nazi program—he applied the regime’s “cleansing” laws to the student body, for example, denying financial aid to “non-Aryan” students.

Heidegger never truly apologized for being a Nazi; even worse, he never directly and publicly addressed the reality of the Holocaust before he died, in 1976. (Thomas Sheehan’s essay “Heidegger and the Nazis” is an excellent, and dispiriting, overview of the philosopher’s Nazi years.)

Michael Wyschogrod (Professor of Religious Studies at the University of Houston) wrote in 1982:

“Not once did he utter a word of sorrow for what Germany had done to its victims. Instead, he tried to portray himself as an anti-Nazi who had joined the party only to protect the University of Freiburg. Even if this is true—personally, I do not believe it—the absence of a public condemnation of Nazi crimes makes Heidegger, in my view, a moral accomplice of those crimes. Once he had made his choice, Heidegger did not want to join what he considered the post-war cowards who reneged on their original loyalty. He was not going to besmirch a holy cause of his life. In that way, he remains fixed in history as a Nazi.”<sup>583</sup>

Emmanuel Faye did a very in depth study on Heidegger and concluded:

“We now know that the attempt at self-justification of 1945 is nothing but a string of falsehoods. Heidegger claims that from 1934 on he no longer had a hand in the affairs of the university. In fact, at the request of Secretary of State Wilhelm Struckart, a high dignitary of the party close to Hitler and Himmler and the first president of the German Association for Racial Hygiene, he agreed to participate in the constitution of a new school of professors of the Reich.”<sup>584</sup>

## CONCLUSION

In the First World War one will find Protestantism, Islam and Darwinism to be the ideologies of great influence, for the Germans were Protestants and Darwinists, and while it is true that the Austrians were traditionally Catholic, atheism and Darwinism had greatly corrupted their society. Moreover, Islam was very much involved in the Great War, since the Ottomans were a great ally to the Germans, but even with them there was a mixed ideology of both Sufism and Social-Darwinism, with the Ottomans seeing themselves as a superior people.

---

<sup>583</sup> Sh'ma - Volume 12, Issue 225 - Volume 14, Issue 264 - Page 84

<sup>584</sup> Heidegger, the Introduction of Nazism Into Philosophy in Light of the Unpublished Seminars of 1933 – 1935 translated by Michael B. Smith, pg. 83

The Young Turks utilized a mixture of Islam and Darwinian ideology to justify their genocide upon Greek, Assyrian and Armenian Christians.

In the Second World War, there was still this joining between Darwinism, Protestantism and Islam, with the Germans, fanatically upholding Luther and eugenics, and conspiring to butcher Catholics, Orthodox Christians and Jews, with Muslim auxiliaries. The Second World War was really a continuation of the First. Hence, in 1924, Thomas Mann wrote of “the Great War, in the beginning of which so much began that has scarcely yet left off beginning.” And while our own times are referred to as a “post-Cold War” era, the reality is, in the words of Sean M. Lynn-Jones, “in many ways our age is better defined as the post-World War I” epoch. Therefore, if we are really living in the aftermath of the First World War, and since history is repeating itself, then we should look to the First World to have an idea as to what state the world will soon be in.

In that era leading to the First World War, that is, the nineteenth century, Social Darwinism had become extremely influential and popular. It is not as though Darwin’s theory just suddenly appeared and then took time to be grasped by the people. Darwin was merely feeding bread to ducks whose mouths were already open. On the very day it came out, on November of 1859, all of the 1,250 copies of his first book on evolution, *On The Origin of Species*, sold out. His publisher, John Murray, at that point was already about to publish three thousand copies of the second edition. “We shall soon be a good body of working men,” wrote Darwin to his colleague, Joseph Hooker, “& shall have, I am convinced, all young & rising naturalists on our side.”<sup>585</sup> Indeed, these naturalists would eventually set the stage for a Darwinist society, wherein war, destruction and Darwinian struggle would be the new creed. If Protestantism paved the road towards a society vacuous of the Catholic Faith, Darwinism would now build on this, making not only a secular Europe, but one that made war on humanity itself. If Protestantism abolished free will for slavery under our sin nature, Darwinism as well abolished free will, but this time under “natural selection,” in which there is not the Creator of Order, but an embracing of utter chaos.

Luther saw his doctrine of rejecting free will as worthy of bringing the world to ruins for, and the Darwinists — or the “young & rising naturalists” — of the 19th and 20th centuries, saw Darwinism as worthy of bringing utter destruction and disarray to the earth for. If Luther said, “No sin will separate us from the Lamb, even though we commit fornication and murder a thousand times a day”, then the violent idealists of the twentieth century would see violence and carnage as a means to their own ascendancy and redemption.

An authority of this worship of chaos was Friedrich Nietzsche, who, in the words of Fromkin, was the “prophet of the age” in the twentieth century, in which it was “widely believed that only destruction could bring regeneration.”<sup>586</sup> The favoring of the destruction and annihilation of human life, based on the ideology of Darwinism, was taught and promulgated by Nietzsche. In 1880, Nietzsche wrote:

“The tendency must be towards the rendering extinct of the wretched, the deformed, the degenerate.”

---

<sup>585</sup> See Stott, *Darwin’s Ghosts*, ch. 1, p. 4

<sup>586</sup> Fromkin, *Europe’s Last Summer*, ch. 5, p. 39



The right to reproduce, said Nietzsche, must be neutralized, so that “race as a whole [no longer] suffers.” He also wrote:

“The extinction of many types of people is just as desirable as any form of reproduction.”<sup>587</sup>

The manifestation of this dream of redemptive chaos was the French Revolution, and it led other revolutions that did not fulfill the utopian visions of the fantasizers. This led to a mass popularity of the religion of destruction and the hatred for order. But, one cannot simply point to Nietzsche as though he was the originator of this way of thinking. Ideological and religious rebellions do not appear randomly on their own, they can only thrive in environments that have the right conditions for them to grow and spread. Think of heresy as bacteria. If the temperature is too cold, bacteria has difficulty thriving; but if you have a warm climate, moisture and some sustenance for the microorganisms, then bacteria will thrive. The same goes for heresy. Nietzsche did not gain popularity out of nowhere. He was a product of his time. The society in which he lived was already godless enough to accept whatever evils he taught. As Fromkin notes: “Hysteria and frenzy seemed to be the order of the day.”<sup>588</sup>

At the beginning of the twentieth century, there was a glorification of violence and chaos, and there arose a belief that violence was natural in the cause of one’s race, nation and class. Nationalism and the eugenicist belief in racial domination, were intertwined as principles innate to each other. Franz Conrad von Hotzendorf, chief of staff for the Austro-Hungarian armed forces, said that war was “the basic principle behind all events on this earth.”

In 1897, Theodore Roosevelt, who was a eugenicist and avid Nietzsche reader<sup>589</sup> reflected his Nietzschean and Darwinist beliefs when he said:

“All the great masterful races have been fighting races; and the minute that a race loses the hard fighting virtues, then... it has lost its proud right to stand as the equal of the best.”

Roosevelt’s speech was reprinted in full and distributed throughout the United States, and its collective approval indicated the desire for war and chaos in the American populace. <sup>590</sup> As A.J.P. Taylor writes of that era:

*“Men wanted violence for its own sake; they welcomed war as a relief from materialism. European civilization was, in fact, breaking down even before war destroyed it.”*<sup>591</sup>

---

<sup>587</sup> Quoted by Goldberg, Liberal Fascism, ch. 7, pp. 266-247

<sup>588</sup> Fromkin, Europe’s Last Summer, ch. 5, p. 40

<sup>589</sup> See Goldberg, Liberal Fascism, ch. 3, p. 94

<sup>590</sup> Fromkin, Europe’s Last Summer, ch. 6, p. 41

<sup>591</sup> See Fromkin, Europe’s Last Summer, ch. 6, p. 40

The degeneracy of this society was a result of centuries of anti-Catholicism, and the embracing of a god who dies. What do we mean by this? There is a continuity within German thought, from Luther, to Hegel, to Nietzsche, for all three believed in a god that dies. Luther taught an incipient form of this doctrine, Hegel elaborated on it, and Nietzsche simply declared that “God is dead.” Luther taught, contrary to Catholic doctrine, that the divinity of Christ died. In his 1540 *Disputation on the Divinity and Humanity and Christ*, Luther wrote:

“When therefore it is said that *“the divinity died,”* then it is implied that the Father too and the Holy Spirit have died. But this is not true, for only one person of *the divinity, the Son, is born, dies,* and suffers, etc. Therefore *the divine nature, when it is take for a person, was born, suffered, died, etc., and this is true.”*<sup>592</sup>

According to Lutheran scholar, Steven D. Paulson, Luther actually referred to Christ as a “pants-shitter God,” and that this actually inspired the Lutheran hymn writer, Johan von Rist to compose a hymn in 1628, entitled “O darkest woe,” in which it was said:

“O great dread  
God himself is dead!  
He died upon the cross...”<sup>593</sup>

Hegel elaborated on this theology, and he concluded that because God — the Truth and the Absolute — died, albeit temporarily, it showed that truth unto itself is not absolute, and that subjectivism was made manifest in the death of the divinity. “God has died,” wrote Hegel, “God is dead — this is the most frightful of all thoughts that everything eternal and true is not, that negation itself is found in God. The deepest anguish, the feeling of complete irretrievability, the annulling of everything that is elevated, are bound up with this thought.”<sup>594</sup>

For Hegel, Christ is merely a representation of the unity between the human self and God. The death of this representation, says Hegel, “is the painful feeling of the unhappy consciousness that God himself has died.”<sup>595</sup>

Luther declared that the Divinity had died, and so successive generations declared the death of God, and from such posterity, did the world behold the rise of German — with souls possessed by chaos — making war upon God Himself, wishing to make their fantasy, a reality. This was witnessed in the First World War, and especially in the Second World War.

A connection between Protestantism and the First World War was made by Alfred Rosenberg, the head ideologue for the National Socialists. Luther was praised by Rosenberg

---

<sup>592</sup> Luther, *Disputation on the Divinity and Humanity and Christ*, trans. Christopher B. Brown

<sup>593</sup> See Paulson, *Lutheran Theology*, p. 100

<sup>594</sup> Quoted by Paulson, *Lutheran Theology*, p. 100

<sup>595</sup> See Paolo Diego Bubbio, *Hegel: Death of God and Recognition of the Self*

as the one who commenced the battle between German and the Catholic world. He wrote that the Germans, for a long time, were fighting like slaves for Rome, and not for the Teutonic race. It was not until Luther, Rosenberg writes, that the Germans began to finally defy the Catholic powers with their mixed — and not pure — races. In his own words:

“Seen in its broad outlines, the history of Europe is the history of the struggle between this new human type and the forces of Roman racial chaos, which, numbering in the millions, stretched from the Danube to the Rhine. This dark tide carried some glittering values on its surface and catered to some nerve tingling lusts; its waves spoke of a past of once mighty world dominion and of a religion which answered all questions. A considerable number of the Nordics succumbed to the seductive enticements with careless, even childlike, abandon. Thus they became themselves the servants of a kind of dream of ancient Roman grandeur. Too often they fought throughout the world in the cause of a fantasy, and so became, instead of the progenitors they had been, merely the inheritors. Until Martin Luther appeared on the scene, such was the form taken by the struggle between the Teuton and the forces of racial chaos. ...Today, those supporters of national rights who yet preach the ideal of a united mankind and laud a single, organised, visible, ecumenical church which is to determine and embrace all public life, all science, all art, all ethics, on the basis of a single dogma, display the end result of those ideas, born of racial chaos, which have poisoned our true nature through the centuries. This is exemplified by the kind of commentator who says: What Austria is striving for, the whole world must attain on a vaster scale. This is racial pollution and spiritual murder elevated to a world political program. Emperor and pope once fought for this universalist and antinational idea; opposed to it were the German kings. *Martin Luther created a national political idea as against the papal world monarchy.*”

Rosenberg affirmed that the new leader of Germany must be a mix of both Martin Luther — the one who rebelled against the Catholic Church — and Helmuth von Moltke the Younger, the mastermind behind pushing Germany to make war against France and Russia.<sup>596</sup> Rosenberg wrote:

“It is beyond question that it is the Moltke type, during the first period of a future Germany, which will form our league of men—let us call it the German Order. This group must step strongly into the foreground in order to save us in the present chaotic confusion. *There is also a need for preachers with Lutherlike natures who hypnotise,* and for writers who consciously demagnetise hearts. *The Lutherlike leader in the coming Reich must, however, be clear about the fact that he must unconditionally abandon the system of Bismarck after victory. He must transfer the principles of Moltke to politics if he wishes not only to realise himself, but, also, beyond his death, to create a permanent Reich sworn to a highest value.* Whatever

---

<sup>596</sup> See Fromkin, Europe’s Last Summer, ch. 49, p. 287

shape things may take, whether eruptive, or powers creative of form, both must only be of the essence of the Nordic soul.”<sup>597</sup>

The linking between Moltke and the Third Reich sheds light on the conclusion that many hold: that the First and Second World Wars were actually just one single conflict, with a mere armistice taking place between the two parts of the one event. When one studies the times prior to the eruption of the First World War, one will find that it was not too different from our own times. In the times of the 1890s and 1900s, there was a tremendous amount of globalization, conferences on “disarmament,” international congresses, and talks about forming a league of nations. It really was just like now, human nature does not change, the ways of evil do not alter, the only thing that changes is our perspective on the rise of evil; to the masses, past tyrannies have fallen and will not rise up, but to the prudent, as long as evil exists, despotisms will always return.

The First World War, with its horrors and devastations, its innumerable loss of life, and all of the sinister philosophies and heresies that possessed the souls of those involved, was like a dark cloud that flooded the whole earth, becoming to a great degree the most destructive war that humanity had ever experienced. It was fought between the Triple Entente — that is, Great Britain, France and Russia — and the Triple Alliance — Germany and Austria-Hungary. The two alliances clashed, and an ocean of blood filled the earth. Twenty million soldiers perished on the fields of battle, another twenty-one million were wounded, and tens of millions more died of disease. On August 8th, 1914, just four days after Great Britain entered the war, the London publication, *the Economist*, called the war “perhaps the greatest tragedy of human history.”

The American historian and diplomat, George Kennan, described the war as “the grand seminal catastrophe of this century.” Fritz Stern, one of the leading intellectuals on German affairs and on the rise of the German volkisch movement, referred to the First World War as “the first calamity of the twentieth century, the Great War, from which all other calamities sprang.”

The destruction that the First World War caused went beyond the physical, its consequences were also spiritual. For after the war there was, in the words of Fromkin, “a wide-ranging freedom from restraint,” with deviancy, infidelity and anti-Christianity increased more so than what it was before.

The biggest misconception about the First World War is that it commenced because a Bosnian Serb named Gavrilo Princip murdered the Archduke Franz Ferdinand of Austria, and his wife, Sophie. The idea that that all of this violence, with tens of millions losing their lives in the most bloody and chaotic battlefields, all because of this one incident, is an unrealistic affirmation. Behind the outside outcry over the assassination, was years of German ideological animosity towards its neighbors; calculative plans to invade France and Russia, and Darwinian apocalyptic ideas of war between Teutons and Slavs. The murder of the Archduke and his wife did not cause the war, it provided the justification for a most wanted war on the part of the Germans.

I believe that this thirst for world domination, militarism and despotism, still lives on in Germany, only waiting for that very justification to occur, so that it can reawaken once again.

---

<sup>597</sup> Rosenberg, *The Myth of the Twentieth Century*

Germany now is peaceful, but this is only a result of restraint and deception. This German *maruna* (to use the Arabic term for Islamic deception) was reflected by the words of Gustav Stresemann, who served as German Chancellor in 1923:

“It is the tragedy of our policy, that the Prussian and German army no longer exists. The policy of might (machtpolitik) will in the end always be the decisive factor. But while we have no might, we have to fight with the idea. We have a right for a powerful in Germany.”<sup>598</sup>

This was said in the 1920s, after the First World War, when Germany was brought to submission. If the Germans were, at that time, using deception as a distraction to make time for a militarist plan, then what makes us believe that they are not doing the same today? The great World War will be caused, not by realists, but by fantasizers; with chimerical envisioning, they will drown the whole earth in blood to make their fantasy a reality. But the fantasies of the lovers of destruction never become reality, the only reality that is revealed is that all those who hate God, love death.

#### WHEN ANTICHRIST SAYS: “I AM GOD”

The most devastating blast came in the form Pope Pius IX’s monumental *Syllabus of Errors*, which he appended to his encyclical *Quanta Cura* (1864) condemned the principal errors of the modern world. Father Denis Fahey referred to this showdown as “Pius IX vs. the Pantheistic Deification of Man.”<sup>599</sup>

Pope Pius IX regarded liberal Catholics who infiltrated as the “worst enemies of the Church.” In a letter to the French deputation headed by the Bishop of Nevers on June 18, 1871, Pius IX declared: “That which I fear is not the Commune of Paris—no—that which I fear is Liberal Catholicism ... I have said so more than forty times, and I repeat it to you now, through the love that I bear you. The real scourge of France is Liberal Catholicism, which endeavors to unite two principles as repugnant to each other as re and water.”<sup>600</sup> Pope Saint Pius X would condemn as “the synthesis of all heresies.” Father Vincent Miceli described Modernism’s “trinity of parents”: “Its religious ancestor is the Protestant Reformation ... its philosophical parent is the Enlightenment ... its political pedigree comes from the French Revolution.”<sup>601</sup>

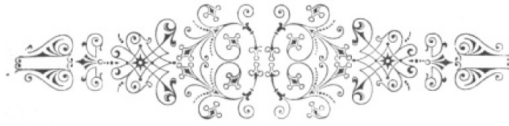
---

<sup>598</sup> Quoted by Weiner, Luther, p. 91

<sup>599</sup> Father Denis Fahey, *Mystical Body of Christ in the Modern World*, (Dublin, Ireland: Regina Publications, 1939) Chapter VII.

<sup>600</sup> In Father Michael Muller, *The Catholic Doctrine* (Benzinger, 1888), p. 282.

<sup>601</sup> Father Vincent Miceli, *The Antichrist*, (Harrison, New York: Roman Catholic Books, 1981) p. 133.



## MY PROTESTATIONS

“Those who have insight among the people will give understanding to the many; yet *they will fall by sword and by flame, by captivity and by plunder* for many days.”

When Martin Luther vigorously objected about Rome, at least his 95 lines of protestations made its way to one central headquarters, Rome, and in 1518 Luther got an audience in Augsburg Germany. To destroy the centrality of Christendom all Lucifer needed to do is detonate one theological bomb that caused thousands of shrapnels (denominations). Now that Luther used “divide and conquer” to which of the many splinters do I go to nail my objections to Luther’s mess?

There still exist what I read; volumes of worthless books, volumes of mad and insane worthless commentaries that steered the entire prophetic Bible leveling at Rome as fulfillment of being ‘harlot of Babylon’.

After exposing Luther to many of my friends, I still have some who claim the myth that they simply follow Scripture, not Luther. If such a claim is true, where did they obtain the idea to follow only two sacraments; *Baptism* and *Communion*; and to follow only two principles; *faith alone* and *scripture alone*?

Did they (as they claim) deduce these on their own by reading their Bible after they drifted ashore to an isolated island after a shipwreck with only a Bible at hand? Or did they inherit these traditions from the traditions of men like Luther?

We are not here to belabor what has been belabored ad nauseam by Luther, since all Christians agree that while Grace alone means that God loves, forgives, and saves us not because of who we are, or what we do, but because of the work of Christ, yet what we do or refuse to do, reflects and determines if we are wheat or if we are tare.

What we addressed here so far is a solution to the prophetic puzzle being simplicity and not the confusing and slanderous Protestant interpretations explained by their academics.

Today, expert archeologists spend their lifetime seeking to unearth treasures in the lands of the Bible, but when the biblical scrolls (one of the most valuable treasures) was discovered in the Qumran caves by the Dead Sea, it was not discovered by such ‘experts,’ but by a Muslim, a simple uneducated Ta’marite shepherd nearby our village in Bethlehem who pointed to the caves near the Dead Sea where archeologists found more, some in tact and others in countless fragments. They rummaged for years to put the entire chipped parchments, but such interest was not motivated to unlock its prophetic secrets, but sheer fascination with fame and with material treasures. Archeologists were more interested in discovery (even being the ardent critiques of the Bible) and not in the matters of the spirit.

In my view, Protestant reformers were no different. They were not interested in salvation as much as they claimed but were more interested in leveling at Rome the charge of harlotry.

In our detailed work perhaps you have explored another uneducated x-Muslim, a simple shepherd from Bethlehem journeyed reading its text in his attempts to unlock its complex

prophetic puzzle. But for one to be honest biblically, is to turn off the voices of the majority since truth is not determined by democratic vote, but by a narrow gate that goes against the tide.

As I swam from the Jordan River and crossed the Tiber I obtained the name Constantine. Why “Constantine” and why convert to become “Catholic”? As I said, if one searches the most slandered individuals in history, is where the wise finds a saint, and if one searches for who slandered them, is where you find the prominent tares like Luther. The tares’ duty is but to use the Bible to sap and murder the wheat, for slander is worse than murder. The tares’ duty is to create a stigma, so that as soon as names like “Constantine” “Pope Pius XII” “King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella” “Juan Cortez” “The Mother of God” “Our Lady of Guadalupe” come up, the stigma makes one hesitate to defend the honor and the contributions of such saints.

Such names refute the tares and is why today defending the Israel of God gains you the label ‘anti-Semite’.

Even criticizing Sodom today, your arm is instantly twisted, but denigrating Catholicism is still by far *the only accepted prejudice*.

The search for truth sure gains you ridicule. We can give an example from Christ Himself: “Jesus went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath he went as usual to the synagogue. He stood up to read the Scriptures and was handed the book of the prophet Isaiah. He unrolled the scroll and found the place where it is written, “The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he has chosen me to bring good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim liberty to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to set free the oppressed and announce that the time has come when the Lord will save his people. Jesus rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant, and sat down. All the people in the synagogue had their eyes fixed on him, as he said to them, “This passage of scripture has come true today, as you heard it being read.”<sup>602</sup>

When Christ first introduced Himself as Messiah to Israel, He was nearly killed at the instant He read Isaiah and announced His ministry. The first lesson about His message is that if you attempt lose your life for the sake of God and truth, you save it, and if you attempt to save your life by avoiding the truth, you shall lose it.

Now that this shepherd turned off most who read so far, perhaps to their peril can put his message aside and remain in darkness. This research is by no means for Protestant prophecy enthusiasts, but in fact refutes their apocalyptic theology as part of the very system they claim to expose: the spirit of Antichrist. This is why we, in love, urge them to return to the true fold.

Hear my cry, a voice that is crying in the wilderness.

But even John “crying in the wilderness” unlike the divided denominational shrapnels caused by Luther’s rebellion, John and Jesus had the one unified body to object to, a single institution in Israel.

In addition, if God chose Martin Luther to correctly interpret and revolt against Rome, the grand rabbi of Israel, he too thought that he correctly interpreted God’s word and erroneously concluded that he should revolt against Rome. Had he correctly interpreted, the outcome for Israel would have reflected it. Rabbi Akiba failed to connect the dots about the Messiah. For Akiba (like Luther) he was incensed with Rome failing to see Christ’s ultimate

---

<sup>602</sup> Luke 4:16-21

plan of converting Rome ended Israel with its peril during the Jewish-Roman revolt when the holocaust and diaspora of Israel ensued.

I believe that the errors of Israel and their honing on Jerusalem will repeat in the fallen church and in fact Zechariah makes this case clear. I came to the conclusion that academics and ‘expert’ theologians are not the answer to deciphering the prophetic puzzle. Even Paul who was educated by one of the greatest righteous rabbis, (Rabbi Gamaliel, one of the premier teachers of the Law in the first century) Paul did not connect the dots through scholarship but by a miracle when he met Christ on the road to Emmaus.

Similarly today, the folly of the bulk majority of Protestant commentaries applies prophecy to history as have been fulfilled. This, not only misleads, but is intended to avoid the obvious answer: prophecy was not strictly addressing the sins of Rome, but the sins of rebels like Luther. To the Protestant reformers, prophecy, with its curses must all aim at Rome. To do this, they even deflected all the prophecies that focused on Jerusalem and the sins of Israel to apply these to Rome. The correct approach (as we have seen from scripture itself) is to apply prophecy for “all times” yet “the end” is what God had in mind.

Why did the tares shelve all these prophecies into fulfilled events in history?

Answer: Rome. Rome needed to be this ‘harlot’ and this drove all their faulty interpretations. It was such hatred of Rome that made me re-think Protestantism.

It is a myth to think that all what Protestant reformers were interested in was Scripture alone. The Scripture was simply used as a steering wheel and a weapon to slander and to kill.

But how is the Evangelical Christian able to decipher all this? Evangelicalism was born from Lutheranism, which was also born adhering to “faith alone” and “scripture alone” from the German Martin Luther who kept only two of the sacraments— Baptism and Communion—where the latter diminished into an infinitesimal observance.

When I was Muslim, I attended a Lutheran school during my childhood in Bethlehem’s Shepherd’s Fields to later on have prophecy convert my heart. But to a certain degree my research was incomplete regardless that I was born and lived in Bethlehem, spent time in all sorts of churches and mosques, yet I knew Him not. It took me decades to realize that we can never fully comprehend prophecy unless we lay aside all of our fears, our inherited religious prejudices and preconceived ideas and to carefully examine the scriptures and let the chips fall where they fall, even if the scriptures pointed to myself as an acolyte of Antichrist, I must confess that sin and move forward.

But having said this, let us by no means be naïve that we have all the answers when a prophecy is not easily deciphered.<sup>603</sup> And neither have we here re-argued what has been argued ad nauseam by sectarian divides. So far we attempted to be strict with what the text says and explain prophecies from several unturned stones. Instead of belaboring scholarly opinion we simply refuted much of their claims with Christ-like Jesus-style questions.<sup>604</sup>

---

<sup>603</sup> As the example in the most difficult remaining content of the 20<sup>th</sup> chapter of the Apocalypse where church fathers were divided over the issue of a millennial reign of Christ. We shall attempt to resolve the prophecy but this by no means is the accurate explanation.

<sup>604</sup> Jesus checkmate the Pharisees when He asked: “The baptism of John—where was it from? From heaven or from men?” And they reasoned among themselves, saying, “If we say, ‘From heaven,’ He will say to us, ‘Why then did you not believe him?’ “But if we say, ‘From men,’ we fear the multitude, for all count John as a prophet.” (Matthew 21:25-27) Therefore, we shall use this type of challenge throughout.



While certain divisions from tares are necessary, even at times eternally crucial, we shall not heed to a debating spirit that all such tares intend is to divide rather than unite.

But such divide has already begun when Luther revolted and even later Anglicanism, considers itself to be part of the One, Holy, Catholic, and Apostolic Church and as being both Catholic and Reformed. For some adherents, it represents a non-papal Catholicism, for others a Protestantism without a dominant figure such as a Luther, Knox, Calvin, or Wesley.

## WHY THIS VOLUME?

“Those who have insight among the people will give understanding to the many; yet they will fall by sword and by flame, by captivity and by plunder for many days.”  
(Daniel 11:33)

In the parable of the “Good Samaritan” we can replace the label “Samaritan” with either “Catholic” or “Protestant” makes no difference to the message Christ was conveying that God sees beyond the labels. If we are exposing the works of tares that proceed forth from the Protestant reformation is by no means that Catholics have no tares nor is it a condemnation of all who profess to be Protestant, Evangelical or Messianic Christians. This is strictly to reveal how their guides, so-called reformers and Bible commentaries misled them. And it is not that we are naïve about deception that stems from a Pope. Today’s Pope acts cowardly when he flirts with homosexual unions to later on retract after much pressure and prior he adores and defends Pachamama. Or are we naïve that when Pope John Paul II promotion of *inculturation* brought in Pagans at Assisi in 1986. Neither side should be also naïve that King Solomon and his sons misdoings were recorded in 1 Kings.

We each have a responsibility to properly evaluate. If we were like the masses that follow the high priest—no matter what he says—we would have yelled “crucify Him” for even Christ at His time was falsely considered a rebel. He too stood against the papacy of His day, yet did not reject their office and their authority and warned to do what they teach but not to do what they do.

There is this balance. It would not be surprising that when Enoch and Elijah show up, that the ‘Sanhedrin’ of their day would deny and denounce them, while only a remnant few obey them.

And while we deal with prophetic matters regarding Israel, it is by no means do we ignore the prophecies of Israel’s Diaspora or its rebirth out of the ashes of Auschwitz. Indeed, “blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written: “The Deliverer will come *out of Zion*, And He will *turn away ungodliness from Jacob*;” (Romans 11:25)

However, if millions of people believed that the earth is flat, and wrote books about why it is flat, does not make an iota of difference; all these books should be rendered as obsolete because the earth is round regardless that to them it appears flat.

The same goes for the centuries of books and commentaries written by Protestants claiming that Babylon the Great is Rome.

After reading the page cover or even the first chapters of this volume you might have considered it to be “plainly arrogant,” and “downright rude,” “a mockery of the Protestant Reformation and centuries worth of commentary on Bible prophecy.”

From your western perspective this volume is “arrogant,” yet from my eastern perspective it is *not*. It is only if you look at it from your western angst without considering that even Paul confronted Peter’s politeness to the party of circumcision and he did it “to his face”:

“But when Cephas came to Antioch, I opposed him *to his face*, because he stood *condemned*.” (Galatians 2:11)

And therefore and so far, I said “to your face” what your Protestant church fathers for centuries slandered “the Israel of God” calling her “harlot” and sold her birthright to the ones who crucified our Lord.

Then you might consider it to be corrections to your views on prophecy. It is—yet it is *not*. Unlike in Catholicism, and since you have no legitimate church fathers, there is no unified and singular Protestant body of doctrine, so a “Protestant view” can never be determined, for even the title ‘reformists’ stems from cultural traditions of men like Luther, Zwingli, Calvin, Wesley, Knox, Cranmer, Spurgeon.

But who are these men? Only a tare (or one acting like an imbecile) would conclude all this detailed prophecies with: “Yea, we doubt not to prove the kingdome of the Pope to be the kingdome and power of Antichrist.”<sup>605</sup>

But this was written by Knox.

Luther—the father of rebels—concluded what Hitler accomplished: “it is our own fault that we have not annihilated the Jews but placidly let them stay where they are in spite of all their murders, their curses, blasphemies, lies, violations, and that we even protect their schools, their dwellings, their persons and property.”<sup>606</sup>

Where in biblical prophecy does it state to annihilate the Jews or what Knox prophesied: “Yea, we doubt not to prove the kingdome of the Pope to be the kingdome and power of Antichrist?”

How accurate was Cranmer when he concluded: “As for the Pope, I refuse him as Christ’s enemy and Antichrist, with all his false doctrines”?<sup>607</sup>

What seasoned scholar would write an entire book entitled, *Antichrist and His Ten Kingdoms*, attributing such biblical prophecies to the pope concluding that “He [the Pope] is in an emphatical sense, the Man of Sin?”<sup>608</sup>

Loud mouth Spurgeon was no different. Today we would compare Spurgeon to loud mouth John Hagee. Spurgeon was said to be “prince of preachers”. This slanderer once said: “... Antichrist came forth in all its blasphemous glory. The Pope of Rome put on the triple crown, and called himself the Vicar of Christ; then came in the abomination of the worship

---

<sup>605</sup> John Knox, *The Works of John Knox*, Serial. (Bellingham, WA: Logos Research Systems, Inc., 2003), 4:470.

<sup>606</sup> W53, 525 abridged, in Weiner, Luther, p. 75

<sup>607</sup> *Christian History: Thomas Cranmer and the English Reformation.*, electronic ed. (Carol Stream IL: Christianity Today, 1995; Published in electronic form by Logos Research Systems, 1996).

<sup>608</sup> John Wesley, *Antichrist and His Ten Kingdoms* (Public Domain), 110.

of saints, angels, images, and pictures; then came the mass, and I know not what, of detestable error.”<sup>609</sup>

With all these twists of scripture, how can an American Baptist understand the “Abomination of Desolation” without having an altar and a sacrifice? The Protestant reformation focus was mainly concentrated on “faith alone” and “scripture alone”. Interpreters then differed and struggled to become salvation focused. And to simplify salvation, they actually generated the greatest numbers of divisions where the church became a Smorgasbord of thousands of sub denominations. Luther’s bomb resulted in debris that flung everywhere else where any interpretation of the text adhered to sectarian presuppositions, none of which focused on the issue at hand and the abomination of desolation had to be shelved into anything else but the obvious Communion.

Being so focused on only two sacraments, some veered to focus more on the issue of Baptism. So we had Adventism by William Miller in the United States and Anabaptism (delaying baptism until adulthood). Then we had Baptists (also opposing infant baptism). Then we had Calvinism or Zwinglianism (led by Bucer, Bullinger and Vermigli and notably Huldrych Zwingli) arguing that the true body of Christ is present only through faith divine providence and with similarities to Islam claimed that the predestination of man reveals a type of pantheism in which God (like Catharism) is author of both *good* and *evil*.

Calvinism and Pantheism redefine *Good* and *Evil* in a Calvinistic worldview where everything is as God wills it to be. Today we find such Calvinist apologists believes that evil is pre-destined.<sup>610</sup>

And then came Methodism (Armenians) based on the theological ideas of the Dutch Reformed theologian Jacobus Arminius (1560–1609) argued over Predestination, that it is not the predetermination of who will believe, but rather the predetermination of the believer's future inheritance.

Systematic theology then became the discipline that attempted to formulate an orderly, allegedly rational, and coherent account of the doctrines of the Christian faith, based on each *topic*; 1. select all the “verses” that speak to a topic. 2. Summarize the teaching of each verse. 3. Synthesize them into a coherent doctrinal statement.<sup>611</sup>

But such an approach has a tendency toward abstraction where we spend most of our research talking about only biblical theology by voiding the prophetic element, which is truly

---

<sup>609</sup> Charles H. Spurgeon, *Spurgeon’s Sermons: Volume 10*

<sup>610</sup> Calvinist apologist Matt Halsted states, “If libertarians were correct in that man has ‘free choice,’ then when man committed a gross evil against his neighbor, the evil committed would have been pointless. That is, if God had no control over what, where, or when evil took place, then it only naturally follows that the suffering produced from the evil was without purpose, and thus pointless. For example, if someone were robbed and beaten, and yet God had no say in the crime whatsoever (for it was a free, uninhibited action based upon the criminal’s free will), then the person robbed would not have only been unjustly treated, but the evil he endured would have had no point to it. It was just a spontaneous action from a criminal. God is sort of left helpless in the matter” which he notes: “I am indebted a great deal to James White [another Calvinist apologist] concerning this insight” (Quote From Matt Slick’s website CARM.com *God and Evil: A Philosophical Contradiction?* by Matt Halsted | Jul 24, 2010)

<sup>611</sup> D. A. Carson, “Systematic Theology and Biblical Theology,” in *New Dictionary of Biblical Theology*, (Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1988), 102.)

intermingled throughout the scriptures. The entire scriptures after all are wonderfully written and every chapter is prophetic.

Also what does the word 'systematic' mean? If it means orderliness, are not all these theological disciplines suppose to be orderly and inductive and coherent? And is the scripture so incoherent that we need such discipline? If so, are other approaches then incoherent just because we do not follow a manmade flowchart? And if systematic theology is the proper discipline, must we then come up with systematic prophecy by separating the theological aspects from the prophetic?

This is the type of academic absurdity that drove prophecy into lunacy where "rapture" drove all prophetic proclamations. So prophecy had to fit within a so-called seven-year tribulation, by following a manmade flawed flowchart neatly designed by some theological architect. The reader then needed not to worry about the hard details of certain prophecies since he is already 'snatched up to heaven' and shall feel no pain.

Such *topical flowcharts* then took the steering wheel and the Bible was taught based on certain *topics*. Instead of simplicity complexity arose where the sophist scholar makes prophecy ambiguous and as a result the interpretation becomes *subjective* where such topical flowcharts become the keys to the wide gate. Interpretations differed including flowcharts and as a result of much disagreement prophecies were always subject to sectarian, current political and cultural correctness.

Even in seminaries, students were trained to please their scholarly peer rather than express how to become Christ like. In the seminaries, prophecy was put into neatly sectioned flowcharts that usually refer to *popular* verses while ignoring *unpopular* ones.

If one examines the plethora of commentaries they will find one thing in common; most of such interpretations view prophecy as a historic narrative ignoring the multidimensional intent God had in His word where prophecy speaks to all times, precisely to the end of the age. Such were man's approaches thought to be sublime; yet converts the text to fit their current worldview. All this only led to the very wide gate that most will enter (which they claim to avoid).

When I joined the Baptists in 1993 the theological atmosphere that prevailed in the United States was that of a perpetual debating spirit over all issues of theology (from the days of Hendrik "Hank" Hanegraaff also known as the "*Bible Answer Man*". In these days they were daily debating between Calvinists and non-Calvinists, Catholics vs. Protestants, exposing everything and anything from the Masonic Lodge, Jehovah's Witnesses and Mormonism here we came to add and preached loudly "Jihad is coming to America" but that fell on deaf ears until September 11<sup>th</sup>, 2001 and I was instantly carried everywhere and all over the world.

Islam was rather new after its deathblow when the Ottoman Empire was finally dissolved where in my youth one could only find less than a handful pray at the local mosque and a decade later, by the time our youth movements from Jerusalem's Al-Aqsa Mosque grew under the grand mufti Ikrima Sabri, the crowds swelled to the point that one could not find an inch of space to spread his rug to pray on the temple mount, while in the United States, there were endless divisiveness and dividedness from within the 'bible carrying' Evangelical realm.

Even this spirit of debate today has pretty much dissipated and is virtually becoming extinct as we watched Protestant pilgrimages trickling into Messianic/Hebraic movements that primarily ended up taking one lion share, and even that divided within itself where a

portion swerved into attacking Paul's legitimacy and even the Holy Trinity. During then came in Pentecostalism and the charismatic movement, which places special emphasis on a direct personal experience of God through the baptism with the Holy Spirit.

But that too divided within itself giving birth to extreme movements such as "Brownsville Revival" led by the evil Michael Brown, a Messianic Jew (also known as the "Pensacola Outpouring") of the 1990s; a revival that divided evangelicals and became known for the exotic (more like demonic) behavior of its participants, including hysterical laughter, fainting (being "slain in the Spirit"), "spiritual drunkenness," shaking and animal noises. From America this demonic madness joined Catholic counterparts was then exported to the rest of the world muddying more waters when Pope John Paul II gave these a green light.<sup>612</sup>

Hannegraaff took the lead in exposing the divides and was considered a brilliant Protestant theologian who eventually (and thankfully) saw the truth and joined the Eastern Orthodox Church in 2017. Hannegraaff of CRI (Christian Research Institute) who was sympathetic to Catholics rightfully and continually exposed the works of the likes of Michael Brown of the Brownsville Revival as "unbiblical manifestations such as spasmodic jerking and being "slain in the spirit."<sup>613</sup>

And where are we today, three decades later from yesteryears?

Getting tired of all the hairsplitting argumentations, now the bulk majority began to form a modernistic approach, a make believe that is simple. These self-deceived themselves believing it patristic and primitive, clustered in what is known as non-denominationalism which became a denomination into itself. This new movement distanced itself from the confessionals became creedless accepting what they consider all "Christians" while rejecting only the apostolic succession approach. It combined into a single group; nondenominational churches collectively represented the major lion share; one-third, the largest Christian grouping in the United States. How this gathered momentum is simple: *marketing skill*.

---

<sup>612</sup> See "ADDRESS OF THE HOLY FATHER, POPE JOHN PAUL II TO LEADERS OF RENEWAL IN THE SPIRIT Saturday, 4 April 1998" <http://www.vatican.va> "The Catholic charismatic movement is one of the many fruits of the Second Vatican Council, which, like a new Pentecost, led to an extraordinary flourishing in the Church's life of groups and movements particularly sensitive to the action of the Spirit."

<sup>613</sup> CRI Statement on December Meetings Between Hank Hanegraaff and Brownsville Revival Leaders, June 10, 2009





By enlarging the opening to its wide gate; it mattered little if a member dismissed doctrine which became like a restaurant menu where one can order *ala carte*; Baptism becomes optional and Communion can be practiced any time with any elements (leavened or unleavened bread and even Oreos cookies in some house groups) with almost any meaning. Theological and denominational systems are now a matter of choice and taste. This ultimately moves toward a religion that has no behavior associated with it.

Christianity in America became pure *Americanism* to the core where everyone became a Frank Sinatra singing: "I did it my way". Each *individual* became his own little pope so long it draws millions of other little popes to a service where each made his or her own decrees. Faith *alone* has become faith *only* – 'my faith as I interpret it'. No one can judge because it's between the individual and God. There is nothing that must be done unless I am led to do it by the Lord through feelings or circumstances backed up by a verse out of context. The Holy Altar became a place for a pastoral salesman repeating his drumbeat why all must have absolute confidence in their booklet interpretation on salvation; it is faith plus nothing with the trajectory of the process resulting in a freedom of *self* rather than a freedom *from self*.

The results of all this, as we have today, is this melting pot consolidated in an Amazon style marketing scheme where the mega church are fed universally agreed upon baby formula consisted of purely eternal cyanide. These continually argue in meme style fragmented utterances. A typical argument by these would be that the Church Fathers aren't individually infallible or inspired: they can, and do, make mistakes. So how can we put weight in their interpretations?

If this is the case, why then put any weight in Calvin's, Luther's and Zwingli's interpretations whom these are truly their fathers? And if these have no church fathers, why should anyone put any weight in their interpretations?

So if this is the true church, the nondenominational church is the one, how can an "abomination of desolation" be committed in it? These have drums on the altar, not a sacrificial system.

Did Jesus and Daniel err? God forbid.

And it is not that we are simply dealing with the Arian crisis (as in several protestant Messianic circles) but deny, undermine, soften, or abandon almost every element of the Faith.

Pope Benedict XVI declared in his homily just before the papal conclave that elected him:

"How many winds of doctrine have we known in recent decades, how many ideological currents, how many ways of thinking.... [T]he thought of many Christians has often been tossed about by these waves—flung from one extreme to another: from Marxism to liberalism, even to libertinism; from collectivism to radical individualism; from atheism to a vague religious mysticism; from agnosticism to syncretism and so forth. Every day new sects spring up, and what St. Paul says about human deception and the trickery that strives to entice people into error (cf. Eph. 4:14) comes true. Today, having a clear faith based on the Creed of the Church is often labeled as fundamentalism. Whereas relativism, that is, letting oneself be "tossed here and there, carried about by every wind of doctrine", seems the only attitude that can cope with modern times. We are building a dictatorship of relativism that does not recognize anything as definitive and whose ultimate goal consists solely of one's own ego and desires.<sup>614</sup>

Even with the claim to follow "fundamentalism," as in following Scripture alone, what do these do when they follow contraception and contradict what God ordered to "be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth?" And if we are to only rely on Scripture alone, what do we do with this:

"Do *not extinguish the spirit*. Do *not despise prophecy*. Test all things and hold fast to that which is good." (1 Thes. 5:19- 21).

And what do we also do with this:

"It will come about after this that I will pour out My Spirit on all mankind; and your *sons* and *daughters* will *prophesy*, your *old men* will *dream dreams*, your young men will *see visions*." (Joel 2:28)

Must these "dreams" 1—be in the Scripture? Or must they 2—not contradict Scripture? And since no. 2 is the correct answer, what then do you do with a strict adherence to "scripture

---

<sup>614</sup> Homily at Votive Mass for Election of a Pope, April 18, 2005, [http://www.vatican.va/gpII/documents/homily-pro-eligendo-ponti ce\\_20050418\\_en.html](http://www.vatican.va/gpII/documents/homily-pro-eligendo-ponti ce_20050418_en.html)

alone?” Do we have in the Scriptures the prophecies of Agabus and the four maidens, daughters of Philip who prophesied in Acts 21:9?<sup>615</sup>

#### WHICH OF THE TWO SIMPLIFIED SALVATION?

Explaining salvation is simple which the Protestant complicated in the name of simplification. Grace alone saves and the obedience of the servant in following God's commandments is the evidence: baptism, making your faith public, to believe and to seal the gifts of the Holy Spirit as a sign of consecration and strength, by being fruitful and multiply and fill the earth (marriage), be part of God's corporate relationship, partake in His Body and Blood, confess your sins continually ...

While explaining salvation should be simple, which they complicated, explaining prophecy is complex enough which they simplified by their flowcharts that were missing a bulk of these prophecies. The oversimplifications ignored how the devil pursues the church and how these prophecies usually explain the duration of church history. While most Protestants rejected Preterism, which explains Daniel and Revelation as things that were all fulfilled in 70 A.D.,<sup>616</sup> anti-Preterism also filed Old Testament prophecies into fulfilled history when such prophecies clearly do not point to Rome. Yet when Protestants concentrated on Daniel and the Apocalypse (because they can abuse the allegoric) they all lead to Rome.

All prophecy was Rome focused so if a beast came up out of the sea (*Revelation 13:1*) be it a leopard or a red dragon it was somehow connected to papal Rome. Somehow the papacy becomes a world power, so when it says that the whole world wondered after the beast, it is papal Rome, and if it spoke blasphemies (*Revelation 13:5-6*; *Daniel 7:25*) it is the use of “vicar of Christ” as such blasphemy. And if he “sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God” (*2 Thessalonians 2:4*) it somehow involves papal Rome or a desecration of a Jewish Temple since Protestants have no altar of sacrifice for they do not only disbelieve in Transubstantiation, but combat it and condemn it as ‘evil’.

#### BUT ISN'T THE VATICAN CORRUPT?

This is always the main counter argument which is Luther's argument. But this foolish question is easily refuted by a question: is salvation dependent on the corruption that is within the institution? Despite Vatican's sins or Russian sins in abandoning their Tzar Nicolas heeding the deceptions of Lenin, does that matter? Even in the scripture, we do not find a single verse telling Israel to abandon David just because he too sinned? Where is the plethora of verses telling Israel to abandon Solomon for his plethora of sins or even Christ

---

<sup>615</sup> “Leaving the next day, we went on to Caesarea and stayed at the home of Philip the evangelist, who was one of the Seven. He had four unmarried daughters who prophesied.” (Acts 21:8-9)  
*Summa Theologica*, II-II, Q. 174, Art. 6, ad. 3

<sup>616</sup> The Jesuit Luis de Alcasar (1554–1613) wrote the first systematic preterist exposition of prophecy *Vestigatio arcani sensus in Apocalypsi* (published in 1614) during the Counter-Reformation against the Protestant historicist view which identified the Roman Catholic Church picked up by the English commentator Thomas Hayne claimed in 1645 that the prophecies of the Book of Daniel had all been fulfilled by the 1st century, and Joseph Hall expressed the same conclusion concerning Daniel's prophecies in 1650



who ordered to obey the institution but not to do what they do, yet He too exposed its corruptions?

God even chose David to unite with foreign elements and defeat Israel. He still chose Solomon to build a Temple despite that His temple was later on filled with abominations. Despite all these, He brought David and Solomon to repentance. The Protestant position, while it claims to represent the scripture, in reality was founded to defy it by introducing error.

The most famous example in Church history of an error being accepted as truth throughout most of the Catholic world is the Arian crisis, during which Saint Athanasius almost singlehandedly held onto the Catholic Faith whole and entire and successfully passed it on to future generations, while some ninety percent of the bishops had fallen into the error of Arianism, which denied the true divinity of Christ. St. Athanasius was even “excommunicated” for a time by Pope Liberius in 357 A.D.

Yet it was St. Athanasius who was shown to be in the right and is today proclaimed a Doctor of the Church and a canonized Saint, while Pope Liberius was the first Pope from 33 A.D. until 357 A.D., an age filled with martyr-popes, yet he was *not* to be canonized.

Today, we see the Church divided on a scale similar to that of the Arian crisis.<sup>617</sup> From Solomon’s sins and the sins of His father, history repeats and God will restore what Satan infected.

For confusion in interpreting scripture stems from when someone attributes to what is obvious as “not so obvious” and that what is clear, they say “is not obviously so clear”. The tare always assures you that you are seeing a mirage when you don’t and when you see a clear ocean they interpret is a mirage. Such is the devil’s tactic when he asked Eve saying: “You will not certainly die” when God said exactly the opposite, “you will certainly die”. Eve did not listen to God, instead she listened to the devil who asked: “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden’?”

This story is the first warning in Scripture on the devil’s tactic, that when someone doubts an obvious verse “does the verse really say that?” is when you ought to run for your soul no matter how popular that teaching is or the millions upon millions who follow it.

The Protestant argues “we are not saved by works,” but what Catholic or Orthodox teaches salvation by works? Protestants continually argue over grace vs. works; false doctrine vs. true doctrine; Bible vs. Tradition, but the question should be; who started the fight and who cast doubt when God clearly instructed to “work out your salvation with fear and trembling”. Should I listen to anyone who says “did God really say to work out your salvation with fear and trembling?”

Dare I ignore a verse and listen to all the hoopla on cheap grace, or how work is non-essential or that when Christ told the apostles “whatever sins you forgive it shall be forgiven” and “whatever sins you do not forgive it shall not be forgiven,” that I should not trust what it says, that I should not trust the Scriptures when it clearly stated that the apostles had such authority (to forgive sins) stemming directly from Christ (who is the sole forgiver of sins)? Did Christ not pass down to the ones He entrusted to run His church with certain authority as shepherds to guide the sheep?

And then to deal with these sins the Bible says to the disciples (as priests) to “confess your sins to one another.” Is this not what it says about “confession”? Should I listen to a

---

<sup>617</sup> False Friends of Fatima, xiv

slick theologian just because the world made him popular saying “did God really say to the disciples as priests to confess their sins to one another?” That while confession is done directly to Christ but that confessing sins to someone who might scold you and then advise you on how to get rid of it should be deemed inappropriate just because we also must confess directly to Christ?

Sure, the Bible is not at times easily understood, that at times we need keys to unlock it. Faith is defined in scripture and as was taught by the early church is not simply “belief,” but that man freely cooperates in working out his salvation with fear and trembling, just as the Scripture says. But God forbid, such working out is not to be seen as the definition of salvation, we should all agree on this point. Man’s free cooperation is itself the result of grace through the Holy Spirit whom guides us unto faith and all good works, that saving faith is “faith formed by charity” since it is our actions that proves faith.

Perhaps it is shocking to my Protestant brethren that what I had just said did not stem from the reformers, but from all the centuries prior to the reformers and was believed by Catholic and Orthodox.

Yet at times we squabble over one verse that man is “not saved by faith alone” and if we search the scriptures to conclude that “faith” is not simply “belief,” that faith is defined by “belief” accompanied by “action” as if one loves a woman, he must also ask for her hand in marriage. So when the Bible says that “faith without works is dead” is what it says. So faith without works is not true faith. And if James says: “show me your faith apart from your works, and I will show you my faith by my works” what it says is what it means. There is no need for a slick interpreter since Hebrews defined faith as such that Abraham did not isolate faith that is void of works. And if it says that “Abraham our father was justified by works when he offered up his son Isaac on the altar” then he was justified by works since his “faith was active along with his works, and faith was completed by his works” (James 2:22). And when Noah had faith he spent over a century doing works building an ark.

*Faith* therefore cannot be isolated and is defined by *action*.

And while the action itself ‘alone’ *does not save*, but that it emanated from that *faith which does* because of God’s Grace.

Why can’t things be just like the Bible says it is that simple?

Indeed they are. Why then do we write endless diatribes over the issue of salvation as if one side believes this and the other side denies it when it doesn’t? However, the centuries of suspicion and slander never stop but is rarely confessed and exposed by Protestants.

The hoopla started when Luther thought that “faith formed by charity” is not pure “faith alone” and all the fuss was over arguing over Luther’s Imputed righteousness vs. Catholic Imparted righteousness. Yet in Methodist theology, they adhere to Imparted righteousness that salvation is the gracious gift of God given at the moment of the new birth which enables a Christian disciple to strive for holiness and sanctification. If this all sounded good for the geese (the Protestant) it also was good for the gander (the Catholic) as it is for the Methodist who is Protestant.

What the Bible simplified, the Protestant complicated by use of complex jargon. John Wesley believed that “imparted righteousness” worked in tandem with “imputed righteousness”. *Imputed righteousness* is the righteousness of Jesus credited to the Christian, enabling the Christian to be justified; imparted righteousness which makes sense is what God does in Christ by the power of the Holy Spirit *after* justification, working in the

Christian to enable and empower the process of sanctification (and, in Wesleyan thought, Christian perfection).

But was Luther necessary since (so they claim) that the devil corrupted the Catholic Church, which added that “salvation is by works” and therefore we needed a reformation which only sprung up when Luther suddenly discovered that “salvation is by faith alone”?

Was it Martin Luther who added the word “alone” with the word “faith” in the same phrase? Such myth is busted since “faith alone” was used way before Martin Luther arrived to the scene by Origen,<sup>618</sup> Hilary,<sup>619</sup> Basil,<sup>620</sup> Ambrosiaster “sola fide justificati sunt dono Dei,”<sup>621</sup> “through faith alone they are justified by a gift of God” John Chrysostom<sup>622</sup> Cyril of Alexandria<sup>623</sup> Bernard and Theophylact<sup>624</sup> who clearly said that man “is justified by faith alone”.<sup>625</sup>

The difference was that these were Catholic (you heard it right) and they were pro-James while Luther was vehemently anti-James: “Only the papists accept James on account of the righteousness of works, but my opinion is that it is not the writing of an apostle. Someday I will use James to fire my stove.”<sup>626</sup>

It was Luther’s inability to understand James. Luther questioned James as if “did God really say that man is not justified by faith alone?” and by that accusation *alone* against James one should run for their soul. Not everything Luther said was biblically Kosher. The apparent contradiction is easily resolved when we conclude that faith is not defined to only mean “belief alone.” The true and positive fundamental principle of Protestantism was there all along prior to Luther that the gratuitousness of salvation (*sola gratia*) is a gift provided by God without merit, which originates outside of man by and through God’s grace. So the early church and way before Luther had salvation defined and throughout Church history in Catholic and Orthodox theology salvation has always been defined by *Grace Alone plus nothing*. Justification *imparts* the righteousness of Christ to man, transforming him by grace through the Holy Spirit into a child of God which is what was taught all along.

They were even more conservative than Luther in that as the Second Council of Orange (529) which declared that saving grace is itself the result of grace which we do nothing by our natural powers, we can neither think as we ought nor choose any good

---

<sup>618</sup> Origen, Commentarius in Ep. ad Romanos, cap. 3 (PG 14.952)

<sup>619</sup> Hilary, Commentarius in Matthaicum 8:6 (PL 9.961).

<sup>620</sup> Basil, Hom. de humilitate 20.3 (PG 31.529C).

<sup>621</sup> Ambrosiaster, In Ep. ad Romanos 3.24 (CSEL 81.1.119)

<sup>622</sup> John Chrysostom, Hom. in Ep. ad Titum 3.3 (PG 62.679 [not in Greek text]).

<sup>623</sup> Cyril of Alexandria, In Joannis Evangelium 10.15.7 (PG 74.368 [but alludes to Jas 2:19])

<sup>624</sup> In Canticum serm. 22.8 (PL 183.881)

<sup>625</sup> Expositio in ep. ad Galatas 3.12-13 (PG 124.988)

<sup>626</sup> Weimar, “Tischreden “ (5) p. 5854

pertaining to salvation. We can only do so by the illumination and impulse of the Holy Spirit. Yet this was established before Calvin was pre-destined to be born.

I am yet to find a single Christian regardless of being Protestant or Catholic who says that we work our way to heaven, that is if he is being true to Protestantism or to Catholicism. Everything positive I find that I love in Protestantism was already there pre-Luther, name it and I can find it even the hymnals.

I refuse to listen to all the hoopla, that if Jesus said, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God" that I should instead obey their question: did Jesus really say "water"?

Protestantism is the Cain mentality that questions the Word of God that when God wanted blood sacrifice, Cain should ask "does God really care if I offer grapes instead?" That when Christ drank wine and said, "This is my blood" I should listen to someone who says, "Did Christ really drink wine or did He drink grape juice?"

Are such questions even Jesus-style or are they voices coming from a devil in disguise?

Should I question when Jesus said that "If the world hates you, remember that it hated me," should this really mean the opposite, that the world should love me because I am diplomatic and truth is measured through a popularity contest?

Why is it that what seems to be so *obvious*, needs to become *not so obvious* and what is *not so obvious* needs to be questioned since it needs the approval of some seminary professor?

Why is it then that I find that every time I try to reform the reformation I myself travel back to pre-reformation to find the answers? A tare is easily identified when one expresses a truth the tare changes the subject by machine gunning bullets asking: but what about Mariology, Tradition, Intercession of Saints ...

It is easy to fire a bullet, but it takes a surgeon to take it out and fix the wound.

Christ called us to be surgeons not butchers. So why are most Protestant commentaries butchers, quick draws and slanderers?

For years I watched the debating environment. It was as if the church was a saloon during gold rush days and while one spits chewed tobacco, the other challenges a poor soul for a quick draw outside because he believes in the intercession of Saints.

Tell us then, that when the Bible says "to be absent of the body is to be present with the Lord" should I listen to the drunk next to me saying "did God really say that dead saints souls are present with the Lord?"

How about when Jesus warned us not to offend the "little ones," "See that you do not despise one of these little ones; for I tell you that in heaven their angels always see the face of my Father who is in heaven" (Matt. 18:10), that it means what it says, "their angels..." are the "little one's" angels assigned to watch over them.

So who are these "little ones"? Are we not to "become as little children," or else "ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven?" Little here is *Micros* in Greek, which is a clear distinction from "little child" (Greek: *paidion*) as for infant, child, *Micros* is simply a reference to the least esteemed in the flock, the repentant prostitute and the repentant tax collector.

Yet I am told that angels here are not angels but "messengers". And I ask, how do these "messengers" "see the face of my father?"

Is it so easy to explain away the heavens?

Why do protestants simplify what is complex and complicate what is simple?

So now after the culture of the Puritans that was passed down through generations, that when someone prays for protection by angels, must we condemn them as “anathema”? Must we have a connoption fit and burn them at the holy altar of reformation theology? Must we always believe that when one cries out “saints in heaven” that we only think of the dead while we forget the souls of living saints. So whenever someone cries out “angels” we think of only “fallen angels” and forget the good angels that have 1) guaranteed intercessory access to the Father on behalf of the children and helped protect (see Daniel 6:20-23; 2 Kings 6:13-17), 2) reveal information (see Acts 7:52-53; Luke 1:11-20), 3) guide (see Matthew 1:20-21; Acts 8:26), 4) provide for (see Genesis 21:17-20; 1 Kings 19:5-7), and 5) minister to believers in general (Hebrews 1:14).

Many were the times I was assured death to only within seconds be rescued. There was one bombing during my terroristic days in Bethlehem which I should have been dead and another incident in which I got off the wrong train stop. I had no chance having been chased by gangsters in the most dangerous abandoned parts of the south side of Chicago to only have a good Samaritan appear from nowhere with a vehicle asking me to jump in.

And lest I get called a heretic for simply reading simple biblical text, let me proclaim, Christ is the only God-man and the Mediator of the New Covenant, Jesus is the only mediator between man and God (1 Tim. 2:5). But this in no way means we cannot or should not ask our fellow Christians to intercede for us through prayer with us and for us (1 Tim. 2:1-4). But dare I say that we should ask the intercession of those who are “present with the Lord” in heaven, who are “absent from the body” and have already had their sanctification completed, for “[t]he prayer of a righteous man has great power in its effects” (James 5:16). Are we who are “working out our salvation with fear and trembling” more righteous than they?

The intercession of the Saints is probably the most that generates heated debates. But it is also the most proven theological case that as early as the church can be found all the way until the triune-tribune (Luther, Calvin and Zwingli) showed up. When one examines the volumes written about the subject during Church history, regardless of how much we try to cover and play with history, is the most solid case. And regardless of how prolific the debater against it is, he would have to out rightly denounce the Bible, history and church fathers in order to plan mere suspicion “did they really teach the Intercession of Saints?”

And from a biblical perspective, the saints are living not dead, for if they were dead then Christ is a liar when the New Testament clearly stated, not just in II Corinthians that “*to be absent of the body is to be present with the Lord*” (*II Corinthians 5:6-8*). But also in 1 Philippians 1:23 “... I desire to depart and be with Christ, which is better by far ...”

And when does one “depart and be with Christ?”

Yet scoffers tell me that the early Church Fathers lied and did not clearly recognize the biblical teaching that those in heaven can and do intercede for us. When scripture says “I desire to depart and be with Christ” in no way means that Christ is going to hang out with a dead carcass but a living spirit, perfected and refined.

The confusion stems of not making a difference that 1) prayers of intercessory solicitation are in scripture (1 Tim 1:2-4) and that 2) atonement intercession, which only belongs to Christ (1 Tim 2:5) is a separate matter altogether.

Most folks always object when one speaks of intercessory prayers quickly shoot a bullet-comment that “Christ is the *only* redeemer.” Indeed, but while 1 Tim 2:5 speaks of atonement, no one can deny that intercessory prayers of all Christians in flesh and in spirit

are scriptural, so that such argument that “Christ is the only redeemer” is misapplied, for all ask their pastor to do intercessory prayers on our behalf.

To say “no one comes to the Father but by me” does not mandate that others who are alive on earth or with Christ in heaven cannot solicit on your behalf and *appeal to Christ* whom only through Him are prayers answered.

Is your Calvinist pastor higher than Peter in heaven that he solicits God on your behalf and Peter cannot?

Then we have the centuries worth of scoffers abusing the word “alone” and dealing with it irresponsibly have always used the method of isolating verses and isolating theological concepts. For example, the Holy Spirit has not ‘built’ Jesus’ from Him *alone*, but also from humanity, from Mary, and we see Jesus praying in His humanity for the Church, indeed the man-God prayed in which He too did as we all should participate in the glory of the Father by the power of the Holy Spirit in the shape of the cross; both 1) horizontal relationship with the brethren, rooted as well 2) vertically with the Trinity and the heavenly Jerusalem from above.

It is so sad to see that the Book of Revelation is taught that it is all about taking the mark of the beast in a form of computer chip and whatever media channel dishes out of natural disasters and asteroids. What do we make of all the saints who “fell down before the Lamb . . . with golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints” they appear to have other saint’s prayers to be presented to God. So why are ‘dead saints’ presenting the prayers of other living saints to God?

Why can’t the Bible say what it says and mean exactly what it says, if saints in heaven “fell down before the lamb” “with golden bowls full of incense which are the prayers of the saints” then it must be saints who fell before the lamb with golden bowls full of incense which are the prayers of the saints and (in addition) God has no problems with incense. He must also love the smell of incense and He sure would not mind some being burnt in the Church while we pray. Has His nostrils changed from when He was listening to the Hebrews in the Temple from the time prior to God discovering that smoke caused cancer as proven to Him by surgeon general Zwingli?

*These must have heard* the initial prayers or were granted *knowledge* of them through the power of God. Revelation 8:3-4 is even more explicit. Rather than equate incense and prayers, it actually distinguishes between them, and presents the scenario that the prayers and incense are presented together:

“And another angel came and stood at the altar with a golden censer; and he was given much incense to mingle with the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar before the throne; and the smoke of the incense rose with the prayers of the saints from the hand of the angel before God.”

So what is this angel doing with “prayers of the saints” presenting them to God?

Are angels not involved as intercessors since they are extremely deaf and they do not rejoice when a sinner repents? Do they not have knowledge above our comprehension? God is “not the God of the dead, but the God of the living”:

“But concerning the dead, that they rise, have you not read in the book of Moses, in the burning bush passage, how God spoke to him, saying, “I am the God of Abraham,

the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living. You are therefore greatly mistaken." (Mark 12:26-27)

Either Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob are alive in the supernatural realm or they are dead and God is a liar.

Even the dead came out of their graves (Matthew 27:53) and appeared to many.

Even with our Lord during His transfiguration (Matthew 17:1-8) Moses and Elias — God's righteous men, were ALIVE! This is Christ's Victory.

And what is with all this "hall of faith" in Hebrews 11 which gives us wherein the lives of many Old Testament saints are mentioned being in heaven in which God encourages the persecuted for their faith (10:32-35), to consider that they are "surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses," encouraging them to "run the race" of faith set before them?

And why in Revelation 12:18, he encourages these New Covenant faithful by reminding them that their covenant—the New Covenant—is far superior to the Old:

"For you have not come to what may be touched, a blazing fire ... darkness ... gloom ... and the sound of a trumpet, and a voice whose words made the hearers entreat that no further messages be spoken to them...But you have come to... the city of the living God... and to innumerable angels... and to the assembly of the first-born who are enrolled in heaven... and to... God... and to the spirits of just men made perfect... and to Jesus..."

So I consume these wonderful verses with joy and excitement, all of the sudden I discover I am to be part of superior covenant in the "city of the living God" which I can participate while on earth with "innumerable angels" and an "assembly of the first-born" who already enrolled "in heaven" "spirits of just men" before me.

As Americans say "Wow".

Or must I post a comment on God.com with typical American arrogance state: "God, I have decided to unsubscribe from your newsletter. God, can you strike John's carcass with lightning for writing such a lousy article? The Bible teaches that only Jesus is our intercessor. Saints are only creatures, infinitely less than You, able to only be at one place at a time and can only do one thing at a time. I know that You said that eye has not seen and ear has not heard ... but please, once in while be logical. Good bye God"!

Is God a liar, or was it that God in the Old Covenant the faithful approached Him alone and with trepidation while in the New Covenant, the faithful have experienced a radical change "But you have come to ... and to ... and to ... and to".

So why can't I believe the Bible that if it says we can approach "Jesus" directly including "angels" and "spirits of just men made perfect" to be just what it says, to approach Jesus and the "spirits of just men made perfect?"

God forbid I make a phone call to these "saints in heaven?" I guess I should not out of Christian political correctness? Or should I ask: "did God really say that we can approach 'spirits of just men made perfect?'"

I am not done, in Romans, it says that the Holy Spirit also does intercessory requests for the saints:

"Likewise the Spirit also help our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself make intercession for us with groanings which cannot

be uttered. And he that search the hearts know what [is] the mind of the Spirit, because he make intercession for the saints according to [the will of] God.” – *Romans 8:26-27*

And why is it that most of the post-reformation puritan commentaries they question “is this what it says it is?”<sup>627</sup> yet everything pre-reformation says that what it says, is exactly what it says, the Holy Spirit does intercessory prayers on behalf of the saints.

I still ask, how can we apply such a strict form of Scripture alone when in Joel’s prophecy it says that: “And afterward, I will pour out my Spirit on all people. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your old men will dream dreams, your young men will see visions” in which we will reply to these “visions” and “prophecies” insisting that these “visions” are “not in my Bible”?

Was Joel only speaking of the end times when in the New Testament Peter quoted an end-times prophecy when the tongues of fire appeared and Peter stood up and declared that this is a type of fulfillment, “This is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel: ‘And it shall come to pass in the last days, says God, That I will pour out of My Spirit on all flesh; Your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, Your young men shall see visions, Your old men shall dream dreams. And on My menservants and on My maidservants I will pour out My Spirit in those days; And they shall prophesy ...’” (Acts 2:14-21)

Such types of fulfillments speak of specific visions (1 Samuel 1:13) and yet most ardently and fervently; or as not being able to express fully what they conceive in their minds, how great their burdens are, and their sense of their wants.

**Cyriacus:** This is excerpted from *Intercession of the Saints* by Deacon Morris Demetrious, a dual English-Arabic volume:

— Quote —Apparition of St Mary, to the 62nd Pope of Alexandria, Anba Abraam Abu Zaraa (departed the year 970 AD):

---

<sup>627</sup> *John Gill: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession, for us, with groanings which cannot be uttered; not the spirit of a man; or the gift of the Spirit in man; or a man endued with an extraordinary gift of the Spirit; but the Holy Ghost himself, who makes intercession for the saints: not in such sense as Christ does; for he intercedes not with the Father, but with them, with their spirits; not in heaven, but in their hearts; and not for sinners, but for saints: nor in the manner as Christ does, not by vocal prayer, as he when on earth; nor by being the medium, or way of access to God; nor by presenting the prayers of saints, and the blood and sacrifice of Christ to God, as Christ does in heaven; nor as the saints make intercession for one another, and for other persons: but he intercedes for them, by making them to intercede; he indites their prayers for them, not in a book, but in their hearts; he shows them their need, what their wants are; he stirs them up to prayer, he supplies them with arguments, puts words into their mouths, enlarges their hearts, gives strength of faith in prayer, and all the ardour and fervency of it; he enables them to come to God as their Father; and gives them liberty and boldness in his presence, which requires an heart sprinkled from an evil conscience, faith in the blood and righteousness of Christ, and a view of God, as a God of peace, grace, and mercy: and this intercession he makes, “with groanings which, cannot be uttered”; not that the Spirit of God groans, but he stirs up groans in the saints; which suppose a burden on them, and their sense of it: and these are said to be “unutterable”; saints, under his influence, praying silently, without a voice, as Moses and Hannah did, ( 1 Samuel 1:13 ) , and yet most ardently and fervently; or as not being able to express fully what they conceive in their minds, how great their burdens are, and their sense of their wants.*



St. Mary appeared to him when he was in great distress about the request of the Moslem ruler El-Khalifa El-Moez, to move the Mocatam Mountain from its place. El-Khalifa El-Moez was challenging him about the validity of the verse in the Bible, from Mathew 17:20, “Jesus said to them, if you have faith as a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, Move from here to there, and it will move; and nothing will be impossible you.” [sic] Otherwise the church would be under a great persecution.

The pope was given three days to move the mountain from its place. The pope, in his great distress, was praying and fasting with all the church bishops and monks. Then at the dawn of the third day St. Mary appeared to him at the church of the Moalaka. She told him that a righteous man, a tanner whose name is Simon, along with God, will complete this miracle. On the appointed day, the two groups met. The pope and his people with Simon from one side, and Khalifa El-Moez and his people on the other side. The Pope and his people bowed to God crying “Lord have mercy” and the mountain began to move. The Khalifa was astounded. On his horse, he approached the pope and thanked him respectfully. As a reward to the pope and the Christians, he helped build all the churches, which the pope asked to be built.

St. Mary appeared to the Moslem Khalifa Haron El-Rashid at his castle in Baghdad, to warn him about the continuing destruction of the churches in Egypt. She ordered him to send an order to his Moslem Governor in Egypt. The message was carried by an angel, in the form of a dove, to the Governor who immediately ordered that the persecution against the Christian Churches be stopped...

**Clement of Alexandria** “In this way is he [the true Christian] always pure for prayer. He also prays in the society of angels, as being already of angelic rank, and he is never out of their holy keeping; and though he pray alone, he has the choir of the saints standing with him [in prayer]” (*Miscellanies* 7:12 [A.D. 208]).

(13) “But not the high priest [Christ] alone prays for those who pray sincerely, but also the angels . . . as also the souls of the saints who have already fallen asleep” (*Prayer* 11 [A.D. 233]).

**Cyprian of Carthage** “Let us remember one another in concord and unanimity. Let us on both sides [of death] always pray for one another. Let us relieve burdens and afflictions by mutual love, that if one of us, by the swiftness of divine condescension, shall go hence first, our love may continue in the presence of the Lord, and our prayers for our brethren and sisters not cease in the presence of the Father’s mercy” (*Letters* 56[60]:5 [A.D. 253]).

**Methodius** “Hail to you for ever, Virgin Mother of God, our unceasing joy, for to you do I turn again. You are the beginning of our feast; you are its middle and end; the pearl of great price that belongs to the kingdom; the fat of every victim, the living altar of the Bread of Life [Jesus]. Hail, you treasure of the love of God. Hail, you fount of the Son’s love for man. . . . You gleamed, sweet gift-bestowing Mother, with the light of the sun; you gleamed with the insupportable fires of a most fervent charity, bringing forth in the end that which was conceived of you . . . making manifest the mystery hidden and unspeakable, the invisible Son of the Father—the Prince of Peace, who in a marvelous manner showed himself as less than all littleness” (*Oration on Simeon and Anna* 14 [A.D. 305]). “Therefore, we pray [ask] you, the most excellent among women, who glories in the confidence of your maternal honors, that you would unceasingly keep us in remembrance. O holy Mother of God, remember us, I say, who make our boast in you, and who in august hymns celebrate the memory, which will

ever live, and never fade away” (ibid.). “And you also, O honored and venerable Simeon, you earliest host of our holy religion, and teacher of the resurrection of the faithful, do be our patron and advocate with that Savior God, whom you were deemed worthy to receive into your arms. We, together with you, sing our praises to Christ, who has the power of life and death, saying, ‘You are the true Light, proceeding from the true Light; the true God, begotten of the true God’”

**Cyril of Jerusalem** “Then [during the Eucharistic prayer] we make mention also of those who have already fallen asleep: first, the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, and martyrs, that through their prayers and supplications God would receive our petition . . . ” (*Catechetical Lectures* 23:9 [A.D. 350]).

**Hilary of Poitiers** “To those who wish to stand [in God’s grace], neither the guardianship of saints nor the defenses of angels are wanting” (*Commentary on the Psalms* 124:5:6 [A.D. 365]).

**Ephraim the Syrian** “You victorious martyrs who endured torments gladly for the sake of the God and Savior, you who have boldness of speech toward the Lord himself, you saints, intercede for us who are timid and sinful men, full of sloth, that the grace of Christ may come upon us, and enlighten the hearts of all of us so that we may love him” (*Commentary on Mark* [A.D. 370]). “Remember me, you heirs of God, you brethren of Christ; supplicate the Savior earnestly for me, that I may be freed through Christ from him that fights against me day by day” (*The Fear at the End of Life* [A.D. 370]).

**The Liturgy of St. Basil** “By the command of your only-begotten Son we communicate with the memory of your saints . . . by whose prayers and supplications have mercy upon us all, and deliver us for the sake of your holy name” (*Liturgy of St. Basil* [A.D. 373])

**Pectorius** “Aschandius, my father, dearly beloved of my heart, with my sweet mother and my brethren, remember your Pectorius in the peace of the Fish [Christ]” (*Epitaph of Pectorius* [A.D. 375]).

**Gregory of Nazianz** “May you [Cyprian] look down from above propitiously upon us, and guide our word and life; and shepherd this sacred flock . . . gladden the Holy Trinity, before which you stand” (*Orations* 17[24] [A.D. 380]).

“Yes, I am well assured that [my father’s] intercession is of more avail now than was his instruction in former days, since he is closer to God, now that he has shaken off his bodily fetters, and freed his mind from the clay that obscured it, and holds conversation naked with the nakedness of the prime and purest mind . . . ” (ibid., 18:4).

**Gregory of Nyssa:** “you who are standing at the divine altar [in heaven] . . . bear us all in remembrance, petitioning for us the remission of sins, and the fruition of an everlasting kingdom” (*Sermon on Ephraim the Syrian* [A.D. 380]).

**John Chrysostom:** “He that wears the purple [i.e., a royal man] . . . stands begging of the saints to be his patrons with God, and he that wears a diadem begs the tentmaker [Paul] and the fisherman [Peter] as patrons, even though they be dead” (*Homilies on Second Corinthians* 26 [A.D. 392]). “When you perceive that God is chastening you, fly not to his enemies . . . but to his friends, the martyrs, the saints, and those who were pleasing to him, and who have great power [in God]” (*Orations* 8:6 [A.D. 396]).

**Ambrose of Milan:** “May Peter, who wept so efficaciously for himself, weep for us and turn towards us Christ’s benign countenance” (*The Six Days Work* 5:25:90 [A.D. 393]).

**Jerome:** “You say in your book that while we live we are able to pray for each other, but afterwards when we have died, the prayer of no person for another can be heard. . . . But if the apostles and martyrs while still in the body can pray for others, at a time when they ought still be solicitous about themselves, how much more will they do so after their crowns, victories, and triumphs?” (*Against Vigilantius* 6 [A.D. 406]).

**Augustine:** “A Christian people celebrates together in religious solemnity the memorials of the martyrs, both to encourage their being imitated and so that it can share in their merits and be aided by their prayers” (*Against Faustus the Manichean* [A.D. 400]). “There is an ecclesiastical discipline, as the faithful know, when the names of the martyrs are read aloud in that place at the altar of God, where prayer is not offered for them. Prayer, however, is offered for the dead who are remembered. For it is wrong to pray for a martyr, to whose prayers we ought ourselves be commended” (*Sermons* 159:1 [A.D. 411]).

“At the Lord’s table we do not commemorate martyrs in the same way that we do others who rest in peace so as to pray for them, but rather that they may pray for us that we may follow in their footsteps” (*Homilies on John* 84 [A.D. 416]).

“Neither are the souls of the pious dead separated from the Church which even now is the kingdom of Christ. Otherwise there would be no remembrance of them at the altar of God in the communication of the Body of Christ” (*The City of God* 20:9:2 [A.D. 419]).

#### SHORT BACKGROUND OF THE AUTHOR

I am but another simple shepherd from Bethlehem got my first Arabic Bible and hid my olive wooden small crucifix under my garment at fifth grade, journeyed reading its text, to one day, at 33 years of age lost a son. I was dismayed with Islam I prayed to God that I would dedicate the boy’s life to His will but only if He recovers the abducted infant Ahmad.

Amazingly, God fulfilled my prayer and Ahmad was recovered. I began to revisit the Bible on a long journey examining on my own its prophecies to find “Israel” and how God promised and prophecy predicted how God would re-plant the Jews back in their land and Christ said to “love your enemy”.

As a Palestinian, having witnessed the Six Day War and Yom Kippur War, terrorized the Jew, was imprisoned by him, the Jew was my enemy. I dropped all my hatred for the Jew and even renamed Ahmad to “Theodore.”

Driving the road looking for a church one Sunday, instead of veering right at an usher waving at me to join his Catholic church, I veered left to only join the Fair Oaks Baptist Church in Concord California. From there I also ventured heavily into the Messianic and have mingled with more secular and religious Jews than I could count, spoke at countless of their synagogues, wrote books and traveled the world, learning from cantors, reciting the beautiful *Shema’ Yesrael* and *Avenu Malkenu* (our Father our King). I became a known public figure that mingled with major Jewish and Evangelical magnets speaking at major universities throughout the land, countless churches and synagogues, Fox News, endured the bitter herb of slander by CNN. Had I been the mad man slanderers painted, I would not have been marked by the O.I.C<sup>628</sup> (Organization of Islamic Conference) headed by Erdogan of Turkey and founded by Hitler’s henchman to the Muslim world, Haj Amin Al-Husseini

---

<sup>628</sup> See under Exhibit “Lawsuit”

the Mufti of Jerusalem, sued alongside President Donald Trump for Genocide out of all things, countless publications questioned my testimony and veracity having been a terrorist to my bombing at Manger Square (Christ's birthplace) in Bethlehem<sup>629</sup> to stop the peace process in the early seventies between Egypt and Israel.

Theodore in his desire to show the folly of the opposition, did much satire to let them hear what they are looking for constantly trolled the opposition gaining him unjustified accusations, which I ordered him to refrain.<sup>630</sup>

But not to boast and belabor about the thorns endured, by tare, traitors, downright mockers, chewing locusts and enemies, besides what I came to learn from the West which I so much appreciate, the goldmine came from my upbringing. Knowledge of Arabic was key to unlocking much from ancient Hebraic. *Fellahin*<sup>631</sup> and town Arabic of the Shepherds Fields in Bethlehem with its peculiarities was closer to ancient Hebrew and Aramaic and with Christian tradition of the Greek folk surrounding us, even the complex prophetic riddles soon became obvious.

This missing element in unlocking parables began as the child Theodore (whom when I was Muslim, made a deal with God to dedicate him to His purpose if He brought this child back to me) grew and suddenly as we were plowing the field out of the blue said: "Father, Mary is the Mother of God." We argued of course until he asked a Jesus-style question: "is she not the mother of Jesus who is God?" "Yes" I replied. "She is then the Mother of God" he replied. That is when my ultimate journey began, to understand the slander of Christian history from Theodore, who spent his youthful years consuming countless out of print ancient and old books, wrote his first book<sup>632</sup> at 16 and an entire volume about the lost slandered and unnoticed triumphs of Christendom.<sup>633</sup> I read his works to only see that understanding slander should be a prerequisite to anyone who is willing to delve into Christ and Christianity. I began interpreting in the allegoric sense the way of the fathers. In the end of my conclusions, the millions of fans who knew of me rejected me because they too from what I term as biblical *jāhiliyyah*<sup>634</sup> inherited throughout centuries of Puritan pomposity filled with novel and flimsy interpretations of the Middle Eastern Scriptures which they gained from the Protestant rebels.

I would sit with Baptists whom I could not get a word edgewise when they made a translation or interpretation error to only see these trusted more in the hireling of their own ilk. You could not even explain to these that the Arabic (especially the town Arabic of Judea)

---

<sup>629</sup> See Exhibit "WHO IS SHOEBAT" with clear sourced references that completely refute such slander

<sup>630</sup> For example, Theodore would say that Paul said of the homosexuals "they are worthy of death," as by "wrath" from God, gave examples from Genesis 19 how it is Christ Who does this and that certain books should be banned as in Mein Kampf, the opposition extrapulte that Theodore said to kill all homosexuals and that Theodore promoted Quran burning. Yet we rejected extremist like Terry Jones to burn the Quran —see article "To Burn or Not to Burn That Is The Question" September 10<sup>th</sup> 2010 at Shoebat.com.

<sup>631</sup> Fellahin means simple peasants

<sup>632</sup> In Satan's Footsteps by Theodore Shoebat

<sup>633</sup> Christianity is at War by Theodore Shoebat

<sup>634</sup> *Jahiliyyah* (Arabic) derived from the verbal root jahala "to be ignorant" or "stupid"

is the lingua franca closest to the language of Hebrew that was long lost and is why every translation depends on it.

Having tasted the bitter herb of public slander on an international scale, having been marked by the Organization of Islamic Council, I finally began to realize what it is to be a Christian, but I also understood to differentiate between wheat, zealot and a plain tare.

You can tell a zealot but you cannot tell him much. While a zealot can be annoying and at times close-minded, he is different from a tare. When you bring up a specific truth with the tare he usually rebukes it with a generality, and if at times you speak a truth in general terms, the tare will find a specific, even an anomaly just to denounce it.

A tare is a contrarian regardless of the level of sophistication or education they have, and it matters not what their political or their sectarian persuasion is, be they professing Catholic or Protestant. For example, if one is to bring up and fully expose a Protestant tare and a proclaiming Evangelical pops into the discussion and says “what about the Catholic tare?” this one, instead of examining the facts brings up an unrelated topic is acting as a tare since facts do not concern them. And vice versa applies. If an Evangelical brings up a pedophile priest and proves beyond any shadow of doubt he is a pedophile and does not condemn every Catholic priest of being ‘all pedophiles’ and a claiming Catholic arises and asks “but what about Protestant pedophiles” this one simply wants to change the subject and is acting like a tare.

A tare does not recognize he is a tare, for he looks into the mirror and sees *Triticum aestivum L* and only the farmer can recognize he is *Festuca pratensis* or even *Festuca rubra*. While wild animals browse it, but even to them it has not been important for domestic forage due to its low productivity and palatability. It does however please women since it is put to good use as an ornamental plant for gardens. A tare even studies his Bible—not in obedience to it—but to gear it unaware his entire analogies and private interpretations directs him to his own destruction.

Tares can be bible expositors, teachers, commentators, academicians, reductionists, seminarians, biblical archeologists, textual critics, literary critics, they come in all shapes and forms distanced from the patrology or the Thomism of the simple Church Fathers. In the simplest form possible, I did not only write my disputations against the errors of such Protestants, but expound into discoveries never considered in the past, in what we have witnessed so far, from biblical prophecies that are rarely considered, that in the *popular* prophecies are one subset of the truth consumed by the tares, these ignore that in the *unpopular* prophecies are the keys to unlock the full truth, for the tare only has half the truth, or even some, or even none of it, or even reversed the truth to believe a lie.

For example: in the West (primarily in the United States) the camp of homosexual sympathizers from all persuasion (Catholic, Protestant and Rabbinic) are surpassing the upright in being voiceful, argue that Sodom’s sin was not homosexuality but that they “lack hospitality”<sup>635</sup> are “unconcerned,” “arrogant,” and “lack charity” and for this “radical inhospitality” living in “pride, excess of food, and prosperous ease” is why God condemned

---

<sup>635</sup> See Ezekiel 16:49-50

them to the fire.<sup>636</sup> These completely ignored “They were haughty and *did detestable things before me.*” Such are the tares since these avoid to address the *effect* is that they “did detestable things,” (homosexuality) and the *cause* was “arrogance,” being “overfed,” and “unconcerned,” about others. Ignoring the *effect* and focusing only the *cause* is a primary method of the tare for he is always arguing half-truths for his whole mission is to divide and conquer by sapping from the wheat the water, which is the living truth. But the pitfall by such interpreters is that (as we shall discover in detail) they are mentioned in prophecies by Paul and Isaiah for supporting the homosexual agenda; prophecies that has not been unlocked which we carefully explored in this volume.

But such faulty approach is not only amongst this revival of an ancient Sodom phenomenon, for centuries the Protestant and Rabbinic scholarship, the most major and suicidal approach is the failure to distinguish the prophecies in the Old Testament that differentiates between earthly “Israel” which Paul terms as “earthly Jerusalem” from the “Israel of God” (“the heavenly Jerusalem”). Every Christian with basic knowledge on the Old Testament knows that Israel was decimated by its enemies (when it acted *earthly*) and uplifted when it acted *heavenly*. But if one searches the bulk of Protestant pastors and theologians inquiring from their interpretation as to the ‘how’ God set up a snare for all tares they would fail miserably because even the favored Protestant scholars who misguide their flock (as have seen) do not mention it since it will destroy their entire theological and apocalyptic theories about Rome. Being incessant with Rome (as ancient Israel did during Christ’s day) and by overlooking the Israel of God, Prophecy not only became a complete contradiction, but a self-inflicted wound, this “Jerusalem” burdensome stone; a trap from which their hatred of Rome (just as the Hebrews did) leads them to self destruction. Paul made clear God’s instruction in Galatians 4 to differentiate between the two Jerusalems, that one is heavenly and the other “earthly Jerusalem” is “Hagar” in “Mount Sinai in *Arabia.*” Paul equating earthly Israel with its enemy Arabia will prove crucial to unlock a bundle of prophecies.

While a tare will recognize the New Testament verses between earthly and heavenly Jerusalem, but his downfall will be the failure to see this in the Old, just as it was the downfall of Israel after the Jewish-Roman Revolt in 66 AD – 73 A.D., 132 – 136 A.D. As we have seen in this entire volume in our analysis, this dichotomy and trap of the tares is designed and is well etched in every prophecy of the Old Testament, which their centuries worth of commentaries and volumes of books fail to recognize.

Now that this shepherd turned off most who read so far perhaps to their peril can set this volume aside and remain in darkness. This is by no means for Protestant prophecy enthusiasts, but in fact refutes their apocalyptic theology as part of the very system they claim to expose: the spirit of Antichrist, and is why we, in love, urge them to come home.

Hear my cry, a voice that is crying in the wilderness, revealing how to prepare the way for the soon coming of the Lord.

But such a mission to rid the faithful from ignorance can only be accomplished by stepping on the toes of all who say they adhere to the Bible; Jews, with conservative and reformed, Protestants with all sorts (thousands) of squabbling rival denominations, Eastern

---

<sup>636</sup> If in doubt search “Sodom” and Hospitality” on Google and review the massive articles and countless supposedly research material spreading misinformation from Jewish and so-called Christian scholars, writers and major media

Orthodox and western Roman Catholic. Of course, I cant ignore concoctions that were made by workers of iniquity who came in portraying themselves reformers, since I believe, and for good reason, that all these while some even use the Bible added the confusion; some of these say they adhere to the Bible, yet are simply wolves that gymnastically twist Scripture to serve a tyrannical agenda. I always noticed that each and every sect has its theological niche; dare I even cross the line, I was told, that I would loose all. In this, I intend to lose everyone, since these days many have their share of ignorance, including myself. But I know that some who are wise will recognize the words of Jesus when He said “He who has found his life will lose it, and he who has lost his life for My sake will find it.” My attitude of losing my life falls in line with my attitude when I deliver my message to the crowds; I always try to loose them knowing always that the willing servants are but few. But the story isn’t simply a story of healing relationships, but pointing out apathetic ignorance that relate to human eternal destiny, as I cut the umbilical cord to my dark side of having lived myself with firsthand experience, a life of a terrorist, racist, abuser and hate-filled soul; how I was able to breakthrough the barriers that were put into my psyche by a multitude of dark minds. I finally cracked out of my cocoon I have knitted for myself throughout the years in which I added confusing heresy into my deprived mind. It was only when I broke the shackles of Satan, to see the world, not as it is now, with all its modern trappings, but how it was throughout the ages. It is only now that I peeked from my little prism, to see the universe in ah and wonder.

THE END

## EXHIBITS



EXHIBIT 'POPE PIUS XII'  
THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH  
HAS SAVED MORE JEWS THAN ANYONE ON EARTH

The church is not a threat to Jewish existence, physical or spiritual – but some cannot accept that fact.

Simcha Hacoen Kook, the venerable chief rabbi of Rehovot, said in an interview with the settler's website INN two weeks ago that "we have forgotten that the pope stood beside Hitler and murdered Jews. He encouraged him and said kill them as much as you can."

An article in Haaretz stated: "Rabbi Kook didn't make the distinction that Francis is the sixth pope since World War II (he was 2 years out when it began) and even the most critical historic records of Pope Pius XII don't say anything about him supporting Hitler's genocide."

In the real world, the Vatican has hardly had the diplomatic leverage and has been particularly circumspect at exercising whatever leverage it does have over Israel.

And while the anti-Popes crowd love to circulate photos of Hitler with Archbishop Cesare Orsenigo, the papal nuncio in Berlin, 1935, it was also the Pope's personal go-between to the Gestapo, the German monk Father Pancrace Pfeiffer was credited with the rescue of 400 hostages including 8 Jews whose reprieve he obtained on the way to the firing squad. (1)

Photos don't prove much. Its as if someone photoed Jesus being tempted by Satan to conclude that there was a God and Satan conspiracy. Pope John Paul II was photoed kissing a book thought to be the Quran and it went viral.

Judas kissed Jesus. Had they invented cameras in the first century, Jesus would have been in much trouble from all who love slander.

Today, Popes are the best target for slander, especially Pope Pius XII. I have many Jewish friends whom I have vowed to defend and then I also have my Evangelical compatriots. As much as I have love for them, my dilemma is in all honesty; how can I abandon honesty for friendship in order to support friends who might simply be wrong.

But I am compelled that myths are not easily destroyed; Hitler's Pope by John Cornwell and Constantine's Sword, that Pope Pius XII was a Nazi collaborator are perfect examples of sheer slander.

So I pray to the Lord of Israel to forgive if I erred here, but in researching and as wisdom requires, the town gossip is usually an exaggerated truth, but when we seek with all our heart, mind and soul to find the plain truth, God will provide, but such truth will definitely be as Christ experienced in which even Peter denied Him—thrice.

Nevertheless, in the end Peter realized his folly, went on the path of truth to even die for it, and so will I.

But such a fight cannot be dealt with an article of less than a 1000 words or by debating in the comment section with folks who mostly read so little and follow much of the hype that is out there. To seek fact and truth is never acquired by following a crowd that are too eager to click on tabloid style articles loaded with gossip and half baked truths.

We can start with the legend of Hitler's Pope which began in earnest in 1963 with a drama created for the stage by Rolf Hochhuth, an otherwise obscure German playwright, called The

Deputy. We can include the popularization of that thesis in John Cornwell's *Hitler's Pope*. Notwithstanding the fact that no serious historian today agrees with the deconstruction of Pius, the Catholic urban legend of Pius as a Nazi collaborator persists on a popular level because of these two works and a few recent imitators. (2)

While Cornwell later retracted his extremist view stating that he intended his book as a defense of Pius XII but that "nearing the end of my research... [t]he material I had gathered, taking the more extensive view of Pacelli's life, amounted not to an exoneration but to a wider indictment". He also wrote: "scope for action was severely limited", but that "[n]evertheless, due to his ineffectual and diplomatic language in respect of the Nazis and the Jews, I still believe that it was incumbent on him to explain his failure to speak out after the war. This he never did." (3)

He also described Pacelli as effectively being in collusion with the Nazi cause. (4)

Was Cornwell who many use his material to denounce Pope Pius XII here lying?

But still, the slander goes on.

Indeed, Pacelli was not focused so much on talking (even though he did in many occasions) but doing was his main goal, he sheltered Jews throughout Italy; the majority of Italian Jews—some 80 percent—survived the Second World War, during the years when, across Europe 80 per cent of Jews died. (5)

Was J Lichten lying when in his book *A Question of Moral Judgment* wrote the following:

"The Pope sent out the order that religious buildings were to give refuge to Jews, even at the price of great personal sacrifice on the part of their occupants; he released monasteries and convents from the cloister rule forbidding entry into these religious houses to all but a few specified outsiders, so that they could be used as hiding places. Thousands of Jews – the figures run from 4,000 to 7,000—were hidden, fed, clothed, and bedded in the 180 known places of refuge in Vatican City, churches and basilicas, Church administrative buildings, and parish houses. Unknown numbers of Jews were sheltered in Castel Gandolfo, the site of the Pope's summer residence [according to Rabbi David Dalin, at least 3,000 found refuge there], private homes, hospitals, and nursing institutions; and the Pope took personal responsibility for the care of the children of Jews deported from Italy." (6)

By no means are all Jewish writers today have uncritically accepted the torrent of anti-Pius propaganda, the contents of which over recent decades have generally been assumed by the secular media (and even by some Catholics) to be well-founded. Was Rabbi David Dalin lying when he wrote in a lengthy and important article:

"... it is the books vilifying the pope that have received most of the attention, particularly *Hitler's Pope*, a widely reviewed volume marketed with the announcement that Pius XII was "the most dangerous churchman in modern history," without whom "Hitler might never have . . . been able to press forward."

The "silence" of the pope is becoming more and more firmly established as settled opinion in the American media: "Pius XII's elevation of Catholic self-interest over Catholic conscience was the lowest point in modern Catholic history," the *New York Times* remarked, almost in passing, in a review last month of Carroll's *Constantine's Sword*.

Curiously, nearly everyone pressing this line today—from the ex-seminarians John Cornwell and Garry Wills to the ex-priest James Carroll—is a lapsed or angry Catholic. For

Jewish leaders of a previous generation, the campaign against Pius XII would have been a source of shock.

Were the well-known Jews; Albert Einstein, Golda Meir, Moshe Sharett, Rabbi Isaac Herzog, and innumerable others lying when they publicly expressed their gratitude to Pius?

Was the diplomat Pinchas Lapide lying when he wrote his 1967 book “Three Popes and the Jews”?

Lapide who served as Israeli consul in Milan and interviewed Italian Holocaust survivors declared Pius XII “was instrumental in saving at least 700,000, but probably as many as 860,000 Jews from certain death at Nazi hands.” (7)

Slander is easy to do. It requires only that favorable evidence be read in the worst light and treated to the strictest test, while unfavorable evidence is read in the best light and treated to no test. (8)

I know this myself, I can contribute so much to humanity, to only be equated by a false report by CNN.

So many are the examples on Pope Pius’s aid and heroic acts for the Jewish people. On June 15th, 1940, some 500 Jews embarked at Bratslaba on a leaky Danube steamer headed for Palestine. Four months and untold deprivations later, the ship tried to enter the port of Istanbul. When the Turkish coast guard refused to admit them, their ship headed southwest—to be captured two days later by an Italian patrol boat, which led to their imprisonment in a camp on Rhodes. When rumors spoke of an imminent handover to the German authorities, Herman Herskovich, the son of one of the group leaders, managed to reach Italy, and in Rome obtained an audience with the Pope. The latter’s intervention resulted in the transfer of all 500 refugees to a hastily improvised camp in Southern Calabria near the tip of the Italian boot.” (9)

Pope Pius XII is condemned for “not speaking out”.

But heroism is not only “speaking out” but doing action work without letting your left hand know what the right hand is doing.

But if the Vatican’s so-called silence is anti-Semitic, how could the critics answer; was it not partly due to Vatican pressure that 20,000 Jewish refugees from central Europe were brought into Italy?

In fact, the representative of these rescued Jews requested an audience with the Pope stating:

“Allow us, said their petition to ask the great honor of being able to thank personally His Holiness for the generosity he has shown us when we were persecuted during the terrible period of Nazi fascism.” (10)

Were all the rescued Jews from 79 concentration camps lying when they came to thank him? They even gave him a Menorah, a Torah scroll and an album of photographs in appreciation for his work. Pacelli even prophetically told this group on November 29th, 1945:

“you will soon have a Jewish State,”

He added that:

“you will receive your Jewish state”. (11)

Was the whole of the Jewish Brigade lying when in June 1944 when the Allies liberated Rome, the Bulletin of the “Jewish Brigade Group,” carried out the following front page editorial:

“To the everlasting glory of the people of Rome and the Roman Catholic Church we can state that the fate of the Jews was alleviated by their truly Christian offers of assistance and shelter. Even now, many still remain in the religious homes and houses which opened their doors to protect them from deportation to certain death ...” (12)

Was the Chief Rabbi of Rome, Israel Zolli also a liar? He was a devout and serious Orthodox Jew as well as a learned scholar of the Talmud and of Semitic literature converted to Catholicism after witnessing the love of the Catholic Church for Jews, described his experiences as follows:

“It was from my father that I learned the great art of praying with tears. During the Nazi persecution, long years afterward, I lived near the center of Rome in a small room. There, in the dark, in hunger and cold, I would pray weeping: ‘O, Thou keeper of Israel, protect the remnants of Israel; do not allow this remnant of Israel to perish!’” (13)

Of course, like Pacelli, he too endured much slander. Likewise, many Jews for his conversion hated Zolli. The Jewish community in Rome (Signor Foa) and Zolli argued, as to who was at fault for allowing the Nazis to obtain the list of Roman Jews. This list was used when they were gathered, deported, and murdered. Foa blamed Zolli; Zolli blamed Foa.

Fact is Zolli offered himself as a hostage to the Nazis, in exchange for the lives of other Jews. The Nazis preferred gold. It was Rabbi Zolli who approached the Vatican for help in collecting. Pius XII stood ready to give the gold required, and Rabbi Zolli memorialized his help later when the rabbi chose Pius’s Christian name of Eugenio for his own baptismal name.

Rabbi Zolli had long been attracted to Christ, even to the extent of writing a book about Christ from a Jewish point of view that was so sympathetic to the Catholic viewpoint of Christ that a bishop told Zolli that the bishop could have given it an imprimatur. He had wanted to convert before the war, but felt obliged to share the suffering of his people. (14)

Colonel Kappler, a senior German officer who saw a chance to line his pockets. Kappler issued the Jewish community an ultimatum: either hand over 50 Kg of gold or, failing that, deliver 300 named hostages—a list headed by none other than Zolli himself. Within a short time the Jews managed to scrape together 35 Kg of gold but it was insufficient to satisfy Kappler’s monstrous appetite and so, on behalf of the Jewish community, Israel Zolli was deputed to approach the Vatican for the shortfall. This was his first contact with the institutional Church and it took place in secret since the Gestapo watched all Vatican City’s exits.

Zolli met with the Vatican’s Secretary of State Cardinal Maglione and appealed to him saying, “The New Testament cannot abandon the Old.” Maglione immediately approached Pius XII to help with the needed gold. The Pope agreed to the request and Zolli was told to return later for the “package.” Not only did the Pope act with alacrity, the Catholic parishes of Rome hurriedly gathered together a further 15 Kg of gold, something Zolli found out about from his daughter when he returned home. For the time being, the hostage crisis was averted.

That Pius XII played an enormous role in saving Jews from the Nazis was well known to Zolli. He was aware that monasteries and convents in Rome and all over Italy had opened their doors to Jews at the urging of the Pope. In addition, thousands more were being sheltered by ordinary Italian Catholic families, and both the Vatican and the Pope's summer residence in Castel Gandolfo were filled with Jews who had nowhere else to hide.

Zolli, who met Pius XII, was impressed with the Pope's open attitude and willingness to help. The Zolli family lived underground during the Nazi occupation of Rome and saw first hand the charity of the Church in action, inspired as it was by the personal courage of the pope, who did more than anyone else at that time to frustrate the arrest and execution of European Jews. (15)

The secular media tried to rationalize the matter. In his autobiography, *Before The Dawn*, Eugenio Zolli refuted all assertions that his conversion was out of gratitude to Pope Pius XII. Certainly he was extremely grateful for what the Pope had done to protect Jews, but the singular reason behind his conversion was his attraction to the person of Christ the Messiah —an attraction that had been growing steadily since Zolli's childhood. (16)

Perhaps we can all learn from Zolli who noted with sadness that, among his co-religionists, 'love of the Law is often more important than the law of Love.' The petty details of rabbinical casuistry eclipsed the great commandment of the law revealed by God to Moses: You shall love the Lord, your God, with all your heart, and with all your soul... (Dt. 6:5) (17)

Chief Rabbi of Rome, Israel Zolli who converted to Catholicism

It was Pope Pius XII secret instructions to the clergy "to save human lives by all means".

Perhaps the slanderers should have asked the 40,000 Italian Jews and others who managed to flee to Italy and were hidden and saved by humble priests, monks, farmers and labourers, dozens of whom lost their lives for sheltering them.

Are the community of Ramat Gan in Israel lying when they dedicated a street name after Dr. Giovanni Palatucci, who paid for his life at Dachau for saving Jewish lives?

The cardinal of Genova Boetto saved at least 800 Jews; the Bishop of Assisi hid 300 for over two years; Monsignor Palatucci, Bishop of Campagna, and two of his close relatives saved 961 in Fiume. (18)

Reuben R. Resnik disclosed the heroic acts of many Italian Catholics church members and laymen who hid Jews in convents and even asylums for the insane. At St. Francis of Assisi, the church had built a synagogue in the basement where Jews worshipped at the same time as Catholics worshipped. (19)

Pope Pius also tried to help in other ways through the Vatican Information Office dealing with 102,026 Jewish applications to help Jews locate their family.

Slanderers should have asked the petitioners of 20,375 Jewish inquiries to look for their families. In 1943, in one single year, these inquiries ended up in success in which Jews found their missing relatives. Between 1943 to 1946 there were 36,877 total successful cases. There were at least 55,000 Jews who got food, clothing and shelter at the five refugee camps in Italy. (20)

It was for this reason that the Jewish Brigade Officers at the request of Moshe Sharet, head of the Jewish Agency's Political Department in late 1944 requested to meet the Pope to express their thanks.

Was Sharet lying when he stated:

“I still remember Pius’ broken Hebrew benediction: “Vaysmer chem. Hashem ... May the Lord bless you” and in 1955 the Jews of Italy instituted April 17th as “The Day of Gratitude” for what the Vatican had done. Gold medals were awarded to 23 of the noblest benefactors including Mother Superior of the Sisters of Our Lady of Zion in Rome, who single handedly rescued 187 Jews, and Father Benedetto Maria who earned the nickname “the Jews pope.” (21)

Also included was Archbishop Montini, the Pope’s right hand who simply replied “All I did was my duty. And besides I only acted upon orders from the Holy Father. No body deserves a medal for that.” Italy was the Axis country where the Catholic Church—apart from the Pope—voiced the least number of public protests, but silently rendered the most efficacious help to persecuted Jewry. As French-Jewish historian Leon Poliakov concluded that Pope Pius was “encouraging and stimulating the efforts of Catholic churches in almost every country sending secret instructions from the Vatican urging the national churches to intervene in favor of the Jews by every possible means.” (22)

During the “Final Solution” of Slovakia’s Jews during March 1942, Pius XII ordered the Slovak Minister to the Holy See to take action with his government. (23)

In one response by Pope Pius to the Slovakian government, who were wondering the pope’s interest in Jews, the pope replied:

“It is not just to treat like criminal thousands of women and children like those included in the recent deportations ... Your Excellency is no doubt aware of the atrocious fate awaiting these deported Jews ... All the world knows of it. Admitting even that a state can abolish the norms of natural rights and the commandments of Christianity, it cannot, in its own interests, ignore international opinion or the verdict of history ...”

As a result, the governor cancelled the deportation order of 4000 Slovak Jews. (24)

Out of the 90,000 Slovakian Jews who were deported, 35,000 were saved. The reason is stated by Mr. Gideon Hausner, Attorney General, in Israel’s trial against Adolf Eichmann:

“Pressure was exerted through Church circles, and the Slovakian Government began to have doubts about continuing the deportations. Ludin, the German Ambassador, reported that owing to the influence of the Church and the corruption of the Slovakian administration, the 35,000 Jews remaining in Slovakia had been issued with documents exempting them from deportation.” (25)

Was Mr. Gideon Hausner, the Israeli attorney general lying in court?

Sufficient numbers of Slovak priests acquired the nickname “White Jews” for rescuing fugitive Jews at great personal risk. They included Father Augustine Pozdech in Bratislava and the Franciscan friar Rafael P. Fidrik who saved the life of Chief Rabbi of Slovakia, Abraham Frieder, as many others. (26)

It was also the Apostolic Delegate in Istanbul, Monsignor Angelo Roncalli—later Pope John XXII—played a decisive role after he received an SOS appeal from Jews in Bratislava, Mr. C. Barlas, head of the Jewish Agency’s Rescue Committee in Turkey to solicit the assistance of Slovakia’s clergy. “So will it be, and if God helps me, we shall get it done!” the Nuncio said in deep emotion. (27)

As result deportations were halted. When later 13,000 Jews were caught in the final round-up by German troops, most of which were transported to Auschwitz, only 25,000 Jews were able to hide in churches and monasteries. Chief Rabbi Herzog confirmed, as well as what was testified during Eichmann's trial in Jerusalem on how the Jews connected with the papal envoy and through the Catholic clergy. At the court, evidence was submitted which included pasoral letters sent by Catholic bishops against anti-Jewish measures. (28)

The difficulty in dealing with the issue of Catholics who collaborated with Nazim is an issue of rotten apples in the batch of good. It is the prejudiced mind that argues the common street argument—Heinrich Himmler, Joseph Goebbels and Adolf Hitler were all raised as Catholics—but so were Herod, Ahab and Jezebel raised Jewish. It was through Bishop Alois Hudal, a Nazi Austrian cleric then residing in Italy, who helped Eichmann In 1948 to obtain a landing permit for Argentina and false identification under the name of “Ricardo Klement”. (29)

But can this action be justified by using Catholic theology or orders from the Holy See?

Hudal, rector of the German College of S. Maria dell'Anima, was a well known pro-Nazis prelate in Rome and that he received from 60 to 100 Germans daily who were looking for tickets and visas to Latin America. Exactly one week later, the Sunday edition of the Passauer Neue Press reported on two networks of spies smuggling Nazi criminals to Argentina and to the Middle East: the first had been centered in Rome, at the College of S. Maria dell'Anima, but its headquarters were shut down because of Vatican pressure. (30)

Simon Wiesenthal was trying to demonstrate that there have been and perhaps still was a strong alliance between the Catholic Church and a powerful Nazi organization called Odessa but the SS. Eichmann's trial did not confirm Wiesenthal's view, or at least it did not assess the existence of a well organized underground network supported by former Nazis and by the Catholic Church. (31)

Wiesenthal reinforced his own view in *The Murderers Among Us* (32)

Jarschel, a leader in the Hitler Youth, described how Catholic priests had helped former SS members, taking them to Rome, often disguising them as members of the Catholic clergy, and finally giving them passports and money to reach Latin America. Although his book is more a novel than a well documented essay, many readers took Jarschel's tale at face value. In the following decade, Gitta Sereny tried to verify the issue writing her astounding book about Franz Stangl, former commandant of the Treblinka lager. (33)

Sereny did not share Wiesenthal's obsession about a nazi-catholic conspiracy. Overall, she thought that if there were networks helping the Nazis' flight, they were simply informal.

Also, Wiesenthal was a Nazi hunter and not an historian. History, according to Sereny, does not need thrilling explications and historical data simply did not back up any conspiracy theory by the Holy See. (34)

She stressed that the position of the Catholic Church needed to be fairly and soundly assessed. To her that Pius XII's position after the war should be related to his position during the war, which showed how the pope was paralyzed by a double set of fears: the dread of communism and his certainty that Hitler would have crushed the Catholic Church, if it had vehemently protested against him. Hudal was an informant for German intelligence, but nobody listened to him in the Vatican and, least of all, in Berlin (35)

Peter Hoffman, the leading authority on the German resistance against Hitler. His classic work *The History of the German Resistance*, the churches according to Hoffman “were not totally immune” to the conformist of the society during Hitler, “but they were the only organizations to produce some form of a popular movement against the Nazi regime.” Hoffman mentions the case of the Stauffenberg brothers, Claus Stauffenberg attempted to overthrow Hitler on July 24th, 1944, was due to his Catholic convictions and lost his life for it. In Stauffenberg’s papers, he expressed that his anti-Nazi views were crystallized and strengthened by Pope Pius XI. (36)

Hoffman writes extensively on how Pope Pius XII involvements in plots to overthrow Hitler. (37)

Another Church historian, John J. Hughes who has become an American leading authority on Pius XII stated “I regard the view, widely accepted in this country, that he was co-responsible for the Holocaust as one of the major falsifications of post WWII historiography.” (38)

Are the historians liars?

Reflecting to the Pope Pius XII’s actions, I am reminded by scenes from movie *Schindler’s List*, but where are the movies on Pacelli who saved more Jewish lives during the Holocaust, more than all the other agencies and individuals put together?

We even forget that Oscar Schindler was Roman Catholic.

In the Middle East, it is said that if speech was made of silver, silence is made of gold, had Pope Pius fully spoken out on the Jews, it would put the Vatican in immense danger and would have brought the attention of the Nazis.

It is true that the Vatican’s Secretary of State opposed Jewish immigration to Palestine, but so did the United States Secretary of State George Marshall strongly opposed recognizing the state of Israel all the while the United States President supported it’s establishment. Its rare to find any good secretary of state. Have we looked at the log in our own eye before we took the spec out of the Pope’s eye?

#### WHAT ABOUT THE REICH CONCORDAT

Many explore the charge that he assisted in the legitimization of Adolf Hitler’s Nazi regime in Germany, through the pursuit of a Reichskonkordat.

John Cornwell in his book *Hitler’s Pope* argued that Pacelli’s antisemitism combined with his drive to promote papal absolutism inexorably led him to collaboration with fascist leaders, a collaboration which led to what Cornwell characterizes as “the betrayal of Catholic democratic politics in Germany”. (39)

The Reich Concordat granted the Vatican the right to impose the new Code of Canon Law on Catholics in Germany, and promised a number of measures favorable to Catholic education, including new schools. Cornwell alleges that the ‘quid pro quo’ for Hitler’s agreeing to grant the Vatican these rights and privileges was Pacelli’s collaboration in the withdrawal of Catholics from political and social activity. (40)

Thus, according to Cornwell, Pius XII facilitated the rise of Hitler first through the negotiation of the Reichskonkordat and subsequently through his passivity, silence and inaction, which ultimately condoned and enabled the Holocaust. (41)

Fact is, Pope Pius XII spoke out against the concordat by using the 1937 encyclical *Mit brennender Sorge* which was issued by Pope Pius XI, (42) but drafted by Pope Pius XII. (43) Although it failed to directly address the persecution of Jews in general, it spoke out in



protection of Catholic Jews who were sought by the Nazi party. It was read from the pulpits of all German Catholic churches, it condemned Nazi ideology and has been characterized by scholars as the “first great official public document to dare to confront and criticize Nazism”, and “one of the greatest such condemnations ever issued by the Vatican.” (44) Thomas Bokenkotter writes:

And when Hitler showed increasing belligerence toward the Church, Pius met the challenge with a decisiveness that astonished the world. His encyclical *Mit Brennender Sorge* was the ‘first great official public document to dare to confront and criticize Nazism’ and ‘one of the greatest such condemnations ever issued by the Vatican.’ Smuggled into Germany, it was read from all the Catholic pulpits on Palm Sunday in March 1937. It denounced the Nazi “myth of blood and soil” and decried its neopaganism. The Nazis retaliated by closing and sealing all the presses that had printed it and took numerous vindictive measures against the Church, including staging a long series of immorality trials of Catholic clergy.(45)

As a result, one hundred and seventy Franciscans were arrested in Koblenz and tried for “corrupting youth” in a secret trial, with numerous allegations of priestly debauchery appearing in the Nazi-controlled press, while a film produced for the Hitler Youth showed men dressed as priests dancing in a brothel. Rhodes, Anthony. (46)

#### THE POPE DID SPEAK OUT

The large effort to produce and distribute over 300,000 copies of the letter was entirely secret, allowing priests across Germany to read the letter without interference. The letter brought swift and long-lasting reprisal from the Nazi regime. The Gestapo raided the churches the next day to confiscate all the copies they could find, and the presses that had printed the letter were closed. The regime then constrained the actions of the Church and harassed monks with staged prosecutions. (47)

There were several times in which Pope Pius XII did speak out clearly against anti-Semitism. In his anti-Nazi speech before 250,000 pilgrims at Lourdes in 1935, and another public address in Rome when he repeated Pius XI’s dictum: “It is impossible for a Catholic to be anti-Semite; spiritually all of us are Semites.” (48)

In other words, Pope Pius XII declared that a Catholic is no longer Catholic and is unsaved if he/she is anti-Semitic.

Of the 44 speeches which Pacelli had made on German soil between 1917 and 1929, at least 40 contained attacks on Nazism or condemnations of Hitler’s doctrines. (49)

So hated was Pacelli by the Nazi Party that the Nazi journal *Das Reich* wrote: Pius XI was a half Jew, for his mother was a Dutch Jewess; but Cardinal Pacelli is a full Jew. (50)

When in early 1939 the anti-Jewish decrees excluded Jews from a growing number of professions, some 4000 Jews, the Vatican lodged repeated protests against these “so-called racial laws” (51)

The information Cornwell presents comes from two letters of Pius written in 1918 and 1919— before Hitler even began his political career.

Cornwell claims that he researched boxes of secret documents “back to 1912,” omitting that he ran forward up until only 1922. Cornwell tells us it was “months on end.” Archbishop Re, (the “Sostituto” or Deputy Vatican Secretary of State), obtained by Inside the Vatican, reveals that Cornwell was given a pass to the archives for... three weeks.

The best refutation of Cornwell's flimsy work is Rychlak's *Hitler, the War and The Pope*, provides point-by-point refutation of Cornwell's allegations. (52)

William D. Rubinstein, a noted authority on the Holocaust noted that:

"Hitler's Pope is a malign exercise in defamation and character assassination. The author has, in my view, consistently misread and misunderstood both Pacelli's actions and the context in which they occurred." (53)

Rubinstein gives an accurate assessment on how Catholics viewed Jews during the time: "At the same time, Catholic leaders also shared a number of other attitudes towards Jews, attitudes frequently overlooked by historians of anti-Semitism. They regularly drew a distinction between "good Jews"—those they knew at first hand—and "bad Jews," who generally lived elsewhere. Whatever their prejudices, they virtually always opposed violence or pogroms against defenseless Jews. In interwar Poland, for example, a land of intense anti-Semitism, even the most anti-Jewish elements of the Catholic press almost invariably condemned violence of the sort found in Nazi Germany or among extremist nationalist elements in Poland. *Maly Dziennik*, an anti-Semitic Catholic paper, offered this typical comment in June 1935: "We should lead the struggle against the Jewish flood in a Christian way, without hatred and without committing outrages." The effect of Catholic thought in continental Europe was thus indirectly to foment hostility toward Jews but sincerely to deplore violence against them, a dichotomy generally consistent with Catholic attitudes towards the Jews going back to the Middle Ages." (54)

To call all these countless Jews liars is suspicion for anti-Semitism. But to slander a pope who did more for the Jews than anyone who ever existed is pure anti-Catholicism. While we practically eradicated the first disease in the U.S., the second is the only accepted prejudice that still remains. Had Pope Pius XII did what Martin Luther did and wrote "The Jews and Their Lies", we would never here the end of it. While countless books despite Luther's clear anti-Semitism are produced daily to Luther's defense, who are the Evangelical authors that came to the Pope's defense?

What a shame.

On Youtube watch a video of Pope Pius XII singing one of the most beautiful chants within Christianity, the *Praefatio*.

## REFERENCES

(1) Pinchas Lapide, *Three Popes and The Jews*, P.p 134

(2) <http://www.catholic.com/magazine/articles/the-five-most-influential-anti-catholic-books>

(3) *The Bulletin* (Philadelphia, 27 Sept. 2008))

(4) John Cornwell. Review of *Hitler's Priests: Catholic Clergy and National Socialism*. By Kevin P. Spicer. in *Church History: Studies in Christianity and Culture*, Volume 78, Issue March 2009, pp 235-237. Published online by Cambridge University Press, 20 February 2009.

(5)\*see J Lichten's book *A Question of Moral Judgement\**

(6) \*Joseph Lichten, (1963), *A Question of Judgement: Pius XII and the Jews*. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Catholic Conference. P.p. 126\*

(7) \*See The lie of 'Hitler's Pope' collapses, little by little, *The Catholic Herald*, August, 09, 2013\*

(8) Rabbi David G. Dalin, *Pius the XII and the Jews*, Page 15\*

- (9)\*Pinchas Lapide, Three Popes and the Jews, Chapter IV, Pp 128-129\*
- (10) \*Ibid. Pp. 130\*
- (11)\*Ibid, Pp. 130\*
- (12) \*Pinchas Lapide, Three Popes and The Jews, P.p 131\*
- (13) \*Eugenio Zolli, Before the Dawn as quoted in Sweet Honey from the Rock (edited by Roy Shoeman), pg. 73\*
- (14) \*The Chief Rabbi's Conversion by Fr. Arthur B. Klyber, C.Ss.R. ?Before the Dawn by Eugenio Zolli. See Question from Sue Scott on 7/6/2011, EWTN\*
- (15) Eugenio Zolli's Path to Rome | Stephen Sparrow | September 5, 2005, Stephen Sparrow
- (16) Ibid
- (17) Biography from a monthly letter from Abbaye St. Joseph de Clairval, Flavigny, France, [www.clairval.com](http://www.clairval.com)
- (18) Pinchas Lapide, Three Popes and The Jews, P.p 134
- (19) P.p.135
- (20) P.p 136-137
- (21) Ibid
- (22) P.p 138, Leon Poliakov, November 1950 issue of Commentary, the organ of the American Jewish Committee"
- (23) P.p 141, telegram from Rome which appears in the press, March 25, 1942
- (24) Lapide, Three Popes and The Jews, P.p 142-143
- (25) Gideon Hausner: Opening Sppech at the Eichmann Trial, Jerusalem, April 1961. See Lapide's P.p 144
- (26) Lapide, P.p. 145
- (27) Chaim Barlas, "John XXIII and His Attitude to the Jews," Davar, Tel Aviv, November 4, 1959 (in Hebrew). See Lapide, P.p. 145
- (28) Eichmann trial, Session 49, May 23, 1961
- (29) Cesarani 2005, p. 207.
- (30) Matteo Sanfilippo Ratlines and Unholy Trinities (The Vatican Files.net)
- (31) For the proceedings see <http://www.nizkor.org/hweb/people/e/eichmann-adolf/transcripts/>; see also <http://www.nizkor.org/ftp.cgi/people/e/eichmann.adolf/memoire/> for Eichmann's diaries. See Matteo Sanfilippo Ratlines and Unholy Trinities (The Vatican Files.net)
- (32) Simon Wiesenthal, The Murderers Among Us, London, Heinemann, 1967. See Ratlines and Unholy Trinities by Matteo Sanfilippo and his thesis was backed up by Werner Brockdorff, formerly Alfred Jarschel. Werner Brockdorff (aka Alfred Jarschel), Flucht vor Nürnberg. Plane und Organisation der Fluchtwege der NS-Priminenz in "Römischen Weg", Wels-München, Welsermüuhl Verlag, 1969.
- (33) Gitta Sereny, Into that Darkness, London, Deutsch, 1974. See Matteo Sanfilippo Ratlines and Unholy Trinities (The Vatican Files.net)
- (34) Ibid
- (35) On Hudal as a German spy, see also Klaus Voigt, Zuflucht auf Widerruf. Exil in Italien 1933-1945, I, Stuttgart, Klett-Cotta, 1989. See Matteo Sanfilippo Ratlines and Unholy Trinities (The Vatican Files.net)
- (36) The Pius War, Responses to Critics of Pope Pius XII. P.p. 196
- (37) Ibid
- (38) The Pius War, Responses to Critics of Pope Pius XII. P.p. 197

- (39) Cornwell, John (October 1999).
- (40) [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hitler's\\_Pope](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hitler's_Pope)
- (41) Ibid
- (42) Coppa, Frank J. (1999). *Controversial Concordats*. Catholic University of America Press. p. 132. Also see *Church and state through the centuries*, Sidney Z. Ehler & John B Morrall, pp. 518-519
- (43) Pham, p. 45, quote: "When Pius XI was complimented on the publication, in 1937, of his encyclical denouncing Nazism, Mit Brennender Sorge, his response was to point to his Secretary of State and say bluntly, "The credit is his."
- (44) quote by Bokenkotter, pp. 389–392
- (45) Ibid
- (46) *Vatican in the Age of the Dictators, 1922-1945*. pp. 202–210.
- (47) From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia
- (48) Pinchas Lapide, *Three Popes and The Jews*, P.p 118
- (49) Ibid
- (50) Pinchas Lapide, *Three Popes and The Jews*, P.p 120
- (51) Pinchas Lapide, *Three Popes and The Jews*, P.p 127
- (52) *The Myth of Hitler's Pope*. P.p. 7
- (53) *First Things*, *Hitler's Pope: The Secret History of Pius XII*
- (54) Ibid

EXHIBIT  
THE 'WAR SCROLL'

- 7)[...]  
(8)in the **Kitti[m ...]**  
(9)the infantrymen shall begin [to bring down the casualties of the **Kittim ...** And the]  
(10)battle [shall prevail] against the **Kittim [...]** the corpses of the place of refining [shall begin] to fall by [the mysteries] of God.  
(11)And the p[riests shall sound the trumpets of assembly ...]  
(12)battle among the **Kittim**. And to the first battle formation ...]  
(13)And the priest designated for the battle shall draw near and stand [be]fore [the battle formation ...]  
(14)and he shall strengthen their hands by recounting His wondrous deeds. Then he shall sa[y] in response [... fire of]  
(15)vengeance, to consume among gods and men. For [He shall] not [...]  
(16)flesh, except dust (?). For now [...]  
(17)and [the fire] shall consume as far as Sheol. And the council of wickedness [...] Frag. 11  
Frag. 11-15 represent a variant of 1QM cols. See 1-17 above.

Col. 2

- (14)[... He is] faithful, and the relief which His redemption [...]  
(15)[... son]s of truth and to remove the faint of heart and to strengthen the he[art ...]  
(16)[... the batt]le today, the God of Isr[ael] shall subdue him (Belial?) [...]  
(17)[...] with no place to stand. And [the kingdo]m shall be for God and the salvatio[n] for His people [...]  
(18)[...] like as to Belial. But God's covenant is peace [for] Israel in all the times [of eternity ...]  
(19)And, after these words the priests shall blow to order the second battle with the **Kit[tim]**. And when each man has taken]  
(20)his station, then the priests shall blow a second signal for advance. When they have approached the ba[t]tle line of the **Kittim**, within throwing range,]  
(21)each man [shall ra]ise his hand with his battle weapon. Then the priests shall b[lo]w on the tr[umpets] of the [slain a staccato note]  
(22)[to direct the battle and the Levites] and the all the people with rams' horns shall so[u]nd [a loud] n[ote ... And when]  
(23)[the sound of the blast is heard, they shall begin to bring do]wn the casualties of the guilty. The sound of the [...]  
(24)  
[...]

Frag. 13

- (1)[...] with the gods [...]  
(2)[...] the smallest of you shall pursue a tho[usand ...]  
(3)[... And after] these [w]ords, [the priests] shall blow [to order the third battle with the **Kittim** and the columns]  
(4)[shall deploy at the sound of the trum]pets. When each m[an] has taken [his position] by division, [the priest shall blow a second blast on the trumpets for]

(5)[advance. When] they [have approached] the battle line of the **Kittim**, within throwing range, [each man] shall raise his hand [with his battle weapon. The priests shall blow, to direct

(6)[the battle, on the trumpets of the slain, a staccato note. Then the Levites and all [the people with rams' horns shall sound a battle blast, and the formations]

(7)[shall be fight]ing one behind the other with no space between them. For [...]

(8)[... and] all the people shall answer, raising [on]e voice, and say [...]

Frag. 15

(1)[...] and there is no [...]

(2)[...] and a processio[n behold we are taking position to advance [...]

(4)

[...]

(5)[... And] he shall say to them in response, "Be strong and courageous [...]

(6)[... For the] outstretched [hand] of God is upon all the Gentiles, [He shall] not [...]

(7)[...] kingship is [for God] Almighty and salvation is for His people. And y[ou ...]

(8)[...] his [im]purity, the gods shall advance upon you with [...]

(9)[...] and to cast all [their] corpse[s ...]

(10)[...] and all the spirits of [his] lot [...]

(11)[...] eternal, together wi[th ...]

(13)[...] war [...]

4Q491 Manuscript B

Manuscript B presents a much shorter version of the War Scroll than the one discovered in Cave 1.

Frag. 1-3

(1)

Korah and his congregation [...] judgment [...]

(2) before the whole congregation of [...] judgment as sign[s ...]

(3)and the chief of his angels with their [forces,] to direct their hand [in] battle. [...] for the chariotry and the hor[semen ...]

(4)The hand of God shall strike [...] for eternal annihilation [...] they shall atone for you [...] all the princes [...]

(5)His holiness in eternal joy [...] And after [...] the congregation and all] the prince[s ...] shall not go to the enemy battle lines [...]

(6)This is the rule when they camp and [...] and in] their divisions [...] around, outside [...] and women, young boys, and any man who is afflicted with impurity in his flesh shall not come near]

(7)[the battle] line. The craftsmen [and blacksm]iths and those enlisted as [...] for their watches [...] the battle line until they return. And there shall be two thousand cubits between the [camps and the latrine, so]

(8)no nakedness might be seen in their surroundings. And when they set out to prepare for battle [so as to sub]due [the enemy], some of them [shall be] dismissed by lot from each tribe according to those enlisted for [each] day's duty.

(9) That day, men from each tribe [shall] go out from the camps to the house of meeting ... and the [priests], the Levites, and all the chiefs of the camps [shall] go out to them. Then they shall pass before [them] there [...]

(10) by thousands, hundreds, fifties, and tens. Each man who is not [clean in regard to his genitals] that [night] [shall] not go out with them to battle. For the holy angels are with their battle lines [...]

(11) [When] the formation standing ready to pass to all [...] of battle for that day [goes up [...]], three formations shall stand one behind the other, and they shall establish a space between [each] battle formation.

(12)

[Then they shall go out] to the battle in turn. These are the [infantry]men and alongside them are [cavalry]men, [and they shall take their position between the battle] formations. But if they establish an ambush for a battle formation, the three ambushing formations shall [stay at a distance and not rise up ...]

(13) [...] the battle. When they [hear] the trumpets of alarm, the [infantry]men [shall begin to bring down] the guilty casualties. Then the ambush shall rise up from its place and also order its [battle formations] [...]

(14) The reassembly: from the right and left, from behind and before, the [four] direction[s ...] in the battles of annihilation. All the battle formation[s] which engaged the enemy for battle [shall be gathered]

(15) together. The [first] battle formation shall [set out to battle] and the second shall remain standing] at their post. When their period is completed, the first shall return and stand .]

(16) The second foray ...] when the battle is arrayed. When the second battle formation shall have completed their period, they shall return and take their position.]

(17) And the third foray ... Then the Chief Priest shall take his stand with his brothers the priests, the Levites, and men [of the army]. And all the while the priests shall be sounding on the trumpets [...]

(18) A linen sash [of twined fine linen, violet, purple, and crimson, and a varicolored design, the work of a skillful workman, and decorated caps [on their heads. And they shall not take them into the sanctuary,] for] they are garments for battle.]

(19) According to all [this] rule [...] chiefs of the camp [...]

(20) for [...] all [...] they will completely annihilate [...]

EXHIBIT  
LAWSUIT AGAINST THE AUTHOR

Walid Shoebat for converting from Islam to Christianity is hailed as a threat by the O.I.C (Organization of Islamic Conference) established with inspiration by Hitler's henchman Haj Amin Al-Husseini <sup>637</sup> the largest body of Muslim jurisprudence in the world and the Arab League headquarters in Cairo Egypt met on 5/9/2011 to discuss 15 points one of which (point #10) to "blacklist" Shoebat as a threat. <sup>638</sup>

Shoebat's conversion from Islam to Christianity attracted the attention of the Muslim world so they decided to file a lawsuit through a Palestinian terror supporter by the name of Basem Tamimi.

In *Dawabsheh v. Netanyahu*, Tamimi filed the case in the District of Columbia included as defendants prominent figures; President Donald Trump, Benjamin Netanyahu, Andrew Coumo, Newt Gingrich, Rudy Giuliani and Walid Shoebat accusing them that since they support Israel, they have committed crimes against the Palestinian people.

The lawsuit claims it wants to "expose [Shoebat] as the fraud he is" claiming that Shoebat cooperated with Israel's Prime Minister Netanyahu, Gingrich, U.S. President Donald Trump, Mike Huckabee, Rudy Giuliani, Andrew Coumo and the billionaire mogul, the Adelson family in advancing Israel caused the dehumanization of the Palestinian people.

How could someone leave Islam to become Christian Zionist had to be explained since it could not be the result of Islam's weakness, but that 'money' must have been the motive Shoebat ever since then became "a profiteer" (see case #49, pg. 36).

---

<sup>637</sup> Rethinking the Role of Religion in Arab Antisemitic [Discourses](#)

<sup>638</sup> See "Danger For Shoebat" below



EXHIBIT  
“WHO IS SHOEBAT”

Shoebat grew up as a terrorist in Bethlehem, Christ’s birthplace, converted to Christianity in 1993 became an FBI informant. Part of his reformation, Shoebat in California (from Fair Oaks Baptist Church) began to warn of a coming Jihad against the U.S. and was ignored until 9-11-2001 when gained media attention and took advantage of it to spread the Gospel and exposed Holocaust denial and translated from Arabic what Islamist would never say in English.

He became an ardent supporter of Israel’s right to exist. Shoebat never once said he was “an expert” on anything. He simply told his conversion experience included his story of tossing a bomb at the roof of Bank Leumi in Manger Square in Bethlehem’s Nativity Church, Christ’s birthplace around Christmas 1977.

The claim sounded bizarre thought to be some televangelist hyperbole!

Here is a guy who was a Fundamentalist Muslim before following Jesus in 1993 around Christmas 1977 tossed a bomb roundabout Christ’s birthplace!

Only a conman would concoct such story—so they thought.

What drove the lawsuit was the Jerusalem Post in 2008—and later on—another investigative journalist by the name of [Eileen Flemming](#) and even later in 2011 Drew Griffin [CNN](#)’s Anderson Cooper—all ran to Bethlehem searching roundabout Jesus’ birthplace asking for any evidence of a bombing between 1976-1977 and claimed they found no evidence of such bombing.

Besides Flemming who obtained testimony from one of Shoebat’s relatives, Kamal Younis, brother of Al-Qaeda’s public defender in Jordan confirmed Shoebat’s prison record and him joining a group of terrorists <sup>639</sup> all claimed that no record was found of any bombing at Manger Square.

They then declared Shoebat “a fraud” and published their findings in the Jerusalem Post, [Washington Post](#), [RT](#), ABC Chicago, and CNN and the stories took off in Arabic media throughout the Middle East. As result, Shoebat gained the title “the fraud” even till now.

Shoebat is portrayed as some millionaire since (so they claim) he was paid handsomely by the Zionists to advance Netanyahu’s causes!

[The Arab Club on Thought](#) says:

---

<sup>639</sup> Article [We Are Wide Awake](#), by Eileen Flemming, February 3<sup>rd</sup>, 2008

“but there is worse than Nabulsi is Shoebat, the Emperor of Treason, imagine he says ‘Zionist and proud of it.’”

Psychiatrist Sadad Tamimi [writing for Akhbar](#) gives his psychiatric evaluation in absentia declared that “Shoebat has obsessive-compulsive disorder” obsessed with “gathering tremendous wealth” added:

“There is also an indication of the ethnic origin [of Shoebat] which is “Palestinian”. I would have liked to delete this reference [Palestinian] but I was not able to do that because the identity of the aforementioned individual played its role in his fame”

The Complaint takes off from when Shoebat was retained to give a series of lectures in Iowa and South Dakota July 2011 paid by the Department of Homeland Security when CNN’s Drew Griffin recorded the speech claiming that Shoebat was a “fraud” since they could not find a record of a “firebomb” tossed on Bank Leumi at Bethlehem’s Manger Square in 1977.

But contrary to CNN and the lawsuit, Shoebat never claimed he threw a Molotov cocktail but a time bomb recanting his mission. The bomb exploded minutes after impact causing many to believe it was a “hand grenade”.<sup>640</sup>

Did any of the media that denied the bombing go out of their way to verify anything?

CNN did a “vetting” investigation report on Shoebat and concluded:

“CNN's Jerusalem bureau went to great lengths trying to verify Shoebat's story, **finding the general location** [in Manger Square] with a branch of Bank Leumi once stood, but not finding anyone who could remember a bombing.”<sup>641</sup>

CNN simply trusted a 2010 Washington Post report:

“Shoebat, who has called Islam "the devil," says he was recruited by the Palestine Liberation Organization as a teenager. In 1977, he has said, he threw a bomb on the roof of the Bethlehem branch of an Israeli bank. The bank, however, has no record of the incident, and it was never reported by Israeli news outlets.”<sup>642</sup>

The Washington Post simply trusted a 2008 March 30<sup>th</sup> Jerusalem Post:

---

<sup>640</sup> “I threw the bomb instead on the bank’s rooftop. And I ran. As I reached the Church of the Nativity, I heard the explosion. I was so scared and so depressed that I couldn’t sleep for days. I was only 16 years old.” (God’s War on Terror, pg. 475, 2010)

<sup>641</sup> Drew Griffin’s “(voice-over): CNN's Jerusalem bureau went to great lengths trying to verify Shoebat's story, finding the general location with a branch of Bank Leumi once stood, but not finding anyone who could remember a bombing.” (see CNN’s own [Transcript, July 13<sup>th</sup>, 2011](#))

<sup>642</sup> Washington Post July 26<sup>th</sup>, 2010

<https://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2010/06/25/AR2010062504435.html>

“However, Shoebat's claim to have bombed Bank Leumi in Bethlehem is rejected by members of his family who still live in the area, and Bank Leumi says it has no record of such an attack ever taking place.”<sup>643</sup>

The Jerusalem Post trusted Eileen Flemming's February 3<sup>rd</sup> 2008<sup>644</sup> report and the Jerusalem Post trusted Salameh Shoebat:

“The uncle, interviewed at his home, said he remembered little about his nephew, because Walid left for America at the age of 16, and because his American mother always kept a distance from the rest of the family. The uncle and his wife both said firmly that there was no attack on Bank Leumi. When questioned on this discrepancy, Shoebat was adamant that he did carry out such a bombing, and that his relatives deny it to cover up for another cousin who was with him during the attack and still lives in Bethlehem.”

The media trusted Shoebat's uncle, whose son, Eiad Salameh is the notorious fraudster who was well linked with Nekoula Bassil Nekoula in court proceedings regarding mass fraud operations<sup>645</sup> the man behind “Innocence of Muslims” whose terrible film caused the death of so many.

#### (HOW THE MEDIA FAILED TO FACT CHECK)

As it turns out, none of the “fact checkers” did any fact checking. Years later after the advancements in the Internet access to newspaper archives became easy. The archives proved Shoebat's story is 100% accurate. Shoebat's bombing was confirmed from the Jerusalem Post and Yediot Ahoronot on December 25<sup>th</sup> 1977, both reported Shoebat's bombing as well as countless other newspapers from the New York Times to even the very Washington Post<sup>646</sup> that denied it.

The [United Nations](#) General Assembly Thirty-third session report<sup>647</sup> recorded the bombing exactly as Shoebat claimed:

---

<sup>643</sup> Jerusalem Post March 30<sup>th</sup>, 2008

<https://www.jpost.com/Features/The-Palestinian-terrorist-turned-Zionist>

<sup>644</sup> Article [We Are Wide Awake](#), by Eileen Flemming, February 3<sup>rd</sup>, 2008

<sup>645</sup> See <http://www.thesmokinggun.com/file/nakoula-transcript?page=0>

<sup>646</sup> From Washington Post Archives December 25<sup>th</sup>, 1977 “Bomb Mars Celebrations In Bethlehem”

Also see December 25, 1977 A Publisher Extra Newspaper Dayton Daily News from Dayton, Ohio · 7

Also see Reuters and Dayton Daily “Explosion Rocks Manger Square No Injuries”

<https://www.newspapers.com/newspage/406252712/>

<https://www.britishpathe.com/video/VLVA9FEPES7MP6OK9NUQF1ULTGP3F-WEST-BANK-BETHLEHEM-MAYOR-ELIAS-FREIJ-PRAISES-ISMAILIA-TALKS-AS/query/Gre>

<https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1977/12/25/bomb-mars-celebrations-in-bethlehem/8817aed5-52f5-4676-82e9-7177125a6492/>

<sup>647</sup> Access <https://unispal.un.org/DPA/DPR/unispal.nsf/0/1751DB3DFEC8CA06052565AE006EEBEC>

“December 24, 1977 explosion hand grenade at Bethlehem in Manger Square near the Church of the Nativity” <sup>648</sup>

The United Nation’s source referred to an article in the very Jerusalem Post which in 2008 was the first to initiate the denial of an explosion at Manger Square. The Jerusalem Post an Israeli paper being the first to defame Shoebat was then used to argue that “the Jews” whom Shoebat fought for “sold him out” but that is what the Great Rabbi (Christ) also went through when his own friends sold him out.

And from the New York Times archives: <sup>649</sup>

“An explosion erupted last night in a side street off Manger Square, where thousands of Christian pilgrims celebrated Christmas Eve in the town of the birth of Jesus.”

“A senior police officer at the scene said “it’s almost certain” the explosion had come from a bomb. The blast shattered windows in an empty room of building on the street, and glass sprayed into an alley. The force of the explosion was felt in the square, but there was no panic.”

And then the Washington Post <sup>650</sup> like CNN denied the bomb but recorded it in 1977:

“an explosion apparently triggered by Arab guerrillas rocked Manger Square and startled thousands of pilgrims today. No one was hurt.”

“It was the first guerrilla-related incident during Christmas festivities in Bethlehem in more than 10 years of Israeli occupation.”

“Witnesses said that the explosion, caused by either a hand grenade or a **small time bomb**, occurred on steps leading down from a private house just uphill from the

---

<sup>648</sup> The claim by several media sources including Shoebat’s own family declared that no bomb ever went off at Manger Square where Bank Leumi once stood at Manger Square in 1977. See Attachments “CNN’S “VETTING” CLAIMS COMPLETELY DEBUNKED” when REPORT OF THE SPECIAL COMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE ISRAELI PRACTICES AFFECTING THE HUMAN RIGHTS OF THE POPULATION OF THE OCCUPIED TERRITORIES Thirty-third session Agenda item 55A/33/356 13 November 1978. This refutes all the reports from Jerusalem Post, Washington Post, RT including CNN. A bomb described as a “hand grenade” [did go off](#) at “Manger Square” in Bethlehem December 24<sup>th</sup>, 1977 just as Shoebat described. See details in Exhibits.

<sup>649</sup> Archives from New York Times, December 25<sup>th</sup>, 1977 “*EXPLOSION SHAKES BETHLEHEM SQUARE*”

<https://www.nytimes.com/1977/12/25/archives/explosion-shakes-bethlehem-square-no-injuries-are-reported-from.html>

<sup>650</sup> From Washington Post Archives December 25<sup>th</sup>, 1977 “Bomb Mars Celebrations In Bethlehem” Also see December 25, 1977 A Publisher Extra Newspaper Dayton Daily News from Dayton, Ohio · 7 Also see Reuters and Dayton Daily “Explosion Rocks Manger Square No Injuries”

<https://www.newspapers.com/newspage/406252712/>

<https://www.britishpathe.com/video/VLVA9FEPES7MP60K9NUQF1ULTGP3F-WEST-BANK-BETHLEHEM-MAYOR-ELIAS-FREIJ-PRAISES-ISMAILIA-TALKS-AS/query/Gre>

<https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1977/12/25/bomb-mars-celebrations-in-bethlehem/8817aed5-52f5-4676-82e9-7177125a6492/>

[Manger] square. It was a relatively small charge, police said, but the sound was magnified by stone building surrounding the site, startling the crowd of 15,000 that packed the square awaiting the start of midnight services. Authorities closed off the area and started a search for the bombers.”

Yet CNN reported:

“DAOOD SHOEBAT, RELATIVE OF SHOEBAT (through translator): There were only two banks in Bethlehem district, and they are Bank Leumi and Discount Bank. They were on Nativity Square. And Walid never had any connection with those two banks, not a close or a distant connection.”<sup>651</sup>

While many will doubt since the reports do not state that the explosion occurred at “Bank Leumi” but only “Manger Square,” here Daood admits that **“Bank Leumi” is in “Nativity Square”** which was not a standalone building, but part of several shops in the arched corridor under the same roof.

Shoebat with Christian pilgrims at Manger Square changed his mind in the last minutes saw children and did not want to commit murder recanted his mission. He simply tossed the bomb high and far towards the common roof hope it landed on the rooftop and ran away without looking behind until the explosion erupted minutes later.

Shoebat’s enemies in fact added more evidence to his claim. Shoebat’s relative, Jawad Younis, brother of Al-Qaeda’s public defender Jawad Younis in his denial of Shoebat’s story connects the dots:

“In 1976, his [Shoebat’s] sister Mona was coming home from school with her friends and were stopped and beaten up by Israeli soldiers, they nearly broke Mona's back. This made Walid very angry and shortly thereafter he attended his first demonstration against the occupation. In 1977 Walid was caught distributing Palestinian flags and was arrested and held for about two weeks in Mascubia Prison, until his mother went to the Embassy and got him released.”

“The biggest act of 'terror' he ever committed was to glue Palestinian flags on street posts. But, **when he was in jail** he **met someone who invited him to join a group** against Israel. In 1977 **Walid and his friends put packages behind a bank**, but there were no explosives in it. That year he also met some Jehovah Witnesses and joined them for a while.”<sup>652</sup>

So here, prior to CNN’s report or even Jerusalem Post’s article, in 2008, and to discredit Shoebat, Eileen Flemming (a pro-Palestine private reporter) traveled to Bethlehem and visited Shoebat’s family and interviewed Kamal Younis. Younis (like Griffin and even the Jerusalem Post) denied the explosive charge ever existed.<sup>653</sup> Now the U.N. and New York

---

<sup>651</sup> CNN Transcript Aired July 27, 2011 <http://transcripts.cnn.com/TRANSCRIPTS/1107/27/cnr.06.html>

<sup>652</sup> Article [We Are Wide Awake](#), by Eileen Flemming, February 3<sup>rd</sup>, 2008

<sup>653</sup> To their credit, the Jerusalem Post after the regret allowed a response:  
<https://www.jpost.com/Opinion/Op-Ed-Contributors/Right-of-Reply-I-wasi-a-terrorist>



Times and countless others confirm it. Griffin and Daoud Shoebat denied the prison record, now Younis confirmed it. Griffin and Daoud Shoebat denied Shoebat joined a terror group. Now Younis confirmed it. Griffin and Daoud Shoebat denied a bomb was placed in the vicinity of Manger Square at the Leumi Bank, now Daoud (deceased) Younis (a package that supposedly never exploded) and the U.N. (and countless reports) confirmed it did explode. Most likely the Pope knew about that bomb since the whole world focused on Bethlehem on Christmas. CNN and this Complaint said it was a Molotov cocktail, Shoebat said it was a time bomb, the Washington Post said it was a hand grenade or a time bomb.

Which record can any reasonable person trust? Shoebat even named the bomb maker “Mahmoud Al-Mughrabi”



(Above “A senior police officer at the scene said “it’s almost certain” the explosion as caused by a bomb. The blast shattered windows in an empty room on the second floor of a building on the side street”) It was on the second floor most likely because the explosion went off on the roof. Bank Leumi is not a standalone but is simply a series of buildings in the arched corridor.

### SHOEBAT’S TERROR CONNECTIONS

Shoebat’s general testimony can easily be confirmed. In Shoebat’s books and speeches he

blast that echoed off the ancient church stones. A choir singing carols on a wooden stage did not miss a note.

No one was hurt. A senior police officer at the scene said "it's almost certain" the explosion was caused by a bomb. The blast shattered windows in an empty room on the second floor of a building on the side street about 30 feet from the square and glass sprayed into an alley.

#### Square Sealed Off

Israeli police and soldiers, who had been guarding the area against the possibility of Arab terrorist attacks, immediately sealed off Manger Square and cleared the side street where the explosion occurred. They searched the area but found no bombs.

Two hours after the explosion,

stated his recruitment by [Mahmoud Hassan Al-Mughrabi](#) (aka Mahmoud Madani):

Despite all of this, it was my mother—when I was thrown in the Muscovite Prison in Jerusalem—who went to the American Council in Jerusalem to try to get me out. The Muscovite prison was a Russian Compound that served as Jerusalem's central prison for those who were caught inciting violence against Israel. My dear mother was so worried over the direction that my life was taking that her hair started to fall out. Her worries were not unfounded. During my time in jail, I was initiated into Yasser Arafat's Fatah terror group. Soon after, a well-known bomb maker

from Jerusalem named [Mahmoud Al-Mughrabi](#) recruited me. The time had come for more than mere protests and riots. Al-Mughrabi and I arranged to meet on [Bab-El-Wad Street](#) at the [Judo-Star Martial Arts Club](#) run by his father near the Temple Mount in Jerusalem. He gave me a very sophisticated explosive device that he had personally assembled. I was supposed to use the bomb—an explosive charge hidden in a loaf of bread—to blow up the Bank Leumi branch in Bethlehem. Mahmoud helped me smuggle the bomb, as did the Muslim Wakf; the religious police on the Temple Mount. From the Temple Mount, I walked out onto the platform with explosives and a timer in my hand. We walked along the walls and avoided all of the checkpoints. From there, I walked to the bus station and took a bus to Bethlehem. I was fully ready to give my life if I had to. I stood before the bank and my hand was literally ready to pitch the bomb at the front doors, when I saw some Palestinian children walking near the bank. At the last moment, I threw the bomb instead on the bank's rooftop. And I ran.

As I reached the Church of the Nativity, I heard the explosion. I was so scared and so depressed that I couldn't sleep for days. I was only 16 years old. I wondered if I had killed anyone. That was the first time I came to grips with what it would be like to have blood on my hands. I didn't enjoy what I had done, but I felt compelled to do it because it was my duty.

It is also with difficulty that I recall to you this next story. It was my first attempt to [lynch a Jew](#). Like swarms of locusts, stones were flying everywhere as we clashed with the Israeli soldiers. A group of us had set fire to a row of tires to use as a blockade. One soldier was hit with a rock. He chased after the kid who had hit him. But instead, we caught the soldier. Like a pack of wild animals, we attacked him with everything we had. I had a club and I used it to pound him in the head until the club broke. Another teenager had a stick with a nail sticking out. He kept whacking the poor young man's skull until he was covered with blood. We nearly killed him.

Incredibly, as if with a final burst of adrenaline, he lunged across the blockade of burning tires and escaped to the other side where the other Israeli soldiers carried him to safety. (GOD'S WAR ON TERROR page 475, 2010)

The story of injuring the Lieutenant Governor of Bethlehem can be verified (see article from March 18<sup>th</sup>, 1976 by Ha'Aretz vs page 11 in *Why We Want to Kill You*, and page 17 from *Why I Left Jihad*) Although the article states the injured soldier was in Bethlehem, it was in Beit Sahour, an adjacent village which according to Bethlehem's Municipality is part of Bethlehem).

The Book God's War in Terror was in 2010 a year prior CNN's report. The United Nations [report](#) documents Shoebat's recruiter Mahmoud Al-Mughrabi as "victim":

"Lea Tsemel's clients whom Hedva Sarid says she saw being kicked, was a youth-called Hahmud el-Mughrabi. At 16, he had already been picked up a dozen times, and he was clearly regarded as a trouble-maker. Mughrabi gave us a detailed account of how he was beaten at the session Hedva Sarid interrupted. His story is in part corroborated by another prisoner though Mughrabi's additional allegation of electric shock remains unconfirmed. Mughrabi was one of 24 Palestinians we interviewed who had been interrogated in the Russian Compound - "Moscobiya" the Arabs call it." "Thus the faces constantly re-appear among the countless detainees whose names can (or cannot) be seen on graffiti on the filthy walls of the Russian Compound (Moskubiye) prison cells". (United Nations Report, A/32/132, S/12356 July 5<sup>th</sup>, 1977) also see article entitled "Israel tortures Arab Prisoners" and a related editorial which appeared in The Sunday Times 19 June 1977 with the request that they be circulated as an official document signed by Security Council) Mustafa MEDANI Permanent Representative of the Sudan Chairman of the Arab Group.

Also, *Detention of Palestinian Youths in East Jerusalem, Journal of Palestine Studies* 1977, University of California Press. Also see Noam Chomsky *Protest From Israel*, January 1977)

Even Walid tying Al-Mughrabi to the [Judo Star Martial Arts](#), on Bab-El-Wad Street, old city of Jerusalem is verified. <sup>4</sup> Besides Al-Mughrabi, Walid was an inmate with Omar Abdel Karim. In Walid's book *Why I Left Jihad* page 28, Walid writes about Omar Abdel Karim, "son in law of Muezzin (caller to prayer) Ramadan" who was beaten in prison by interrogators. Is confirmed by United Nations Report. <sup>654</sup>

Al-Mughrabi was correspondent for the *British Sunday Times* (Blaming The Victims by Edward W. Said and Christopher Hitchens (Verso 2001) on page 100. Also see *The Spectator* by F.C Westley, 1987, Volume 258, Issues 8269-8285, page 13. Also see Leila Baroody in *The Arabs Under Israeli Occupation*, 1977, pages 28-29. Also, see *Middle East Report*, issue 138, page 47.- [hired to report alleged tortures](#) in the Russian Compound (Jerusalem Central Prison) that were [published](#) by the United Nations – while privately conducting terror plots. Al-Mughrabi was finally [assassinated](#) on October 1, 1985 in a secret

---

<sup>654</sup> <http://unispal.un.org/UNISPAL.NSF/0/FE3D603D74F5729B85256FE0006CC519>



Israeli operation – 'Wooden leg' – that targeted Arafat's Tunisian headquarters. Actually denying Shoebat's connections adds to, rather than detract from Plaintiffs true intent.

Walid's billing as "x-terrorist" as not just the bombing operation. "The attempted killing of an Israeli high official" can be verified (see article from March 18<sup>th</sup>, 1976 by Ha'Aretz vs. page 11 in *Why We Want to Kill You*, and page 17 from *Why I Left Jihad*).

If one is to visit Shoebat's relatives in Bethlehem they will denounce him.

CNN concluded regarding Shoebat's bio is "none of it is" true. Shoebat must have been hit with amnesia and his bio "none of it is" true. His link to his cousin Ziyad Shoebat, [leader of Islamic Jihad Movement](#) and Imam of Abu Bakr Al-Khattab Mosque in Beith Sahour-Bethlehem "none of it is" true?

Ziyad (like Shoebat) was in-and-out of the same prison Shoebat went to. Ziyad died of cancer and [his death blamed on Israel](#) (of course). Palestinian media once claimed that Israel laces Mad-Cow disease in the Cadbury chocolate. <sup>655</sup>

How about his other cousin Raed Khalil Awadallah Shoebat (officially [registered](#) as "martyr" January 2, 1995) was killed on his way to bomb Ben Yehuda Street in Jerusalem. They will deny that his other cousin is [Areen Ahmad](#) Shoebat <sup>656</sup> the well-known female mastermind of the dual Operation Reshon Letzion in which Issa Bdeir detonated a bomb, killing himself along with innocent Jewish civilians.

Arin survived, hesitating to kill children, a similar account to that of Shoebat, who published his story years prior to Arin's activity. Shoebat's other cousin [Nidal Salameh Shoebat](#) injured with notorious most wanted terrorist Hussein Abyat by rocket fire. Israel sent four helicopters to kill that robust, smart and strong "Samson". It took a while for the Israelis to get him.

Shoebat was connected to Eiad Salameh Shoebat, the one who partnered with the filmmaker Nakoula Basil Nakoula in the *Innocence of Muslims* [attempted to blame Israel](#) of the havoc that caused an uproar in the Muslim world <sup>657</sup> even causing the killing of American Ambassador Stevens which Shoebat exposed and denounced such "fighting words" with the Muslim world.

Shoebat to no avail even warned in the Jerusalem Post in 2008 about Eiad <sup>658</sup> and cooperated with Constable Jeffrey Mason in Canada who informed Shoebat that the U.S. did not want Eiad eventually released him and flew him to Palestine.

In Arabic there is zero recognition by any from the Shoebat clan of his war on terror. Even Shoebat's first cousin [Ibrahim Awadallah Shoebat](#), the second to the Mufti Of Jerusalem would deny Shoebat who would not survive 5 minutes if he visited his millions worth of confiscated land—confiscated not by Israel—but by his own family and Shoebat is

---

<sup>655</sup> From an article in the official PA newspaper Al-Hayat Al-Jadeeda, December 8, 1997

<sup>656</sup> [Israel Ministry of Foreign Affairs](#) "The Role of Palestinian Women in Suicide Terrorism" January 30<sup>th</sup>, 2003. See also Al-Jazeera "Arin Shoebat" "a Martyr cancelled her bombing because of a child".

<sup>657</sup> E.g., David D. Kirkpatrick, "Anger Over a Film Fuels Anti-American Attacks in Libya and Egypt," New York Times (Sep. 11, 2012) (available at <http://www.nytimes.com/2012/09/12/world/middleeast/anger-over-film-fuels-anti-american-attacks-in-libya-and-egypt.html>).

<sup>658</sup> <https://www.jpost.com/Opinion/Op-Ed-Contributors/Right-of-Reply-I-iwasi-a-terrorist>

of course “profiteer?!”

The Plaintiffs denial of Shoebat’s bombing is simple to explain; they are simply ashamed of a terrorist who recanted Islam. Shoebat resumed his life still as a pro-Palestinian activist wanting to save many from walking his past and answering U.S. call to fight a war on terror arguing that Palestinians (instead of the blame game on Israel) should save their children from suicide.

Everything Shoebat said can be confirmed from his life in Chicago and his x-girlfriend Mary Edwards mentioned in his book, today known as [Mary Edwards Wertsch](#) who was on the team to defend terrorist escapee Ziad Abu Eain who was convicted and extradited to Israel later on. Edwards an author and activist who today covers up her past having aided Abu Eain who later became Arafat’s member of the Supreme Committee of the PLO. Edwards worked with James Zughbi the director of the Arab-American Institute is noted today for writing *Military Brats*, which was forwarded by General Shwarzkoph. <sup>659</sup>

Shoebat dumped his girlfriend by order of Jamal Saeed to join his movement and initiate the [Islamic Association of Palestine](#) (1981) in Chicago. Saeed was also closely linked to [Palestinian Abdullah Azzam](#), the godfather of Al-Qaeda and the mentor of Usama bin Laden.

The case against President Trump, Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu Shoebat and the others was filed by Martin McMahon an attorney for the Council of American Islamic Relations ([CAIR’s attorney](#)) should know this since he too [links to the I.A.P](#) and CAIR’s interest in making these cases is well documented. He can easily examine Shoebat’s story and family connections to terrorism is unquestionable. <sup>660</sup>

Walid’s American family’s link to Sir Winston Churchill can be verified by photocopy articles with Winston Churchill’s visit to his old friend Fred Georgeson Walid’s American great grand father and mayor of Eureka California. Walid’s Arabic grandfather was the Mukhtar (Chief) of the Muslims in Beit Sahour-Bethlehem (see Eilen Fleming’s report, testimony of Kamal Younis).

On page 44 in Walid’s book *Why I Left Jihad* he speaks of how his grand father sold land to the Jewish National Fund. Many were executed. This massacre between 1936 and 1938 carried out by Hitler’s henchman Haj Amin Husseni is so well documented which included Sheikh Daoud Ansari (Imam of Al Aqsa Mosque), Sheikh Ali Nur el Khattib (Al Aqsa Mosque), Sheikh Nusbi Abdal Rahim (Council of Muslim Religious Court), Sheikh Abdul el Badoui (Acre, Palestine), Sheikh El Namouri (Hebron), and Nasr El Din Nassr (Mayor of Hebron). Between Feb. 1937 and Nov. 1938, eleven Mukhtars (community leaders) and their entire families were slain by Amin al Husseni’s men. (See Israel Forum Bulletin v3.0.3, see also *Fasl Al-Maqal* owned by Azmi Bishara, Nazareth, see page 163, *Why I Left Jihad*).

So it is not Shoebat who is “the fraud” but this “And we have found out that **none of it is**” by CNN is fraud which can only be explained that narcissism can infect entire communities for it infected Germany with Nazism.

---

<sup>659</sup> see Shoebat’s book *Why We Want to Kill You*, pages 14-15, see also photo of I.D from the College in Chicago

<sup>660</sup> See Shoebat’s Biography Confirmed in Exhibits from primary sources

عمان 21° | عيد الفصحيات نورونا 1231

اخبار الردن | شرق وغرب | اقتصاد | تعليم و جامعات | لعلم | فلسطين | لبلان | بانوراما | كتاب عدون | ليلي عدون

---

The Power to Surprise

انطلاق جديدة للديناميكية  
اكتشف المزيد

الرئيسية

---

الاخر تعاليفا

آخر التحديثات

محمد الحماسة وهليل المحاميد مبارك

hikma

الحماسة "تبرع بالدوية للصحة اللبنانية بقيمة 1.1 مليون دولار"

الكاتبة: انتشار كورونا ربما يصل اجراء الانتخابات

اينان والرابع من اب: عرب وجم

يا لعيب يا خريب

الملك سلمان يوجه بتقييم مساعات إنسانية إلى لبنان

اينان والنسخة الانسانية من الخوف

الصحة الجديدة للميونية

عبد بلحاج

الجوع والعطش العاطفي في زمن كورونا

امانة عمان تنشر رسالة تضامن مع بيروت

تغطية جديدة تتيح رصد العظام الضخامي في وضع الشار

ايسا تنشر صوراً لعمار منزلها بعد انفجار بيروت

## عرب يقودون حملة لقيادة للنراية ضد العلم يدي أميكا (فيديو)

PM 01:18:18-01-2017  
عون نشر حث لتقود من 30 اصفي حث ف بيص الخر من 42 يون دولار من صبع حثيات و صرابة ابعة حث خاص عرب بلقانة حجة لقيادة للنراية ضد العلم يدي لوليات الحجة و لعلم.

بيوان "جنور شكلة للنراية والتوف من العلم يدي أميكا Fear Inc.: The Roots Of the Islamophobia Network In America حث صر هسب دور اميكا زير حرس لس ففعا عن لفاق 42 يون دولار ع ال لس رسنوات ليلية من قبل لسع حثيات، لقيادة شراع التوف والنراية ضد العلم يدي - لنك الفيويا - وتنظيم حث صيرة وخطوات لقيادة للنراية و ييج لراي لعلم ل اميكي صدم.

ي لس ف لتقود لعالغ الية وني فتص فعها لرم ولفه س ل مع ال اعين لقيادة حثيات لس للنراية ضد العلم يدي بل حث صيخين عرب ه مروي دروش وزهدي چلر و هي فارس وهي شها ت.

و لس تفصحية حجة للنراية ه من س را ت لوليات ل اميكي حث لس نقون ل غرض لس لة ل بلك اي عي ح الم 23 لاية اميكية، و هو امر لبلن واردا ط ل ال التروج لنا لتعيد لوجي من ع ال منه لولة لس ل عي لوليات الحجة.

| المصابون | المتماقون | الوفيات |
|----------|-----------|---------|
| 1231     | 1160      | 11      |

بم تحديث الوبلات تلقائياً على مدار اليوم

### إبحث في مواد التشريع

رقم المادة:

نص المادة:

إبحث

### الجريدة الرسمية

|             |            |
|-------------|------------|
| العدد       | 50         |
| تاريخ النشر | 27/10/2011 |
| الصفحة      | 4079-4081  |

الصفحة الرئيسية > التشريعات النافذة > طلب وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة ال... > المواد > مادة 1

عودة الى النتائج

### طلب وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة الموافقة على تصديق التوصيات المتخذة في المؤتمر ال (86) لضباط اتصال المكاتب الإقليمية لمقاطعة إسرائيل.



المادة 1 تاريخ بدء العمل: 12/10/2011  
قرار المجلس: أطلع مجلس الوزراء على المستندات المذكورة اعلاه، وقد تبين منها ان وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة تعيد ان المؤتمر ال (86) لضباط اتصال المكاتب الإقليمية لمقاطعة إسرائيل انعقد في مقر جامعة الدول العربية في القاهرة بتاريخ 5/9/2011 وبحضور وفود من (15) دولة عربية، ومشاركة مساعد أمين عام جامعة الدول العربية والمفوض العام للمكتب الإسلامي لمقاطعة إسرائيل لدى منظمة المؤتمر الإسلامي واتخذت التوصيات التالية: 1 - الشركات البريطانية: MONDI GROUP PLC «سريان الحظر المفروض على الشركة التمساوية MONDI BUSINES SPAPER وعلى شركتها الأم البريطانية: MONDI GROUP PLC وكافة شركاتها الفرعية وأعمالها حسب القائمة المرفقة». 2 - الشركة الفرنسية: SEPHORA S.A. «التنظيف عند التعامل مع هذه الشركة بغرض استيراد مستحضرات التجميل التي تحمل اسم AHAVA الاسرائيلية». 3 - الشركة الأوكرانية: «1 - AEROSVIT AIRLINES - حظر التعامل نهائيا معها ليوصلها الصهيونية ولايتكافها المخالفة للمرة الثانية مع التجاوز عن تطبيق مبدأ الإنذار بحقها ومع الشركات التالية لذات الأسباب: - أوكرانية PRIVATBANK GROUP - هولندية GIL WARD INVESTMENT ADVISORS - أوكرانية UKRANIAN INTERNATIONAL AIRLINES - BUREAU LIMITED LIABILITY - الشركة الأوكرانية: UKRANIAN INTERNATIONAL AIRLINES - «حظر التعامل معها لذات الأسباب مع الشركة الأوكرانية السابقة ذكرها». 5 - البرنامج الإلكتروني الإسرائيلي: ZONE ALARM (UIA) استعرض المؤتمر الموضوع في ضوء المعلومات التي تقدم بها المكتب الإقليمي اللبناني والمتضمنة أن هذا البرنامج الخاص بأمن تكنولوجيا المعلومات هو من إنتاج الشركة الإسرائيلية - CHECK POINT SOFTWARE TECHNOLOGIES LTD وأوصى المؤتمر بمنع تداوله في البلاد العربية باعتباره من المنتجات الإسرائيلية، ولما يشكله من خطر على أمن النول العربية، وبإلزام المكاتب الإقليمية بتوجيه الجهات المعنية ومنظمات المجتمع المدني لديها لإطلاق حملة عبر المواقع الإلكترونية بهدف التوعية من مخاطر استخدام هذا البرنامج. 6 - الشركة الأميركية: TINY LOVE LTD «حظر التعامل معها ليوصلها الصهيونية مع التجاوز عن تطبيق مبدأ الإنذار بحقها». 7 - الشركة الأميركية: GULFSTREAM AEROSPACE CORP «تأجيل موضوع هذه الشركة الى المؤتمر القادم كي تقوم المكاتب الإقليمية بإفادة المكتب الرئيسي عن رأي السلطات المختصة لديها حول إمكانية الاستغناء عن منتجات تلك الشركة خلال ثلاثة أشهر على أن يعرض الموضوع على المؤتمر القادم لضباط الاتصال». 8 - الشركة الإسبانية: REN ESPANA حظر التعامل معها. 9 - الشركة التركية: TUBITAK «تأجيل موضوع هذه الشركة الى المؤتمر القادم من أجل مزيد من الدراسة». 10 - الكاتب الفلسطيني الأميركي وليد شعيبات (WALID SHOEBAT) «إدراج اسم هذا الكاتب الفلسطيني الأميركي على قائمة الأشخاص المنوعين من دخول البلاد العربية». 11 - الفنان

“The Ministry of Economy and Trade stated that the (86) Conference of Liaison Officers of Regional Offices for Boycotting Israel was held at the Arab League headquarters in Cairo on 5/9/2011 and in the presence of delegations from (15) Arab countries, with the participation of the Assistant Secretary-General of the League of Arab States and the General Commissioner of the Islamic Bureau for the Boycott of Israel to the Organization of the Islamic Conference (OIC), and the following recommendations were taken [to prohibit corporations that support Zionism] “... 10 - WALID SHOEBAT, the Palestinian-American Writer: The name of this Palestinian-American writer will be included in the list of persons banned from entering Arab countries.”

Approved by Lebanon's Council of Ministers' Secretary-General, Suheil Boujji

## الجامعة اللبنانية

### مركز المعلوماتية القانونية

طلب وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة الموافقة على تصديق التوصيات المتخذة في المؤتمر ال (86) لضباط اتصال المكاتب الإقليمية لمقاطعة إسرائيل.

عدد المواد: 1

تعريف النص: قرار رقم 54 تاريخ: 12/10/2011

عدد الجريدة الرسمية: 50 | تاريخ النشر: 27/10/2011 | الصفحة: 4081-4079

### فهرس القانون

#### المواد (1-1)

المستندات: القانون الصادر بتاريخ 23/6/1955 (مقاطعة اسرائيل).  
المرسوم رقم 12562 تاريخ 19/4/1963 (تنظيم مكتب مقاطعة اسرائيل).  
كتاب وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة رقم 14980/2011 تاريخ 16/9/2011 ومرفقاته.

### المواد

#### المادة 1

قرار المجلس: اطلع مجلس الوزراء على المستندات المذكورة اعلاه، وقد تبين منها ان وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة تفيد ان المؤتمر ال (86) لضباط اتصال المكاتب الإقليمية لمقاطعة إسرائيل انعقد في مقر جامعة الدول العربية في القاهرة بتاريخ 5/9/2011 وبحضور وفود من (15) دولة عربية، ومشاركة مساعد أمين عام جامعة الدول العربية والمفوض العام للمكتب الإسلامي لمقاطعة إسرائيل لدى منظمة المؤتمر الإسلامي واتخذت التوصيات



التالية: 1 - الشركات البريطانية: MONDI GROUP PLC «سريان الحظر المفروض على الشركة النمساوية MONDI BUSINES SPAPER وعلى شركتها الأم البريطانية: MONDI GROUP PLC وكافة شركاتها الفرعية وأعمالها حسب القائمة المرفقة». 2 - الشركة الفرنسية: SEPHORA S.A. «التدقيق عند التعامل مع هذه الشركة بغرض حظر استيراد مستحضرات التجميل التي تحمل اسم AHAVA الاسرائيلية». 3 - الشركة الأوكرانية: 1 «AEROSVIT AIRLINES - حظر التعامل نهائياً معها لميولها الصهيونية ولارتكابها المخالفة للمرة الثانية مع التجاوز عن تطبيق مبدأ الإنذار بحقها ومع الشركات التالية لذات الأسباب: - أوكرانية PRIVATBANK GROUP - هولندية GIL WARD INVESTMENT - أوكرانية INVESTMENT BUREAU LIMITED LIABILITY 4 - الشركة الأوكرانية: ADVISORS GROUP - أوكرانية UKRANIAN INTERNATIONAL AIRLINES (UIA) «حظر التعامل معها لذات الأسباب مع الشركة الأوكرانية السابق ذكرها». 5 - البرنامج الإلكتروني الإسرائيلي: ZONE ALARM استعرض المؤتمر الموضوع في ضوء المعلومات التي تقدم بها المكتب الإقليمي اللبناني والمتضمنة أن هذا البرنامج الخاص بأمن تكنولوجيا المعلومات هو من إنتاج الشركة الإسرائيلية - CHECK POINT SOFTWARE TECHNOLOGIES LTD وأوصى المؤتمر بمنع تداوله في البلاد العربية باعتباره من المنتجات الإسرائيلية، ولما يشكله من خطر على أمن الدول العربية، وبالطلب الى المكاتب الإقليمية توجيه الجهات المعنية ومنظمات المجتمع المدني لديها لإطلاق حملة عبر المواقع الإلكترونية بهدف التوعية من مخاطر استخدام هذا البرنامج. 6 الشركة الأميركية: TINY LOVE LTD «حظر التعامل معها لميولها الصهيونية مع التجاوز عن تطبيق مبدأ الإنذار بحقها». 7 - الشركة الأميركية: GULFSTREAM AEROSPACE CORP «تأجيل موضوع هذه الشركة الى المؤتمر القادم كي تقوم المكاتب الإقليمية بإفادة المكتب الرئيسي عن رأي السلطات المختصة لديها حول إمكانية الاستغناء عن منتجات تلك الشركة خلال ثلاثة اشهر على أن يعرض الموضوع على المؤتمر القادم لضباط الاتصال». 8 - الشركة الإسبانية: REN ESPANA حظر التعامل معها. 9 - الشركة التركية: TUBITAK «تأجل موضوع هذه الشركة الى المؤتمر القادم من اجل مزيد من الدراسة». 10 - الكاتب الفلسطيني الأميركي وليد شعيبات (WALID SHOEBAT) «إدراج اسم هذا الكاتب الفلسطيني الأميركي على قائمة الأشخاص ممنوعين من دخول البلاد العربية». 11 - الفنان الفرنسي المغربي الأصل (GAD ALMALEH) «تأجيل الموضوع الى المؤتمر القادم لضباط اتصال المكاتب الإقليمية لقطاع إسرائيل لإجراء مزيد من التحريات عن الشخص المذكور، والطلب إلى المكتب الإقليمي المغربي موافاة المكتب الرئيسي بنتيجة تحرياته حيال الموضوع». 12 - مكاتب سياحية تروج للاحتلال الإسرائيلي: «توجيه رسالة الى مجالس السفراء العرب في العالم للتنبيه على الشركات السياحية بالتوقف عن استغلال المواقع التراثية الحضارية العربية والإسلامية في الأراضي العربية المحتلة بهدف الترويج السياحي بزعم أنها مواقع إسرائيلية، وذلك خلال مهلة

لا تتجاوز ثلاثة اشهر من تاريخ الاتصال بها وفي حال عدم استجابتها تطبق عليها أحكام المبادئ العامة للمقاطعة». 13 - تعديل المادة /141/ من المبادئ العامة للمقاطعة: «تكليف المكتب الرئيسي بالتعاون مع قطاع فلسطين والأراضي العربية المحتلة والمكاتب الإقليمية بدراسة أية مقترحات بتعديل مواد المبادئ العامة للمقاطعة ورفع نتائج هذه الدراسة الى مجلس جامعة الدول العربية». 14 - البضائع المستوردة الى البلاد العربية وعليها كتابات أو رموز إسرائيلية: 1 - إن وجود كتابات باللغة العبرية على بعض المنتجات تشير الى طريقة الاستعمال أو المكونات أو الأسعار العالمية أو ما شابه ذلك ضمنلغات أخرى لا يشكل مخالفة للمبادئ العامة للمقاطعة. 2 - في حال وجود كتابات باللغة العبرية تشير لوجود علاقة مع إسرائيل من حيث الإنتاج أو الاستيراد أو الدعم أو التأييد... فيتم التعامل مع الموضوع وفقاً للمخالفة التي تشير إليها تلك الكتابات. 3 - إضافة التوصية المذكورة أعلاه الى المبادئ العامة للمقاطعة تحت رقم المادة (69) مكرر». 15 - كتابات أسماء الأشخاص المدرجين على اللائحة السوداء بالأحرف اللاتينية: «تكليف المكتب الرئيسي بتشكيل لجنة فنية من المكتب ومن يرغب من المكاتب الإقليمية والجهات المعنية في الأمانة العامة للنظر في موضوع تطوير وتنظيم أرشيف المكتب الرئيسي وإعداد تقرير يتضمن الاحتياجات المادية والفنية يتم عرضه على مجلس الجامعة في دورة قادمة». فلن وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة تعرض الموضوع على مجلس الوزراء مقترحة الموافقة على تصديق هذه التوصيات وذلك وفقاً للمرسوم رقم 12562 تاريخ 19/4/1963 ولا سيما الفقرة (2) من المادة (6) منه بحيث تخضع هذه التوصيات للتصديق من جانب مجلس الوزراء لإعطائها الصيغة التنفيذية والمجرى القانوني اللازم، على أن تنشر في الجريدة الرسمية وفي ثلاث صحف محلية وفقاً للأصول. بناء عليه، وبعد المداولة، قرر المجلس الموافقة على اقتراح وزارة الاقتصاد والتجارة المين اعلاه.

12/10/2011

أمين عام مجلس الوزراء

سهيل بوجي

(Above from “Lebanon University, Centre for Information on Law” “10. WALID SHOEBAT” “apply this Palestinian writer to the list of prohibited entry to Arab states” and “blacklist those names in Latin” approved by Lebanon’s Secretary General Suheil Bouji” <http://77.42.251.205/LawView.aspx?opt=view&LawID=229790>

